

THE RAPTURE OF THE CHURCH

AND

THE SHADOW OF THIS WORLD

By: Denis Boivin

**The rapture of the church and the shadow of this world**

**By Denis Boivin**

**1st Edition**

**Copyright © 2006 Denis Boivin**

**Copyright Registration No: 1034084**

**Source: <http://www.denisboivin.org>**

## **PREFACE**

First of all, in the name of Jesus Christ, I command every heavenly spirit which is not of God, to remain silent without communicating with the reader until the complete reading of this book: so that all can have face to face encounter with the gospel and the salvation of God reserved for mankind.

I dedicate this book to my family and all whom God will enlighten through the reading of this book. May you man of peace seeking God find in this book the necessary elements that will lead you to the Lord Jesus Christ.

It took me over twenty years to gather evidence and Christian experience sine qua non for carrying out this exhaustive study.

The fact that the much needed written materials were available on time, information gotten in an inexplicable and unplanned manner, all make me to believe that this book is the perfect will of Jesus Christ who lives in me.

## **INTRODUCTION**

The world from the beginning right up to the fall of our first ancestors, Adam and Eve, was supposed to be an exuberant garden where man and his descendants were to blossom for ever. Unfortunately, when man sinned, he became mortal, a participant, who now had to spend lesser days on earth in the mists of time. Born under the influence of sin, having the knowledge of good and evil but not being able to do absolute good, man because of his sin was separated from God whose state is holiness and absolute perfection. The death of Christ on the cross came to be the only means through which we can be reconciled with God. Unfortunately, this manner chosen by God to absolve us is not well known by all. Quite often, religions hide parts of this very important knowledge from us. In short, Jesus as part of trinity, became flesh, lived in holiness on earth; and died on the cross bearing all the sins of the world; then, was resurrected and is now seated at the right hand of God interceding for us. All those who allow Christ to forgive their sins, receive the power to become children of God with the seal of the Holy Spirit put on them. From this fall of man, his days on earth were numbered and specific stages were ascribed to him until judgment day. This book seeks to provide answers to the many questions asked by the believer, the neophyte and the unregenerate man in the course of their respective lives. It explains the main differences between Catholicism and Protestantism. It clearly confirms the increase of evil forces through a well implanted organisation. This book is succinctly divided. Firstly, the first three chapters shall be specifically theoretical in the form of theology, stories to make you conversant with God's promises and biblical prophecies that are being fulfilled in our days. Indeed, we are living the days which all the apostles and great men of God would have loved to live and see. The fourth and fifth chapters will

highlight the global conspiracy which began in the years 1700 with its consequences in our era. Its main strength emanating from the control of the power conferred on money, its purpose the “New World Order”, its leader, Antichrist, all in the form of a totalitarian government. Finally, in the sixth and seventh chapters, we will discover a wonderful saviour called Jesus Christ. **Please read this book with a Bible beside you. Here I want to make a warning, because I am a man who fears God. I have used biblical verses from prophetic books like Revelation, Zechariah, Daniel, and Ezekiel; in order to give necessary theological teachings. I want to emphasize that the only sure truth is the Bible, the word of God, verse by verse component of each of these books have been used without adding or subtracting. So dear readers, you have the duty to ensure that the biblical quotations used in this book are accurate. I acknowledge the fact that despite my intention to root out whole Bible verses to attach to this book, in course of typing I might have made mistakes. Therefore, only the original Bible verse is viable and truthful. Also, concerning prophecies, the interpretations, explanations, and speculations given are all subject to errors. Therefore, the only truth remains the original prophecies found in the Bible without adding or subtracting anything. The rest is just speculations. Buckle up and good reading.**

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

PREFACE .....	3
INTRODUCTION .....	4
CHAPTER 1.....	11
The defeat of Satan and his objective .....	11
Who is God and what is his plan for us? .....	15
God alone has powers to forgive sins.....	15
The objective of Satan .....	21
In defence of the book of books .....	23
The signature of God on His Book the Bible .....	30
Another discovery on the Bible .....	31
EXTRAORDINARY EVENTS .....	34
CREATION.....	37
Other theories .....	40
CHAPTER II The seven stages of the Kingdom of God.....	43
1) Paradise .....	43
2) Theocracy in Israel.....	44
3) The Kingdom of God foretold by the prophets.....	46
4) The Kingdom of God offered and rejected at the first coming of Christ.....	47
5) The Antichrist .....	49
6) The Millennium.....	51
7) The Kingdom of the Everlasting God .....	59
8) The seven (7) stages in the plan of God.....	61
CHAPTER III.....	64
End of the era of grace until the end of the stage reserved for the Antichrist .....	64
PART I - The rapture of the Church, the resurrection of the righteous, the Advent of Christ and the time of tribulation .....	65
1) Signs of the Advent of Christ.....	66
2) Rapture of the Church and the first part of the resurrection of the Righteous .....	69
3) When will the Church be raptured and when will the dead rise? .....	70

4) How will the Church be raptured? .....	71
5) Second Part of the resurrection of the Righteous.....	72
6) The time of satanic reign .....	73
7) The Sanhedrin of Jesus' era inexcusable for failure to recognize Christ.....	75
PART TWO - Prophecies to be fulfilled before the Rapture of The Church.....	86
SECTION 1 - Prophecies directed to nations before the Rapture of the Church.....	87
1) The Apostasy.....	88
a) Men will be selfish, lovers of money, having the appearance of godliness, but denying what makes its force .....	89
b) Abortion .....	91
c) Divination and magic .....	94
d) Homosexuality .....	95
e) False teachers.....	96
SECTION 2 – Prophecies directed to the Jewish people before the Rapture of the Church.	101
a) History of the Jewish people .....	102
b) Restoration of Israel .....	103
c) The return of Israel to his country .....	106
d) The Sinai War in 1956 .....	106
e) The six-day war in 1967.....	107
f) The Yom Kippur War .....	107
2) The period of prosperity .....	108
3) Egypt .....	109
PART THREE - The formation of the satanic bloc .....	111
1) The Satanic Trinity.....	111
2) Components of the satanic bloc .....	111
3) Analogies between the Universal Church and the satanic Church .....	116
4) The prostitute and the false prophet.....	129
5) The ten horns.....	131
6) The Antichrist .....	134
7) Where will the Antichrist come from?.....	135
8) Synopsis of characters that make up the satanic reign.....	142
PART FOUR - The beginning of the satanic reign .....	143
1) The cursed mark.....	143
2) The Jewish people during the tribulation .....	147
3) The seals and trumpets.....	150

4) Graphic knowledge transmitted .....	158
CHAPTER 4.....	165
The Plot .....	165
PART I - Confounding weapons .....	165
1)Drug .....	166
2) Communication infrastructure .....	169
PART TWO - A well established organization.....	184
1) Its origin, purpose and structure.....	184
2) Its operation.....	190
3) Organization of the Illuminati for the U.S .....	193
4) Foundations and Trusts .....	198
5) Towards two democracies.....	203
6) The Banking system.....	215
7) The Chronological Order of the Illuminati .....	230
PART III - Testimony of John Todd.....	277
John Todd's testimonial of his experience in witchcraft and of the Illuminati.....	277
Conclusion.....	317
CHAPTER V .....	319
Deviations from the truth .....	319
PART 1 - The development of the Church.....	319
1) Go you into all nations and make disciples.....	319
2) The functions of the Church.....	322
3) The Roman Catholic Church.....	329
4) The catholic chronology.....	335
5) The Treasury of Saint Pierre associated with Freemasonry .....	365
6) Infiltration of the Roman Catholic Church by Freemasons .....	369
7) Summary .....	370
PART 2.....	372
The unknown Church .....	372
1) Founding of Churches and departure of the apostles .....	374
2) The Nestorian Churches.....	376
3) The Cathars Churches .....	378
4) Renaissance .....	392



5) From Reformation to the War of Independence .....	398
6) Freemasonry and the brethren .....	400
7) Summary .....	401
PART 3: The confines of the ILLUMINATI .....	402
1) From masonry to freemasonry .....	402
2) The sources of Kabbalah .....	404
3) The nature of angels .....	408
4) The Fallen Angels .....	409
5) The role of man .....	410
6) Who is Satan? .....	412
7) How has Kabbalah been introduced into Freemasonry? .....	413
8) The Illuminati .....	419
9) Kabbalah or witchcraft .....	429
10) Summary .....	429
PART 4 - The United Nations Organization .....	430
1) The organs of the United Nations (UNO) .....	434
PART 5 - God or UFOs and flying saucers .....	447
SECTION 1 - The Universe was created by God and belongs to Him .....	448
1) Who is God? .....	448
2) God created the whole universe .....	449
3) The earth is round .....	451
4) The inhabitants of heaven and heaven of heavens, and humans .....	452
5) Is there in the universe an environment that may be suitable for humans? .....	453
SECTION 2 - UFOs or fallen angels .....	454
1) The "foo fighters" .....	454
2) Does the UFO phenomenon have a psychological purpose? .....	456
3) Is there any supernatural element in the UFO phenomenon? .....	457
4) God and His celestial bodies .....	462
5) Satan and his heavenly creatures .....	464
SECTION 3 - The earthly technology .....	467
1) Technology from 1890 to 1940 .....	467
2) The biography and the inventions of Nikola Tesla .....	470
3) Many large projects in the past .....	476
4) Rand Project .....	479

5) Shall it be possible to manipulate the masses psychologically? .....	481
6) The Earthly Flying Saucers .....	483
7) Summary .....	485
CONCLUSION OF CHAPTER FIVE .....	486
CHAPTER VI.....	487
Forgiveness in Jesus Christ .....	487
SECTION 1 - Nothing unclean shall enter in my house .....	487
SECTION 2 – Salvation through Jesus Christ .....	490
SECTION 3 - The power of the blood of Jesus Christ.....	501
SECTION 4 - Works .....	504
SUMMARY .....	509
SECTION 5 - Juxtaposition of the doctrines of Justification and Sanctification, and the other doctrines mentioned by Jesus Christ .....	510
1) Justification .....	510
2) Sanctification .....	512
3) Other biblical doctrines .....	515
CHAPTER VII .....	521
Christian life .....	521
SECTION 1 - Possession .....	522
SECTION 2 - The Authority of the believer .....	529
SECTION 3 - The verses that could give rise to misinterpretation of the Word .....	532
SECTION 4 - Bible Verses providing us eternal salvation .....	560
SUMMARY .....	580
CONCLUSION OF THE BOOK .....	582
I ASK YOU .....	589
REFERENCES .....	590

## CHAPTER 1

### **The defeat of Satan and his objective**

You will tell me: "a curious title for a cultured and industrialized era as ours"! At the peak of modern technology where man finds solution to all riddles, it is difficult to imagine that a fallen angel thousands of years ago (although his actual age is unknown) will cause the ideological upheaval of our generations.

Yet this myth as some people like to say is indeed a reality. In fact, the world today is closely linked, if not interrelated with the time that God had set at the beginning of creation. In order to know the upheavals of this our world and their causes, it would be good to recall, in the first three chapters of this book Satan's rebellion, the seven stages of God's plan and the world government.

Indeed, prophecies marking the end of time and specifically directed at our century, written between 535 and 1000 BC by Daniel, Ezekiel, Zechariah and Isaiah are being fulfilled in our generation while the Revelation foretold by John is now at our doorstep.

Nowadays, many people ask questions "will there be a nuclear war? Will the global system be beneficial? What should we think of this rebellious generation? Why is it that within four decades moral standards have evolved faster than in the whole history of humanity?

"The Bible, which is the word of God unequivocally, responds to these questions and many others. This book seeks to enlighten the youth on his way and parents in vital decisions about life during the coming decades. It is partly the warning made by God to man through His word (The Bible), The meeting of international agencies held by groups in order to bring to power the Antichrist, and finally, the solution given by God in His word.

First of all, let us proceed in a sequential order and study the evil being. Many people psychologically oppose to the existence of Satan and this is one of his first strength. Yet if we believe in Jesus Christ, we must admit the existence of Satan, if not we make God a liar. They are

two opposite camps, good and evil in their purest sources. Except that Jesus Christ is God and Satan a rebellious creature.

God created Lucifer just as He created us; he was the most beautiful and the most powerful amongst all the angels of creation. He was cherubim (guard) and all heavenly creatures of God were under his leadership. One day he attempted to take God's place and like the king of Tyre in Ezekiel 28:2, he said: "I am a god". Several angels marched with him against God. There was great rebellion in heaven, to the point where heaven was shaken in Jeremiah 4:23 in reference to Genesis 1:2. The Bible tells of his condemnation as was the case of Tyre, city cursed by God just as Satan.

All who knew you among the peoples are astonished at you; You have become a horror, And shall be no more forever.  
(Ezekiel 28:19).

When Satan and his fallen angels were cast out of Gods kingdom, everything was abyss outside the Kingdom of God, a sign of great rebellion. God saw the earth and said in Genesis 1: 2 - 3:

In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth. The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters.  
Then God said, "Let there be light"; and there was light.

God created the earth and everything that lives there. Among the readers, some have surely been seduced by the theory of evolution mainly because of the seven days of creation mentioned in Genesis, thus bringing their Christian faith to a halt. Here, it suffices to believe in the glory of God because with Him everything is possible. But Apostle Peter in his second epistle reveals a truth perhaps linked to the mystery of creation.

But, beloved, do not forget this one thing, that with the Lord one day *is* as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.  
(2 Peter 3:8)

Anyway, God created man in His own image Genesis 1: 27 - 28 summarizes as follows:

So God created man in His *own* image; in the image of God He created him; male and female He created them.

Then God blessed them, and God said to them, “Be fruitful and multiply; fill the earth and subdue it; have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over every living thing that moves on the earth.

God gave man dominion over His work, the earth. But Satan came and set confusion through Eve. (Genesis 3:1-5)

Now the serpent was more cunning than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said to the woman, “Has God indeed said, ‘You shall not eat of every tree of the garden’?”

And the woman said to the serpent, “We may eat the fruit of the trees of the garden; “but of the fruit of the tree which *is* in the midst of the garden, God has said, ‘You shall not eat it, nor shall you touch it, lest you die.’ ”

Then the serpent said to the woman, “You will not surely die. “For God knows that in the day you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil.”

You see, since that time, the tactic has been the same: to make us doubt God and then we demonstrate that one can do without God. Each time, man sinks deeper and deeper.

We all know that eventually Eve, after being seduced, tasted the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil. It was not an apple. According to the Bible, it was not sex, Adam Knew Eve long before this action.

We should not think that if we were in the place of our first ancestors we would have done better. Adam and Eve were perfect in their genes. They have probably been the most intelligent, most beautiful, most refined specimens of all males and females born on this planet.

However, by sinning, man was opened to unfairness and consequently sold the rights that God gave him on earth to Satan. And since that time, we are born under the influence of sin right in our genes.

From that time, our days on earth were numbered. In fact, with the submission of God's work under the yoke of sin, God had no other choice but to destroy His work. Also, God divided the time of the earth in six stages (the number of Satan) until it was destroyed. And after that time, God promised Satan and his angels with eternal damnation.

Then He will also say to those on the left hand, 'Depart from Me, you cursed, into the everlasting fire prepared for the devil and his angels:

(Matthew 25:41)

In this regard, many people believe that hell is on earth or that judgment is simply annihilation. Not true! Jesus spoke thirty-one times in public and mentioned seventeen times, hell, gehenna, lake that burns with fire and brimstone, outer darkness. The latter situation takes place after death as an eternal judgment. To demonstrate this fact, note the judgment promised by God to those who are against Him in the book of Isaiah.

"And they shall go forth and look Upon the corpses of the men Who have transgressed against Me. For their worm does not die, And their fire is not quenched. They shall be an abhorrence to all flesh."

(Isaiah 66:24)

Do not worry dear reader; I'm not saying these things to scare you but to make you aware of the danger of indifference, a phenomenon peculiar to our century.

## **Who is God and what is his plan for us?**

God is absolute holiness, total Good.

Exalt the Lord our God, And worship at His holy hill; For the Lord our God is holy. (Psalms 99:9)

And

"No one is holy like the Lord, For there is none besides You, Nor is there any rock like our God.

"Talk no more so very proudly; Let no arrogance come from your mouth, For the Lord is the God of knowledge; And by Him actions are weighed.

(1 Samuel 2:2-3)

God has no beginning and no end, He is everlasting.

without father, without mother, without genealogy, having neither beginning of days nor end of life, but made like the Son of God, remains a priest continually. (Hebrew 7:3)

## **God alone has powers to forgive sins.**

Let the wicked forsake his way, And the unrighteous man his thoughts; Let him return to the Lord, And He will have mercy on him; And to our God, For He will abundantly pardon. (Isaiah 55:7)

God is a Spirit:

God is Spirit, and those who worship Him must worship in spirit and truth.

(John 4:24)

God is omnipotent (Who has absolute authority, all powerful), omniscient (all-knowing), and omnipresent (He is continuously present everywhere).

Therefore do not be like them. For your Father knows the things you have need of before you ask Him. (Matthew 6:8)

The Lord looks from heaven; He sees all the sons of men. From the place of His dwelling He looks On all the inhabitants of the earth; He fashions their hearts individually; He considers all their works (Psalms 33:13-15)

And

But you, when you pray, go into your room, and when you have shut your door, pray to your Father who is in the secret place; and your Father who sees in secret will reward you openly. (Matthew 6:6)

And

And thus the secrets of his heart are revealed; and so, falling down on his face, he will worship God and report that God is truly among you. (1 Corinthians 14:25)

Nothing is impossible with God.

For with God nothing will be impossible (Luke 1: 37)



And

But our God is in heaven; He does whatever He pleases.

Psalms 115:3

And

Whatever the Lord pleases He does, In heaven and in earth, In the seas  
and in all deep places. Psalms 135:6

God is perfect in all things

He is the Rock, His work is perfect; For all His ways are justice, A  
God of truth and without injustice; Righteous and upright is He.  
Deuteronomy 32: 4

Oh, the depth of the riches both of the wisdom and knowledge of God!  
How unsearchable are His judgments and His ways past finding out!  
"For who has known the mind of the Lord? Or who has become His  
counselor?" "Or who has first given to Him And it shall be repaid to  
him?" For of Him and through Him and to Him are all things, to whom  
be glory forever. Amen.

(Romans 11:33-36)

Some scoffers will say, if God is all that, why did Satan and his fallen angels, as well as Adam and Eve fall into sin? Heavenly creatures with Adam and Eve fell into sin. Satan has committed sin by organizing a revolt in the Kingdom of Heaven (Ezekiel 28: 2). Now whoever talks of revolt, talks of sin, Sin when committed leads to the worst atrocities. Being in sin, he was driven from the Kingdom of Holiness.

Meanwhile Adam and Eve were seduced by Satan.

Now the serpent was more cunning than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said to the woman, "Has God indeed said, 'You shall not eat of every tree of the garden'?" And the woman said to the serpent, "We may eat the fruit of the trees of the garden; but of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God has said, 'You shall not eat it, nor shall you touch it, lest you die.' " Then the serpent said to the woman, "You will not surely die. For God knows that in the day you eat of it your eyes will be opened, and you will be like God, knowing good and evil." (Genesis 3:1-5)

Adam and Eve wanted to be as gods, knowing good and evil. They committed the sin of disobedience. God gives to every creature, free will, the right to choose his actions. God does not want robots. God wants creatures that choose deliberately and freely to worship and obey Him because He is Holy and God.

And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, "Of every tree of the garden you may freely eat; but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die."

(Genesis 2:16-17)

God told Adam: " The day that you eat of it you shall surely die." Adam and Eve could well have lived forever in holiness. This disobedience became sin in their respective lives. Given that their genes were transmitted to every man right up to today, this accounts for the original sin from birth. We are all born under the influence of sin. God knew that if Adam and Eve disobeyed they were going to fall into sin. He said: "but of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat, for in the day that you eat of it you shall surely die" (Genesis 2: 17). In this era of innocence, Adam and Eve could choose to enter into the presence of God by obeying. Rather,

they disobeyed, by doubting God and wanting to be like gods, knowing good and evil. As Adam and Eve were holy in this era of innocence, and as the only way to fall, was to taste of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, before God permitted or abolished it, God gave his full trust to man in his decision.

Speaking of love:

bears all things, believes all things, hopes all things, endures all things.

Love never fails. (1 Corinthians 13: 7)

Like a loving Father who probes the mind of his child, expecting him to grow and take his own decisions. God helplessly witnessed the mutual decision of Adam and Eve, knowing pertinently, that the sin of doubt having been committed, and sooner or later they would taste the forbidden fruit, wishing to be gods. Thus, being the masterpiece of God, man, took upon himself to believe the father of lies, rather than God, his Creator

It goes without saying that, once the path of sin was chosen, the creature debased. Imagine, Satan, an Archangel having the seal of perfection, becoming evil incarnate after the commission of sin. The nature of God is holy and incorruptible (Romans 1: 23), that is why today, we still find good, and it will be so forever, because God is holy and incorruptible. Jesus Christ, the son of God (Luke 1: 35), Person of the Holy Trinity (Jude 1: 25), became man (John 1: 14), He was begotten by the Holy Spirit (Matthew 1: 18), born by a woman Mary who had this grace (Luke 1: 28), He did the works of a God (John 10 :37-38, John 6: 29) He was an atonement for the sins of men (Romans 3: 25), He has the power to forgive all sins (Matthew 9 :1-8), he died and rose again (Romans 8: 11).

Also, no man shall be excused if in his life time, he fails to go to God through Christ.

For since the creation of the world His invisible attributes are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His eternal power and Godhead, so that they are without excuse, (Romans 1:20)

Every man in his lifetime, can be reconciled with God through Christ if he abandons his sins to Jesus Christ when he is alive, (2 Corinthians 5:17-21).

Let's look at the sin of pride. The word "brother" here refers to the Jewish brethren in Judaism to whom Jesus was preached by the apostles and not to the brother in Christ.

Beware, brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief in departing from the living God; but exhort one another daily, while it is called "Today," lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin. (Hebrews 3:12-13)

Also, Jesus, after having perfectly saved all men who accepted Him, will be submitted to the Father who put all things under him.

Now when all things are made subject to Him, then the Son Himself will also be subject to Him who put all things under Him, that God may be all in all. (1 Corinthians 15:28)

It goes without saying that when somebody accepts to be saved by Jesus Christ, he does not only give all his sins to Christ and repent from being a sinner, but he will no longer want to sin. At the same time, he abandons all forms of rebellion against God which is found within us, because Christ after perfectly saving us, submitted himself totally to the father.

At this moment, if you readers have not received faith from the father to believe in His Only Son, pray in the name of Jesus Christ and ask God to give you the requisite faith which leads to the FAITH that saves. This can be seen by God as a goodwill gesture on your part (Luke 17: 5).

To those who accept the sacrifice of Jesus for themselves, it is given.

who are kept by the power of God through faith for salvation ready to be revealed in the last time. (1 Peter 1:5)

The Holy Spirit is given to us when we accept to be saved by the Lord Jesus Christ and this Spirit is our pledge of eternal redemption.

But you have come to Mount Zion and to the city of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, to an innumerable company of angels, to the general assembly and church of the firstborn who are registered in heaven, to God the Judge of all, to the spirits of just men made perfect, (Hebrews 12:22-23)

In heaven, the congregation of the righteous shall be composed of saints, that is to say, those who were rescued by the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ. The Spirit of God will continue to remain in us for an endless eternity (John 14: 16).

Finally, we are children of God (John 1:12-13) and have a position superior to other creatures in the kingdom of Heaven (Romans 8:15-17, Ephesians 1:11-14). We will be more than conquerors in Jesus Christ our Lord and the resurrection of our being is to come. We will be transformed into a new being, yet not deprived of our free will but in a celestial incorruptible body which can never sin. In the Kingdom of Heaven, we will have a more excellent position than Adam in the earthly Paradise; since we have the Spirit of God in us for eternity and a new celestial body that no longer has that kind of sinful past when we lived on earth. Needless to say we will NEVER run into sin and rather we will enjoy an eternal life of bliss (Revelation 21: 4). Bible Verses like John 17:20-23 and 1 Corinthians 15: 28, promise us a beautiful communion with God.

## **The objective of Satan**

Behind every action is an objective. That of Satan is not different from his work. Indeed, he is the prince of lies, his swindling attitude towards God and man in the earthly paradise broke

communication between man and God his creator. This deception from the beginning was aimed at causing man to lose his salvation through death.

After this rebellion, Satan and his angels were condemned to wander in the abyss, far from the face of God. By pushing man to fall in sin, Satan said to himself: "IF GOD COULD SPARE man despite his sin, he would do the same with me and my angels, because He is just. So, Satan would have been readmitted into the Kingdom of God.

But God is Spirit; He is Holy, without evil. If God had accepted sin in His kingdom, He would have been contaminated and it would have been the destruction of the Holy Spirit to have a world devoted entirely to sin. What a nightmare, what despair, living eternally in sin! Fortunately, God had already concluded that if man tastes of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, death, could end his suffering.

Therefore, God set up a plan that would allow man to become again "Saint" in God's eyes but if only he sincerely wished. That is what we shall see in the next chapter. Unfortunately, over the centuries, Satan tried by every means to veil man's wonderful journey of reconciliation with God through Jesus Christ His son.

Many will say that God is mercy and goodness; He will ensure that we inherit all of eternal life in His Kingdom. While God is goodness and mercy, He has provided man with the Bible so that all can read. God says He will not transgress His word, He does not contradict, if we seek God, we just have to go to what he prescribes, in His word, the Bible. Here is what Jesus Christ, the only son of God, declared in His word:

"Assuredly, I say to you, all sins will be forgiven the sons of men, and whatever blasphemies they may utter; but he who blasphemes against the Holy Spirit never has forgiveness, but is subject to eternal condemnation"- (Mark 3: 28-29)

This means that whoever does not accept Jesus as the Christ, the only son of God, Holy and blameless who came to pay the ransom for us all, cannot be received into the kingdom of God.

The reason is that God is holy and cannot accept sin in His Kingdom. The Bible also says:

And as it is appointed for men to die once, but after this the judgment,  
(Hebrews 9:27)

Indeed, man has all his life time to accept or reject Christ, but once he dies, Judgement is eternal. So everything depends on this decision, an everlasting life of happiness or eternal damnation. We shall see in detail the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross and its saving power in the coming chapters of this book.

## **In defence of the book of books**

Among the traps that Satan has implanted in the minds of nations of the world through different institutions starting with that of world education providing academic knowledge through UNESCO (United Nations Educational, Scientific and Cultural Organization), a United Nations body, is that of creating doubt about the word of God with scientists questioning the veracity of creation. Let's fight with weapons that allow the good fight!

### **Important points on the Word of God**

From time immemorial, the Word of God, the Bible has been a subject of repeated attacks by the enemy and acolytes. It is now time to debunk all invented legends and to speak the truth to men seeking the truth about the Holy Book.

### **The Bible was designed with the canonical books**

Firstly, there are several specific points on divine inspiration, using passages from Scripture, we can see a few.

- All Scripture is God-breathed (2 Timothy 3: 16).
- Every word of God is tested without subtracting or adding (Prov 30:5-6).
- A prophetic word is pushed by the Holy Spirit (2 Peter 1: 21).

- All scripture written in advance, is for our instruction (Romans 15.4).
  - All scripture has authority (Matthew 4.4).
  - Divine inspiration is juxtaposed with the chosen man (2 Samuel 23.2).
  - As God's own words, Scripture has the property of authority (Isaiah 1.2).
  - The Sacred Letters can make wise "unto salvation" through faith in Christ (2 Timothy 3.15).
  - The Word of God is a lamp and a light in our life (Psalms 119:105).
  - The Word will judge those who reject Christ (John 12: 48)
- Jesus Himself tells us that as the earth and the sky will be destroyed, but what has been said in the Word will be accomplished and will remain valid and truthful.

For assuredly, I say to you, till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle will by no means pass from the law till all is fulfilled.  
(Matthew 5: 18)

### **Definition**

To understand how the Bible was formed, we will study four terms:

The authenticity, credibility, canonicity and authority of the Word of God

**Authenticity**: Authenticity means that these books were written in an era when it was claimed to have been written by men who say they concretized it. The Apocryphal books are counterfeit. So if a book claims to have been written by Moses or by Paul, for it to be authentic, it must be clearly certified that they are the books of Moses or Paul.

**Credibility**: Credibility determines the purity and adequacy of the biblical message. The biblical terms are consistent with their overall use in the Holy Scriptures. That we have a fundamentally pure text! That what it asserts to be true is really true! Unlike the Apocryphal books, Deuterocanonical books, Gnostic writings, the first professionals of faith, the writings of the "Apostolic Fathers, the writings of Enoch. All these writings corrupt original texts canonized by their variations and their historic definitions. These are authors claiming the name of the Saints who surrounded the Lord, but in fact usurpers trying to bring discord into the integrated original texts or by altering their meaning.

**Canonicity**: The root of the word canon comes from the Hebrew word "Kahah" and the Greek word "kanon "And its definition is a rule and standard. In fact Canon is a series of books inspired by God and written by men of God taking their authorities directly from the Word of God. There are 43 books in the Old Testament: The Pentateuch consisting of [Genesis](#), [Exodus](#),



[Leviticus](#), [Numbers](#), and [Deuteronomy](#). Historical Books consisting of [Joshua](#), [Judges](#), [Ruth](#), [I Samuel](#), [II Samuel](#), [I Kings](#), [II Kings](#), [I chronicles](#), [II Chronicles](#), [Ezra](#), [Nehemiah](#), [Esther](#). Poetic books like [Job](#), the [Psalms](#) composed of 5 books, but compiled in one single book in the translations, [Proverbs](#), [Ecclesiastes](#), [Song of Songs](#). The Great Prophets incorporate [Isaiah](#), [Jeremiah](#), [Lamentations of Jeremiah](#), [Ezekiel](#), [Daniel](#). The end Prophets of the Old Covenant representing [Hosea](#), [Joel](#), [Amos](#), [Obadiah](#), [Jonas](#), [Micah](#), [Nahum](#), [Habakkuk](#), [Zephaniah](#), [Haggai](#), [Zechariah](#), [Malachi](#).

There are 27 books in the New Testament, grouped as follows: Biographical books composed of [Matthew](#), [Mark](#), [Luke](#), [John](#). The historic book of [Acts](#). The Epistles of Paul composed of [Romans](#), [I Corinthians](#), [2 Corinthians](#), [Galatians](#), [Ephesians](#), [Philippians](#), [Colossians](#), [1Thessalonians](#), [2 Thessalonians](#), [1Timothy](#), [2 Timothy](#), [Titus](#), [Philemon](#).

The General Epistles incorporating [Hebrews](#), [James](#), [1 Peter](#), [2 Peter](#), [1 John](#), [2 John](#), [3 John](#), [Jude](#) and the Prophetic book of the [Revelation of John](#). The mathematical signature of God was put on these books. No one declared that these books were good or not. God took upon himself the responsibility of making known his books by integrating them in the Holy Scriptures.

It all started with Moses. Biblical research makes us to understand that Moses was the first author of the Bible. During the 40 years journey in the desert, Moses, who had been raised and trained in the wisdom of the Egyptian Princes, put in writings the experiences of the people's journey with God in the desert. From a writing perspective, Moses wrote the books of Exodus and Numbers before that of Genesis. He wrote the book of Genesis to situate the existence of the people of Israel vis-à-vis the origin of the world and neighboring countries. The book of Genesis answers the following questions: where does the state of Israel come from? Where do all the nations of the world come from? During the 40 years journey in the desert, Moses therefore wrote the Pentateuch; the first five books of the Bible (Exodus – Numbers– Genesis – Leviticus – Deuteronomy). Also, Moses probably authored the book of Job.

After Moses' death, his successor Joshua wrote the last chapters of the book Deuteronomy which gives an account of the end of Moses' life. Joshua also wrote the book that bears his name i.e. the book of Joshua. It is also likely that Phinehas, son of Aaron added some details to the practice of sacrifice in the book of Leviticus. The remaining books of the Old Testament were gradually written by the prophets. Wise men also wrote the book of Job, Psalms, and Proverbs under the inspiration of God, All these books were written and compiled to form the

canon of the Old Testament. A succession of inspired men of God wrote the Biblical books of the Old Testament right up to Malachi. Malachi is the last prophet that God sent to his people in the Old Testament. His prophecy was around 500 BC. After Malachi, the Jewish nation remained for 400 years without a prophet.

John the Baptist was the first prophet that God sent after 400 years of silence to announce the Coming of Jesus Christ. To distinguish the period from Malachi to John the Baptist, Christian theology speaks of the intertestamental period. That is the period between the end of the Old Testament and the beginning of the New Testament. Part of the apocryphal writings of the Old Testament was written during the intertestamental period when God stopped sending His prophets for 400 years. The scribes and Jewish rabbis, keepers of the sacred writings of the Old Testament refused to recognize all books written during the intertestamental period. These books we call "Apocrypha" were not written by prophets or people who had the inspiration of God. They were written by people who wanted to speak for God, without being God's messengers.

The writing of the New Testament also experienced a similar story. After the ascension of the Lord Jesus Christ in heaven and the beginning of the Church at Pentecost, the apostle Paul was the first to put in writing his epistles (letters) that he sent to various churches formed in the cities. The apostles of Jesus formed several churches in Asia, Europe and Africa. Each time a written letter or epistle gospel was completed, the existing churches throughout the world received the manuscript copied by disciples in Jerusalem under the centralized authority of all the apostles and their insertion order in the Sacred Writings. The Gospels were thus written either by the apostles of Jesus or the disciples. Thus, Matthew's Gospel was written by Matthew himself. Mark's Gospel was written by Jean- Mark who was a disciple of Apostle Peter. The Gospel of Luke was written by Luke the physician who was a companion of Apostle Paul. Apostle John wrote the last gospel, the gospel of John, the Epistles of John 1, 2 and 3 and the book of the Revelation. The book of Acts was written by Luke and the rest of the epistles were written by Apostle Paul, Apostle Peter and the author of the Epistle to the Hebrews. The last book sent to the churches was the Revelation of John. This latest book is the last book forming the canon, and a serious warning is given to those who would like to add or subtract from the book of God.

For I testify to everyone who hears the words of the prophecy of this book: If anyone adds to these things, God will add to him the plagues that are written in this book; and if anyone takes away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part from the Book of Life, from the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book.

(Revelation 22: 18-19)

God has always watched over His Book. Also the canon is His work and His message to men. One should not mix the wheat from God and the chaffs which are the apocryphal books. There are over 850 apocryphal books claiming to have come from Enoch, Joseph, Mary, Mary Magdalene, Thomas Barnabas, Judas and other names of men who walked close to God in the Old Testament and alongside Jesus the Holy Son of God in the New Testament. The main apocryphal writings and manuscripts were found in Qumran Cave which is a total corpus of about 850 manuscripts. Although some of them are not clearly identified, these writings can be divided into three groups: biblical texts, parabiblical or apocryphal texts and specific sectarian community of Qumran. The Dead Sea Scrolls were discovered between 1947 and 1952 in the northwest of the Dead Sea, in eleven caves located near the site of Khirbet Qumran. In Arabic Khirbet means "ruin." Since the writings claiming biblical names were not included in the canon of the Word of God. The Word of God, the Holy Bible is complete, perfect and true. Who would be interested in the discovery of manuscripts that sometimes contradict the Word of God 2000 years after these events? The answer is Satan. The Gospel of Judas is a [papyrus](#) manuscript of 26 pages written in [Coptic](#) dialect dating from Third Century or Fourth Century. It is part of a codex of some sixty pages between 62 and 66 according to sources, called Codex Tchacos, containing also two apocryphal texts, or, the Epistle of Peter to Philip and the First Revelation of James, which are also in manuscripts from Nag Hammadids. The discovery of this [codex](#) is cloudy, probably in the years 1960-1970 in the sands of the Egyptian desert near [El Minya](#).

This gospel was written in the first half of the second [century](#) and is actually a Coptic translation, an even older Greek text. Moreover, Irenaeus, the first bishop of Lyon, mentions it towards mid-second [century](#) in a text denouncing heresies: that text is actually considered apocryphal. It would be surprising that Judas Iscariot, who sold Jesus for thirty pieces of silver, had time to write his

last writings and record them in the Egyptian desert. Given that in his extreme agitation, he killed himself even before the Holy Son of God was crucified on the cross of Golgotha. Only a few days separated the betrayal of Judas and Good Friday when the Son of God did His work of salvation for all humanity. Christian scholars believe that most of these writings came from the Gnostic sect. This is a doctrine of a set of heterodox Christian sects of the first three centuries AD, who professed a radical dualism and founded the salvation of man on a rejection of the material subject to the forces of evil as well as superior knowledge of divine things. Could Satan have a better disciple for this work of counterfeiting?

As in the case of the Old Testament, after the death of Jesus' apostles and their disciples, many people began to write on their own. Thus we find the Gospels and writings of Thomas, Mary Magdalene, Mary the earthly mother of Jesus, Barnabas, James, Judas and many other names who surrounded our Lord. These people used the names of the apostles of Jesus to give credibility to their writings. To guard against fraud, the Christian scholars hold only canonized books held sacred and inspired to form the New Testament canon. Thus were born the Apocrypha, which, unfortunately, began to be reintroduced into Catholic and ecumenical Bibles. Christians do recognize only 70 books in the Bible, 43 for the Old Testament and 27 for the New Testament. If most Bibles have only 66 books, it is because the Psalms containing five (5) books : First book from 1 to 41; Second book from 42 to 72; Third book from 73 to 89; Fourth book 90 to 106; Fifth Book 107 to 150, were reduced into one book that is to say the book of Psalms. So this is why scholars and the true Christians around the world reject the Apocryphal books. They are not the inspired Word of God. They are the writings of human wisdom and cannot lead to salvation in Christ. However, by intellectual curiosity, Christians are free to read. But they can never use them in preaching or in their moral and spiritual decisions.

**Authority:** Apart from the knowledge of good and evil, all the Word of God would be futile without the central person of the divine plan, who is Jesus Christ. The Saviour by His divine redeeming sacrifice came to save all men. The center of creation is Christ.

All things were made through Him, and without Him nothing was made that was made. (John 1:3)

For by Him all things were created that are in heaven and that are on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or principalities or powers. All things were created through Him and for Him.

And He is before all things, and in Him all things consist.

(Colossians 1:16-17)

The ultimate goal or purpose of man on earth is to accept the redemptive sacrifice of Jesus Christ for himself. One possible symbol that might be viewed: A man alone before the cross of Calvary, no children, no family, no partner, no priest, no pope, completely alone as before birth and death. He sees Jesus on the cross and makes a decision. Is he the Son of God? Does he agree to give all his past sins, present and future to Jesus on the cross? Does he want to be reconciled with God through His Son Jesus? Does he repents of being a sinner and aspires to a life of eternal holiness? If the answer to these four questions is 'yes' then the person is saved. Jesus Christ as the divine person of Trinity serves as an authority on recognition of the Holy Scriptures.

In the New Testament, Jesus recognizes and gives Moses the credit of being the author of the law passed by God. (Matthew 8.4; 19.7-8, Mark 7.10; 12.26, Luke 16.29, 31, 24.44, John 5.45-46; 7.19, 22 and 23). Also, the New Testament writers argue that the author of the Mosaic law is Moses (John 1.45, Acts 3.22, 7.34 and 44, 13.39, 15.1 and 21, 21.21, 26.22; 28.23, Romans 9.15, 10.5 and 19; 1 Corinthians 9.9; 2 Corinthians 3.15, Hebrews 7.14, 8.5; 9.19, 10.28, 12.21). Jesus admitted that the books of the Old Testament were invested with divine authority and canonicity (Matthew 5.17-18, Luke 24.27, 44 and 45; John 10.34-36). Jesus confirmed the veracity of historical events and doctrinal Old Testament as: the creation of the universe in Mark 13.24-26; the creation of man in Matthew 19.4-5, Mark 10.6, 16.15; the Flood of Noah in Luke 17.26-27; destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah in Luke 17.28-30; Moses and the burning bush in Mark 12.26; manna in John 6.32; the tabernacle in Luke 6.3-4, Jonah and the big fish in Matthew 12.39-40. Nothing, Jesus did not contradict the historical facts of Holy books in anything. Jesus always quoted the Holy Scriptures. Instead Jesus exclaims, recognizing all the authority of the Bible:

For assuredly, I say to you, till heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle will by no means pass from the law till all is fulfilled.  
(Matthew 5: 18)

The books that make up the Bible are of God and together form a text in their correct original versions. God promised to preserve His Word. Canonicity acted so that God inspired books are promptly recognized and included in the Bible. God watched over His book the Bible by feeding His Word at the sight of the Jewish people and Christians, His Books received by the hands of men fully approved in their lifetime by Him. Finally, Jesus the Holy Son of God confirms the holiness of the Holy Scriptures in his ministry.

## **The signature of God on His Book the Bible**

Yvan Panin left his native Russia, to come to Canada in the village of Aldershot Ontario. In 1890, while studying the Bible, he surprisingly discovered a mathematical code. The seventy books of the Bible that make up the Word of God in its original version were written in three different languages. The Old Testament was written in Hebrew, but there are also some texts written in Aramaic. There are only **few texts written in Aramaic** in the Bible: a few chapters of Daniel (from 2:4-7, 28) and Ezra (4:8 – 6, 18) and a verse Genesis (31: 47) and Jeremiah (10:11). These are essentially books written after the return from exile. The 27 books of the New Testament were written in Greek.

These three languages are alphanumeric, that is to say that their alphabets also serve as figures. The perfect number is seven (7), the figure of God being the number seven (7). God's plan proposes seven dispensations, seven stages, seven candlesticks, seven churches, seven cups, seven trumpets, seven seals, seven days, cell renewal of the human body every seven years, the resting of earth every seven years, construction of the temple of Solomon in seven years, seven times the just falls and rises, seven stars, seven lamps which are the seven spirits of God, the lamb had seven horns and seven eyes and others. Seventy books are the Word of God in its original text, the seventy weeks of Daniel and others.

Mr. Panin realized that the Bible was encoded and called his discovery the "law of seven." All the letters forming each of the verses of the seventy books of the Bible by summons and division comes down to number seven in the original texts. The whole Book of God divided in its simplest form verse by verse and book by book giving seven (7). No other book on earth has this codification. The Bible was written by over forty (40) different writers through the centuries. The probability that each author not being inspired by God was able to send this code in each of these biblical books is mathematically unfathomable, the figure is incredible.

A team of ten researchers from Harvard University gave an alphanumeric connotation to English language which has a vocabulary potential of 400,000 words compared to the Hebrew language with a vocabulary potential of 45,000 words. Mathematicians despite the use of computers which is nine (9) times easier to compose concise and logical sentences were not even able in ten (10) months to incorporate 30 multiples of seven in their work as is the case in the Hebrew words of Genesis 1: 1. If anyone doubts the difficulty of composing a passage containing a large number of combinations of multiple of seven, let him try to experience it by himself. Only the 70<sup>1</sup> books making up the present canon of the Bible have this signature. The apocryphal books do not have this signature. A surprising fact, it appears that writers of the Old and New Testament have this code of God in their mathematical original texts. In contrast none of the apocryphal books have this mathematical code. So Jesus Christ is truly the cornerstone of Sacred Scripture. Jesus is the awaited Messiah given that the authors of the old and the new covenant were inspired by the same Holy Spirit. God confirms through His signature or His codification in the Holy Writings that Jesus is the Holy Son of God.

## **Another discovery on the Bible**

Rabbi Michael Dov Weissmand specialist in astronomy, mathematics and Judaic studies made an important discovery. In the original Hebrew and Greek phrases are hidden thereby showing the foreknowledge of God about future events. Indeed with the arrival of the computer, it is possible to decipher phrases encoded in the Bible. In an original biblical book, if we take the series of letters to all the seven Churches, twelve letters and so on, all follow equidistantly; there are words

---

<sup>1</sup> See the following website on the internet

<http://www.bibleetnombres.online.fr/>

and phrases clearly intelligible. These studies are now going on at the Hebrew University and many subjects are demystified. Naturally, it is not for man to know the future, but once events occur, these phrases encoded in all the books forming the biblical canon only, make sense. Prophet Daniel who on God's inspiration prophesied mainly about the end-times said this key phrase.

"But you, Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book until the time of the end; many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall increase."  
(Daniel 12: 4)

The advent of the new information technology and powerful computers makes it possible to establish sequences of letters and obtain intelligible words from them respecting God's signature explained above. Thus, the scientific world has been enriched with much knowledge. To give you an insight, here are some brief examples from several other logical sequences discovered covering different events which have already occurred. Computers have decoded certain events concerning our future. But the future belongs to God.

### **Assassinations**

- "Yitzhak Rabin", "assassin will assassinate", "name of the murderer", "Rabin's assassin" "Tel Aviv", "in 5756 (according to our calendar 1995-1996)", "Amir" ...
- "Prime Minister Netanyahu," "Elected", "Bibi", "For the horror", "All his people in war, "" Another will die, "" Her soul was settled. " • "Annouar Sadat," "president," "Parade," "shot", "shot and murder"

### **The Gulf War**

- "Hussein chooses a day", "missile", "Enemy," "Fire on the 3rd of Shevat (January 18, 1991) "Scud" ...

### **The U.S.A.**

- "Clinton", "President" ...
- "Watergate", "Who is he? President but he was expelled," "Nixon" ...
- "President Kennedy", "He will strike the head, died," Dallas "," Oswald "," name of the assassin who will assassinate, "" Ruby "," he will kill the murderer "



- "RF Kennedy", "S. Sirhan," "second governor to be killed"
- "A. Lincoln", "Booth", "murdered" ...

### **The conquest of space**

- "Apollo 11", "Man on the Moon," "Spaceship" ...

### **Literature**

- "Shakespeare," "Hamlet," "Macbeth" ...

### **Sciences**

- "Edison", "light bulb", "Electricity"
- "Newton", "gravity" ...

### **Past wars**

- "Pearl Harbor", "fleet", "Roosevelt", "the country's president, he gave the order to strike the day of great slaughter, "" Hiroshima, "" Hiroshima to end the battle of the World "...
- *"Hitler," "King of the Nazis," "a cruel house", "Eichmann," "a worn out people cry for murder, "" bitter Ocean of Auschwitz*

### **Terrorism**

- "Bus", "bomb," bomb Hamas, "" explosion ",," bomb, "" Fire, great noise, "
- "Goldstein", "Hebron", "man of the house of Israel that shall kill"
- "Oklahoma", "morning", "at the ninth hour", "19th day", "he set a trap, struck a sudden terror, "" Death, "" there will be terror, "" terror ",," massacre ",," sorry, massacred, " "Killed, cut to pieces", "Murrah Building", "his name is Timothy", "McVeigh" ...

### **Sects**

- "Aum Shinrikyo", "metro", "fever", "gas" ...

### **Disaster**

- "Earthquake", "SF Calif.", "LA Calif.," America ",," United States ",
- "Great Earthquake", "light earthquake", "Kobe, Japan", " earthquake has hit Japan, "" year of the plague, "" they have delayed the year of the plague ",," Israel and Japan "...

## **EXTRAORDINARY EVENTS**

Another surprising fact, but to the greatness of God for his son is this one. Few chapters in the Old Testament, are directly focused on the Messiah, there is Psalms 22, Psalms 41, Isaiah 53 and Isaiah 61. Now when using sequential logic interval number, we can clearly decipher this sentence in each of these prophecies in Hebrew "Jesus is his        name. While a name encoded from the beginning to the end of the Bible is clear, that of Yeshua, meaning Jesus in English. The probability that such a thing happens, while        respecting the perfect mathematical code of God is so unimaginable. The number is really great.

### **Prophecies announcing the coming of the Messiah in relation to the life of Jesus,**

I mean prophecies that we read literally in the Bible. I give you the approximate number of years before the birth of the Saviour and their probabilities of fulfillment. There are seventeen (17).

	<b>prophecy</b>	<b>Place and time</b>	<b>probability</b>
<b>1</b>	The birth of Jesus in Bethlehem in the tribe of Judah	Micah 3: 1 (600 years BC), Genesis 49: 10, (1400 years BC)	1 chance on 2400
<b>2</b>	Jesus will be preceded by a messenger	Isaiah 40: 3 (900 years BC)	1 chance on 20
<b>3</b>	Jesus would enter Jerusalem on a colt.	Zechariah 9: 9 (600 years BC)	1 chance on 50
<b>4</b>	He would be betrayed by a disciple BC)	Psalms 41: 10 (1000 years	1 chance on 10
<b>5</b>	His hands and feet would be drilled	Psalms 22: 17 (1000 years BC)	1 chance 100
<b>6</b>	He would be hurt by his enemies	Isaiah 53: 5 (900 years BC)	1chance on 10

<b>7</b>	The betrayal price shall be 30 pieces of silver.	Zechariah 9: 9 (600 years BC)	1 chance on 50
<b>8</b>	They shall spit on him and beat him	Isaiah 50: 6 (900 years BC)	1 chance on 10
<b>9</b>	The betrayal money would be thrown in the temple, and then given to the purchase of the potter's field	Zechariah 11: 13 (600 years BC)	1 chance on 200
<b>10</b>	Jesus keeps silent before his accusers	Isaiah 53: 7 (900 years BC)	1 chance 100
<b>11</b>	He would be crucified along with thieves,	Isaiah 53: 12 (900 years BC)	1 chance on 100
<b>12</b>	People would cast lots on his clothing	Psalms 22: 19 (1000 years BC)	1 chance on 100
<b>13</b>	His side would be pierced,	Zechariah 12: 10 (600 years BC)	1 chance on 100
<b>14</b>	None of his bones broken	Psalms 34:21 would (1000 years BC)	1 chance on 20
<b>15</b>	His body would not see Corruption	Psalms 16:10 (1000 years BC)	1 chance on 10 000
<b>16</b>	His burial in the tomb of a rich man	Isaiah 53: 9 (900 years BC)	1 chance on 100
<b>17</b>	Darkness covering the earth on the day of atonement	Amos 8: 9 (800 years BC)	1 chance on 1000

The probability that all these prophecies come true in the life of Christ according to the Word was 1 chance in 48 000 000 000 000 000 000 000 000 000, or one in 480 000 000 000 X 1 billion x 1 trillion. This can be possible only to God as the creator of the world.

### **The Ravages of Time**

The papyrus which was made up of the original texts for the Old Testament was destroyed by wear of time. However, with time, they were copied in full by the Masoretes schools. These were men who dedicated full time to the transcription of the Scriptures in the past. They were very well organized and were acting in accordance with the religious elite and the Hebrew or Jewish intelligentsia of their time. When they copied the precious manuscripts, they counted the number of words and letters to make sure everything was consistent with the original texts. Then, their copy was checked and verified to ensure that there was no reversal of letters or word change.

While the Greek writings of the New Testament have been preserved as we see in chapter Five of this book, by the Orthodox Church, the Cathar Church and Jerome for the Roman Catholic Church. Then, by the great reformers, English universities and Americanism in the original Greek text. Nowadays, the Biblical code that reflects the "law of the number 'seven'" demonstrates beyond any doubt that the Holy Writings, were faithfully transmitted to us until today. This paved the way for the translation of the Bible in all languages around the world and even in dead languages by integrating all the literally features paying attention to the original texts.

Since we now know the mathematical code and sequential equidistant intervals on sentences per biblical book. We must admit that an intelligence superior to that of man watched over this book, and that the omniscience and predestination of God are confirmed by the clear and sequential prophecies marking defined times after the fall of Adam and Eve. Men from various social strata and having low education could not humanly and on their own will, follow this coding and encode phrases hidden within the text. In the light of recent discoveries, we are forced to admit that these men were inspired by the Holy Spirit. Those who love holiness and eternal life will obey God through His book, the Holy Bible.

In my case, the mathematical code of the law of 'seven' number and sequential phrases encoded within the Bible shows that my God is all Mighty and He plays over the wise and intelligent of this world. I love my God; He is Holy and loves perfect goodness. Personally, I had to read the Bible just to realize that the real author of the Word is my Creator. Because only God my Creator

can know me so wonderfully.

## CREATION

Creation is a certainty. It is part of the biblical belief. The only point on which Christian scholars and evolutionists can persist is this: is one day for God twenty-four hours (24) in creation?

Peter summarizing the plan of God teaches this:

But, beloved, do not forget this one thing, that with the Lord one day is  
as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.

(2 Peter 3: 8)

Some theologians believe that one day means a day as we know it. Others believe that the explanation of Peter might apply. But the important thing is not to persist on points of doctrine component.

According to the doctrine of creation, animals were created on the fifth day and man the sixth day. Perhaps this is why man would not have known some animals, God having destroyed them since one day in creation is equal to a thousand years. Anyway in Genesis 2: 19 and 20, God brought all the animals to man; so that he gives them a name. From reading the Holy Scriptures, It is not mentioned that animals have disappeared or have been extinct.

Job, a man of God lived in all likelihood by the cult that was practiced in the ancient world or in the beginning of the new world after the flood. But we do not find his name in the genealogy after the flood. We must conclude that he is a righteous man who lived in the ancient world, not part of

the genealogy of Seth, son of Adam and Eve, who replaced Abel their son killed by Cain before the eyes of God.

Looking at one of the discussion of God with Job in Chapter 40 and 41 of the book of Job, we can read two kinds of animals the behemoth and leviathan. The description of these two animals appears to be a Brachiosaurus and a dragon. The leviathan is a figure of speech in the Word to describe the enemy.

Behemoth	Leviathan
<p><b>15</b> "Look now at the behemoth, which I made along with you; He eats grass like an ox. <b>16</b> See now, his strength is in his hips, And his power is in his stomach muscles. <b>17</b> He moves his tail like a cedar; The sinews of his thighs are tightly knit. <b>18</b> His bones are like beams of bronze, His ribs like bars of iron. <b>19</b> He is the first of the ways of God; Only He who made him can bring near His sword. <b>20</b> Surely the mountains yield food for him, And all the beasts of the field play there. <b>21</b> He lies under the lotus trees, In a covert of reeds and marsh. <b>22</b> The lotus trees cover him with their shade; The willows by the brook surround him. <b>23</b> Indeed the river may rage, Yet he is not disturbed; He is confident, though the Jordan gushes into his mouth, <b>24</b> Though he takes it in his eyes, Or one pierces his nose with a snare.</p> <p>(Job 40: 15-24)</p>	<p><b>1</b> "Can you draw out Leviathan with a hook, Or snare his tongue with a line which you lower? <b>2</b> Can you put a reed through his nose, Or pierce his jaw with a hook? <b>3</b> Will he make many supplications to you? Will he speak softly to you? <b>4</b> Will he make a covenant with you? Will you take him as a servant forever? <b>5</b> Will you play with him as with a bird, Or will you leash him for your maidens? <b>6</b> Will your companions make a banquet of him? Will they apportion him among the merchants? <b>7</b> Can you fill his skin with harpoons, Or his head with fishing spears? <b>8</b> Lay your hand on him; Remember the battle-- Never do it again! <b>9</b> Indeed, any hope of overcoming him is false; Shall one not be overwhelmed at the sight of him? <b>10</b> No one is so fierce that he would dare stir him up. Who then is able to stand against Me? <b>11</b> Who has preceded Me, that I should pay him? Everything under heaven is Mine. <b>12</b> "I will not conceal his limbs, His mighty power, or his graceful proportions. <b>13</b> Who can remove his outer coat? Who can approach him with a double bridle? <b>14</b> Who can open the doors of his face, With his terrible teeth all around? <b>15</b> His rows of scales are his pride, Shut up tightly as with a seal; <b>16</b> One is so near another That no air can come between them; <b>17</b> They are joined one to another, They stick together and cannot be parted. <b>18</b> His sneezings flash forth light, And his eyes are like the eyelids of the morning. <b>19</b> Out of his mouth go burning lights; Sparks of fire shoot</p>

	<p>out. <b>20</b> Smoke goes out of his nostrils, As from a boiling pot and burning rushes. <b>21</b> His breath kindles coals, And a flame goes out of his mouth. <b>22</b> Strength dwells in his neck, And sorrow dances before him. <b>23</b> The folds of his flesh are joined together; They are firm on him and cannot be moved. <b>24</b> His heart is as hard as stone, Even as hard as the lower millstone. <b>25</b> When he raises himself up, the mighty are afraid; Because of his crashings they are beside themselves. <b>26</b> Though the sword reaches him, it cannot avail; Nor does spear, dart, or javelin. <b>27</b> He regards iron as straw, And bronze as rotten wood. <b>28</b> The arrow cannot make him flee; Slingstones become like stubble to him. <b>29</b> Darts are regarded as straw; He laughs at the threat of javelins. <b>30</b> His undersides are like sharp potsherds; He spreads pointed marks in the mire. <b>31</b> He makes the deep boil like a pot; He makes the sea like a pot of ointment. <b>32</b> He leaves a shining wake behind him; One would think the deep had white hair. <b>33</b> On earth there is nothing like him, Which is made without fear. <b>34</b> He beholds every high thing; He is king over all the children of pride."</p> <p>(Job 41:1-34)</p>
could be a Brachiosaurus	Could be a Dragon

Before God breathed lives on earth. It was a heap of lifeless rock floating in space. Space was a lifeless abyss reserved for Satan and his fallen angels after the Great revolt.

The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God was hovering over the face of the waters. **3** Then God said, "Let there be light"; and there was light.  
(Genesis 1:2-3)

Before the destruction of the ancient world by the flood, even scientists cannot deny this fact. Giants inhabited the land.

There were giants on the earth in those days,  
(Genesis 6: 4)

Personally, I think that the gigantic animals described in the book of Job, sea monster described in some Bible versions in Genesis 1: 21 and Psalms 104: 26. The flood and hunting up to postdiluvian extermination might have destroyed this race called dinosaur. The Bible and creationists assure us that dinosaurs and humans cohabited in the Garden of Eden. All were vegetarians. The earth would be about  $\pm 6000$  years and the flood just over 4500 years. Creationists believe that this event brought the most layers fossil discoveries around the world. Other fossils were formed during subsequent local flooding, while the ground was stabilized after the great upheavals of the Flood. So the fossil layers of the earth were created in the same event and do not correspond to age strata as evolutionist theorists affirm.

During the flood, mud got mixed with a stone that was million of years old, even billions of years. Can you believe the evolutionary theory? No. And how do we respond to this question. What is the probability that a male and female of each species arrive simultaneously in evolution to procreate and fertilize their like? The answer would be bigger than the theory of "Bing Bang" itself. The figure is unfathomable, so this possibility is unlikely.

## Other theories

Several theories called evolutionary theory and the theory of Bing bang are discredited by their dating and perception, but that of Creation is the truth established by God. This divergence brought about by men has only one goal in the hearts of world leaders and its major institutions, that of creating confusion and doubt about God and His Book and consequently causing the loss of as many souls as possible.

The theory of evolution has been heavily criticized since the discovery of DNA. That of Bing Bang demonstrates the miracle of life within the fraction of a second that would have made the miracle of life possible, but does not explain intelligence. The theory of the age of the earth subtly



casts doubt on Biblical truths. Carbon 14 is an inexact science. In that sense, I explain. Can we say without a shadow of a doubt that the process of disintegration of carbon can follow a uniform rule? May be when a bone is 4000 years, an unanalyzed law, makes it to have a more accelerated aging process, making it appear as an object of several thousands of years whereas in reality it is only a few thousands of years old. Perhaps this process is different even between objects such as fossils, rocks or bones. After all depending on the environment and the laws that God Himself has instituted, carbon 14 cannot give some history in terms of years since it cannot certainly be quantified beyond its discovery. So it is foolhardy for a man to doubt the truths of the Bible, because carbon-14 estimates fossils age not knowing the history and intricacies of the deterioration of carbon, a law that belongs to God only in His creation. Did you know that the life of a can of "Coke" found, using Carbon 14, was traced to more than 1 million years? Our planet is ageing and deteriorating with the law of sin.

Still for some caution, Genesis 6: 4 tells us that the main reason for the destruction of the ancient world by the flood was that fallen angels had had children with wives of men and that corrupted the human race. In the example of Minotaur, man, half-human, half beast who was practicing cannibalism. Thus, men changed by supernatural intervention would have been put under conditions of hibernation exceptional in caves and this would provide links to an ordinary man for the day of the great seduction. Which attribute, can the flood give to carbon 14? Since mud got mixed with everything ever; deleting a single event in the Old postdiluvian World.

In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth (Genesis 1: 1). Such are the opening words of the Bible. There is a silence between the verse of Genesis 1: 1 and Genesis 1: 2) which presupposes a milestone, that of the revolt of the angels and the great devastation. Was there life on earth before the revolt of the angels? Only God and the angels know. Anyway, the earth was a mass and void (Genesis 1: 2). At what age in the mist of time was that shapeless mass? Only God who gave life to this shapeless knows. The devil knows that through a material dating back well beyond the creation, he can use this argument to create doubt in the Biblical truth through scientific theories.

Men, who control this earth and direct academic thought through a global organization called UNO, do not absolutely believe this non-biblical nonsense, yet they ordered it to be taught to the Goyms (ordinary person not part of their religion). They have a religion from the ancient world, given by the fallen angels, called KABBALAH vulgar and whose branch is "witchcraft." The fourth and fifth chapters will give you more details about this religion, its mode of operation and recruitment. Their goal is to lose as many souls as possible, by using the educational system to distance them from the truth: The Word of God.

The wages of sin is death (Romans 6: 23). This is also means the death of all creation, including the earth. Therefore let's also look at the seven stages dictated by God in His Word.

## CHAPTER II

### The seven stages of the Kingdom of God

It is very important to understand God's plan and the time allotted to Satan in order to understand the rest of this book. To the careful theologian, the stages of God's plan described in this book are different from Dispensations. Dispensations<sup>2</sup> affect the spiritual aspect. Obviously, for these reasons the law and Tribulation are connected to the same dispensation given the seventy weeks of Daniel. However in this book, there will be a specific stage that will speak of the Tribulation. Each part of the Plan of God bestowed upon man will be a milestone time.

From one end to another, the Bible presents God's kingdom in seven stages. They are:

- 1 - Paradise
- 2 - Theocracy in Israel
- 3 - The Kingdom of God foretold by the prophets
- 4 - The Kingdom offered and rejected at the first coming of Christ
- 5 - The Antichrist
- 6 - The Millennium
- 7 - The New Jerusalem and the kingdom of Heaven

### **1) Paradise**

In the beginning God made man and gave him a mandate to secure the earth, animals and all he had (Genesis 1:28, 2: 15-17). God allowed man to be free for He did not want a robot. Because of His fatherly love, He gave us that freedom. Man ruled in communion with God and the communion with God was so perfect, and all the earth was God's "to the Lord the earth and all its content, the earth and those who live therein for He founded it ... the King of glory shall come in. Who is this King of glory? The Lord of hosts, He is the King of glory (Psalms 24:

---

<sup>2</sup> Theology: Dispensations are spiritual parts attributable to the relationship between God and man.

1 and 9-10). But God gave man what he had created. The thief (Satan) came and set up man against God and thus monopolized the earth and all its content. Man lost his communion with God and since that time he is born under the influence of Satan.

That is why When Satan tempted Jesus in the wilderness: The devil, who raised and showed him in an instant the kingdoms of the earth, and said I'll give you all this power and the glory of these kingdoms, for it was given to me, and I give it to whoever I want. So if you worship me I think it will be all yours. Jesus replied: It is written: 'You shall worship the Lord your God, and Him only you shall serve.' (Luke 4: 5-8).

This is how the work of God was destroyed, Man whom God had so loved. God saw the misery of man and therefore put all his efforts to restore the lost kingdom and establish indestructible and perfect bases. Let's see how He will achieve it through the other stages.

## 2) Theocracy in Israel

Since<sup>3</sup> nations were turning away from Him, God abandoned them temporarily. In his incomprehensible patience, He even to a large extent abandoned them with the Government of the world. But He did not renounce his plan. Through Abraham, He aroused new people that would ensure both the restoration of His authority in this world and the salvation of the world. And quite naturally, to make the people happy and able to accomplish His mission, the Lord established a theocracy. He sought to regain a base amongst men from where He could sometime later launch His great attack against evil. That's why he told Israel:

... I bore you on eagles' wings and brought you to Myself. Now therefore, if you will indeed obey My voice and keep My covenant, then you shall be a special treasure to Me above all people; for all the earth is Mine. And you shall be to Me a kingdom of priests and a holy nation.' These are the words which you shall speak to the children of Israel."

(Exodus 19: 4-6)

---

<sup>3</sup> *The return of Jesus Christ* by Rene Pache, Emmaus Editions, 1806 St. Legier Vevey, Pages 42-43, full Text

Speaking of settling the people in Palestine and the division of the territory, he added:

The land shall not be sold permanently, for the land is Mine; for you  
are strangers and sojourners with Me.  
(Leviticus 25: 23)

So when the Israelites proposed to Gideon to establish a dynasty which he would be the chief, the  
latter rejected their offer outlining the rights of Jehovah:

Then the men of Israel said to Gideon, "Rule over us, both you and  
your son, and your grandson also; for you have delivered us from the  
hand of Midian."  
But Gideon said to them, "I will not rule over you, nor shall my son  
rule over you; the Lord shall rule over you." (Judges 8: 22-23)

Finally, the prophets recognized that full sovereignty over Israel when the Lord  
exclaimed:

(For the LORD is our judge,  
The Lord is our lawgiver,  
The Lord is our king;  
He will save us); (Isaiah 33:22)

And

Thus says the Lord, the King of Israel,  
And his Redeemer, the Lord of hosts:  
'I am the First and I am the Last;  
Besides Me there is no God.  
(Isaiah 44:6)

Unfortunately, the people of Israel quickly grew tired of the theocratic regime; they found it difficult to obey the Lord directly, without ever having to tremble before him and not to indulge in the evil inclinations of their heart as other nations. They asked Samuel to give them a king, he thought, sharing his faults, would be less severe and easier to influence. God said to Samuel, "... they have not rejected you, but they have rejected Me, that I should not reign over them. (1 Samuel 8: 7).

It is impossible for man to serve two masters. The moment Israel wanted a king; he rejected the sovereignty of God. It was thus against the will of God and an open rebellion against Him that ended theocracy on earth and in Israel. But as it is the only form of government that can please the Lord and the happiness of mankind, the Divine plan set aside for a time, could not fail to be fully resumed and completed. God who has the last word finally established His kingdom on earth.

About the way of being accepted by God after death, from the fall of Adam to Moses men functioned according to their conscience. Of course on some occasions we see men giving burnt offerings. They were aware that it is by the blood that they shall one day obtain forgiveness for their sins. They died in the hope that God saves by faith. Their soul went to "hell" and those who had been in conformity with God were released through the resurrection of Christ.

### **3) The Kingdom of God foretold by the prophets**

Following theocracy, Saul, the king in the heart of the people, was elected and gave a painful yoke to the people.

David was the king according to the heart of the Lord and He strengthened him. Therefore, the prophets began to proclaim that a Saviour was born. David himself prophesied:

For dogs have surrounded Me;  
The congregation of the wicked has enclosed Me.  
They pierced My hands and My feet;  
I can count all My bones.  
They look and stare at Me.  
They divide My garments among them,  
And for My clothing they cast lots.  
But You, O Lord, do not be far from Me;  
O My Strength, hasten to help Me!  
(Psalms 22: 16-19)

Psalms 89 of David, says that Christ the Saviour would come of his posterity:

Surely He has borne our griefs And carried our sorrows;  
Yet we esteemed Him stricken, Smitten by God, and afflicted.  
But He was wounded for our transgressions,  
He was bruised for our iniquities; The chastisement for our peace was  
upon Him, And by His stripes we are healed. (Isaiah 53: 4-5)

Surprising as it may seem, these prophecies were spoken 1,000 years before Jesus Christ. The men at this stage knew that a saviour would be born one day. To be justified before God, they had to offer animal sacrifice for the forgiveness of sins and die in the hope of the birth of a Saviour.

#### 4) The Kingdom of God offered and rejected at the first coming of Christ

The son of God was born. The first claim brought by the New Testament about him that he is the son of David, therefore, the rightful heir to the throne of Israel (Matthew 1: 1). Then the

angel said to her, "Do not be afraid, Mary, for you have found favor with God. And behold, you will conceive in your womb and bring forth a Son, and shall call His name Jesus. He will be great, and will be called the Son of the Highest; and the Lord God will give Him the throne of His father David. And He will reign over the house of Jacob forever, and of His kingdom there will be no end." (Luke 1: 30-33).

At his baptism, there was confirmation again:

When He had been baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened to Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and alighting upon Him. And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased." (Matthew 3: 16-17)

Jesus did many miracles; the conclusion of the gospel on this subject is worth reading:

And truly Jesus did many other signs in the presence of His disciples, which are not written in this book; but these are written that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that believing you may have life in His name.  
(John 20: 30-31)

Jesus is the center of God's plan. Jesus is the perfect man to God, so all those who come to Him will be justified before the Father and saved. "My Lord and my God" He cried out as Mary and Thomas (John 20:28 and Luke 1:46). Those who died under the law, died in the hope that one day he would come, in their act of faith. We who are under grace, we must die in faith that Christ is our God and Saviour.

Unfortunately, people seduce many others saying they are prophets, and I think of Rael and his aliens. Here is what God says: "Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, today, and forever." (Hebrews



13:8). Jesus was not a prophet, he is the Son of God and we must go to Him for salvation and that truth is unshakable. Jesus will never have successor.

But He, because He continues forever, has an unchangeable priesthood. Therefore He is also able to save to the uttermost those who come to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession for them. (Hebrews 7: 24-25)

Jesus has no substitute and no one can pass by someone other than Him, Jesus is the only Saviour of the world. In the last chapter, I will describe my Lord and my God in a more personal way.

At the end of this period of grace through faith in Jesus Christ, comes the Rapture of the Church of God and the Holy Spirit which will be explained in Chapter 3 with much greater precision.

## 5) The Antichrist

As you can see, the Lord will come to take his church because the Antichrist is the son of Satan. I think you need to understand now that our era could be so special, but we shall see that in chapter 3.

The Antichrist will come in the form of God or Christ in order to seduce men, and will even go and sit in the temple of God, proclaiming himself God (2 Thessalonians 2: 4, Daniel 11:36).

In Revelation and Daniel we learn that his reign will be seven years, being the missing week among the 70 weeks of Daniel, who happens to be under the law before Jesus Christ, according to the dispensations. Here, one can say that this week under the law before Jesus Christ is very important. When the law existed, Satan was master. Since his coming, Christ saves men who want salvation. Since Satan was defeated at the cross, he kept one week (7 years) under the law, postponed it to the period, after the coming of Jesus Christ in order to take possession of the earth for seven years exclusively.

Here's what the Bible says about the Antichrist:

He causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand or on their foreheads, and that no one may buy or sell except one who has the mark or the name of the beast, or the number of his name.

Here is wisdom. Let him who has understanding calculate the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man: His number is 666.

(Revelation 13: 16-18)

And

And I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was committed to them. Then I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for their witness to Jesus and for the word of God, who had not worshiped the beast or his image, and had not received his mark on their foreheads or on their hands. And they lived and reigned with Christ for a thousand years. (Revelation 20:4)

During and at the end of those seven years the earth will be extremely devastated by plagues in the form of seals, trumpets and bowls of the wrath of God (see Revelation). Those who have served faithfully the Lord Jesus with their lives will be resurrected and will reign with him during the millennium reign. But how can one be saved?

The Antichrist will kill Christians, and since we are under his law, the traditional Holocaust will be replaced. Christians should not accept the mark of the Antichrist on the forehead or in the hand, do not worship the beast or his image and moreover, believe in the Lord Jesus Christ.

I repeat: to be saved during the seven years of Antichrist, you will have to believe in Jesus Christ, refuse the mark of the Antichrist and refuse to worship the beast or his image.

The two acts will be mandatory, but God will judge and cast into the abyss (hell) he that cheats or be hypocritical. The Bible is explicit and categorical about this. According to the Bible, Because of this act of faith, those who will be taken by the Antichrist will be beheaded. Christians at that time, and in my opinion, soon coming, must buy their salvation with their lives.

Also, this is for the Jewish people during the Great Tribulation. When the Antichrist will chase the Jewish people; those in Judea must flee to the mountains, and for all other Jews, do not enter Jerusalem, nor in any other city (Luke 21: 21, Mat 24: 16). Two-thirds of Jews will be exterminated (Zechariah 13: 8).

## 6) The Millennium

The Antichrist and the men of perdition who follow him will be destroyed, but God will permit the elect to escape judgment. Indeed, God will protect his elect from judgments of the tribulation. The millennium will be a prosperous period when Jesus Christ will reign and Satan will be bound for a thousand years.

Then I saw an angel coming down from heaven, having the key to the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand.

He laid hold of the dragon, that serpent of old, who is the Devil and Satan, and bound him for a thousand years;

and he cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal on him, so that he should deceive the nations no more till the thousand years were finished. But after these things he must be released for a little while. (Revelation 20: 1-3)

So Satan will not disturb the Millennium inhabitants. Meanwhile, human nature shall remain subject to the law of sin unless one is in Jesus Christ.

The Millennium is a very interesting stage. I will be part of the first resurrection or the rapture to take place before the Antichrist. I shall reign with Christ during the Millennium. Now I will discuss the Millennium citing verses. This is what the Bible says about the Millennium:

But be glad and rejoice forever in what I create; For behold, I create Jerusalem as a rejoicing, And her people a joy.

I will rejoice in Jerusalem, And joy in My people; The voice of weeping shall no longer be heard in her, Nor the voice of crying. "No more shall an infant from there live but a few days, Nor an old man who has not fulfilled his days; For the child shall die one hundred years old, But the sinner being one hundred years old shall be accursed.

They shall build houses and inhabit them; They shall plant vineyards and eat their fruit.

They shall not build and another inhabit; They shall not plant and another eat; For as the days of a tree, so shall be the days of My people, And My elect shall long enjoy the work of their hands. They shall not labor in vain, Nor bring forth children for trouble; For they shall be the descendants of the blessed of the Lord, And their offspring with them.

"It shall come to pass That before they call, I will answer; And while they are still speaking, I will hear.

The wolf and the lamb shall feed together, The lion shall eat straw like the ox, And dust shall be the serpent's food. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain," Says the Lord.

(Isaiah 65: 18-25)

When God would have destroyed the Antichrist and all his acolytes (fallen angels and men of Perdition) then He will start the sixth part of his plan. As can be seen, it has to do with a world blessed by God with extreme gentleness and kindness. The Bible also tells us that this gentleness and kindness can co-exist to a greater extent because He Christ reigns as King of Judah in Israel with His elects of the first resurrection (2 Timothy 2: 12, Revelation 5: 10 and Revelation 20: 4) over this world, and because Satan is bound during this time, for one thousand (1000) years. People living physically during this time, will live very old, like the people of the ancient world, it shall be possible to live a thousand years.

a) **The form of the millennium**

During the millennium, the church of God will not prevail but rather Christ shall reign as prince (Revelation 1: 5, Ezekiel 48: 22, Zechariah 14:3-5) who will have authority over his people, Jews and all nations.

Now it shall come to pass, if you diligently obey the voice of the Lord your God, to observe carefully all His commandments which I command you today, that the Lord your God will set you high above all nations of the earth. (Deuteronomy 28:1)

God made this promise to the Jewish people when He gave them the Promised Land. Unfortunately, because of its filth, the Jewish people were dispersed throughout the nations. But God never repents of His promise. That is why God, in the millennium, will place the Jewish people in authority over the nations.

During this blessed time, we think that God will order His people to build in Jerusalem (in Israel) a temple whose dimensions and plan are detailed in Ezekiel, chapters 40 to 48. It is the temple in which God the Father dwells in all the glory of God and Christ shall be the prince of Judah. However, we know that a temple will be built before or during the early years of Antichrist since he will stop the daily sacrifice (Daniel 9: 27), and proclaim himself what he is not (2 Thessalonians 2:

4). During the Millennium, the King of Judah will guide the Jewish people about what they (Jews) would do at that time.

It is interesting that the land of Israel is divided into twelve tribes for food. There is also an equal part reserved for the prince of Judah at that time, the priest and faithful priests after a temporary Levites aberration, those who work in the city of Jerusalem and its suburbs, and finally, to people visiting (nations) who have come to the festival at the tabernacles to worship the glory of God so that they can eat and drink to satisfaction (Ezekiel Chapter 48).

In those glorious days when Israel will have recognized his Saviour Jesus Christ, Jews will announce to the nations that Jesus Christ is Lord and Saviour. A great spiritual awakening will take place (Isaiah 42:7-16). The Bible says:

In that day the deaf shall hear the words of the book, And the eyes of the blind shall see out of obscurity and out of darkness.

(Isaiah 29:18)

And

The eyes of those who see will not be dim, And the ears of those who hear will listen. Also the heart of the rash will understand knowledge, And the tongue of the stammerers will be ready to speak plainly.

(Isaiah 32:3-4) Other verses in (Isaiah 42:1-16)

On the other hand, the nature that was pushed into sin because of Adam's disobedience at Eden will again be reconciled with God.

The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, The leopard shall lie down with the young goat, The calf and the young lion and the fatling together; And a little child shall lead them. The cow and the bear shall graze; Their young ones shall lie down together; And the lion shall eat straw like the ox. The nursing child shall play by the cobra's hole, And

the weaned child shall put his hand in the viper's den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My holy mountain, For the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord As the waters cover the sea. "And in that day there shall be a Root of Jesse, Who shall stand as a banner to the people; For the Gentiles shall seek Him, And His resting place shall be glorious." (Isaiah 11:6-10)

It seems that all animals shall be herbivores again. The lion will eat straw like a cow. It is also possible that the Millennium climate will be different from the current climate, as there was a climate change after the flood. There will be no more war on earth (Micah 4: 3). There will be an economy in nations and transport will be developed to go up to the feast at the tabernacles.

A torrent of water shall be released from the threshold of the house of the Lord (Ezekiel 47: 1) and shall cleanse the polluted planet (Ezekiel 47: 9). Since rich men and later on their leader the Antichrist, pollute the earth. On either side of the river, all kinds of fruit trees will grow. Their leaves will not wither and their fruit will have no end, they will mature every month, because of water from the sanctuary. Fruit used for food and their leaves for healing (Ezekiel 47: 12). This shall be the millennium era since the torrent flows into the sea (Ezekiel. 47: 8), and that the sea will not exist in the kingdom of heaven (Revelation 21: 1).

Indeed, what a difference from today where men are blinded by Satan! During the Millennium, a large number of men will be converted and shall hail the glory of the Lord Jesus Christ. But we shall have to go to Jesus Christ to be saved and some, still here will reject Christ during this period, their purification will be external but in their heart they shall plot against God. What is therefore the difference between some people today who blindly follow a Christian religion and deny Jesus Christ who is the power that saves on whom Christian religion depends?

## b) **What God wants**

Men are saved by grace, but must carry a burnt offering to show that God is holy, and it is through the blood of the lamb that they are redeemed. Israel must turn to his king (Zechariah 12: 10), be converted to Christ (Hebrews 13: 8) because of His covenant sealed with blood (Zechariah 9:9-11). For Christ is God and the Sacrifice of His Holy blood shed on the Cross is much more powerful and eternal (Hebrews 7: 1-10: 18). It seems people of the Millennium, justified and sanctified by the blood of Christ will be sealed by the Holy Spirit. (2 Samuel 7: 15, Ezekiel 36:25-27, Ezekiel 39: 29 and Isaiah 51: 7). Also, as under the grace, it will be impossible to fall during the great revolt. Theocracy that satisfies God and Christ who will be the Prince of Judah and the nations will be of great gentleness and kindness. The elects of the first resurrection of the righteous will be priests everywhere on earth and contribute, as Saints in the management of the world by Jesus Christ according to God's plan in a manner consistent with the Holy Spirit. They will reign with Christ.

In Ezekiel, chapters 40 - 48, it is clear that the Glory of God shall dwell in the temple and Israel will be the chosen people from where nations will be purified. It is to the people of Israel that victims who will serve as a holocaust to their sins will go and it is through Israel that burnt offerings for the feast of tabernacles will be produced. Each year, each person from all nations will come to the feast of tabernacles to be cleansed by Christ. The feast of the tabernacles shall provide an opportunity for men of the Millennium to bow before God to thank him for all His kindness and worship Him by bowing before His Majesty. It will also be a time of rejoicing among the elect and healing for the sick. Refusal to attend the Feast of Tabernacles, by rebels will cause death from the wound (Zechariah 14:12-19). But all the elect will be very happy to go to the feast of tabernacles; it will be a great moment of rejoicing for them.

"Thus says the Lord of hosts: 'Peoples shall yet come, Inhabitants of many cities; The inhabitants of one city shall go to another, saying, "Let us continue to go and pray before the Lord, And seek the Lord of hosts. I myself will go also." Yes, many peoples and strong nations Shall come to seek the Lord of hosts in Jerusalem, And to pray before



the Lord.' "Thus says the Lord of hosts: 'In those days ten men from every language of the nations shall grasp the sleeve of a Jewish man, saying, "Let us go with you, for we have heard that God is with you." (Zechariah 8:20-23)

Thus, all those who respect the plan of Christ will be purified. Naturally, some will manifest faith but in reality, they will develop hatred against God. So let's see what shall become of that.

c) **Sin always possible**

As I said earlier, man is born a sinner because he fell under the influence of Satan when Adam and Eve tasted the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil.

Even though Satan shall be bound and man shall no longer be blind during the millennium, he nevertheless remains rebellious to God from birth. Many will go to Jesus Christ, some will even go up to the Feast of Tabernacles each year to be purified, but will not accept Christ as their Lord and Saviour.

Anyway, at the end of the thousand years the devil will be loosed, and he will seduce the kings of the earth, greedy of more power and together they will rise against God. He will destroy them with fire from His mouth. The Bible says:

Now when the thousand years have expired, Satan will be released from his prison and will go out to deceive the nations which are in the four corners of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle, whose number is as the sand of the sea. They went up on the breadth of the earth and surrounded the camp of the saints and the beloved city. And fire came down from God out of heaven and devoured them.

(Revelation 20:7-9)

d) **The judgment day**

The first resurrection shall take place in two parts: one before the Antichrist and the other, after the plagues and the reign of the Antichrist. We will summarize this in detail in the next chapter. Both resurrections are those of the righteous, those who shall take part in eternal life with the Lord Jesus Christ and God. But I would not want to be part of those who will wake up and resurrect after the millennium for they are those who will mostly face judgment, and will be rejected from the face of God forever. Consequently, their fate will be with Satan and his angels in hell.

The first part of the resurrection of the righteous shall take place before the Antichrist. All those who died in the Lord Jesus Christ and in hope that one day he would come, will be resurrected during the first resurrection. The second part of the resurrection of the righteous shall take place after the plagues, that is to say, when God will destroy the Antichrist. Those who would have been beheaded for the sake of the Lord Jesus Christ will be resurrected. No righteous will therefore fail to resurrect. Regarding the millennium, some say that all the righteous will live a thousand years; me, I doubt it because of Revelation 20:15; “And anyone not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire.”. So there will be dead, having accepted Jesus Christ as Saviour, whose names were written in the book of life at the millennium, between the second resurrection at the end of the reign of the Antichrist, and thousand years later on the Judgment day. Reading the Bible verses dealing specifically with judgment, there is a book of life opened in the midst of the books of the dead. This tends to confirm that during the thousand years, the Righteous belonging to God will die. The Bible says:

Then I saw a great white throne and Him who sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away. And there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, standing before God, and books were opened. And another book was opened, which is the Book of Life. And the dead were judged according to their works, by the things which were written in the books. The sea gave up the dead who were in it, and Death and Hades delivered up the dead who were in them. And they were judged, each one according to his works. Then Death and Hades were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second

death. And anyone not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire. (Revelation 20:11-15)

That's how the millennium will end. One can see that everything that is flesh under the jurisdiction of Satan remains sin because of Adam and Eve. Even the best God and earthly paradise cannot make man happy on earth. Also, the present earth and heaven will come to an end at the sixth stage, the millennium and the eternal plan of God begins at the seventh stage and extends forever. Come on, this is the part revealed to us.

## **7) The Kingdom of the Everlasting God**

The millennium, as good as it could be shall end with Judgment day. So Christ and his elect will begin a life of eternal happiness without sin because they now have incorruptible bodies being part of the Spirit of God. While Satan and men who did not accept Christ as their personal Saviour (anathema) will go to eternal damnation in Gehenna or hell. Naturally, there are different levels in Paradise as well as Hell depending on the life one lived on earth (John 14:2-3).

But the cowardly, unbelieving, abominable, murderers, sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death.  
(Revelation 21:8)

This happens to be the Judgment day and eternal death for those whom God rejects far from His face. After that, Christ, when He will defeat all his enemies, will give back to His Father all the authority He had entrusted Him as Saviour and Just Judge.

Then comes the end, when He delivers the kingdom to God the Father, when He puts an end to all rule and all authority and power. For He must reign till He has put all enemies under His feet. The last enemy that will be destroyed is death. For "He has put all things under His feet." But when He says "all things are put under Him," it is evident that He who put all things under Him is excepted. Now when all things

are made subject to Him, then the Son Himself will also be subject to Him who put all things under Him, that God may be all in all.

(1 Corinthians 15: 24-28)

Then God will destroy the earth and the sky as we know them because they are filled with the filth of men. God shall create new earth and new heavens only for those who will forever be with Him. God will dwell with them forever.

Now I saw a new heaven and a new earth, for the first heaven and the first earth had passed away. Also there was no more sea. Then I, John, saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down out of heaven from God, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a loud voice from heaven saying, "Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and He will dwell with them, and they shall be His people. God Himself will be with them and be their God. And God will wipe away every tear from their eyes; there shall be no more death, nor sorrow, nor crying. There shall be no more pain, for the former things have passed away." Then He who sat on the throne said, "Behold, I make all things new." And He said to me, "Write, for these words are true and faithful." And He said to me, "It is done! I am the Alpha and the Omega, the Beginning and the End. I will give of the fountain of the water of life freely to him who thirsts. He who overcomes shall inherit all things, and I will be his God and he shall be My son. But the cowardly, unbelieving, abominable, murderers, sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars shall have their part in the lake which burns with fire and brimstone, which is the second death."

(Revelation 21: 1-8)

If anyone was wondering: How to conquer and inherit these things. I say it now and it is the Bible that confirms the saying: "Believe that Jesus is the Son of God, Holy and True, repent of your sins and accept Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour in your own life for nobody

can do it for you. Then give all your sins to Christ on the cross and ask him to save you". I have devoted the last two chapters of this book to explain the Word of God: How can one be saved?

Besides the fact that the new earth will contain no sea, death will be no more, there will be no more mourning, or pain that is to say no more disease and disability. We will have an incorruptible body, celestial and spiritual mind (1 Corinthians 15:35-58). Our heavenly bodies will be full of brightness and may be considered as the earthly measure of young and beautiful, at least in my opinion. Our conscience will not accuse us; because we will at all times do what is good and right. We shall eat and drink (Matthew 26: 29, Luke 24:42-43). We will no more get married but we will be like the angels of God (Matthew 22: 30), we will not have children, we will not sleep. However, there will be various statutes and different homes to the extent of our earthly life (John 14:2-3, 1 Corinthians 3:13-15).

The Kingdom will feature different articles, but unlike our terrestrial world, everyone will be happy and fulfilled. Thanks to God who will give us incorruptible body.

The holy city, new Jerusalem in the Kingdom of Heaven is described in detail in Revelation 21:6-27 and Revelation 22:1-5, give us the detailed information about the tree of life. As you can see, the Word of God says nothing about his Kingdom. But we know from what has been said, that it is happiness! For my part, I do believe that the best thing on earth is the love between a man and a woman. As sweet as this relationship may be if it is maintained, it however remains imperfect. Have you ever seen a household without quarrel or misunderstanding? For the short time that this happens, is it not too painful? So if there is pain, it means that happiness is imperfect. Could we live forever with the same person?

In the Kingdom of God, the smallest of joys will be perfect happiness. Our sinful nature prevents us from perceiving or imagining the bliss. But it will be a wonderful world to discover when we think and act according to the Holy Spirit. Imagine a world without money where we can do whatever makes us happy in our spiritual mind, an extended eternity of happiness.

## **8) The seven (7) stages in the plan of God**

<p>1 <u>The fall of Adam and Eve</u></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>- Earthly Paradise</li> <li>- The age of innocence</li> </ul>	<p>2 <u>Theocracy</u> (From the fall of Adam and Eve to the covenant with Abraham right up to Moses)</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>- The conscience and hope for a future Holy saviour</li> </ul>	<p>3 <u>Announcement of the coming of Christ by prophets</u></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>- Presentation of Holocaust for the forgiveness of sins under the law of Moses and hope of a Holy Saviour to come</li> </ul>
<p>4 <u>Jesus defeats Satan at the cross</u></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>- Salvation through faith in Jesus Christ on the cross. (Believe in the Lord Jesus (Holy and True God), repent of our sins, accept that Jesus bears our sins individually and ask him to save us.</li> <li>- Once saved, we are justified and Sealed with the Holy Spirit, and then our Sanctification begins. - This phase ends with the Part of the resurrection of the righteous, the Rapture of the Church and the Holy Spirit on earth at the sound of a trumpet.</li> </ul>	<p>5 <u>Antichrist</u> To be saved:</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>- Do not accept the mark</li> <li>- Do not worship the image of the beast</li> <li>- Believe in Jesus Christ right up to physical death; otherwise they will not be saved since they will not be sealed by the Holy Spirit</li> <li>- Jews must not enter Jerusalem or in cities. Those in Judea must flee to the mountains.</li> <li>- Ends through judgment in the form of total destruction of the wicked</li> <li>- The second part of the Resurrection of the Righteous</li> <li>- Only the elects alive will pass to the stage of the millennium</li> </ul>	<p>6 <u>Millennium</u></p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>- Jesus reigns as King with His elect of the resurrection of the Righteous. The Glory of God will inhabit the temple.</li> <li>To be saved:</li> <li>- Believe in Jesus Christ</li> <li>- Accept the sacrifice of Jesus in a personal way and bring in Holocaust offerings to God during the feast of the Tabernacles.</li> <li>- It seems that the believer will be sealed with the Holy Spirit. It shall be an obligation to mount the Feast of Tabernacles each year.</li> <li>- Satan is bound for a thousand years</li> <li>- Judgment day</li> </ul>
	<p>7 <u>The New Jerusalem</u> (Eternal life and Kingdom of Heaven)</p> <ul style="list-style-type: none"> <li>- For those who have personally accepted the sacrifice of Jesus or,</li> <li>- Before the coming of Christ for those who died in the hope of a Saviour or according to the dispensation in force at the time.</li> </ul>	

In short, each step prescribed by God is essential to the accomplishment of Eternal Kingdom. The happiness promised to men comes through the holiness of Christ, who has given us His Holy Spirit as an inheritance. By our sinful nature, man can never be happy without Jesus Christ. Also, we will discuss in detail the next stage in the Divine Plan. According to the prophecies and the signs of the times, we are now at the eve of the Rapture of the Church and the Holy Spirit on earth.

## CHAPTER III

### End of the era of grace until the end of the stage reserved for the Antichrist

This is the most terrible and the most destructive era in the history of mankind. I think and many also believe that we have arrived at this time. This time, as described in the Word, coincides remarkably with our era. People are right to wonder what the future holds.

*Before continuing this study on the stage of Tribulation or the time reserved for the Antichrist, the son of Satan, I would like to inform the reader that several prophetic passages shall be cited. This stage of the Word is mainly concentrated on the Revelation, Daniel and Thessalonians. Here I make a warning, because I am a man who fears God. I had to use biblical verses of prophetic books like Revelation, Zechariah, Daniel, and Ezekiel; to provide necessary theological teachings. Again, I want to emphasize that the only truth is the Bible, the Word of God, verse by verse making up each of its books, without adding or subtracting. So, dear readers, it is your responsibility to ensure that the biblical quotations used in this book are accurate, what I myself recognize is the fact that I wanted to extract whole portions of the Bible verses to attach to this book. But in course of typing, I might have made an error, so, only the original quotation of the Bible is valid and truthful. Also, with regard to the prophecies, interpretations, explanation and data speculation, they remain prone to error. So the only truth remains the full prophecy in the Bible without adding or subtracting anything. The rest is only speculation.*

*For assuredly, I say to you, till heaven and earth pass away,  
one jot or one tittle will by no means pass from the law till all is  
fulfilled.*

*(Matthew 5: 18)*



***This means that whatever God has written will happen.***

Here are the signs and instructions that God gives in respect of that period. This is the last part of theory or theology, what is there and why these things happen, before moving on to our era. As you can see, the Bible is fascinating and has been designed in the image of creation. When God created the earth, it did not have all the lakes, rivers and mountains in isolation. Each being separated from the four corners of the planet! That is exactly how the Bible is made; God did not put a specific topic in a single place. In one Bible passage, He explains an idea and in another passage He further adds more meaning to the previous idea.

The current chapter will be divided into four separate parts:

- 1) The rapture of the church, the resurrection of the righteous, the Advent of Christ and the time of the Great Tribulation
- 2) The prophecies to be fulfilled before the Rapture of the Church
- 3) The formation of the satanic block
- 4) The conduct of the satanic reign

This division is strictly intended to guide the reader clearly in this biblical time called "Great Tribulation."

## **PART I - The rapture of the Church, the resurrection of the righteous, the Advent of Christ and the time of tribulation**

In this subchapter, we will identify the two resurrections that concern the Righteous. The first part of the resurrection coincides with the rapture of the Universal Church of Christ whereas the second part coincides with His coming, when there shall be a day of judgment at the end of a period of seven years. Then we will determine the time of the Great Tribulation.

# 1) Signs of the Advent of Christ

The first part of the resurrection of the righteous and the Rapture of the Church on earth is to mark the beginning of the Christian "Tribulation of saints" and for the Antichrist the beginning of his satanic reign.

Indeed, Matthew 24 brings out two different resurrections but merged into one: Resurrection of the Righteous. The first resurrection shall be through the rapture of the Church and the second through the judgment of all nations at the end of the Great Tribulation seven (7) years later. Here, the dead in Christ shall be resurrected during the Great Tribulation at the end of the seven (7) years allocated to the Antichrist. This is called the Advent of Christ as it is the tangible return of Christ as King of Judah during the Millennium.

Let us read Matthew 24:1-31, and then look for signs that differ for each resurrection because times are different.

Then Jesus went out and departed from the temple, and His disciples came up to show Him the buildings of the temple. **2** And Jesus said to them, "Do you not see all these things? Assuredly, I say to you, not one stone shall be left here upon another, that shall not be thrown down." **3** Now as He sat on the Mount of Olives, the disciples came to Him privately, saying, "Tell us, when will these things be? And what will be the sign of Your coming, and of the end of the age?" **4** And Jesus answered and said to them: "Take heed that no one deceives you. **5** For many will come in My name, saying, 'I am the Christ,' and will deceive many. **6** And you will hear of wars and rumors of wars. See that you are not troubled; for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. **7** For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. And there will be famines, pestilences, and earthquakes in various places. **8** All these are the beginning of sorrows. **9** Then they

will deliver you up to tribulation and kill you, and you will be hated by all nations for My name's sake. **10** And then many will be offended, will betray one another, and will hate one another. **11** Then many false prophets will rise up and deceive many. **12** And because lawlessness will abound, the love of many will grow cold. **13** But he who endures to the end shall be saved. **14** And this gospel of the kingdom will be preached in all the world as a witness to all the nations, and then the end will come. **15** "Therefore when you see the 'abomination of desolation,' spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place" (whoever reads, let him understand), **16** then let those who are in Judea flee to the mountains. **17** Let him who is on the housetop not go down to take anything out of his house. **18** And let him who is in the field not go back to get his clothes. **19** But woe to those who are pregnant and to those who are nursing babies in those days! **20** And pray that your flight may not be in winter or on the Sabbath. **21** For then there will be great tribulation, such as has not been since the beginning of the world until this time, no, nor ever shall be. **22** And unless those days were shortened, no flesh would be saved; but for the elect's sake those days will be shortened. **23** Then if anyone says to you, 'Look, here is the Christ!' or 'There!' do not believe it. **24** For false christs and false prophets will rise and show great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect. **25** See, I have told you beforehand. **26** Therefore if they say to you, 'Look, He is in the desert!' do not go out; or 'Look, He is in the inner rooms!' do not believe it. **27** For as the lightning comes from the east and flashes to the west, so also will the coming of the Son of Man be. **28** For wherever the carcass is, there the eagles will be gathered together. **29** "Immediately after the tribulation of those days the sun will be darkened, and the moon will not give its light; the stars will fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens will be shaken. **30** Then the sign of the Son of Man will appear in heaven, and then all the tribes of the earth will mourn, and they will

see the Son of Man coming on the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. **31** And He will send His angels with a great sound of a trumpet, and they will gather together His elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

As I said before, Christ in Matthew 24 makes allusion to two events, but here, he is directly addressing His people, the Jewish people, because during the Tribulation and the reign of the Antichrist it is the Jewish people who will become the messenger of Christ.

Also, there is an interrelationship between the Jewish people and the Church. Indeed, the role of Evangelization to be assumed by the Jewish people begins when the Church of Christ is raptured. The Antichrist will arrive and the Jewish people will convert to Christ. Now, to better understand what is happening now and what will take place during the reign of the Antichrist, we must understand the role of the church and the signs of its rapture, the role of Jews and the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ.

Many will say it's all very nice but did the Lord not say: "For you yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so comes as a thief in the night" (1 Thessalonians 5:2). In terms of day and time, nobody knows, not even the angels of heaven, nor the Son but the Father alone (Matthew 24:36). Yes, these words were pronounced and they are true.

Certainly we cannot tell the time or the day of Christ's return, or say that this day will be understood by all. Jesus, in his incredible love for us gave us the signs of the Rapture of the Church and those of his coming. It is possible to know the signs of the end times. However, it is a duty for all Christians of the world to know because the Lord gave these signs in order to ensure that we are not taken by surprise.

## 2) Rapture of the Church and the first part of the resurrection of the Righteous

The church was established when the Jews refused to accept Jesus as the Christ, the Son of God and Saviour of men. Then at that moment a power of blindness seized the Jewish nation.

For I do not desire, brethren, that you should be ignorant of this mystery, lest you should be wise in your own opinion, that blindness in part has happened to Israel until the fullness of the Gentiles has come in. **26** And so all Israel will be saved, as it is written: "The Deliverer will come out of Zion, And He will turn away ungodliness from Jacob; **27** For this is My covenant with them, When I take away their sins." **28** Concerning the gospel they are enemies for your sake, but concerning the election they are beloved for the sake of the fathers. **29** For the gifts and the calling of God are irrevocable. (Romans 11: 25-29)

As history attests, the Jews rejected Christ, hence, he was presented to other nations and some men among these nations accepted Him (Christ). But as clearly written in the first verse, it is necessary that all Gentiles be converted during the time of grace granted to nations. Then it will be the rapture of the Church and eventually, Israel will be converted to Christ.

The portion of Israel who hardened his heart is the portion on which the Church of Christ will reign on earth. Currently, she has reigned for over two thousand years, but I think there is only little time left and you'll see why a little further. Therefore it has been very difficult during these two thousand years of grace to have converts among the Jews.

### 3) When will the Church be raptured and when will the dead rise?

Here's what Paul says about this:

**1** Now, brethren, concerning the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ and our gathering together to Him, we ask you, **2** not to be soon shaken in mind or troubled, either by spirit or by word or by letter, as if from us, as though the day of Christ had come. **3** Let no one deceive you by any means; for that Day will not come unless the falling away comes first, and the man of sin is revealed, the son of perdition, **4** who opposes and exalts himself above all that is called God or that is worshiped, so that he sits as God in the temple of God, showing himself that he is God. **5** Do you not remember that when I was still with you I told you these things? **6** And now you know what is restraining, that he may be revealed in his own time. **7** For the mystery of lawlessness is already at work; only He who now restrains will do so until He is taken out of the way. **8** And then the lawless one will be revealed, whom the Lord will consume with the breath of His mouth and destroy with the brightness of His coming. **9** The coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders, **10** and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be saved. **11** And for this reason God will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie, **12** that they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

(2 Thessalonians 2: 1-12)

The temple in which the Antichrist shall sit and claim to be God is the ancient temple of Solomon. Currently, the location, layout and plans of work are being prepared. Only the start of construction is

being awaited. It is possible that construction must take place within the first year of the Antichrist. With technological means of today's world and the mild weather of Israel, it is possible that the temple be built within six months.

The Church will probably not see the Antichrist, although it will be born under the stage of Grace. It will probably be visible to the nations when the Rapture of the Church and of the Holy Spirit would have taken place, in due time by God. But the Antichrist will not do anything so long as the Church and the Holy Spirit will still be on earth. However, the Church and the Holy Spirit will be raptured and disappear so that the Antichrist can deceive false Christians and the ungodly, left, and will try to change the law and the time set by God.

#### **4) How will the Church be raptured?**

Paul also tells us that the dead in Christ shall rise first and then those alive who believe in Christ will follow;

**13** But I do not want you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning those who have fallen asleep, lest you sorrow as others who have no hope.

**14** For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so God will bring with Him those who sleep in Jesus. **15** For this we say to you by the word of the Lord, that we who are alive and remain until the coming of the Lord will by no means precede those who are asleep. **16** For the Lord Himself will descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of an archangel, and with the trumpet of God. And the dead in Christ will rise first. **17** Then we who are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds to meet the Lord in the air. And thus we shall always be with the Lord. **18** Therefore comfort one another with these words.

(1 Thessalonians 4: 13-18)

So, the Church and the Holy Spirit will no longer be on earth and the Jews will be converted, while Antichrist will blind the nations. The Bible says: "The dead in Christ shall rise First, after we the living will be caught up" This is a real kidnapping, quickly to the voice of the archangel and with the trumpet of God. According to several believers, we live in a fantastic century and all the apostles would have loved to have a glimpse of this era that of being caught up without knowing death.

## **5) Second Part of the resurrection of the Righteous**

As shall be discussed in this chapter, the Antichrist will persecute Christians among nations and the Jewish people. Indeed, the conversion of the Jewish people to Christ will enable God to convert one hundred and forty-four thousand Jews, twelve thousand from each tribe who will proclaim the good news to nations during the reign of Satan. Also, two faithful witnesses will prophesy for one thousand two hundred sixty days, clothed in sackcloth. They will have the power to kill their enemies by devouring fire out of their mouths. They will be defeated by the beast at the end of their testimony and presentations on the public square, which is believed to be in the city of Jerusalem during three and half days. Then they shall come back to life, and a voice from heaven will tell them to go up. They shall go in a cloud to the astonishment of ungodly people. (Read Revelation 11:3-14). Therefore the second part of the resurrection of the righteous will take place seven years after the rapture of the church marking year one of the Antichrist.

Moreover, in Revelation 20:4, this second resurrection of the righteous is confirmed in the following terms:

And I saw thrones, and they sat on them, and judgment was committed to them. Then I saw the souls of those who had been beheaded for their witness to Jesus and for the word of God, who had not worshiped the beast or his image, and had not received his mark on their foreheads or on their hands. And they lived and reigned with Christ for a thousand years.

(Revelation 20: 4-6)



Indeed, as noted in this second part of the resurrection of the righteous we discovered that it will take place after the Great Tribulation, after the reign of Satan, during the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. So it will take seven years between each of the two sections forming the first resurrection of the righteous. But let's see how the Word of God highlights the time of the Antichrist. To recap, the first part of the resurrection of the righteous will occur at the end of the period of grace, it is called the rapture of the Universal Church and the Holy Spirit from the world. The Lord shall come in the clouds of Heaven and at the sound of the trumpet, an archangel. Here, all believers who accepted Jesus Christ into their hearts, sincerely, and were sealed by the Holy Spirit, will be caught up from the earth. Only the wicked shall remain on earth. The Lord Jesus Christ will not set foot on earth.

The second part of the resurrection of the righteous will take place seven (7) years after the reign of Satan, the wicked shall be judged; they shall all be destroyed; only the elect will enter the stage of the Millennium. Jesus Christ will raise the dead in him during the Tribulation of seven (7) years and will come to reign as King of Judah during the Millennium, after destroying the Antichrist and Satan at Armageddon. The elect who take part in the resurrection of the righteous, will reign with Christ a thousand years and live eternally in the Kingdom of Heaven.

## 6) The time of satanic reign

As the Lord said, the Rapture of the Church must take place. This signifies the end of grace explained in detail above. If this era is exactly two thousand years, He would be at the eve of His coming given that Jews of the prophecy era had three hundred and sixty days in their calendar.

After this act, the time allotted to Satan begins i.e. satanic year one. This seven years time shall be characterized by two periods of three and a half years and called: a time and times and half the time.

Why two periods of three and a half years? Because the Bible gives the accurate time and real-time a week according to the prophecy of Daniel is equivalent to a period of seven years.

Then the woman fled into the wilderness, where she has a place prepared by God, that they should feed her there one thousand two hundred and sixty days  
(Revelation 12:6)

The seventy weeks prophesied by Daniel (Daniel 9:24-27) symbolize the years of three hundred and sixty days. Each week represents seven years. The prophecy is spaced out over four hundred and ninety years. The starting point of this prophecy begins with orders to rebuild Jerusalem and its walls. Until the time of the Messiah, sixty-nine weeks have passed, including the missing week being one of the times in the plan of God. To be more precise, between the order to rebuild Jerusalem and the emergence of Nehemiah<sup>4</sup>, seven (7) weeks, had passed i.e. forty nine (49) years, and between Nehemiah and the sacrifice of Jesus Christ, it took sixty-two (62) weeks, four hundred thirty four (434) good years. As for the missing week, in fact, the prophecies of Daniel and the Revelation of John, clearly identify this period with that of the Antichrist and his reign of seven years. (References Daniel 9:25, 7:8, 7:14, 7:24-27, Matthew 24:15; Revelation.)

That is why Jesus Christ warns us and calls on us to pay attention to the prophecy of Daniel and the missing week.

"Therefore when you see the 'abomination of desolation,' spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place" (whoever reads, let him understand), (Matthew 24: 15, Mk 13: 14, Luke 21: 20)

This warning takes us to the prophecy of Daniel.

---

<sup>4</sup> Illustrations *Petit Larousse* 1990. Nehemiah: Jew who organized Persia (445 BC.) Ezra the priest with whom Jerusalem and the Jewish community were restored after Exile. The biblical book of Nehemiah (III BC) recounts this restoration.

Then he shall confirm a covenant with many for one week; But in the middle of the week He shall bring an end to sacrifice and offering. And on the wing of abominations shall be one who makes desolate, Even until the consummation, which is determined, Is poured out on the desolate."

(Daniel 9: 27)

The Bible points out some of the tribulations, three and a half years, a time, and times and half the time, that is to say a part of God's plan explained in Chapter 2 of this book. Times, it is the total time of the reign of the Antichrist given by Daniel, so seven years. And half the time quoted in Revelation 12:6, 11:2-3 as a period of three and a half years. If half of the time determines a period of three and a half years, all means seven years, the missing week of the prophecy of Daniel.

Here is another verse that has shed more light on the exact time reserved for the Antichrist:

But leave out the court which is outside the temple, and do not measure it, for it has been given to the Gentiles. And they will tread the holy city underfoot for forty-two months. **3** And I will give power to my two witnesses, and they will prophesy one thousand two hundred and sixty days, clothed in sackcloth."

(Revelation 11: 2-3)

Knowing the time set by the prophet Daniel, the chief priests and the Sanhedrin have no excuse for not having acknowledged Christ as the Son of God. This is what Daniel says

## **7) The Sanhedrin of Jesus' era inexcusable for failure to recognize Christ.**

While referring to the to the prophecy of Daniel, the Sanhedrin of Jesus' time was well aware that it took forty nine (49) years, seven (7) weeks from the order given by God to rebuild Jerusalem and the appearance of his servant Nehemiah. Knowing he was still sixty two (62) Weeks between the Ministry of the Redeemer and Nehemiah that is to say four hundred and thirty four (434) years. They have no excuse for rejecting Christ as the Son of God was born, and then rejected four hundred and thirty four (434) years later as stated in the prophecy (Daniel 9: 26) and the sin of the world erased (Daniel 9: 25). Jesus is the Anointed entrenched in the sixty ninth (69) week.

a) **They wanted to kill Jesus from birth**

Moreover, knowing this prophecy and time of the birth of the Holy one and the place where He was born as given by the prophet Micah about 700 BC.

"But you, Bethlehem Ephrathah, Though you are little among the thousands of Judah, Yet out of you shall come forth to Me The One to be Ruler in Israel, Whose goings forth are from of old, From everlasting  
(Micah 5:2)

A new star appeared in the sky, announcing the birth of a Saint and the Magi followed the star right up to Bethlehem. The Magi asked Herod, king of Judea, where is the king of the Jews who has been born so that we may worship him (Matthew 2: 2). Herod, jealous, and thinking that his throne was in danger, feigned, and sent them to Bethlehem telling them, "Go and search carefully for the young Child, and when you have found Him, bring back word to me, that I may come and worship Him also" (Matthew 2: 8). There was a census ordered on all the land by Caesar (Luke 2:1-2). Joseph of the house of Judah came to Bethlehem. The Kings of the Magi, after they had found Christ were warned in a dream not to return with the information requested, to Herod (Matthew 2: 12), while Joseph was warned by God in dream to go to Egypt (Matthew 2: 13). Herod sought the Child to destroy him. Seeing that the Magi did not return, he ordered that all children aged two years and below in Bethlehem be killed during the census. This

is called the «Massacre of innocent Saints» (Matthew 2: 16) prophesied by Jeremiah 600 BC (Jeremiah 31: 15).

Some thirty years after this event Christ presented himself to the Sanhedrin, full of wit for the works of God and performed miracles never seen, saying he forgave sins and was God. The Sanhedrin knew that this was the Son of God, but in order not to lose their prestige before the people, they rejected by committing the most serious sin ever done. It was known that Christ came out of Judah (Psalms 97: 8). Men of his age from the tribe of Judah should be rare because of the "Massacre of the Innocent saints." The Sanhedrins are inexcusable, for having done so. Since this time, salvation to the Jews had been veiled. Jewish Pastors of our time should reject the mistakes committed two millennia ago.

Let's us examine in the light of two prophecies, that of Daniel and Zechariah, the instructions given by God, and we must admit that Christ is truly the Saint awaited first by the Jewish people and then by the nations.

#### b) **Prophecy according to Daniel**

God revealed to Daniel the approximate time of Tribulation, the last week completing the seventy weeks of Daniel, that is to say, seven (7) years.

And from the time that the daily sacrifice is taken away, and the abomination of desolation is set up, there shall be one thousand two hundred and ninety days. (Daniel 12: 11)

This passage makes allusion to Daniel 9: 27. This represents approximately three and a half years. I think the abomination mentioned by God is this: the Antichrist will proclaim himself god, in the Temple of God (2 Thessalonians 2: 4). But reading the New Testament the exact times are revealed. The scholars of that time were very aware that a week was about seven years. Moreover, they had the reference to seven weeks between the start of the order given by God to rebuild Jerusalem and Nehemiah, which is about 49 years.

**24**"Seventy weeks are determined For your people and for your holy city, To finish the transgression, To make an end of sins, To make reconciliation for iniquity, To bring in everlasting righteousness, To seal up vision and prophecy, And to anoint the Most Holy. **25** "Know therefore and understand, That from the going forth of the command To restore and build Jerusalem Until Messiah the Prince, There shall be seven weeks and sixty-two weeks; The street shall be built again, and the wall, Even in troublesome times. **26** "And after the sixty-two weeks Messiah shall be cut off, but not for Himself; And the people of the prince who is to come Shall destroy the city and the sanctuary. The end of it shall be with a flood, And till the end of the war desolations are determined. **27** Then he shall confirm a covenant with many for one week; But in the middle of the week He shall bring an end to sacrifice and offering. And on the wing of abominations shall be one who makes desolate, Even until the consummation, which is determined, Is poured out on the desolate."

(Daniel 9:24-27)

The sixty two weeks when an anointed one is cut off and has no successor, refers to Jesus Christ. There are exactly 434 years between Nehemiah and the Redeemer, Jesus Christ. It is Jesus Christ who is rejected by the Jews as God's anointed and atonement for sins. All those who pass through him to go to God are saved. In 70 AD, because of their rejection of the Son of God, the Roman army destroyed Jerusalem, the shrine and scattered the Jewish people across nations. If one calculates correctly, there is one week missing. As long as one remains under the age of grace through Jesus Christ, the missing week will not happen. From the RAPTURE OF THE CHURCH AND THE HOLY SPIRIT on earth, marking thus the end of the era of grace, the week remaining in the prophecy of Daniel will begin. This will complement the seventy weeks prophesied. Here, the Antichrist will arise, will seduce the Jews; and two-thirds of them seduced will perish. Remember, Jews must not enter Jerusalem, or in any city, and those in Judea must flee to the

mountains.

I have come in My Father's name, and you do not receive Me;  
if another comes in his own name, him you will receive.

(John 5: 43)

Let's summarize this important prophecy of Daniel about seventy (70) weeks. There are seven (7) weeks between the order given by God to rebuild Jerusalem and Nehemiah. There are sixty-two (62) weeks between Nehemiah and the redemption of Jesus Christ, four hundred thirty four (434) years. All this corresponds to sixty-nine (69) weeks. So one week is missing. It begins when the end of the stage of Grace comes, that is to say the RAPTURE OF THE UNIVERSAL CHURCH OF CHRIST AND GOD THE HOLY SPIRIT FROM THE EARTH. There the seventieth week begins. During this week, an Antichrist will reign on earth for a period of seven years. At the end of the seventieth week, Israel shall find The ANOINTED SAINT OF GOD, THE KING OF JUDAH. The Jews will realize that this is Jesus Christ. He will destroy the Antichrist and his army. Prophet Zechariah explains it differently, but equally compelling chronologically, the restoration of the king of Judah and Israel.

### c) **Prophecies according to Zechariah**

#### **Firstly: The scattering of the Jewish people (Zechariah 7: 14)**

God, because of the obduracy of the Jewish people vis-à-vis the Saviour, scattered the Jews across nations. They did not listen to the Holy Son of God or the prophets.

"But I scattered them with a whirlwind among all the nations which they had not known. Thus the land became desolate after them, so that no one passed through or returned; for they made the pleasant land desolate."

(Zechariah 7: 14)

**Secondly: The Recovery of Jerusalem (Zechariah chapter 8, Read)**

In 1948, Israel again became a nation, marking the beginning of a restoration. Today, from a desert, God has made this country a garden. The population is growing and has been protected by God during the various attacks by the surrounding nations. One day Israel will be restored because it is God's people. Towards the end of the chapter in Zechariah 8: 23, God gives us an overview of Millennium.

"Thus says the Lord of hosts: 'In those days ten men from every language of the nations shall grasp the sleeve of a Jewish man, saying, 'Let us go with you, for we have heard that God is with you.'"

As long as Israel does not find his king of Judah, he will have no power. But, by the will of God, Israel has been protected since 1948 and will remain so.

**Thirdly: The Antichrist defeated by Christ and Restoration of Judah (Zechariah chapter 9, Read)**

A king shall come out of Judah. As long as Israel does not turn to his king, as a nation he shall be reduced to nothing. The first part of the chapter explains how God shall defeat nations. The second part explains how Judah shall find his king in the form of a Saviour and a King. Judah will regain its power vis-à-vis the nations of the earth thanks to his king.

"Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion! Shout, O daughter of Jerusalem!  
Behold, your King is coming to you; He is just and having salvation,  
Lowly and riding on a donkey, A colt, the foal of a donkey.  
(Zechariah 9: 9)



When we look in the Holy Scriptures in the light of Revelation 20: 4, it is Jesus Christ. Also, this Bible verse of Prophet Zechariah is a transposition of John 12: 15, Matthew 21: 5 and Isaiah 62: 11.

Then Jesus, when He had found a young donkey, sat on it; as it is written: "Fear not, daughter of Zion; Behold, your King is coming, Sitting on a donkey's colt."  
(John 12:14-15)

#### **Fourthly: The reign of the Lord (Zechariah Chapter 10, Read)**

During the Millennium, God will bless Israel through the king of Judah. Also, God shows us the blessings which Israel will receive and the power of his king. It is from Judah that the King of kings shall emerge.

#### **Fifthly: God's Judgment on unfaithful pastors (Zechariah Chapter 11, Read)**

God expresses his anger against unfaithful pastors who rejected His only Son, thereby leaving the people without a shepherd for the Jewish sheep. It is a separation between the king from Judah (Jesus Christ) and Israel (Jewish people). Prophetically, we see the union between unfaithful pastors and Judas (who betrayed Jesus) in selling his Holy son on the cross of Calvary.

<b><u>Pastors' betrayal</u></b>	<b><u>Judas' betrayal</u></b>
Then I said to them, "If it is agreeable to you, give me my wages; and if not, refrain." So they weighed out for my wages thirty pieces of silver.  And the Lord said to me, "Throw it to the potter"--that princely price they set on me. So I took the thirty pieces of silver and threw them into the house of the Lord for the potter.  (Zechariah 11:12-13, written 525 years BC.)	<b>and said, "What are you willing to give me if I deliver Him to you?" And they counted out to him thirty pieces of silver (Matthew 26: 15)</b>  <b>Then Judas, His betrayer, seeing that He had been condemned, was remorseful and brought back the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, saying, "I have sinned by betraying innocent blood." And they said, "What is that to us? You see to it!"</b> <b>Then he threw down the pieces of silver in the</b>

	<p>temple and departed, and went and hanged himself. But the chief priests took the silver pieces and said, "It is not lawful to put them into the treasury, because they are the price of blood." And they consulted together and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in. (Matthew 27:3-7)</p>
--	--

**Sixthly: Deliverance of Jerusalem (Zechariah Chapter 12, Read)**

Jesus will defeat the antichrist at the end of the seven year period called the Great Tribulation. The city of Jerusalem will be restored thanks to the collections of the King of Glory from Judah. This is the restoration by the King of glory of the city abandoned by unfaithful pastors and the Jewish people in Chapter eleven of the book of Zechariah. This King of Glory is Jesus Christ.

The next Bible verses are intended to demonstrate that Christ was the expected King of Judah. So initially, I will quote passages from Zechariah, chapter 12, since we are studying this prophecy, I have assembled prophecies of the crucifixion of Christ pronounced by the prophets between 740 and 1000 years BC. Thirdly, I have added the writings of the apostles and evangelists of Jesus' era testifying the crucifixion. The aim is to make readers conversant with the divine will of atonement of sins and the recognition of the redeeming GOD made man.

<p style="text-align: center;"><u>Israel converts to Christ</u></p> <p>"And I will pour on the house of David and on the inhabitants of Jerusalem the Spirit of grace and supplication; <u>then they will look on Me whom they pierced</u>. Yes, they will mourn for Him as one mourns for his only son, and grieve for Him as one grieves for a firstborn.</p> <p><b>(Zechariah 12: 10, written 525 years BC.)</b></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><u>Christ's life</u></p> <p><b>1</b> Who has believed our report? And to whom has the arm of the Lord been revealed? <b>2</b> For He shall grow up before Him as a tender plant, And as a root out of dry ground. He has no form or comeliness; And when we see Him, There is no beauty that we should desire Him. <b>3</b> He is despised and rejected by men, A Man of sorrows and acquainted with grief. And we hid, as it were, our faces from Him; He was despised, and we did not esteem Him. <b>4</b> Surely He has borne our griefs And carried our sorrows; Yet we esteemed Him stricken, Smitten by God, and afflicted. <b>5</b> But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities; The chastisement for our peace was upon Him, And by His stripes we are healed</p> <p>(Continuation)</p>	<p style="text-align: center;"><b>(Continuation)</b></p> <p><b>6</b> All we like sheep have gone astray; We have turned, every one, to his own way; And the Lord has laid on Him the iniquity of us all. <b>7</b> He was oppressed and He was afflicted, Yet He opened not His mouth; He was led as a lamb to the slaughter, And as a sheep before its shearers is silent, So He opened not His mouth. <b>8</b> He was taken from prison and from judgment, And who will declare His generation? For He was cut off from the land of the living; For the transgressions of My people He was stricken. <b>9</b> And they made His grave with the wicked-- But with the rich at His death, Because He had done no violence, Nor was any deceit in His mouth. <b>10</b> Yet it pleased the Lord to bruise Him; He has put Him to grief. When You make His soul an offering for sin, He shall see His seed, He shall prolong His days, And the pleasure of the Lord shall prosper in His hand. <b>11</b> He shall see the labor of His soul, and be satisfied. By His knowledge My righteous Servant shall justify many, For He shall bear their iniquities. <b>12</b> Therefore I will divide Him a portion with the great, And He shall divide the spoil with the strong, Because He poured out His soul unto death, And He was numbered with the transgressors, And He bore the sin of many, And made intercession for the transgressors.</p> <p><b>(Isaiah 53:1-12, written 740 years BC)</b></p>
---	---

<p style="text-align: center;"><u>Crucifixion of Jesus Christ</u></p> <p><b>13</b> They gape at Me with their mouths, Like a raging and roaring lion. <b>14</b> I am poured out like water, And all My bones are out of joint; My heart is like wax; It has melted within Me. <b>15</b> My strength is dried up like a potsherd, And My tongue clings to My jaws; You have brought Me to the dust of death. <b>16</b> For dogs have surrounded Me; The congregation of the wicked has enclosed Me. They pierced My hands and My feet; <b>17</b> I can count all My bones. They look and stare at Me. <b>18</b> They divide My garments among them, And for My clothing they cast lots. <b>19</b> But You, O Lord, do not be far from Me; O My Strength, hasten to help Me! <b>20</b> Deliver Me from the sword, My precious life from the power of the dog. <b>21</b> Save Me from the lion's mouth And from the horns of the wild oxen! You have answered Me.</p> <p><b>(Psalms 22 :14-21, David, wrote 1000 years BC)</b></p> <p style="text-align: center;"><u>Jesus crucified</u></p> <p><b>17</b> And He, bearing His cross, went out to a place called the Place of a Skull, which is called in Hebrew, Golgotha, <b>18</b> where they crucified Him, and two others with Him, one on either side, and Jesus in the center. <b>19</b> Now Pilate wrote a title and put it on the cross. And the writing was: JESUS OF NAZARETH, THE KING OF THE JEWS. <b>20</b> Then many of the Jews read this title, for the place where Jesus was crucified was near the city; and it was written in Hebrew, Greek, and Latin. <b>21</b> Therefore the chief priests of the Jews said to Pilate, "Do not write, 'The King of the Jews,' but, 'He said, 'I am the King of the Jews.' ' " <b>22</b> Pilate answered, "What I have written, I have written." <b>23</b> Then the soldiers, when they had crucified Jesus, took His garments and made four parts, to each soldier a part, and also the tunic. Now the tunic was without seam, woven from the top in one piece. <b>24</b> They said therefore among themselves,</p> <p style="text-align: center;">(CONTINUATION)</p>	<p style="text-align: center;">(Continuation)</p> <p>"Let us not tear it, but cast lots for it, whose it shall be," that the Scripture might be fulfilled which says: "They divided My garments among them, And for My clothing they cast lots." (Psalms 22: 19) Therefore the soldiers did these things. <b>25</b> Now there stood by the cross of Jesus His mother, and His mother's sister, Mary the wife of Clopas, and Mary Magdalene. <b>26</b> When Jesus therefore saw His mother, and the disciple whom He loved standing by, He said to His mother, "Woman, behold your son!" <b>27</b> Then He said to the disciple, "Behold your mother!" And from that hour that disciple took her to his own home. <b>28</b> After this, Jesus, knowing that all things were now accomplished, that the Scripture might be fulfilled, said, "I thirst!" <b>29</b> Now a vessel full of sour wine was sitting there; and they filled a sponge with sour wine, put it on hyssop, and put it to His mouth (Psalms 69: 22). <b>30</b> So when Jesus had received the sour wine, He said, "It is finished!" And bowing His head, He gave up His spirit. <b>31</b> Therefore, because it was the Preparation Day, that the bodies should not remain on the cross on the Sabbath (for that Sabbath was a high day), the Jews asked Pilate that their legs might be broken, and that they might be taken away. <b>32</b> Then the soldiers came and broke the legs of the first and of the other who was crucified with Him. <b>33</b> But when they came to Jesus and saw that He was already dead, they did not break His legs. <b>34</b> But one of the soldiers pierced His side with a spear, and immediately blood and water came out. <b>35</b> And he who has seen has testified, and his testimony is true; and he knows that he is telling the truth, so that you may believe. <b>36</b> For these things were done that the Scripture should be fulfilled, "Not one of His bones shall be broken." <b>37</b> And again another Scripture says, "They shall look on Him whom they pierced." (Exodus 12: 46, written 1300 years BC) None of his bones will be broken. (Numbers 9: 12, written 1240 years BC) And another scripture said: They see him whom they pierced. (Zechariah 12: 10, written 525 years BC)</p> <p><b>(John 19 :1-37)</b></p>
--	--

<p style="text-align: center;"><u>Other passages on crucifixion</u></p> <p><b>44</b> Now it was about the sixth hour, and there was darkness over all the earth until the ninth hour. <b>45</b> Then the sun was darkened, and the veil of the temple was torn in two. <u><b>Probably God broke his alliance between Judah and its king, and Israel. A wandering people without pastors (Zechariah, chapter 11).</b></u></p> <p><b>46</b> And when Jesus had cried out with a loud voice, He said, "Father, 'into Your hands I commit My spirit.' " Having said this, He breathed His last. <b>47</b> So when the centurion saw what had happened, he glorified God, saying, "Certainly this was a righteous Man!"</p> <p><b>48</b> And the whole crowd who came together to that sight, seeing what had been done, beat their breasts and returned. (<b>Luke 23:44-48</b>)</p> <p>AND</p> <p>Matthew adds: <b>52</b> and the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints who had fallen asleep were raised; <b>53</b> and coming out of the graves after His resurrection, they went into the holy city and appeared to many. (<b>Matthew 27 :52-53</b>)</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><u>OTHER</u></p> <p><b>38</b> After this, Joseph of Arimathea, being a disciple of Jesus, but secretly, for fear of the Jews, asked Pilate that he might take away the body of Jesus; and Pilate gave him permission. So he came and took the body of Jesus. <b>39</b> And Nicodemus, who at first came to Jesus by night, also came, bringing a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about a hundred pounds. <b>40</b> Then they took the body of Jesus, and bound it in strips of linen with the spices, as the custom of the Jews is to bury. <b>41</b> Now in the place where He was crucified there was a garden, and in the garden a new tomb in which no one had yet been laid. (CONTINUATION)</p>	<p>(CONTINUATION)</p> <p><b>42</b> So there they laid Jesus, because of the Jews' Preparation Day, for the tomb was nearby. (Here the Scripture is fulfilled) they made His grave with the wicked-- But with the rich at His death (Isaiah 53: 9) (<b>John 19:38-42</b>)</p> <p>NB: The Bible doesn't confirm that Nicodemus was born again. About the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross.</p> <p style="text-align: center;"><u>OTHER</u></p> <p><b>16</b> For by Him all things were created that are in heaven and that are on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or principalities or powers. All things were created through Him and for Him. <b>17</b> And He is before all things, and in Him all things consist. <b>18</b> And He is the head of the body, the church, who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead, that in all things He may have the preeminence. <b>19</b> For it pleased the Father that in Him all the fullness should dwell, <b>20</b> and by Him to reconcile all things to Himself, by Him, whether things on earth or things in heaven, having made peace through the blood of His cross. <b>21</b> And you, who once were alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now He has reconciled <b>22</b> in the body of His flesh through death, to present you holy, and blameless, and above reproach in His sight— (<b>Colossians 1: 16-22</b>)</p>
---	--

### **Seventhly: Prophecy by Daniel and Zechariah**

Daniel's prophecy clearly indicates that from Nehemiah, four hundred and thirty-four (434) years will elapse before an anointed will be cut off. Four hundred and thirty-four (434) years later, the redemptive work of Jesus Christ came. He is the king of Judah; he bought all the sin of men. Those who want eternal life must go through Him. Since that time Zechariah tells us that Israel is without a pastor, they rejected Christ, the King of the Jews. The time of the RAPTURE OF THE CHURCH and of the HOLY SPIRIT on the earth is coming. This will mark the beginning of the seventieth week of Daniel; the Antichrist will arise during a period of seven (7) years. Two-thirds of Jews will die, they should not enter Jerusalem and cities, those in Judea must flee into the mountains. Meanwhile, there will be a spiritual revival and 144,000 Jewish virgins (Revelation 7: 4-8, 14:3-4) and two faithful witnesses (Revelation 11:3-12) will announce the good news. This mass conversion of the Jewish people will be by accepting as Lord and Saviour the one they had pierced, i.e. Jesus Christ. Indeed, He is the King of Judah. Jesus Christ shall defeat the Antichrist at Armageddon (See Revelation 16: 16 and Zechariah 12: 11), King of Judah found, the union of Christ with his people shall begin.

But let's us together look at all the signs of the Rapture of the Church that marks the beginning of reign of the Antichrist.

## **PART TWO - Prophecies to be fulfilled before the Rapture of The Church**

When I was younger, I was taught the judgment day. From that moment I told myself that if I lived a good life, I would perhaps go to heaven. About the age of eighteen, I bought a Bible at a bookstore, aware that religion could not save me, you can't imagine my amazement when I discovered that henceforth, I could be sure of eternal life, that there were two separate resurrections, a Judgment day for those entering into judgment and a satanic reign in the form a world government whose leader shall be the Antichrist, the son of Satan. Subsequently, I studied the Bible with a pastor to understand more precisely what the Word of God revealed to me.

To my surprise, things that I discovered by reading the Bible were beautiful and very true. I had not misrepresented or misinterpreted the meaning. God has not made his book to be incomprehensible else how could he have said:

Blessed are the poor in spirit, For theirs is the kingdom of heaven.  
(Matthew 5:3)

Naturally, then, I studied the scriptures until I became a man, educated enough in the Lord to write this book. But in order not to lose focus on our topic, which is the prophecies to be completed before the Rapture of the Church, let me go back to it. Although the time, date and day of the Rapture of the Church are not revealed to men, the signs themselves are revealed to us. Currently, all the prophecies on the Rapture of the Church are being fulfilled but, (and this is not an obligation) for the fact that prior to the Rapture of the Church: the formation of a world government and the construction of the ancient temple of Solomon. Also, to better understand the prophecies marking the Rapture of the Church, we must analyze the prophecies in two sections.

SECTION 1 - Prophecies directed to nations before the Rapture of the Church.

SECTION 2 - Prophecies directed to the Jewish people before the Rapture of the Church.

Indeed, the Hebrew people, having rejected Christ at His first coming, do not receive the testimony of the New Testament. Also, the prophets Daniel, Ezekiel, Isaiah and Zechariah announce prophecies concerning the Jewish people, in the Old Testament, while Christians of all nations, themselves, receive even more powerful testimony, i.e. prophecies of the Old and New Testament. Also, for these reasons, we will analyze the prophecies according to the order in which they were pronounced.

## SECTION 1 - Prophecies directed to nations before the Rapture of the Church

The Apostles, inspired by the Holy Spirit taught each of these prophecies. Also, the Bible warns us not to take the prophecies of God lightly.

Do not despise prophecies.

(1 Thessalonians 5:20)

Or

**19** And so we have the prophetic word confirmed, which you do well to heed as a light that shines in a dark place, until the day dawns and the morning star rises in your hearts; **20** knowing this first, that no prophecy of Scripture is of any private interpretation, **21** for prophecy never came by the will of man, but holy men of God spoke as they were moved by the Holy Spirit.

(2 Peter 1: 19-21)

**Let's examine one by one the prophetic events.**

1) **The Apostasy**

Long time ago, people were educated in Christian principles and evil was hardly practiced. But just within a space of two generations, all that was socially repressed for millennia have become a common way of life. See what the Bible says about the end times.

**1** But know this, that in the last days perilous times will come: **2** For men will be lovers of themselves, lovers of money, boasters, proud, blasphemers, disobedient to parents, unthankful, unholy, **3** unloving, unforgiving, slanderers, without self-control, brutal, despisers of good, **4** traitors, headstrong, haughty, lovers of pleasure rather than lovers of God, **5** having a form of godliness but denying its power. And from such people turn away!

(2 Timothy 3:1-5)

This description in all respects reflects our time and all that is with the help of Satan's weapons:



economic crisis, urbanization, technology and modernization. In fact, things evolve too fast for man; yet, he is simultaneously overwhelmed by a host of problems. And all that has been planned and organized from scratch by Satan. People say this is the era of pleasure, the era of easiness. Nothing is easy and we must work hard to earn our daily bread. Machine is now replacing man causing unemployment to settle, the pride of man is shaken, and aggression and revolt is gradually taking over man's nature. Not to mention that our generation has been used to experiment engineering psychology. Do not beat children, because this might frustrate them! Parents, be understanding, allow yourselves to be exploited! We now see that all these charming Psychologists have created a generation of children who do not know how to live.

a) **Men will be selfish, lovers of money, having the appearance of godliness, but denying what makes its force**

During the 1960s, a generation stood up against everything that was previously taboo. They demanded freedom, higher wages and a very easy welfare with minimal labour, through trade union movements and powerful means of oppressive persuasion as: sabotage, looting, strikes and more. They got from their employers substantial pay increments and quality of life with enviable enormous social benefits.

Rapidly, leading sectors, public, parastatal, food, construction and related areas had to adjust to new demands in a "full employment " economy. Women entered the labour market thereby giving the family a very interesting income. This effervescent era lasted for about fifteen (15) years.

Previously, all workers in industrialized countries used to earn almost exactly the same wages, all workers earned between \$ 3.50 and \$ 5.00 per hour while the minimum wage was \$ 2.90 per hour. It is obvious that living standard or people's financial situation was either only slightly affected or not, because the difference in wages between skilled and unskilled workers was insignificant.

Salaries went from \$ 5.00 to \$ 25.00 an hour in many areas of activities in space of a decade. While in the poorest sectors, there was minimum wage increment. Wherever they could not produce a good at a cost lower than the minimum wages in industrialized countries, these works were lost and were referred elsewhere in other countries worldwide. This inflation resulting from people's selfishness led to unemployment and a drastic disproportion between industrialized countries and the third world.

Of course, employers had to submit to the wage increase from \$ 5.00 to \$25.00 per hour a decade. Due to increase in the wages of their employees, prices of their manufactured goods were increased accordingly, causing inflation and a rise in the cost of living. Then, companies now installed office automation, computers and robotics in order to minimize too much expense on the cost of labour and to survive in a global marketplace. Both in the public sectors and parastatal, government introduced higher taxes to be able to pay State employees, but they could never replace the lost revenue generated by the disappearance of companies that could not cope with the rise in the minimum wage of employees in industrialized countries. Disbursements by the various governments increased with higher costs in wage insurance and indexation of living cost took a heavy toll on national economies of the past generations. It reached a point where these generations spent the accumulated surplus of the various governments and encroached on the well-being of future generations, thereby leaving them with heavy national debts. Then, what was to happen happened, subsequent generations were in need of jobs, but there was none left except jobs below the threshold of poverty.

The number of industries that could survive this inflation was minimal, all jobs being occupied in a budget-compressed economy for survival. Apart from the rich job-sectors, all remaining companies were bound to survive leaning on the minimum salary. The other positions were occupied by permanent trade union employees. Workers in rich sectors were going on retirement without being replaced. Thus, two generations earning an average of between \$ 40.00 and \$ 25.00 per hour not to mention very high pension funds, and the other generations earning between \$ 14.00 and \$ 8.50 per hour often with no pension fund. The minimum wage was \$ 8.50 per hour in countries where average cost of living is \$ 20.00 per hour per person. Very modest Pension for the elderly forced them to live below poverty line. Inflation in these industrialized countries caused gap between social

classes and indexation on the cost of life was horrible in terms of job losses in sectors that could not follow the rise in the minimum wage. This same inflation was even felt at an incredible multiple level in some third World countries, devastating their economies and creating deadly civil wars. Our governments and the whole panoply of experts that they have would have foreseen all the consequences of their actions and use a handful of their wealth to remedy that situation. But the gap between industrialized and third world countries increased disproportionately. Previously, third-world countries were paying \$ 5,000 for a vehicle, while after inflation; this same car will cost \$ 25,000 with a capacity to generate the same tax revenue. Due to their selfishness, the surplus that they spend is reflected on their governmental and social policies in the Third World. As a result, 8 billion<sup>5</sup> persons in 1996 suffered from chronic malnutrition amongst whom were 200 million children and hunger has begun to affect our countries. In some countries, parents abandon their children because they are unable to feed them. And this leads unquestionably to human atrocities: experiments, organs' banks and others. If those same wealthy generations were not selfish, how many people on earth live in their best? I am convinced that nothing of what the Creator has given men is in surplus. If money owned by nations were well managed and wisely used, hunger would not affect children of God in the world.

#### b) **Abortion**

The murder of female Chinese children and the mixture of blood platelets in Asia, is possibly the greatest genocide of all ages. The statistics speak for themselves, even though I do not have the global figure, in the U.S alone, since our beloved governments legalized this murder, the figures have been alarming.

Number of abortions<sup>6</sup> per state in 1992 in the USA

---

<sup>5</sup> Food and Agriculture Organization of the United Nations, message from CEO Dr. Jacques Diouf. The HUNGER GATHERING, Rome, Villaggio Globale, 8-17 November 1996.

<sup>6</sup> Source: Center for Disease Control and Prevention. CDS Surveillance Summaries, May 3, 1996. MMWR 1996; 45

STATES	NUMBER OFABORTIONS	STATES	NUMBER OFABORTIONS
Alabama	13.358	Missouri	13.390
Alaska	1.783	Montana	2.869
Arizona	14.353	Nebraska	5.637
Arkansas	5.675	Nevada	8.022
California	338.700	New Hampshire	3,129
Colorado	10.607	New Jersey	38.168
Connecticut	17.762	New Mexico	5.628
Delaware	5.601	New York	278.74
District of Colombia	17.698	North Carolina	35.253
Florida	69.285	North Dakota	1.493
Georgia	38.052	Ohio	36.019
Hawaii	5.952	Oklahoma	9.881
Idaho	1.759	Oregon	12.685
Illinois	56.552	Pennsylvania	49.042
Indiana	12.983	Rhode Island	6.667
Iowa	6.759	South Carolina	11.008
Kansas	10.385	South Dakota	1.038
Kentucky	8.696	Tennessee	18.029
Louisiana	12.423	Texas	91.113
Maine	3.226	Utah	3.941
Maryland	19.860	Vermont	2.778
Massachusetts	34.527	Virginia	29.641
Michigan	34.496	Washington	27.573
Minnesota	15.546	West Virginia	2.812
Mississippi	7.555	Wisconsin	15.549
Wyoming	296	TOTAL	1.359.145

Here is the number<sup>7</sup> of lawful abortion carried out in the US between 1973 and 1992 since the government legalized abortion.

<b>YEARS</b>	<b>ABORTIONS</b>
<b>1973</b>	615.831
<b>1974</b>	763.476
<b>1975</b>	854.853
<b>1976</b>	988.267
<b>1977</b>	1.079.430
<b>1978</b>	1.157.776
<b>1979</b>	1.251.921
<b>1980</b>	1.297.06
<b>1981</b>	1.300.760
<b>1982-1984</b>	3.906.488
<b>1985-1987</b>	4.010.353
<b>1988</b>	1.371.000
<b>1989</b>	1.397.000
<b>1990</b>	1.430.000
<b>1991</b>	1.389.000
<b>1992</b>	1.349.145

It is true that these statistics speak for themselves, but in the United States, there are 100 lawful abortions per 1000 women aged between 15 and 44 who deliver. When one considers the fact that in a population of 230 million people, there are as many abortions, we begin to wonder what the global figures might be. Man through his legal institutions has taken upon himself the power of life or death over creatures who cannot express their rights.

But let us see what the Divine Creator thinks about abortion.

**13** For You formed my inward parts;

You covered me in my mother's womb.

**14** I will praise You, for I am fearfully and wonderfully made;

Marvelous are Your works, And that my soul knows very well. **15**

---

<sup>7</sup> Statistics : Abortion-Related Deaths, 21 march 96.

My frame was not hidden from You, When I was made in secret,  
And skillfully wrought in the lowest parts of the earth.

**16** Your eyes saw my substance, being yet unformed.

And in Your book they all were written,  
The days fashioned for me,  
When as yet there were none of them.

**17** How precious also are Your thoughts to me, O God!

How great is the sum of them!

(Psalms 139:13-17)

So, when I was just a formless mass, God loved me, and he had already determined my destiny. But man gave himself the power of life or death over God's creatures. As soon as I am conceived in the womb of my mother, I am a beloved creature of God, and He already knows all my days. The woman's body belongs to her, and like all human beings, she is free to use it to meet her needs. However, if God decides to put a life in the womb of a woman, she has the social responsibility to carry that pregnancy to the end. If she does not want a child, she must take appropriate measures before life is implanted within her, and if despite all the steps taken, life is still implanted, she must only say: "The grace of God." As soon as the breath of life is engendered, this creature belongs to God, and Men are answerable to God. Taking the deliberate decision to end life is murder. If the woman is unable to carter for the newly born child, she can give him up for adoption, as was the case of Moses, so that the child will have the opportunity to build his life. Why destroy a life through murder just to satisfy one's selfishness?

c) Divination and magic

**9** "When you come into the land which the Lord your God is giving you, you shall not learn to follow the abominations of those nations.

**10** There shall not be found among you anyone who makes his son or his daughter pass through the fire, or one who practices witchcraft, or a soothsayer, or one who interprets omens, or a

sorcerer, **11** or one who conjures spells, or a medium, or a spiritist, or one who calls up the dead. **12** For all who do these things are an abomination to the Lord, and because of these abominations the Lord your God drives them out from before you. **13** You shall be blameless before the Lord your God. **14** For these nations which you will dispossess listened to soothsayers and diviners; but as for you, the Lord your God has not appointed such for you. (Deuteronomy 18: 9-14)

If we go back to the context of these scriptures, we notice that when God swore to give the Promised Land to Moses, he made the declaration quoted above. In those days, because the Jews were the chosen people of God, if such practices took place, whoever perpetrated it was burnt to death. When Joshua conquered the Promised Land and while the Jewish people battled with the then rulers of Canaan, God ordered the Hebrews to kill all the inhabitants of these nations, men, women and children. And those who did not obey were stroke by God and they died on the spot. Furthermore, God did not want them to take any treasure because of such practices. Once the country was conquered, the booty was to be sanctified by God and later distributed to the people. Today it has become common to invoke the dead, draw lots with cards, read astrology, etc. But when these practices become regular, the person involved gets in contact with demons. It is neither the dead nor a soothsayer that the person consults, but a demon, it is not his future that is described but rather the life that the demon wants him to live. I'll stop here on this topic because I do not want you to think that I see demons everywhere; that would be wrong. But these sciences exist because demons or spirits are behind them.

d) **Homosexuality**

I will digress here to speak about homosexuality in men and women. It seems the city of San Francisco is full of homosexuals. You can find them at the town hall and in the most important administrative buildings and elsewhere. Montreal, St-Hubert and Papineau streets are crowded with homosexuals. That area is called "The Village". All forms of parades and social activities of all kinds take place there. There, you find meeting places and even special clubs for homosexuals.

Do you not know that the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah were destroyed because of these sexual perversions?

If a man lies with a male as he lies with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination. They shall surely be put to death. Their blood shall be upon them. (Leviticus 20: 13)

Today, gays and lesbians come to the television and declare publicly that (they) were born like that. Medical science attributes it to hormones and chromosomes. But the Bible (Romans 1:18-32) says: "we are not born homosexual, but we become homosexual." It's a perversion of the body and it is a sin of desire that leads to such action. The proof is that every man and every woman has got this thought one day, some fight it, and others give themselves up. Christ can deliver gays and lesbians from their passion if they request and come to Him.

e) **False teachers**

Jesus himself warns us against the scourge that shall be the portion of false teachers.

Then many false prophets will rise up and deceive many. (Matthew 24: 11)

Then, Paul reiterated the same warning.

**1** Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons, **2** speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron, **3** forbidding to marry, and commanding to abstain from foods which God created to be received with thanksgiving by those who believe and know the truth. **4** For every creature of God is good, and nothing is to be refused if it is received



with thanksgiving; **5** for it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.

(1 Timothy 4:1-5)

Until the 1950s, apart from Christianity, there were practically no false doctrines in the United States. When the United States of America were formed, Americans submitted their country in the hands of Christ by having faith in Him. That is why the American people were blessed for generations. If the American people are so far from God today, it's because the end of the world is near.

Several false religions have settled in the United States, seducing the youth. Here are a few: Buddhism, Muslim religions with Muhammad and Jainism, Tibetan religions with their various "gurus". There are also religious sects transmitting false doctrines: the children of God, followers of Rael with their extraterrestrial doctrine. Another very important phenomenon to me is the followers of Krishna. There are also pernicious religious sects that take their roots from Christianity such as the Mormons, Jehovah's Witnesses, Seventh Day Adventists and Christian Science. The main objective of these sects is to blind those who believe in the wonderful character of Jesus Christ, without recognizing him as Lord and Saviour. All these sects based on the name of Jesus are meant to deprive Jesus Christ who came in human form 2000 years ago, of his divinity or salvation by grace, hence his saviour ministry. But I will give you more details as this chapter unfolds.

The most pernicious is undoubtedly that of the followers of Moon. <sup>8</sup>Reverend Sun Myung Moon was born on 6 January 1920 in North Korea in a village near Puong Tang. On one Easter Morning in 1936, Jesus appeared to him in a Vision, when he retired to the mountain to pray. His <sup>9</sup>mission: establish theocracy, and establish the Kingdom of God on earth before his death.

---

<sup>8</sup> Summarized Biography of Reverend Sun Myung Moon by Damian Anderson and Jean-Philippe Odent  
HYPERTEXTLINK <http://lx1.ettl.co.at/uc/french/life/biogr2.html> <http://lx1.ettl.co.at/uc/french/life/biogr2.html>, September 1, 1997.

<sup>9</sup> The Moon Empire by Jean-François Boyer, La Découverte Editions, 1 Place Paul-Painlevé V PARIS, 1986, page 24.

Otherwise he would fail in his mission like Christ, two thousand years earlier. He is therefore the second Messiah. But is the Christian world waiting for a second Messiah? And did not God Himself tell men that all was accomplished by Christ and that his priesthood is everlasting?

**3** And this is eternal life, that they may know You, the only true God, and Jesus Christ whom You have sent. **4** I have glorified You on the earth. I have finished the work which You have given Me to do. **5** And now, O Father, glorify Me together with Yourself, with the glory which I had with You before the world was. (John 17:3-5)

Jesus Himself in his priestly prayer to the Father, and before giving up the ghost on the cross declares that all his work has been accomplished. Moreover, the last quotation in John 17: 5 demonstrates without any shadow of a doubt the divinity of Jesus in the Trinity.

So when Jesus had received the sour wine, He said, "It is finished!"  
And bowing His head, He gave up His spirit.  
(John 19: 30)

This is what the Bible says about His non-transferable and everlasting priesthood:

...'You are a priest forever According to the order of Melchizedek'  
**22** by so much more Jesus has become a surety of a better covenant.  
**23** Also there were many priests, because they were prevented by death from continuing. **24** But He, because He continues forever, has an unchangeable priesthood. **25** Therefore He is also able to save to the uttermost those who come to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession for them (Hebrews 7: 21 - 25)

And

Jesus Christ is the same yesterday, today, and forever. Do not be carried about with various and strange doctrines. For it is good that the heart be established by grace... (Hebrews 13:8-9)

Jesus does not and will NEVER have a successor and his ministry will NEVER be changed. What needs to be accomplished is written in the Bible, His Word, it is the Will of God. As can be seen from scriptures, Reverend Sun Myung Moon, by proclaiming himself the second messiah, is guilty of deception according to the Word of God. For this reason, he is a false messiah. During summer in 1951, Sun Myung Moon began his false ministry in Seoul where the Unification Church was founded on 1 May, 1954. He quickly won the full confidence of his disciples and followers through very doubtful methods: <sup>10</sup>deception on the nature, purpose and functioning of the movement, brainwashing, psychological terror and break-up of family ties. Methods of indoctrination are those applied in other sects: sleep deprivation; food with less protein content; solitary confinement and break-up with the former denomination; continual occupation, brainwashing, which ends up developing a guilt complex maintained by the fear of displeasing Moon, ie, God since they believe he is the second Messiah. Moon alone can free them from the devil and hell; the fear is very strongly maintained among the faithful. On top of this are long work hours without pay and begging in public. Added to these are some refinements peculiar to this sect: frequent trips, confiscation of shoes inside the halls, encouraging followers to refrain from urinating for as long as possible, ostensibly to prove their resistance to Satan. Whereas on the contrary, rising rates of urea in the body instead decreases mental and physical strength. At

---

<sup>10</sup> Les nouvelles sectes (The new sects) by Alain Woodrow on page 106 to 108. Full text

**Deception about the nature, purpose and functioning of the movement.** Those contacted by the Moonies are never informed during their adhesion, of the real goals of the organization or activities, or even the existence of its founder. They tell lies right from the beginning.

**Brain-washing:** It is a scientifically developed technique, purely psycho-physiological, not leaving any physical evidence or even no memory in the minds of converts.

**Psychological terror:** When a faithful wants to break away, they tell him "if you leave us, you will be tortured or you will die." This is done in various ways, the cardinal statement printed in the minds of the young disciple. In practice, old "pioneers" who left the organization have given testimony about their struggle to come out from the "family" because they feel pursued by Satan. Because of this, a good number of them were admitted into psychiatric hospitals. There are many cases on this subject covered by medical secrecy.

**Break-up of family ties:** The faithful is made to understand that he is "pure", or will become pure, while those who remain outside are subject to original sin, resulting from the fornication of Eve with Satan. The disciple must therefore adopt real parents (Moon and his wife) through two young people from the group who are the representatives, "the mother and spiritual father." He must nevertheless try to convert his Satanic parents (canal ones), but if he fails, he has to separate from them, or break-up ties.

this rate, if you're a young woman, you lose your menstruation. See how children are eliminated for sects. Once the faithful is completely under his power, the church through all deception convinces its vassal to hand over his property. This is how the Unification Church led by Sun Myung Moon, acquired wealth. The watchword of the Church was to absorb the elites, the wealthy of the society, the healthy population, but not to waste time with patients and the disabled. Being a clever businessman, Moon <sup>11</sup>diversified his church as well as his financial empire in several communities: fisheries, defense, media, pharmacy, florists, clothing, national brokerage firm, catering, funds and others. According to Moses Durst, the fiery president of The American Church, married to a Korean, said in 1984 that the different properties of the church in the world raise an annual income of 500 million dollars, among the fifty leading companies of the world. His empire was formed because his followers were ignorant of the Holy Scriptures. They accepted a false god, "Moon", who diverted the faith to his advantage and committed the following crimes: violations of individual liberties, kidnapping, tax evasion, and breach of employment law. The majority of his followers worked for little pay and sometimes without pay. On the pretext of anti-communism, given that it was indeed the goal pursued by Moon, our governments of the sixties, seventies and early eighties, accepted and covered the actions of Moon before public opinion did interfere. The <sup>12</sup>C.I.A, <sup>13</sup>Nixon's administration, <sup>14</sup>Reagan's administration, <sup>15</sup>Valéry Giscard d'Estaing's administration, <sup>16</sup>Truman's administration and Eisenhower's administration all protected Sun Myung Moon, and accepted his crimes against civilians.

So many lives ruined, families impoverished by donations to the family patrimony and especially social acceptance not to defend Christ and His Word of truth, the basis of American Faith. Prominent and outstanding Christian personalities in America with religious books to their credit even protected Moon against the American Constitution. They failed to use the truth to fight against falsehood.

---

<sup>11</sup> *The Moon Empire* by Jean-François Boyer, La Découverte Editions, 1986, p. 174-175.

<sup>12</sup> *The Moon Empire* by Jean-François Boyer, La Découverte Editions, 1986, page 42 and 128 to 134.

<sup>13</sup> *The Moon Empire* by Jean-François Boyer, La Découverte Editions, 1986, p. 259-278.

<sup>14</sup> *The Moon Empire* by Jean-François Boyer, La Découverte Editions, 1986, p. 188-189.

<sup>15</sup> *The Moon Empire* by Jean-François Boyer, La Découverte Editions, 1986, page 10.

<sup>16</sup> *The Moon Empire* by Jean-François Boyer, La Découverte Editions, 1986, page 129.

As you can see, very powerful false teachers exist. Besides, if we look at recent years' statistics, we will realize that false doctrines are constantly growing: Order of the Solar Temple, New Age and others. Meanwhile the Church of Christ is regressing; soon the salt of the earth will be minority.

## **SECTION 2 – Prophecies directed to the Jewish people before the Rapture of the Church.**

### **1) Scattered among nations**

The first sign that Jesus Himself gave was the destruction of Solomon's Temple in Jerusalem in the year 70 AD. At this point in history, Jews were dispersed among nations as was predicted in Leviticus because they rejected the Son of God.

I will scatter you among the nations and draw out a sword after you;  
your land shall be desolate and your cities waste...You shall perish  
among the nations, and the land of your enemies shall eat you up.  
(Leviticus 26: 33-38, written 1300 years before JC)

These verses explain the great suffering of the Jewish people during the two thousand years of exile meted on Israel as punishment. Hitler was a “fan” of occultism and Satan has always tried to destroy and ruin the Jewish people. In Egypt during the Old Testament, Satan knew that the Saviour was to come from this people. During the 1939-1945 war, he tried to destroy the Jewish race completely because he knew that during his reign, the Jewish people would be the only people who would not humble themselves and will rather turn to Christ, the only Lord and Saviour.

Thus, we see that the Antichrist will attempt to ruin the Jewish people during the tribulation to upset God's plan for the millennium. Whatever God establishes, Satan tries to destroy all of it.

a) **History of the Jewish people**

Never in the history of humanity, was a people so oppressed. If we divide the following statistics by two, it would still be difficult to explain the survival of this great nation. Look at the statistics:

Years after Jesus Christ	Events <sup>17 18</sup>
70	1,337,000 Jews killed under Titus
135	585 killed
680	Euric wanted their total destruction and there are no statistics
The Crusaders	The Israelites were massacred on the pretext that they were deicidal.
1096	12 000 killed in Germany
1215	Bloodshed and unprecedented slaughter
1290	Excommunication of all Jews from England under penalty of hanging; readmission of Jews 370 years later
1298	140 Jewish communities were destroyed
1306	Excommunication of 100,000 Jews from France under death threats
1348	8000 Jews were burnt, 300 communities were exterminated
1360	200 families murdered
1366	10 000 killed in Spain
1391	56.000 killed in Spain
1492	The Spanish hunting Inquisition of 300 000 Jews
1648	200 000 killed in Ukraine

---

<sup>17</sup> *Focus on the World of Tomorrow* by Willard Cantelon, Editor R. Lebel, 5 Allee Baco, 44 Nantes  
Pages 64-65

<sup>18</sup> *The Return of Jesus Christ* by Rene Pache, Emmaus Edition, 1806 St. Legier Vevey, Switzerland, ccp 10-3147,  
Page 252.

1654	400 000 killed in Russia
1881	1500 Jewish families destroyed in Poland
1919	30,000 Jews slaughtered in Ukraine and Poland
1939 - 1945	6 million killed by Hitler
1960 - 1984	Repression in U.R.S.S., no statistics

Sooner or later, nations, who drew swords against the Jewish people, will pay for their dishonorable act before God (if they have not yet done so). Let's hope that Canada and the United States will never draw their sword against the people of God.

Unfortunately, the Word of God, the Bible, tells us that during the Great Tribulation two third (2 / 3) of the Jews will perish (Zechariah 13: 8). The Jews are warned not to flee to Jerusalem, or to the cities. Those in Judea must flee into the mountains (Matthew 24: 16, Luke 21: 21). Finally a third (1/3) remaining shall invoke the name of God (Zechariah 13: 9) and will have Jesus Christ as Prince during the Millennium (Revelation 1: 5, Revelation 20: 6, Ezekiel Chapter 40-48, Zechariah 12: 10, Zechariah 9 :9-11).

#### b) **Restoration of Israel**

All prophecies shall be fulfilled. In this vein, in May 15, 1948, the state of Israel was proclaimed. Finally, after two thousand years of absence from their country, Jews began to reconquer Israel after the Second World War. It was not without difficulty because at the time, nations were not happy about this situation. Here is a passage from the Bible proving these facts:

**16** Moreover the word of the Lord came to me, saying: **17** "Son of man, when the house of Israel dwelt in their own land, they defiled it by their own ways and deeds; to Me their way was like the uncleanness of a woman in her customary impurity. **18** Therefore I

poured out My fury on them for the blood they had shed on the land, and for their idols with which they had defiled it. **19** So I scattered them among the nations, and they were dispersed throughout the countries; I judged them according to their ways and their deeds. **20** When they came to the nations, wherever they went, they profaned My holy name--when they said of them, 'These are the people of the Lord, and yet they have gone out of His land.' **21** But I had concern for My holy name, which the house of Israel had profaned among the nations wherever they went. **22** "Therefore say to the house of Israel, 'Thus says the Lord God: "I do not do this for your sake, O house of Israel, but for My holy name's sake, which you have profaned among the nations wherever you went. **23** And I will sanctify My great name, which has been profaned among the nations, which you have profaned in their midst; and the nations shall know that I am the Lord," says the Lord God, "when I am hallowed in you before their eyes. **24** For I will take you from among the nations, gather you out of all countries, and bring you into your own land. **25** Then I will sprinkle clean water on you, and you shall be clean; I will cleanse you from all your filthiness and from all your idols. **26** I will give you a new heart and put a new spirit within you; I will take the heart of stone out of your flesh and give you a heart of flesh. **27** I will put My Spirit within you and cause you to walk in My statutes, and you will keep My judgments and do them. **28** Then you shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers; you shall be My people, and I will be your God. **29** I will deliver you from all your uncleannesses. I will call for the grain and multiply it, and bring no famine upon you. **30** And I will multiply the fruit of your trees and the increase of your fields, so that you need never again bear the reproach of famine among the nations.

(Ezekiel 36 16-30)



The fulfillment of this prophecy was to begin in 1948. Unfortunately, as said in Ezekiel 39: 28-29, not all the Jews will return home, but when Jesus Christ, King of Judah will reign during the Millennium, this prophecy will be complete:

then they shall know that I am the Lord their God, who sent them into captivity among the nations, but also brought them back to their land, and left none of them captive any longer. And I will not hide My face from them anymore; for I shall have poured out My Spirit on the house of Israel,' says the Lord God.

<sup>19</sup>Falachas, an ancient Jewish tribe found in Ethiopia was repatriated to Israel in 1985. When the Eastern bloc opened its doors in the late 80s, then part of the prophecy necessary for the Rapture of the Church was completed. Currently, the Jews have not yet recognized Jesus as Son of God. The spirit of God will be spread unto the house of Israel and then the Jewish people will finally recognize their Saviour in the person of Jesus Christ.

When part of the Jewish people entered Palestine in 1948, a country formerly given by God to their fathers, in the days of Moses, this was the fulfillment of another prophecy. They had to face hostility on the ground from Arab nations. As God had said, the country was a desert.

Then they shall know that I am the Lord, when I have made the land most desolate because of all their abominations which they have committed.” (Ezekiel 33: 29)

---

<sup>19</sup> Internet Document [http // www.atlantic-line.fr-jahnow/africa.htm](http://www.atlantic-line.fr-jahnow/africa.htm). September 12, 1997.

c) **The return of Israel to his country**

On 14 May 1948, the day Israel declared its sovereignty, Arab nations attacked this small state.

Here are the forces that went to battle<sup>20</sup> :

Egypt	288 000
Libya	15 000
Algeria	57 000
Saudi Arabia	36 000
Jordan	60 250
Iraq	94 600
Syria	86 750
Lebanon	16 250

Total for Arab nations    653 000 soldiers

Israel                        75 000 soldiers

In less than a day, <sup>21</sup>a population of 650 000 Jews defeated over forty million men of the Arab League. They became masters of a territory of 20,000 sq km from Galilee to the Negev in the south. The following day, May 15, 1948, the Jews proclaimed the State of Israel but Arab nations did not intend to stop there.

d) **The Sinai War in 1956**

---

<sup>20</sup> *Focus on the World of Tomorrow* by Willard Cantelon, Editor R. LEBEL, 5 Allée Baco, 44    Nantes, page 77. Full translation.

<sup>21</sup> *The Return of Jesus Christ* by Rene Pache, Emmaus Edition, 1806 St. Legier Vevey, Switzerland, ccp 10-3147, Pages 274-275. Text.

Egypt, <sup>22</sup>armed to the teeth by the Soviet Union was preparing for a confrontation with Israel at the Sinai Peninsula. Israel attacked first; and conquered part of the Sinai Peninsula and successfully denationalized the Suez Canal to open a sea route through the Gulf of Aqaba. Israel added to his military arsenal, 120 tanks, 60 T-30, SU 100, 1200 cars and trucks, 70 000 tires and 8000 tons of ammunition. On November 4, 1956, when the cease-fire was announced, the losses incurred by Israel amounted to 174 killed and 1 prisoner; that of Egypt amounted to 1000 dead and 6000 prisoners. But this victory only increased the hostility of Arab nations.

e) **The six-day war in 1967**

In 1967<sup>23</sup>, the Six-Day War took place and Israel took possession of almost all the country once given to their fathers. All Arab countries were backed by U. S.S.R. Israel was only equipped with "Jeep" and "bazookas". However, here are the forces present:

<b><u>Arab nations</u></b>	<b><u>Israel</u></b>
472 000 soldiers	264 000 soldiers
2380 tanks	800 tanks
848 aircraft	300 aircraft

In less than six days, Israel was victorious in addition to expanding its borders; full occupation of the Sinai Sharm El Cheikh with, the entire East bank of the Suez Canal, Gaza and its territory, the old city of Jerusalem from the west bank of the Jordan and the massif of Golan Syria. Total loss incurred in June 10, 1967: <sup>24</sup>20 000 deaths for Arab nations, 679 for Israel. But the prophecy was not fully realized! Nevertheless, Ezekiel 32 warns Arab nations not to attack Israel.

f) **The Yom Kippur War**

---

<sup>22</sup> *The Return of Jesus Christ* by Rene Pache, Emmaus Edition, 1806 St. Legier Vevey, Switzerland, ccp 10-3147, page 275-276. Text.

<sup>23</sup> *The Return of Jesus Christ* by Rene Pache, Emmaus Edition, 1806 St. Legier Vevey, Switzerland, ccp 10-3147, Page 277-278. Text.

<sup>24</sup> *Focus on the World of Tomorrow* by Willard Cantelon, Editor R. LEBEL, 5 Allee Baco, 44 Nantes, page 78. Text.

On October 6, 1973, <sup>25</sup>Egypt and Syria attacked Israel to recover territories conquered during the Six-Day War. After suffering a crushing offensive, the Jewish state continued to have advantage over the West Bank of the Suez Canal, Golan Heights and Hermon up to 40 km from Damascus. The last war came to fulfill most of the prophecies made 600 years before Jesus Christ:

For I will take you from among the nations, gather you out of all countries, and bring you into your own land. (Ezekiel 36:24)

The Jews had just almost entirely reclaimed the land that God had once given to their fathers. With the opening of the eastern bloc, you need to see how the Jews in exile were returning on a voluntary basis or by mutual agreement to Israel. But the Great Architect of this world knows how his plans will be achieved. Moreover, the unification of Israel and the recovery of all its borders could be done during the Great Tribulation and at the beginning of the millennium.

## **2) The period of prosperity**

Now that Israel regained Jerusalem and much of the Promised Land, the country has become a garden and the wilderness has disappeared, as God said:

So they will say, 'This land that was desolate has become like the garden of Eden; and the wasted, desolate, and ruined cities are now fortified and inhabited.' (Ezekiel 36:35)

Israel today is among the countries exporting fruits in the world. Currently, this prophecy is being fulfilled.

Now, what must happen - and the process has already begun - is that Israel will turn to Jesus Christ. This will occur when the church will be raptured and the Antichrist come to power. The

---

<sup>25</sup> *The Return of Jesus Christ* by Rene Pache, Emmaus Edition, 1806 St. Legier Vevey, Switzerland, ccp 10-3147, Page 279-280. Text.

world government will be established. It has been noticed that the Jewish culture is revoltingly changing. Never in two thousand years, was the name of Jesus of Nazareth ever pronounced. But, in recent years, Jews, and especially their intellectuals like poets, writers and singers, talk about Jesus and ask this question: "And you tell me my sweet Jesus; say you were not God eh". The awakening has now begun; it is only a matter of following the process.

During the tribulation, the Antichrist will come upon Israel, kill two thirds of the Jews and try to destroy the race, like Hitler, to change the plan instituted by God (see chapter II).

Remember this phrase: " And shall intend to change times and law." (Daniel 7:25)

### **3) Egypt**

700 years before Christ, the Bible, tells us, through Prophet Isaiah:

5 The waters will fail from the sea, And the river will be wasted and dried up. 6 The rivers will turn foul; The brooks of defense will be emptied and dried up; The reeds and rushes will wither. 7 The papyrus reeds by the River, by the mouth of the River, And everything sown by the River, Will wither, be driven away, and be no more. 8 The fishermen also will mourn; All those will lament who cast hooks into the River, And they will languish who spread nets on the waters.

(Isaiah 19: 5-8)

Currently, Egypt is facing these difficulties. Aswan Dam hinders the monsoon from fertilizing the land on the banks of the Nile. <sup>26</sup>In short, there is erosion along the River bed and irrigation canals. The Nile flows faster and digs a bed of 1.7 cm per year. On the coast, there is significant marine erosion to the extent that silty provision can no longer fill the gap. Finally, there is general

---

<sup>26</sup> Aggregation of Geography 1996 by Georges Mutin, 1996 agreg-geo96@iepserv.univ-lyon2.fr, September 12, 1997.

rising water tables, and the water level is not only on the rise, but it is also stable throughout the year. Upwelling makes it difficult to ensure sanitation in large urban markets. It also leads to a worsening Schistosomiasis among fellahs who spend much of their time in irrigation canals (Blood flukes, parasitic worms that can only be destroyed by prolonged drying, at least three weeks of irrigation canals). It causes drainage problems and leads to a salt-land: 2.5 million feddans have been touched (35% of farmland). The consequences of the recent drought clearly show this. East Africa from 1979 to 1988 experienced below average rainfall. Water supplies from the Nile were insufficient and it was necessary to draw from the reserves of Lake Nasser. In 1984, without reserves from Lake Nasser, flood would have caused the irrigation of 5 million feddans out of the 11 million harvested. This problem hampers the future; there is a downward trend in the supply of water from the Nile. Would it be due to the existence of the Aswan Dam? Man does not master this unusual natural happening; God alone knows the outcome in His Creation. Naturally, the reader will probably guess that the increasing salinity of water from the river increases the acidity. Lack of potable water supply provoked by this acidity therefore causes the death of fish. Thus, the fisherman and the farmer are lamenting.

But you can bet with me, throughout its history, Egypt knew good times and peak periods. How can we say that these words are for our time? Let's revisit chapter 19 of Isaiah which says:

In that day there will be an altar to the Lord in the midst of the land  
of Egypt, and a pillar to the Lord at its border.  
(Isaiah 19:19)

Certain Bible version said: monument. In his Vision, Isaiah said: "A monument, pillar or altar to the Lord because it served the designs of the Lord." but how could Isaiah have invented the word "dam", since this word and its representation were unknown in his time? Here, the signs give reason to believe that it could have been the Aswan Dam on the Nile. However, the Aswan dam is not located on the border of Saudi Arabia. Isaiah prophesied clearly about the boundaries that will be established during the Millennium Stage. Since the altar of Jehovah does not exist in the

midst of Egypt, could this geographical division be established during the Millennium? Lake Nasser could extend to the boundary in the latter days. Given its Strategic position in agricultural development regrouping all countries that the Nile bathes, it could be declared (IW) international water to avoid conflicts. Then, the contour of Lake Nasser's Aswan Dam could become, at the Millennium, the new frontier of Egypt. This is my humble opinion.

## PART THREE - The formation of the satanic bloc

In this part of the chapter, we will take an in-depth look at the formation of satanic trinity and its components shall be identified, in the light of the prophecies.

### 1) The Satanic Trinity

Never in my youth, would I have thought that a satanic trinity could exist one day. Unfortunately, Satan is the ape of God. It is therefore natural that he establishes the diabolical plan of his reign by imitating God. Here is how trinity shall comprise: First, there will be son of Satan (Thessalonians 2: 3). Personally, I think he is born. It is not impossible that his power ends at 66 years, curiously, a doubling of 33 years, the age at which Christ was crucified. This person was probably conceived by Satan and carried by a woman. Thus, we have the son, the spirit of Satan which dwells in him and Satan would be his father. This sad prospect is obviously a biblical reality, so, this lying beast will rule over a world government.

### 2) Components of the satanic bloc

At this juncture, I would like to draw the reader's attention to the fact that, the goal of this book is not to summarize prophetic books especially the apocalyptic prophecies. The only truth lies fully in the sacred books, it is left to the reader to verify and read. Also, if I omit a word, a comma, an

event, if I make chronological mistakes, if I have misinterpreted or omitted something when transcribing and commenting on the sacred text, I do not in any way fall under the circumstances of the punishment described in Revelation 22:18-19 or other books of the Bible. Quotations from Prophetic books used are aimed at educating the reader and guiding him in the main events that form the Tribulation. ***The only true book is the Bible and all its contents. What I understand is that I wanted to root out the verses just as in the Bible to attach to this book. But in course of typing, I might have made an error, so only the full verse of the Bible is true and valid.*** The Lord Jesus did not appear to me. The information I provide, supported by various citations in the prophetic books, are the ideas and design of writings that are made by the major Christian scholars of our time, they remain prone to error. Here, it is a question of who is intelligent and wise.

The various components forming the satanic reign are for some easily identifiable, and for others difficult to perceive. Let's look at them in the light of prophecies.

Without further ado, I present the satanic entities. This tragedy in the history of Man will be caused in part by the latter's religious blindness. Many people who consider themselves as believers, (whether practicing or not), will be seduced because they shall have followed a Christian religion instead of reading the Word of God. All those who shall still be on earth after the rapture of the Church will be in doctrinal error vis-à-vis the Grace of Christ and shall be subject to new regulations for the Lord's salvation. So it is not for nothing that Christ gave us the order to read the signs of time and watch.

### **Parable of the Ten Virgins**

**1** "Then the kingdom of heaven shall be likened to ten virgins who took their lamps and went out to meet the bridegroom. **2** Now five of them were wise, and five were foolish. **3** Those who were foolish took their lamps and took no oil with them, **4** but the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. **5** But while the bridegroom was delayed, they all slumbered and slept. **6** And at midnight a cry was heard: 'Behold,



the bridegroom is coming; go out to meet him!' **7** Then all those virgins arose and trimmed their lamps. **8** And the foolish said to the wise, 'Give us some of your oil, for our lamps are going out.' **9** But the wise answered, saying, 'No, lest there should not be enough for us and you; but go rather to those who sell, and buy for yourselves.' **10** And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came, and those who were ready went in with him to the wedding; and the door was shut. **11** Afterward the other virgins came also, saying, 'Lord, Lord, open to us!' **12** But he answered and said, 'Assuredly, I say to you, I do not know you.' **13** Watch therefore, for you know neither the day nor the hour in which the Son of Man is coming. (Matthew 25:1-13)

This phenomenon of apostasy shall mainly be amplified by the disappearance of the Universal Church of Christ, that is to say, the true Christians in the Lord during the Rapture of the Church. Moreover, the Holy Spirit will stop work immediately after the Rapture. One of the roles of the Holy Spirit is to convince men of their sinfulness and lead them to Christ on the cross. (See 2 Thessalonians 2:7)

The mystery of iniquity will act in a very powerful way through the world religion. The Bible says in Matthew 24:24 that many people will be seduced.

For false christs and false prophets will rise and show great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect.

These words encourage us to be cautious. It is not surprising that nations shall be cajoled and will accept the Antichrist as god. But watch more carefully the characters in this drama and try to identify them in order to better contextualize the reality of our time. The Bible says:

Therefore when you see the 'abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, standing in the holy place (whoever reads, let him understand),  
(Matthew 24:15)

And

**26** But the court shall be seated, And they shall take away his dominion, To consume and destroy it forever. **27** Then the kingdom and dominion, And the greatness of the kingdoms under the whole heaven, Shall be given to the people, the saints of the Most High. His kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, And all dominions shall serve and obey Him

(Daniel 7:26-28)

Similarly, the Revelation says:

**7** But the angel said to me, "Why did you marvel? I will tell you the mystery of the woman and of the beast that carries her, which has the seven heads and the ten horns. **8** The beast that you saw was, and is not, and will ascend out of the bottomless pit and go to perdition. And those who dwell on the earth will marvel, whose names are not written in the Book of Life from the foundation of the world, when they see the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. **9** Here is the mind which has wisdom: The seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman sits. **10** There are also seven kings. Five have fallen, one is, and the other has not yet come. And when he comes, he must continue a short time. **11** The beast that was, and is not, is himself also the eighth, and is of the seven, and is going to perdition. **12** The ten horns which you saw are ten kings who have received no kingdom as yet, but they receive authority for one hour as kings with the beast. **13** These are of one mind, and they will give their power and authority to the beast. **14** These will make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb will overcome them, for He is Lord of lords and King of kings; and those who are with Him are called, chosen, and faithful." **15** Then he said to me, "The waters which you saw, where the harlot sits, are peoples, multitudes, nations, and tongues. **16** And the ten horns which you saw on the beast,

these will hate the harlot, make her desolate and naked, eat her flesh and burn her with fire. **17** For God has put it into their hearts to fulfill His purpose, to be of one mind, and to give their kingdom to the beast, until the words of God are fulfilled. **18** And the woman whom you saw is that great city which reigns over the kings of the earth." (Revelation 17:7-18)

This is how various Christian scholars interpret these prophecies written in two separate periods by Daniel and John, the Lord's servants. At the time of grace, the church is the bride of Christ and the Holy Spirit is watching over her. The Father is the head of Christ.

Satan, the Monkey god for his own part shall have the prostitute or the Satanic Church. But she is a prostitute in God's eyes although she has always declared herself for him. Apparently, the beast is a kingdom and a King; Satan is the spirit of the plot of human will and the master of the Antichrist. When John prophesied the Revelation, Israel and all Judea were under Roman influence. But at that time, Roman soldiers wore a <sup>27</sup>medallion having the effigy of a woman sitting on seven mountains, Revelation 5:18 revealed to us that it is a City: Woman sitting on seven hills has always represented the city of Rome.

And the woman whom you saw is that great city which reigns over the kings of the earth. (Revelation 17: 18)

---

<sup>27</sup> *The return of Jesus Christ* by Rene Pache, Emmaus Editions, 1806 St. Legier Vevey, page 187. Full text. Throughout history, some commentators have seen in Chapter 17 of the Revelation a reference to the Church whose centre is in Rome. Among them are not only Protestants writers, but even Catholic authors before and after the Reformation. By the time John wrote, what was this great capital if not Rome? If he gave it the mystical name of Babylon, it is first as a recall of the great struggle that was put to seize the Old Testament Babylon and Jerusalem; it is also a precaution because it would have been foolhardy to say such things openly concerning the mighty city, the pride of the Romans. The capital of the world based on seven Hills is unquestionably Rome. Curiously, imperial medals of that era, accurately representing Rome, were found in the guise of a woman sitting on seven hills. For centuries Latin poets called it "the city of seven hills". Now anyone who knows the history of the papacy knows that the latter is inconceivable without its headquarters in Rome, where it has been established for about 1500 years.

This empire shall scatter the Jewish people throughout the nations but after that, it shall lose its power and disappear. It shall reappear when the Jews will return to their country. It is possible that this conqueror is known to men.

The beast that you saw was, and is not, and will ascend out of the bottomless pit and go to perdition. And those who dwell on the earth will marvel, whose names are not written in the Book of Life from the foundation of the world, when they see the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. (Revelation 17: 8)

It is believed that the European Union is equivalent to the old Roman Empire whose designs are same. But it is possible that this Empire be formed by all the INTERNATIONAL ILLUMINATIS. The prophetic passage of Revelation 17:9-11 seems not yet understood by various Christian scholars. Shall it be the kings of Europe, influential men in the world; people invisible to the media but having a real power on earth?

**9** Here is the mind which has wisdom: The seven heads are seven mountains on which the woman sits. **10** There are also seven kings. Five have fallen, one is, and the other has not yet come. And when he comes, he must continue a short time. **11** The beast that was, and is not, is himself also the eighth, and is of the seven, and is going to perdition. (Revelation 17:9-11)

The ancient Roman Empire is characterized by ten kings who will present their authority and power to the beast or the Antichrist.

The ten horns which you saw are ten kings who have received no kingdom as yet, but they receive authority for one hour as kings with the beast. (Revelation 17: 12)

It will not necessarily be the same countries of the former Roman Empire, but the strategic religious core of the false prophet shall emerge from the city of Rome and they will have the same attitude towards Israel and the saints.

### **3) Analogies between the Universal Church and the satanic Church**

When I use the term "church", I mean the universal Church of Christ, that is to say true believers. They may be found among Catholics, evangelicals, Pentecostals, Baptists, Protestants. In short, in all Christian denominations, and those who worship Jesus Christ in a personal and sincere manner even without attending church. Here, it is not a matter of following a religion but to know that Christ died for the forgiveness of our sins and receive him in our hearts as Lord and Saviour and Son of God. Obviously, when I talk about receiving Christ, I mean accepting him to take our place on the cross and bear our sins. We therefore accept his atoning sacrifice for us personally.

At the beginning of the Revelation, Apostle John prophesied on seven churches. Personally, I believe it is the leadership of each of the churches which make up the Universal Church of Christ. Curiously, the head of the Seventh Church would be rejected by Jesus Christ. The only thing that can make God to reject a church is its failure to correctly convey the message of salvation by the grace obtained through Christ.

#### **The Seventh letter to the Church of Laodicea**

**14** "And to the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write,"These things says the Amen, the Faithful and True Witness, the Beginning of the creation of God: **15** I know your works, that you are neither cold nor hot. I could wish you were cold or hot. **16** So then, because you are

lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will vomit you out of My mouth.

17 Because you say, 'I am rich, have become wealthy, and have need of nothing'--and do not know that you are wretched, miserable, poor, blind, and naked--

(Revelation 3:14-17)

If the interpretation of the woman sitting on seven hills or mountains is correct, then the prostitute should be in Rome. Is the pope not substituting Jesus in his priesthood with his doctrine of Infallibility? Does he not act as the High Priest for the sins of the faithful, if we understand the Catholic religion? Naturally, if a faithful of this Church from the depth of his mind and heart goes to Jesus Christ for the forgiveness of his sins and personally accept His atoning sacrifice, he will be saved. But it should be admitted that the Roman Catholic Church does not teach the glory of Christ, but rather that of the Pope in its sacraments and rituals.

On the contrary, the Church of Philadelphia is the weakest but most loved because she kept the word. The Apostolic Church is made up of several churches but without any headquarter. They are focused on the Word of God, on salvation in Jesus Christ by grace, allowing the Holy Spirit to lead them and seriously embarking on the evangelical role of the church. Pastors like Rex Humbard, Billy Graham and several others have expensive television programmes which save many souls and many donations are collected. These donations must be wisely managed to the glory of Christ. However, what would happen if one of these pastors offers himself a good salary from the donations received? May be nothing will happen but for the fact that the church would have less money for evangelization. As for the personal work of this minister, God shall perceive him differently during judgment when he will be tested by fire (1 Corinthians 3:1-15). But, what if a pastor preached for pride? The only way to preach pride is to keep away the faithful from the Word of God, for the Bible gives no room for human pride. That is how Reverend Jim Jones got his collective suicide, and today many have created religious Christian sects. But let us closely examine some of these sects like the Jehovah's Witnesses, Mormons, and the Seventh-day Adventists.

a) **The Jehovah's Witnesses**

The <sup>28</sup>founder is called Charles Taze Russell, born in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania, on 16 February, 1852, second son of a wealthy Presbyterian family of Scottish-Irish clothiers. From a young age, dissatisfied with the Presbyterian Church, he joined a Congregational Church. At the age of nine, he lost his mother, an event that plunged him into a spiritual crisis even though short-lived. He started questioning his faith, studied various Eastern religions and became sceptical. At the age of 17, concerned with the problem of human destiny and judgment, he joined a youth organization, the Young Men's Christian Association. In early 1870, a Bible study group of Adventist trend was formed in Allegheny at the outskirts of his hometown. Russell joined this group, where he acquired the firm conviction of being the only believer able to understand the entire Bible. On July 1, 1879 he launched *The Zion Watchtower and Messenger of Christ's Presence* with 6000 copies. To sell his literature and to ensure the predominance of his doctrine on the Bible, he created in January 1881; *the Watchtower Society* whose Headquarter was to be in Brooklyn in the state of New York as from 1897. In 1906, after 27 years of marriage, Russell's wife divorced him because of the pride and selfishness of her husband and his misconduct towards other women. Russell died October 31, 1916, in a train between San Francisco and New York, during a lecture tour. During his lifetime he covered nearly 1.5 million kilometres. At his death, 25,000 disciples followed his teachings. He was succeeded by Joseph Franklin Rutherford as the second President. The latter was born November 8, 1869 at Bonneville Missouri, in a Baptist family. He was Russell's collaborator since 1907 and also the printing manager of the Organisation. This great business man was much more dynamic than Russell. Rutherford made a lot of propaganda, trying to supersede his predecessor's literature by replacing them with his own. Finally, it would be fair to say that Rutherford is the true founder of Jehovah's Witnesses. One finds it difficult to believe that a Baptist would abandon the notion of salvation and the divinity of Jesus which is very much present in the Baptist Church. Rutherford might have deliberately obscured the salvation and Divinity of Jesus and interpreted the 144 000 Jewish messengers (virgins) redeemed from the tribulation as those of grace. Although Jehovah's Witnesses consider this era as that of

---

<sup>28</sup> *Sects Exposed* by Gerard Dagon, Barnabas Publishing, 19, Georges Landry avenue, 14430, Dozule ISBN 2-908582-17-1, Volume 2, Pages 172-176 Full text from these pages.

tribulation, the Watchtower Society has attacked the Holy Trinity, by considering Christ as a mere creation, thereby permanently obscuring salvation to their followers. Whereas the Bible clearly teaches that Christ is God (e.g. Isaiah 9 :5-6, Apoc. 1: 8, John 5 :17-19, John 11: 27, Revelation. 21: 6, John 1: 1, John 1 :12-18, John 3: 2, John 3: 21, John 13: 3, Col 2: 9, 1 John 5: 20, Heb 1 :8-9, John 8: 58, John 10: 30, John 17 : 5, John 20: 28, Rom 9: 5, Phil 2: 6, Titus 2: 13, Luke 24: 52, Heb 1: 6, etc..) And that the Holy Spirit is a person of the deity (e.g. John 14: 16, John 15: 26, Act 5: 3, Act 13: 2, Heb 3: 7, etc..).

In the 40s, the Watchtower society, apparently embarrassed by the many biblical passages that are contrary to their teachings, decided to publish a Bible in line with their doctrine under the name *New World Translation of the Bible* which contains hundreds of intentional errors to justify the false doctrine of Jehovah's Witnesses. All renowned<sup>29</sup> personalities of the past in the field of Bible translation vigorously condemned this translation and Bible version. Just to name a few, Professors HH Rowley, AA Hoekema, Walter R. Martin, J. M. Nicole, F. Godin, P. LeFort, Julius Mantley, Bruce M. Metzger, Samuel Mikolaski, Paul Kaufman, etc... Naturally, this Bible is not sold at the bookstore, because it was not recognized as such. On the contrary, any other user version of the Bible can be bought at a very low price in any bookstore. It is very difficult to argue with a Jehovah's Witness, the Watchtower Society forbids them to read books other than those of the society. Whenever they visit us, they are often two or three, well prepared, to attack us by citing verses that alter the divinity of Christ. If someone is not well prepared or lacks a perfect mastery of the Bible, he may not be able to defend himself against their arguments. One day I received Jehovah's Witnesses in my home and I answered them from the Scriptures. The younger of the two who visited me began to change his mind about the Watchtower and the Divinity of Jesus Christ. As soon as the elder realized it, he apologized politely and they left. Statistics show that there are 4,914,094 members of the sect who have been held captive by the Watchtower Society.

---

<sup>29</sup> *The errors and lies of the Society of Jehovah's Witnesses brought to light with the help of the Bible* by Christian Piette, Bethel Publishing, PO Box 1600, Pages 172-176. Text.



## b) The Mormons

The <sup>30</sup>Founder is called Joseph Smith, born December 23, 1805 in Sharon, the United States. He is third of nine children of a Presbyterian agrarian family. In the spring of 1820, God and Jesus Christ appeared to him to tell him that all churches of this era are in error. On 21 September 1823, Angel Maroni asked him to look for a book written on golden plates; two stones and a breastplate "Urim" and "Thummim" which will be useful for the translation of the plates. The angel specifically instructed that the valuables must not be shown to anybody. On 22 September, 1827 on the hill of Cumorah, near Manchester in New York, he discovered plates covered with characters of an unknown reformed Egyptian language. With the help of Martin Harris and Oliver Cowdery, they were translated into English before an angel came and took them back. This translation is the famous ***Book of Mormon***, published in 1830. On 18 January 1827, he married his first wife, Emma Hale. This marriage was followed by 22 others. Jailed in Carthage, Illinois, he was shot with a gun by a mob, on 27 June, 1844 at the age of 39. After his death, the sect was in a state of confusion. On 21 July 1847, carpenter Brigham Young gathered a bulk of the disciples, and drove them right up to Salt Lake City, in the state of Utah. The city has since then become the world headquarter of the sect. From 1859 to 1869, the entire state of Utah was handed over to the Mormons. On 25 September 1890, Wilford Woodruff, president of the Church abolished polygamy. It is impossible to state all the doctrinal errors and dissenting views of Mormonism. However, I will present the main ones. The faith of this sect is based on the Bible, the Book of Mormon, Doctrine and Covenants, the Pearl of great price. Their faith is also based, on the many confessions, successive and continuous revelations during the days of their various leaders. According to the sect, ***the Book of Mormon*** is a continuation of the Bible, but this statement sharply contradicts Revelation 22: 18. In many respects the book of Mormon and the many revelations contradict the Bible. Examples abound: polygamy, priesthood of Aaron and Melchizedek, baptism of the dead, constitution of God's body, continuation of apostle and prophet in the church, General salvation to all mankind,

---

<sup>30</sup> *Sects Exposed* by Gerard Dagon Barnabas Publishing, 19, avenue Georges Landry, 14430, Dozule ISBN 2-908582-17-1, Volume 1, Pages 103-111 Full text from these pages

Jesus visited America, the New Jerusalem is Salt Lake City. This sect obscures salvation to its faithful through the theology of God who became man so that man should become god. It is a blasphemy that has nothing to do with biblical incarnation. Were the appearances seen by Joseph Smith not of Satan as stated in 2 Corinthians 11: 14 and Galatians 1:6-9? Statistics show that the sect has over 8,406,895 members.

c) **The Seventh Day Adventists**

The <sup>31</sup>Co-founder of this sect is called William Miller. He was born on 15 February, 1782 in Pittsfield. He is particularly noted for his great zeal in studies. He is the eldest of six children of a pious and modest Baptist family. From 15 September 1815, he preached at the Baptist Church of Low Hampton. Passionate about the teaching on the Return of Jesus Christ, after some clever calculation he concluded that Jesus will return on October 22, 1844, a stance which sharply contrasts with the Bible in Matthew 24: 36. On 13 August, 1831, he revealed the date. In 1833 he became pastor of the Baptist Church at Low Hampton. At that time, the doctrine of the impending Return of Jesus Christ was so present and so much on demand by some believers that they were called "Millerites". With this failure, in October 22 1844, William Miller and his associates admitted their sin of pride and the movement practically disappeared. In 1845, Miller and 50 000 Millerites were excommunicated from their various churches. Then that same year, he put an end to the Millerite movement, probably aware that his sin of pride had just created a vacuum in a cult. He died on 20 December 1849.

After seeing a vision on 23 October 1844, a man named Hiram Edson declared that the expected coming of Christ the previous day is not the Second Coming of Jesus Christ, but the entry thereof in the terminal phase of his priestly ministry that the Bible calls the cleansing of the heavenly sanctuary. It is a new phase of the mission of salvation for humanity, the final phase of Christ's ministry, i.e. the investigation to determine who benefits from his Grace. Of course the reader must have discerned that the Bible does not speak about any of these allegations, it is just an

---

<sup>31</sup> *Sects Exposed* by Gerard Dagon Barnabas Publishing, 19, avenue Georges Landry, 14430, Dozule ISBN 2-908582-17-1, Volume 2, Pages 7-32 Full text of these pages.

opportunist who took advantage of the pride of the disappointed Millerites to continue to promote the movement at the level of some faithful who preferred to believe anything instead of admitting their original mistake in Matthew 24: 36. Consequently, despite the abolition of the Millerite movement in 1845, some activists continued to promote it. This concept of an investigative judgment jeopardizes salvation by Grace. Moreover, it is probably for this reason that William Miller dismissed the theory and subsequently terminated the Millerite movement.

Ellen G. White is co-founder of this organisation. Born in Gorham on 26 November, 1827, into a Methodist family of eight children, she was hit on the nose by a stone at the age of nine and she remained unconscious for three weeks. Thereafter, her health remained fragile. Helen was converted in March 1840 during a camp and was baptized. She attended Miller's conferences and withdrew from the Methodist Church in 1843. On 30 August 1846, she married the Millerite or Adventist preacher James White. She was rewarded with about 2000 visions and revelations. The vision of April 7, 1847 invited her to return to the observance of Saturday as the Sabbath. She wrote 71 books, 4500 articles, over a thousand letters, numbering up to 45,000 pages. In 1855, James and Helen White built a house in Battle Creek which became the first headquarters of the Adventist Church, and then on 21 May 1863, in Battle Creek, 125 local churches, being a total of 3,500 members, officially organized the Seventh-day Adventist Church. James White died on 6 August 1881, but Helen continued his mission.

Even though many of their teachings are in perfect accord with the Bible, there are others which contradict the Holy Scriptures. This is mainly due to the revelations of Helen White such as the Sabbath, the theory of death, purification of the sanctuary, the seventh day Adventist Church as the only true and faithful church. Although the fact that one is pro-Helene White or pro-Christ does not veil salvation, and that many born-again Adventists who have deep love for the Lord and His Word are our brothers and sisters in the Lord, the fact remains that as long as the writings of Helene White are considered by the congregation as revelations, which she personally recommended, we must consider this denomination that deviated from the Baptists Methodists church as a sect. Besides, the revelations of Helen White sharply contrast with the Bible in Deuteronomy 4: 2, Deuteronomy 12: 32, Proverbs 30: 6, 2 Corinthians 10: 8. The first alleged error of the Adventists is their much emphasis on the works of Helene White. Today, it is an established fact that "this messenger of God" embarked on a wide scale shameless plagiarism of

sixty authors. She inherited the historical, scientific, medical and theological errors of the works which she looted. The Adventist Historian Ronald Numbers, in his book *Prophetess of Health: A Study of Ellen G. White*, and the Adventist Pastor Walter Rea in *The White Lie*, amply demonstrates this sad fact.

Desmond Ford, a professor of Australian Adventist theology, shows that the conception of the sanctuary proposed by Helene White to explain the debacle of October 22, 1844 is in contradiction with the Bible. The concept of an investigative judgment jeopardizes salvation by Grace.

Although the profession of faith of the Church does not place the writings of Helene White above the Bible, We see an ambiguity to be resolved vis-à-vis the biblical text. Ostensibly, there is a debate in the sect notably between the pro-Helene White and her writings and revelations, and those who are pro-Bible. It is obvious that the writings and revelations of Helen White are biased for all souls wishing to follow this path. Moreover, the sect by its doctrinal weakness opens door to a host of false teachers, those wishing to separate many<sup>2</sup> of the believers from the true salvation by the grace of our Lord Jesus Christ. Present in 208 countries, the Seventh Day Adventists currently has 8,608,586 members, not counting about 17 million young people yet to be baptized or other supporters.

#### d) **How to choose a Church**

Personally, to better situate the reader, I attend an Evangelical church, once in a fortnight and I spend the rest of my time in prayers and in studying the Word of God. Congregations like Evangelical, Baptist, Pentecostal and Protestant give an identical message of salvation on Jesus Christ. In each church, it depends on the leader who chooses the type of Biblical message to convey to his followers. Anyway, I do not know any man who directly communicates with God, and who then can say, "God says." It is impossible, because the Word of God is complete today. And this is what Jesus Himself says about it.

He who rejects Me, and does not receive My words, has that which judges him--the word that I have spoken will judge him in the last day.  
(John 12: 48)

The only way to be sure that one is well informed is to read the Bible, the Word of God and know the revelations. Never follow man but God alone. In my church, it is difficult for a man who gives a message on Sunday to extend beyond the biblical truths or boast before God. Because we are all taught by the Bible and it is always the sacred texts which prevail over the ideas of man.

e) **The Catholic Church**

Even if at the base, the Catholic Church today gives a message almost identical to other churches, it is very important to discern. Let me explain. If a Catholic, Orthodox, or any other priest gives a message whereas he has never read the Bible, what can he offer to the faithful who have come in good faith to hear the name of Jesus Christ? He can only speak of dogmas or sacraments of his church, which may be wrong vis-à-vis Biblical truths. Naturally, he can speak about everyday life or what his conscience tells him concerning good and evil. Sincere Christians belonging to this congregation lack deep knowledge of the Scripture. Particularly about prophecies, the earthly stages in the Divine Plan, the Universal Church, the various resurrections, the time following the period of grace and the Rapture of the Church on earth. Moreover, we can know in our lifetime if we shall go to heaven or not and this does not depend on our good works but on the salvation by grace. When we believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God and accept His sacrifice on the cross, we witness the new birth, that of the Holy Spirit. However, those who do not go to Christ but to a religion will certainly not be saved, because all these religions draw people towards man and not Christ. I blame the Catholic Church for making people believe that it is by our good works that we may be able to go to heaven. If and only if, our good works outnumber our bad deeds. In other words, this is a way of telling the faithful that it is possible for us to redeem ourselves. This is not true. To believe this tantamount to missing salvation by Grace, and being rejected like these virgins far from the face of God. And this is what God says:

4 Now to him who works, the wages are not counted as grace but as debt. 5 But to him who does not work but believes on Him who justifies the ungodly, his faith is accounted for righteousness,  
(Romans 4:4-5)

It is not because of our good deeds that we will go to heaven. It is because Jesus, the Son of God came on earth in human form. And He alone among all creation was sinless. In other words, he remained Saint because begotten by God he did not have the stain of the original sin at birth. Although He was holy, men judged and put him to death because he came to announce the good news of salvation. On the cross, He gave himself to be the atonement for the sins of all men. This Holy Sacrifice, the only one that God could accept as ransom for all the sins of men; has been endorsed by Him in heaven. That is why anyone willing to give his sins to Jesus on the cross in order to be justified is saved. In dying alone (Jesus Christ) Just before God in His entire person was able to overcome the chains of death, because death and hell, could not keep him due to his holiness. For this reason, He is able to save all those who come to Him for eternal life. No one comes to God, without accepting the sacrifice of Jesus Christ on the cross. This acceptance has to be personal and individual. The moment someone by an act of faith asks Christ to take his sins on the cross, that person has eternal life. At that moment we are justified by Jesus, the Holy Spirit comes to dwell in us. Justification means that through Christ, God sees us holy, because He atoned for our iniquities on the cross. We are sealed by the Holy Spirit, set apart and sanctified. Sanctification means that God through the Holy Spirit changes our old nature, to give us a creature that pleases Him. When we belong to God, it is natural to do good works. We found<sup>32</sup> twenty nine more doctrinal errors of the Roman Catholic Church.

---

<sup>32</sup> \$3 000 to WIN by Jean Flahaut, published by the Association of French Language Evangelical Baptist Churches of Canada, P. O Box 72, Montreal.

<b>Date of introduction</b>	<b>Doctrine established</b>	<b>Bible verses that are against this new doctrine</b>
	That the Roman Catholic priest has received power to replace Jesus Christ in his priesthood to offer an atoning sacrifice. In other words: that he can forgive sins on behalf of Jesus Christ.	“But Jesus because he remains forever has a priesthood that is not transferable”(Drawn from the Catholic version of Canon Spike) Hebrews 7: 24, Hebrews 10: 12
Towards 609	Worship of Saints and angels	Colossians 2:8-10
Towards 431	Worship of the virgin	Luke 11: 27-28
Towards 787	Worship of Relics	2 Kings 18: 4
Towards 787	Worship of images	Exodus 20: 4
Towards the 5 <sup>th</sup> century	Obligatory abstinence from food	1 Timothy 4:3
	Penances and mortification of men can atone for their sins	Colossians 2:23
	Mandatory attendance of mass under pain of mortal sin	The Bible does not even make mention of it. It is not a sin.
Towards the 5 <sup>th</sup> century	Prayers for the dead	Hebrews 9: 27
	Salvation by our merits and our works	Ephesians 2:8-9
Towards 850	Holy water	The Bible does not even make allusion to it
	Limbo	The Bible does not even make allusion to it
Towards 978	Purgatory	Luke 23:43
Towards the 12 <sup>th</sup> century	Rosary	Matthew 6:7

	Doctrine of intention	The Bible does not even make allusion to it.
Towards 1074	Obligatory celibacy for priests	1 Timothy 4:3
	Peter was the Bishop of Rome	Romans 15:20
Towards 609	Papacy obtained from Emperor Phocas	1 Peter 5:1
1870	Papal infallibility	Galatians 2:11
1547	Mass	1 Corinthians 11: 26
1547	Renewal of Jesus' sacrifice	Hebrews 9: 26
	Doctrine of "Sacred Heart" of Jesus	Jesus was Saint John 4:23-24
	Perpetual virginity of Mary	Matthew 1:25
1854	Immaculate conception	Although God begat Jesus, Mary remains a sinful woman who needs the Son of God for her salvation. Luke 1:47
1950	The assumption of Mary	The Bible does not even mention it
1660	The sacrament of confirmation	The Bible does not even talk about it
1215	The sacrament of auricular confession to the priest	Acts 8:22
1439	Sacrament of extreme anointing	The Bible does not even mention it
Towards the 5 <sup>th</sup> century	Sacrament of order	The Bible does not even mention it

As we can see, the leadership of a Church may be rotten and corrupt with false teaching in order to lose many souls. Only those amongst them who go to Jesus Christ are saved, but sometimes they walk very far from the Word of God and consequently sadden the Holy Spirit. Anyway, the denomination in which someone may find himself will not matter much when the Rapture of the



Church will occur and hence during the first part of the resurrection of the righteous. No single righteous shall remain on earth. In the various existing churches, God will rapture Christians who agreed to surrender their sins to Christ on the cross. Then, an earthly Church which already exists and whose leadership is corrupt and based in Rome will become the prostitute.

#### **4) The prostitute and the false prophet**

It may be necessary to explain this satanic entity. First of all, it should be recalled that with the rapture of the Universal Church and the first part of the first resurrection of the righteous: no righteous will remain on earth. Therefore, only disappointed and angry people shall remain pondering over the disappearance of millions of people in just a twinkle of the eye. As we understood in course of analyzing the essence of the Catholic religion, it is likely that the Catholic structure remains after the rapture. What shall the remaining leaders of this church tell the inhabitants of the earth? I want to suggest these possibilities.

- 1) They will publicly admit to have committed doctrinal errors in the past that obscured salvation to men, and then return to the Bible as the source of all truth.
- 2) They will formally deny everything about the Return of Jesus Christ, and will present the disappearance of the righteous as the work of the devil and even extraterrestrial. They shall then request the formation of a world government with its President (the Antichrist) who shall be presented as the new Messiah.

The Bible gives us the answer; they shall choose the second option. If we make a flashback into historical facts, we discover that from its inception, the Catholic Church has always taken delight in unteaching the plan of salvation by grace in Jesus Christ. It introduced the papacy and has adopted a very rigid structure with the establishment of various religious communities. Right from the middle Ages, it has ensured the support and authority of the kings of the earth.

And the woman whom you saw is that great city which reigns over the kings of the earth. (Revelation 17: 18)

Its practice of Inquisition has increased its wealth and strength. It has relentlessly chased those who practice the holy doctrine of Christ, killing them and accusing them of witchcraft and this, in a bid to increase its wealth and glory by using the name of Christ.

I saw the woman, drunk with the blood of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus. And when I saw her, I marveled with great amazement. (Revelation 17: 6)

However, there is an excellent book on the subject entitled "*The Church ignored*" by E. H. Broadbent of Christian golden collection.

When John prophesied about the prostitute: the Church allowing the Antichrist to take power, he said:

I saw the woman, drunk with the blood of the saints and with the blood of the martyrs of Jesus. And when I saw her, I marveled with great amazement. (Revelation 17:6)

Why was John surprise? Is it because it was a church that claimed to work for Christ? The Bible is formal: the prostitute is in Rome. And the only church installed in Rome is the Roman Catholic Church. Could it be that the Catholic Church is the prostitute, this church that will allow the Antichrist to take power on earth? Besides, which other church is powerful enough to influence nations and political leaders? Currently, the Catholic Church is exploring the possibility of unification of all religions. The unification of all the religions of the world means that salvation by grace in Jesus Christ will be scrapped in order to satisfy the major world religions. Moreover, on this subject, Pierre Virion has an interesting idea in his book "*Soon a world government, a great one and against the church* " In another vein, looking at the prophecies of Nostradamus, Satanic prophecies since a prophet of God should not make any mistake. The prophecies of

Nostradamus have a success rate of about 66%. So we can consider that Nostradamus, who prophesied according to the Popes, will probably be right. Nations shall believe in the Catholic Church and its Pope (the false prophet) and shall, therefore, unify all religions on earth. When the Antichrist shall appear, He shall demonstrate that he is the man capable of unifying all the nations of world and get them out of economic doldrums. Thereafter, it will blind the nations by his wonders and those made by his counter- satanic church and his false prophet (Revelation 16: 13 - 14). So that nations will take him for God.

## 5) The ten horns

The ten horns are ten kings who will unite with the prostitute. This is the Roman Empire given that orders shall come from Rome. Here's what Daniel says about it: the eleventh king was added.

The ten horns are ten kings Who shall arise from this kingdom.

(Daniel 7:24)

The ten horns which you saw are ten kings who have received no kingdom as yet, but they receive authority for one hour as kings with the beast. (Revelation 17:12)

1 hour of 1 week knowing that 1 week = 7 years

1 week = 168 hours = 84 months

168 hours / 84 months = 2 weeks

The satanic kingdom is a world government. It begins after the Rapture of the Church and its duration is seven years, characterized by two periods of three and a half years. Many wonder if the Antichrist will appear immediately after the Rapture. The biblical answer is in the negative because, according to the Word of God, the ten horns-the new Roman empire which is headed by the false prophet, that is to say by Rome, have a plan to achieve and it will last one hour of the

time of the beast. The ten kings shall receive authority after the Rapture of the Church. So it may be kings or men controlling INTERNATIONAL organisations or men exercising real power on earth now, but operating in secret. The prostitute and the ten kings will exercise authority for 2 weeks. Subsequently, the Bible tells us that the eleventh country will be added, hence the Antichrist and the ten kings, shall give him their authority.

The Antichrist and the ten horns will kill the prostitute. Note the severity of the Word of God: "prostitute". Why does the Bible refer to it as the prostitute? Yet it is the World Church of the Antichrist and the Bible takes delight to call it prostitute. It would be interesting to analyze the meaning of the word prostitute, this term means "disgraced." Who is the person that this church has disgraced? Who was the first love of this church long ago? The prostitute will be destroyed by the ten horns and the beast (Revelation 17:15-18). Some Christian scholars believe that this will be the end of the reign of Satan, but it's not a certainty. We'll just say it will be destroyed.

Earlier I mentioned that the ancient Roman Empire could be represented as European Union or various other identities forming the ten horns of the prophecy. Indeed, as we shall see, the world is able to bring the Antichrist to power. In the light of the prophecies, let us study the following information.

a) **The <sup>33</sup>beast or "Swift" system, the central computer of EEC.**

*Obviously, the reader now knows that a computer cannot be the beast. The beast has life and a computer is only a tool in this global conspiracy, but this is how this section has been entitled.*

Dr. Handrick Eldeman, chief analyst of the Common Market Conference disclosed in Brussels that a computer restoration plan is already in place prior to the impending global chaos. At an emergency meeting that brought together both scholars, advisers and officers of the CMC, Dr. Eldeman unveiled "the Beast", a gigantic computer that occupies three floors of the administrative building at the Common Market headquarters. This monster is a computer

---

<sup>33</sup> Drawn from a text in Moody Magazine.

programmer with more than one hundred distributing sources of data. Programming experts have developed a plan called 'governing all world trade by computer'. This master plan would involve a system of numbering each human being on earth. So the computer would give each inhabitant of the world a number to be used for any purchase or sale, thereby setting aside the problem of the current credit cards. This number would be invisibly tattooed by laser, either on the forehead or on the back of the hand. This would establish a walking credit card. And the number could be seen only through infrared devices installed in Express check counters or business places. Dr. Eldeman was of the opinion that using three series of six digits each (666), each person in the world could be given a separate Credit card number.

Other officials of the Common Market believe that the current chaos and disorder with mysterious causes demonstrate the need for a global currency, an international footprint which would perhaps put an end to the current paper money and coins ... In their place, Credit notes would be exchanged under the care of the clearing corporation of a global bank. No member could buy or sell without being given such a numbered imprint. The leaders of the Common Market are now convinced that world order depends on the allegiance of peace and politics to a new system of global trade and numbering. A single individual would have within his reach the number of all the inhabitants of the earth. This could be an instrument of peace or a weapon of dictatorship. When we asked one of the leaders of the Common Market what would happen if someone objected to the system and refused to cooperate, she answered rather bluntly: "we would have to use force to get him comply with new requirements". When one remembers what the Bible says (Revelation 13:16-18) about the coming of Antichrist at the head of this organization, the following quotations become extremely illuminating.

Henri Spaak, father of the European Common Market and NATO Secretary General, said in one of his speeches: "we do not want another committee, we have too much now. What we want is a man of such stature that is able to gain the allegiance of all peoples and pull us out of economic chaos into which we sink. Send us such a man; be he god or devil, we will welcome him."

#### Revelation of John 13:11, 16-18:

" Then I saw another beast coming up out of the earth, and he had two horns like a lamb and spoke like a dragon... He causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand or on their foreheads, and that no one may buy or sell except one who has the mark or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him who has understanding calculate the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man: His number is 666".

#### Revelation of John 14: 9-12:

"... If anyone worships the beast and his image, and receives his mark on his forehead or on his hand, he himself shall also drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out full strength into the cup of His indignation. He shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb. And the smoke of their torment ascends forever and ever; and they have no rest day or night, who worship the beast and his image, and whoever receives the mark of his name. Here is the patience of the saints; here are those who keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus".

## 6) The Antichrist

This character, who shall assume the role of the son of Satan in this human tragedy, is rather enigmatic. In fact, it is very difficult to say with certainty where he shall come from. On the contrary, we know his purpose.

The Bible says this is the eleventh country which adds unto the ten kings; He shall bring down three and the other kings will hand him their authority.

The ten horns are ten kings Who shall arise from this kingdom. And another shall rise after them; He shall be different from the first ones, And shall subdue three kings. He shall speak pompous words against

the Most High, Shall persecute the saints of the Most High, And shall intend to change times and law. Then the saints shall be given into his hand For a time and times and half a time.

(Daniel 7: 24-25)

This prophecy which dates back to 600 BC shows that he shall be the eleventh King of a country which is already irreligious and atheistic. The Antichrist shall come out of this eleventh country; I think he will only be visible after the rapture of the Church and the Holy Spirit from the earth (2 Thessalonians 2: 7). As soon as the Antichrist will come to power, for three and a half years, he will try to exterminate the Saints. Satan being his father, he will attempt to cock a snook at God, so that the Millennium stage should not take place. In this sense, he will try to change the law and the time determined by God.

## 7) Where will the Antichrist come from?

The analogy that the Antichrist shall be against Israel and the fact that it shall probably be an atheist country, leads us to introduce this prophecy written by Ezekiel, 600 years BC. I will quote only two parts to show you what I mean.

Prophecy against Gog

**1** Now the word of the Lord came to me, saying, **2** "Son of man, set your face against Gog, of the land of Magog, the prince of Rosh, Meshech, and Tubal, and prophesy against him, **3** and say, 'Thus says the Lord God: "Behold, I am against you, O Gog, the prince of Rosh, Meshech, and Tubal.

(Ezekiel 38: 1-3)

And

**17** Thus says the Lord God: "Are you he of whom I have spoken in former days by My servants the prophets of Israel, who prophesied for years in those days that I would bring you against them? **18** "And it

will come to pass at the same time, when Gog comes against the land of Israel," says the Lord God, "that My fury will show in My face. **19** For in My jealousy and in the fire of My wrath I have spoken: 'Surely in that day there shall be a great earthquake in the land of Israel, **20** so that the fish of the sea, the birds of the heavens, the beasts of the field, all creeping things that creep on the earth, and all men who are on the face of the earth shall shake at My presence. The mountains shall be thrown down, the steep places shall fall, and every wall shall fall to the ground.' **21** I will call for a sword against Gog throughout all My mountains," says the Lord God. "Every man's sword will be against his brother. **22** And I will bring him to judgment with pestilence and bloodshed; I will rain down on him, on his troops, and on the many peoples who are with him, flooding rain, great hailstones, fire, and brimstone. **23** Thus I will magnify Myself and sanctify Myself, and I will be known in the eyes of many nations. Then they shall know that I am the Lord." (Ezekiel 38: 17-23)

Gog is the natural lineage of Reuben, a tribe of Israel! (Chronicle 5: 4). The Bible does not specify the son of Reuben who begot Gog; his name is mentioned once in the Bible. Magog is the son of Japheth son of Noah (Genesis 10: 2). Rosch is the son of Benjamin, a tribal patriarch of Israel (Genesis 46: 21). Rosch had no offspring (Number 26: 38). Tubal and Meshech are both sons of Japheth, son of Noah (Genesis 10: 2). The Bible does not give any details about the geographical destination of these peoples.

Noah had three sons, Shem, Japheth and Ham. Japheth for his part begat Gomer, Magog, Madai, Javan, Tubal, Meshech and Tiras (1 Chronicles 1: 5). Noah prophesied and blessed his sons in a retrograding manner. For many, it is a sin, and for others a spiritual lineage and race.

**24** So Noah awoke from his wine, and knew what his younger son had done to him. **25** Then he said: "Cursed be Canaan; A servant of servants He shall be to his brethren." **26** And he said: "Blessed be the



Lord, The God of Shem, And may Canaan be his servant. **27** May God enlarge Japheth, And may he dwell in the tents of Shem; And may Canaan be his servant." **28** And Noah lived after the flood three hundred and fifty years. **29** So all the days of Noah were nine hundred and fifty years; and he died. (Genesis 9:24-29)

It appears that the lineage of Shem was blessed with spirituality, wisdom, intelligence, strength and courage. While that of Japheth who lived in the tent of Shem was given intelligence, strength and courage. Yet, it seems that Japheth will become the master during the Great Tribulation, and his king would be of Jewish descent. Gog who came from the house of Reuben whom God calls the Antichrist but where shall he come from?

God gives us a clue in Ezekiel 38: 14-15 and 39:2

"Therefore, son of man, prophesy and say to Gog, 'Thus says the Lord God: "On that day when My people Israel dwell safely, will you not know it? Then you will come from your place out of the far north, you and many peoples with you, all of them riding on horses, a great company and a mighty army.

Compared to Israel, his country is at the extreme north, Ezekiel 39: 2, reconfirms that location. If you look at the definition of "Petit Larousse illustrated 1990" north: the seven stars of the Big or Little Bear. Coastal North.

There are two ways to proceed:

Looking at a map from the sky of Jerusalem, we see that the end of the north turns around the polar star, causing it to have different degrees vis-à-vis the true north. Astronomers could correct me.

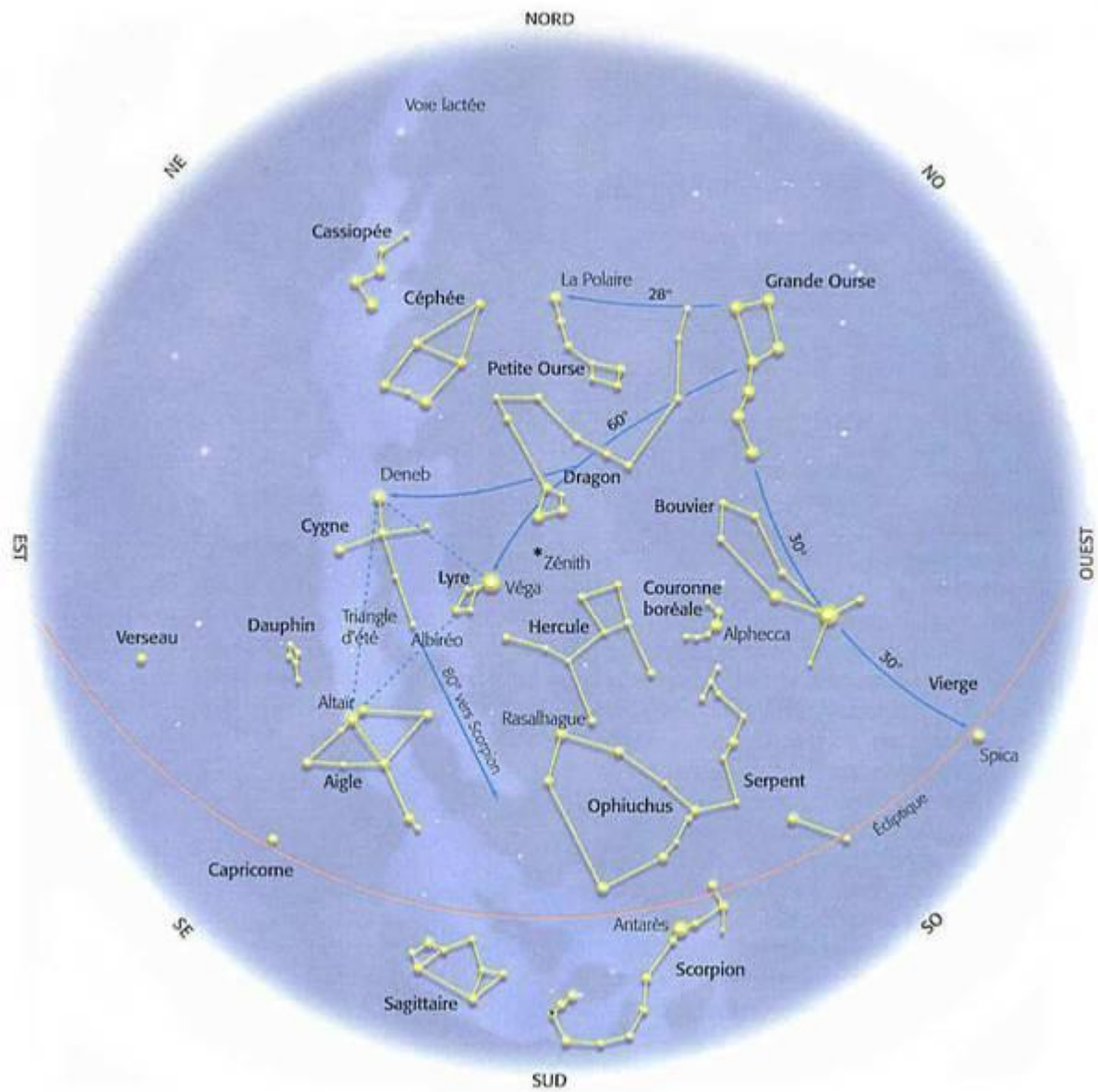
But,

Poles shrink at the extremes of the earth because the earth is round. In this case, following this route, the line cuts Moscow.

Therefore, no matter the method we may use to analyze the route, either by following the Polar Star or the north, the country formed and currently existing in the far north is Russia.

Moreover, God says that when He will send fire on Magog, he will not spare the inhabitants of the Islands. Where is the far north found?

You shall fall on the open field; for I have spoken," says the Lord God.  
And I will send fire on Magog and on those who live in security in the coastlands. Then they shall know that I am the Lord. (Ezekiel 39:5-6)





Therefore, if we have correctly interpreted the explanations, following the current geographical maps, the Antichrist would come from Russia. As we noted earlier, the Antichrist will be against Israel. He shall destroy<sup>34</sup> two third of the Jewish people (Zechariah 13: 8) and will hope to ruin it in order to prevent the Millennium stage from happening according to divine plan. In this sense, by destroying God's people, he will be hoping to change times and laws. But we are told by the prophecies that God will destroy him.

If we consider Israel as a reference point as it is apparently mentioned in the prophecy, it is likely that the Antichrist would emerge from the USSR. Therefore, the dissolution of the present USSR would be a huge Trojan horse. Occult authorities are leading the USSR and when time comes it will resurface. " And it will come to pass at the same time, when Gog comes against the land of Israel," says the Lord God, "that My fury will show in My face (Ezekiel 38:18) ". But this kingdom will be much larger than the former USSR If one refers to the name of princes and kings mentioned in Ezekiel: "Son of man, set your face against Gog, the land of Magog, the prince of

<sup>34</sup> *The return of Jesus Christ* by Rene Pache, Emmaus Editions, 1806 St. Legier Vevey, page 169.

Rosh, Meshech and Tubal. This shall be a huge area. The army of evil shall not only include the atheistic countries of former USSR, but almost all of the world's army. The Antichrist will come up against Israel in order to loot Jerusalem.

**4** I will turn you around, put hooks into your jaws, and lead you out, with all your army, horses, and horsemen, all splendidly clothed, a great company with bucklers and shields, all of them handling swords. **5** Persia, Ethiopia, and Libya are with them, all of them with shield and helmet; **6** Gomer and all its troops; the house of Togarmah from the far north and all its troops--many people are with you. **7** "Prepare yourself and be ready, you and all your companies that are gathered about you; and be a guard for them. (Ezekiel 38:4-7)

We notice for instance that Persia (Iran) is clearly designated as Ethiopia and the different houses. It is very difficult to locate all other peoples with precision. However, they shall be many to rise against Israel.

Now, we only have to locate the whereabouts of the prince probably of Jewish origin, since in order to seduce the Jewish nation; the king would be of Jewish descent. Ezekiel 38: 15 and 39: 2 seems appropriate, if we interpret correctly that this would be Russia.

I have come in My Father's name, and you do not receive Me; if another comes in his own name, him you will receive. (John 5: 43)

The Antichrist will attack and loot the current government in Israel. It is clear that the United States of America will be greatly weakened after the Rapture of the Church. They will possibly lose their title of world power. The race of Japheth remaining, the leaders will follow the guideline dictated by the Antichrist.

In this regard, it would be interesting to highlight some facts. During communism in USSR, Christianity was punishable with exile and death. Parapsychological weapons were tested among

the people. The leaders strongly encouraged such practices. This new weapon probably gave incredible results. According to some sources, several cases of demonic possession were registered and many extraordinary events occurred in some places.

If the leaders of a country could encourage a people to focus their psychic energies on a common will, we can only expect astounding results at the end of the process. Unfortunately, the Bible assures us that such a practice belongs to the science of demonology. Can Satan have a better place to introduce his son? Moreover, Ostran Der Liynn Schroeder has published a very interesting book on this subject entitled, "Fantastic parapsychological research in USSR"

## 8) Synopsis of characters that make up the satanic reign

In the light of the prophecies, we have skimmed through the components of the satanic reign and the interaction between its blocks during the reign of the Antichrist. By interpretation, we have to a certain extent attributed names to these blocks. Naturally, there may be error of interpretation, but only time shall judge. *As already mentioned, only the prophecy without adding or subtracting anything, is valid.*

Presently, the major thinkers and Christian scholars believe that the names given in the prophecy could mean:

The Prostitute	Could be the Roman Catholic Church
The False Prophet	Could be the Pope
The Ten Horns	Could be the European Union, plus secret INTERNATIONAL BODIES
The Antichrist	The son of Satan

Each of these interpretations may be wrong, but I suggest that you closely follow each of these entities or any other events similar to the prophecies that you have just learnt.

## **PART FOUR - The beginning of the satanic reign**

This section will be exclusively devoted to the evolution of the work of Satan. If possible, I will try to interpret the inherent chaos that shall prevail in the world during the satanic reign in a chronological manner.

### **1) The cursed mark**

It is very difficult to ascertain whether people shall be obliged to bear the cursed mark during the establishment of this world government, under pain of death by decapitation. We know that the Great Tribulation is a period of three years and a half. If the tribulation of Nations (Revelation 13 :5-7), (Daniel 7: 25), coincides with that of the Jews (Revelation 11 :2-3), then we know that the Great Tribulation ends with the battle of Hamaguedon, where Christ will destroy the Antichrist with the brightness of his coming, marking the end of seven (7) years of Tribulation. So, wearing the mark will become mandatory some time during the first three and a half years of the reign of Satan.

In Revelation 14:6-12, we see that the prostitute seems to be destroyed before the wearing of the mark and the worship of the beast becomes mandatory. For three angels fly through the middle of the sky warning:

**6** Then I saw another angel flying in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach to those who dwell on the earth--to every nation, tribe, tongue, and people-- **7** saying with a loud voice, "Fear God and give glory to Him, for the hour of His judgment has come; and worship Him who made heaven and earth, the sea and springs of water." **8** And another angel followed, saying, "Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she has made all nations drink of the

wine of the wrath of her fornication." **9** Then a third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, "If anyone worships the beast and his image, and receives his mark on his forehead or on his hand, **10** he himself shall also drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out full strength into the cup of His indignation. He shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb. **11** And the smoke of their torment ascends forever and ever; and they have no rest day or night, who worship the beast and his image, and whoever receives the mark of his name." **12** Here is the patience of the saints; here are those who keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus. (Revelation 14:6-12)

So God shall warn people, and they shall know the consequences of their actions. After the rapture of the Church of God on earth, people will be confused by the counter church (the prostitute) and probably the hateful and unpeaceful alien explanation. Most people will prefer to believe in the falsehood of the devil rather than God's angels warning them. What the Bible describes in Matthew 24: 24 and 2 Thessalonians 2: 3 will happen to them.

The Bible says:

**15** He was granted power to give breath to the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak and cause as many as would not worship the image of the beast to be killed. **16** He causes all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and slave, to receive a mark on their right hand or on their foreheads, **17** and that no one may buy or sell except one who has the mark or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. **18** Here is wisdom. Let him who has understanding calculate the number of the beast, for it is the number of a man: His number is 666.

(Revelation 13: 15-18)



Many people believe that with the help of sophisticated machines, the world government would codify a mark to be used as a credit number by people. [Currently, a series of three sets of six digits would be enough to identify everybody on earth]. Without this identification, it would be impossible to make any transaction, whether buying or selling.

Presently, in all sale points of the world, there are infrared-reader cash desks which register the codes of items purchased by customers. Instead of paying by debiting one's card, the world Government authorities could establish a system of infrared coding on the right hand or forehead that would be neither more nor less, the unique access code for that person. This same number will be used as a bank account, credit card, work permit, driving license, health insurance card, and so on. These same infrared-reader machines or laser could read the unique access code acting as debit or credit card.

As for how people will worship the image of the beast, and how the beast shall know if he was worshipped by every member of the family. The current television system could disappear. The Internet is now entering homes and an interactive discussion is now possible. A new kind of television could be released shortly to provide the possibility of individual mode, interactive and virtual. People will no longer need to go out to vote, they will do it from home, from their living rooms. Elections will be transparent, counting fair and each family member will have his access code. Currently, voting of the people is done through opinion polls. We know which political party will come to power with a 2% error margin. Before the next elections the opposition party: criticizes, argues, offers, solely based on opinion polls and the number of increased votes. This is in a bid to have the maximum number of votes for the next election.

But the Bible warns us against this mark and commands us not to worship the image of the beast, or accept the cursed mark under penalty of judgment.

..."If anyone worships the beast and his image, and receives his mark on his forehead or on his hand, **10** he himself shall also drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out full strength into the cup of His indignation. He shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in

the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb. **11** And the smoke of their torment ascends forever and ever; and they have no rest day or night, who worship the beast and his image, and whoever receives the mark of his name." **12** Here is the patience of the saints; here are those who keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus.

(Revelation 14:9-12, 20:4)

This decision is irrevocable, if someone accepts the mark; he will be cursed and his situation will be irreversible. For he who is wise, it will be better to die (because we will all die one day) and live forever, rather than accept the mark and live up to three and a half years and be condemned forever.

Could there be a Christian guerrilla during the tribulation? The answer seems to be negative because such a move would be contrary to the Spirit of Christ. Violent men must not indulge into instincts in the name of Christ.

If anyone has an ear, let him hear. He who leads into captivity shall go into captivity; he who kills with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints. (Revelation 13:9-10)

Apart from the elect, that is to say, Christians undiscovered across nations, the remaining one third of the Jews and the people believed to be the 144,000 Jewish virgins, twelve thousand of each tribe marked with the seal of God by the angels of God (Revelation: 3-4). No evil man will survive God's judgment. The righteous in God's eyes, we believe, will enter into the Millennium. The Judgment of God shall be exercised by seals, trumpets, and bowls (Revelation Chapter 16). The rest of the people who accept the cursed mark will be killed by the one called Faithful and True, and he will judge and make war according to justice (Revelation 19 :11-21).

## **2) The Jewish people during the tribulation**

The history of the Jewish people during the tribulation will be particularly interesting. Once again, Israel will be alone among the nations. Israel will be nurtured and protected for three years and a half. Then, the Antichrist will rise against the Jewish people with a large army. Christ warns the Jewish people not to enter Jerusalem or in the cities but to flee to places of shelter, and that those of Judea should flee to the mountains (Matthew 24: 16, Luke 21: 21).

During this dark period in human history, as the salt of the earth is removed i.e. true Christians. A majority of those who shall remain on earth will be proud and blasphemous against the LORD. Despite the proclamation of the Word by the elect of that time, the one hundred forty four thousand Jews (Revelation 7: 4), the two faithful witnesses (Revelation 11:3-12) and even angels (Revelation 14: 6), most people will receive the cursed mark.

**6** Then I saw another angel flying in the midst of heaven, having the everlasting gospel to preach to those who dwell on the earth--to every nation, tribe, tongue, and people-- **7** saying with a loud voice, "Fear God and give glory to Him, for the hour of His judgment has come; and worship Him who made heaven and earth, the sea and springs of water." **8** And another angel followed, saying, "Babylon is fallen, is fallen, that great city, because she has made all nations drink of the wine of the wrath of her fornication." **9** Then a third angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, "If anyone worships the beast and his image, and receives his mark on his forehead or on his hand, **10** he himself shall also drink of the wine of the wrath of God, which is poured out full strength into the cup of His indignation. He shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the holy angels and in the presence of the Lamb. **11** And the smoke of their torment ascends forever and ever; and they have no rest day or night, who worship the beast and his image, and whoever receives the mark of his

name." **12** Here is the patience of the saints; here are those who keep the commandments of God and the faith of Jesus.

(Revelation 14:6-12)

It is difficult to imagine that angels will fly in the sky, warning people all over the earth not to take the mark or worship the image of the beast. And yet, deliberately, people of the earth will still take the cursed mark and worship the image of the beast. Personally, I think that since the prostitute will not educate people on the rapture of the church they will believe that everything has been caused by aliens. They will be afraid of the angels of God, believing that they are aliens who have come to mislead and rapture them. Their lack of knowledge and interest in the Word of God will cause their loss. Also, in chapter five, I will speak in detail of the UFO phenomenon and aliens.

Matthew explains thus:

**6** And you will hear of wars and rumors of wars. See that you are not troubled; for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet.

**7** For nation will rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom. And there will be famines, pestilences, and earthquakes in various places. **8** All these are the beginning of sorrows. **9** Then they will deliver you up to tribulation and kill you, and you will be hated by all nations for My name's sake. (Matthew 24:6-9)

Many Christians don't know where to locate this passage in time. I told you that Matthew 24 is mostly directed to the Jews of the tribulation and that's true. Here comes the explanation: when the Antichrist would have seduced nations by his miracles, he will destroy the prostitute, he shall have powers (Revelation 13:7-8). Then the Antichrist will put an end to sacrifice and offering (Daniel 9: 27, Daniel 12: 11) and shall oppress the saints (Daniel 7: 25) for three years and a half. There shall be divisions within his kingdom. Still being alert and without being sure, one may

reasonably believe that the mark, worship and the removal of the Perpetual sacrifice will be at the same time, close to the first three and half years of the reign of Satan. So nations will hear rumours of war but it will only be the beginning of the end. The antichrist will use the wonderful tool of repression i.e. the army at his disposal to quell infighting in his kingdom. It is believed that this will happen towards the end of his reign. It is also thought that there will be war during the first half of the time: "kingdom against kingdom, and nation against nation". It shall likely be a war between the kingdom of God and the kingdom of Satan, and thereafter during the last three and a half years it is believed that the war shall be between the Jewish nations and the unbelieving nation of the Antichrist.

But in Revelation 14:6-12, it is believed that the prostitute shall embrace Kabbalah, the religion of fallen angels, shall seduce nations and will be destroyed by fire. According to the Bible, it seems that all this shall happen before the reception of the cursed mark and compulsory enforcement of the worship of the beast. Since angels shall be moving from one place to another with the everlasting gospel, warning people not to worship the beast and not to accept the cursed mark.

Here is what the Bible says concerning the two kingdoms:

7 And war broke out in heaven: Michael and his angels fought with the dragon; and the dragon and his angels fought, 8 but they did not prevail, nor was a place found for them in heaven any longer. 9 So the great dragon was cast out, that serpent of old, called the Devil and Satan, who deceives the whole world; he was cast to the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. (Revelation 12: 7-9)

To the best of our knowledge, currently, a celestial war between good and evil is underway. The victory of Christ on the cross, by His precious blood, purifies anyone who accepts his sacrifice. Also when Satan will be master of the world for the last time, he will try to defeat God in His

Kingdom. But the Bible gives us the outcome in advance: Satan will be defeated. As for nations, the Bible says:

**13** Now when the dragon saw that he had been cast to the earth, he persecuted the woman who gave birth to the male Child. **14** But the woman was given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness to her place, where she is nourished for a time and times and half a time, from the presence of the serpent. (Revelation 12:13-14)

The woman represents the Jewish people, the people from whom Christ was born, and the Antichrist will make war against her. The Bible assures us that Christ will protect his people and that the Antichrist will be defeated at the battle of Armageddon (Revelation 16:16, Zechariah 14:12-14).

### **3) The seals and trumpets**

It is difficult to translate in terms of months or even years, the seals, trumpets and bowls announced in the New Testament by the Revelation. At most, we may think that Seals are attributed to physical punishment while the bowls would represent the political situation. Far be it from me to pretend to establish a fixed order, the goal sought by the quotations from biblical passages describing the seals and trumpets is to help you recognize heavenly signs during the reign of the Antichrist in order to educate at least partially, those who will face the tribulation. ***I hope that the biblical quotations inserted here will provoke your desire to read the books of Daniel and the Revelation. By so doing, you will read the word of God, the only real truth, without adding or subtracting anything.*** For this reason I will not cite the bowls (Revelation 16:1-21), the reader would only have to read the Holy Scriptures. I have not subtracted or added anything to the prophecy described in full in the Revelation of John, as I always say; the only

truth is found in the sacred books to which you must pay attention as from today. However, as someone charged to educate you on things to come, I had to make a brief overview, of the Book of Revelation and Daniel, as interpreted by the main Christian scholars of our time. Since my duty is not to copy or translate the entire book of the Revelation, I have only given broad guidelines of the Tribulation, It is the responsibility of each reader to read the Bible and know it. The only truth resides in the Divine Scriptures, book by book from the beginning to the end without adding or subtracting anything. The reader who is interested in such things should read the book of the Revelation from beginning to end which constitutes the only complete truth, biblical and divine, and he would see the whole prophecy in its entire divine dimension, and could even differently interpret the summary explanations given in this book. Explanations, which I repeat, can be wrong in time, interpretation, and meaning or otherwise.

The only chronological truth is that given by Scripture. I will introduce some Christian thoughts about the Bible, but they may not be quite true. In short, what I mean is that the order in which God places such punishments is the only one to consider as truthful. But it will be left to the person who will be part of the tribulation to identify and position these signs in their order of occurrence within the seven years given to the Antichrist. Meanwhile the explanation given is only an interpretation and to some extent an assumption.

a) **The first seal:**

And I looked, and behold, a white horse. He who sat on it had a bow;  
and a crown was given to him, and he went out conquering and to  
conquer. (Revelation 6:2)

Christian scholars believe he is the Antichrist. At the early stage of his reign, there will be peace on earth for a short time and he will seduce nations.

**b) The second seal:**

When He opened the second seal, I heard the second living creature saying, "Come and see." Another horse, fiery red, went out. And it was granted to the one who sat on it to take peace from the earth, and that people should kill one another; and there was given to him a great sword. (Revelation 6:3-4)

Some Christians believe that this is the rapture of the Holy Spirit on earth. This event puzzles me because according to the Bible (2 Thessalonians 2:5-12), the rapture of the Church and the Holy Spirit will be at the same time, marking the beginning of year one of the satanic reign and a powerful spirit of delusion will be sent to those who miss the rapture so that they should believe in lies.

Personally, I think that what will provoke tensions in the satanic kingdom shall be differences of opinion. We see that the prostitute and the false prophet will be destroyed by the ten horns and the Antichrist (Revelation 17: 16). May be this is it?

**c) The third seal:**

When He opened the third seal, I heard the third living creature say, "Come and see." So I looked, and behold, a black horse, and he who sat on it had a pair of scales in his hand. And I heard a voice in the midst of the four living creatures saying, "A quart of wheat for a denarius, and three quarts of barley for a denarius; and do not harm the oil and the wine." (Revelation 6: 5-6)

Many people believe that this is widespread starvation across the planet. This shall amplify internal strife within the world system of Antichrist.



The world is experiencing considerable and significant weather change; scientists are unanimous on this. Everywhere, the amount of water decreases, the soil dries up quietly thereby announcing a great famine. The earth, which carries destructive signs within it, is preparing its offensive against the satanic kingdom which is fast coming, brought by pollution, the era of robotics, office automation, information technology, various scientific technologies and especially telecommunications.

d) **The fourth seal:**

When He opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth living creature saying, "Come and see." So I looked, and behold, a pale horse. And the name of him who sat on it was Death, and Hades followed with him. And power was given to them over a fourth of the earth, to kill with sword, with hunger, with death, and by the beasts of the earth.  
(Revelation 6:7-8)

Personally, this is how I understand these Bible verses: but remember that I can be in error. Human nature will revolt against the system established by the Antichrist. Even Satan's kingdom will be divided, because man will want to take his place on the throne. The Antichrist will crush his fellow disciples in addition to beheading Christians and trampling on Jerusalem with his feet (Revelation 11: 2). For man to survive he shall be forced to crush man, famine shall bring destructive elements and death.

e) **The fifth seal:**

When He opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of those who had been slain for the word of God and for the testimony which they held. And they cried with a loud voice, saying, "How long, O Lord, holy and true, until You judge and avenge our blood on those who dwell on the earth?" Then a white robe was given to each of them; and it was said to them that they should rest a little while longer, until both the number of their fellow servants and their brethren, who would be killed as they were, was completed.

(Revelation 6:9-11)

Some argue that this seal marks the beginning of the cursed mark. For my part, I think the cursed mark shall be in force before the fifth seal, because the description of the fifth seal appears to be a reminder to Jesus by the Holy Martyrs of tribulation. Precisely, they are martyrs because they refused to worship the image of the beast and take the mark on the forehead or on the right hand and the other brethren have to add to their number.

f) **The sixth seal:**

The sixth seal is self-explanatory since it announces the end of a wicked and proud world.

**12** I looked when He opened the sixth seal, and behold, there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became like blood. **13** And the stars of heaven fell to the earth, as a fig tree drops its late figs when it is shaken by a mighty wind. **14** Then the sky receded as a scroll when it is rolled up, and every mountain and island was moved out of its place. **15** And the kings of the earth, the great men, the rich men, the commanders, the mighty men, every slave and every free man, hid themselves in the

caves and in the rocks of the mountains, **16** and said to the mountains and rocks, "Fall on us and hide us from the face of Him who sits on the throne and from the wrath of the Lamb! **17** For the great day of His wrath has come, and who is able to stand?" (Revelation 6: 12-17)

g) **The Seventh Seal:**

When He opened the seventh seal, there was silence in heaven for about half an hour. (Revelation 8:1)

The Seventh Seal determines the start of trumpets. In reality, the seventh seal is characterized by a series of seven trumpets. In fact, there is nothing that we can really be convinced about, the only infallible thing is the start of these seals, trumpets and bowls within seven years, depending on God's will.

**First Trumpet:**

The first angel sounded: And hail and fire followed, mingled with blood, and they were thrown to the earth. And a third of the trees were burned up, and all green grass was burned up.  
(Revelation 8:7)

**Second trumpet:**

Then the second angel sounded: And something like a great mountain burning with fire was thrown into the sea, and a third of the sea became blood. And a third of the living creatures in the sea died, and a third of the ships were destroyed.  
(Revelation 8:8-9)

### **Third trumpet**

Then the third angel sounded: And a great star fell from heaven, burning like a torch, and it fell on a third of the rivers and on the springs of water. The name of the star is Wormwood. A third of the waters became wormwood, and many men died from the water, because it was made bitter. (Revelation 8:10-11)

### **Fourth Trumpet**

Then the fourth angel sounded: And a third of the sun was struck, a third of the moon, and a third of the stars, so that a third of them were darkened. A third of the day did not shine, and likewise the night. (Revelation 8:12)

### **Fifth Trumpet**

**1** Then the fifth angel sounded: And I saw a star fallen from heaven to the earth. To him was given the key to the bottomless pit. **2** And he opened the bottomless pit, and smoke arose out of the pit like the smoke of a great furnace. So the sun and the air were darkened because of the smoke of the pit. **3** Then out of the smoke locusts came upon the earth. And to them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power. **4** They were commanded not to harm the grass of the earth, or any green thing, or any tree, but only those men who do not have the seal of God on their foreheads. **5** And they were not given authority to kill them, but to torment them for five months. Their torment was like the torment of a scorpion when it strikes a man. **6** In those days men will seek death and will not find it; they will desire to die, and death will flee from them.

(Revelation 9:1-6)

Before the seventh seal, angels go round to identify a seal on the forehead of God's servants. This, in order that they may escape the plagues contained in some of the trumpets; do not confuse this seal with the cursed mark of Antichrist.

### **Sixth trumpet**

Then the sixth angel sounded: And I heard a voice from the four horns of the golden altar which is before God, **14** saying to the sixth angel who had the trumpet, "Release the four angels who are bound at the great river Euphrates." **15** So the four angels, who had been prepared for the hour and day and month and year, were released to kill a third of mankind. **16** Now the number of the army of the horsemen was two hundred million; I heard the number of them. **17** And thus I saw the horses in the vision: those who sat on them had breastplates of fiery red, hyacinth blue, and sulfur yellow; and the heads of the horses were like the heads of lions; and out of their mouths came fire, smoke, and brimstone. **18** By these three plagues a third of mankind was killed--by the fire and the smoke and the brimstone which came out of their mouths. **19** For their power is in their mouth and in their tails; for their tails are like serpents, having heads; and with them they do harm. **20** But the rest of mankind, who were not killed by these plagues, did not repent of the works of their hands, that they should not worship demons, and idols of gold, silver, brass, stone, and wood, which can neither see nor hear nor walk. **21** And they did not repent of their murders or their sorceries or their sexual immorality or their thefts.

(Revelation 9:13-21)

### **Seventh trumpet**

Then the seventh angel sounded: And there were loud voices in heaven, saying, "The kingdoms of this world have become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ, and He shall reign forever and ever!"

(Revelation 11: 15)

Then the temple of God was opened in heaven, and the ark of His covenant was seen in His temple. And there were lightnings, noises, thunderings, an earthquake, and great hail.

(Revelation 11: 19)

## **4) Graphic knowledge transmitted**

Normally, the event is expected to begin during the identified stage, but it is unpredictable because the only thing that is certain is that the events identified during the Tribulation will occur during the seven (7) years as planned. God, testifies that in His Word.

## The reign of the Antichrist

END OF TIME OF GRACE	SEVEN YEARS GRANTED TO THE ANTICHRIST	MILLENNIUM
----------------------	--	------------

<p>1) The Rapture of the Church and the Holy Spirit</p> <p>2) First part of the resurrection of the righteous</p>	<p>1) Short reign of the ten horns</p> <p>2) The prostitute shattered</p> <p>3) Warning of the angels;</p> <p>Evangelization of the two faithful witnesses and the 144 000 Jews warning people not to take the cursed mark and not to worship the image of the beast</p> <p>4) The enforcement of the mark, worshipping and the end of perpetual sacrifice</p> <p>5) Fulfillment of some seals and bowls</p>	<p>1) Jews must not enter Jerusalem or cities. Those in Judea must escape to the mountains.</p> <p>2) Destruction of nations by seals, bowls, and all the trumpets</p> <p>3) The battle of Hamaguedon, Jesus Christ destroys the Antichrist (END)</p> <p>4) Judgment of the nations and ungodly people having taken the mark or worshipped the beast. None of them enters the Millennium</p>	<p>1) The coming of Christ as King of Judah to rule over Israel during the Millennium stage(1000 years)</p> <p>Those who shall be part of the resurrection of the righteous will reign with him and shall be priests who shall rule the earth. They are saved for ever.</p>
		<p>5) Second part of the resurrection of the righteous</p> <p>6) It is believed that the 144 000 Jews marked with the seal of God and Christians who survived the Great Tribulation shall enter the Millennium</p>	
	DURING THE FIRST three and half years	DURING THE LAST three and half years	

To be saved:

- 1) Believe in the Lord Jesus Christ our Savior;
  - 2) Do not take the mark to buy or sell on the forehead or right hand;
  - 3) Do not worship the image of the beast;
  - 4) Resist right up to the point of death by beheading, if caught by the world government;
- NB Do not take the cursed mark because there will be no way back, anyone who accepts the mark or worship the beast will be condemned forever.

## 5) Conclusion

These seals, trumpets and bowls are certain and true, they will arrive in time. The Word of God testifies it. In my opinion, the Tribulation of seven years is shown through these seals and trumpets. Many other important truths are found in the book of Revelation such as the judgment of different churches making up the Universal Church of Christ, the bowls, the elders, the number of God's people, compensation based time, the Millennium, New Jerusalem, New Heaven and New Earth, the altar of God, His throne, the power of Jesus Christ and many other knowledge. In order to write this book, I drew from the scriptures and sacred texts. This was necessary to give you a general overview of the tribulation. And I'm satisfied with the content generated.

Naturally, the interpretations and personal explanations mentioned in this chapter are meant in no way to be the absolute truth and this chapter is not a summary of the Revelation or any other biblical book.

***For a full explanation of the Revelation, you should read it. I declare that the Revelation is a book of God and I consider it to be true as all the other books of the Bible without adding or subtracting any word or anything from it. What I understand is that I wanted to extract the whole portions of the Bible verse to attach to this book. But in the typing, I might have committed an error, so only the original Bible verse is valid and true. Also, with regard to the prophecies, interpretations, explanations and data speculations, they remain prone to error. So the only truth remains the full prophecy in the Bible without adding or deleting anything.***



To the best of our knowledge, a spiritual battle which is beyond human reasoning is also underway. And beyond the contemporary written history, there is the real story. It is known only by those who shape and govern our world. Thus James Burnham said:

« Les dirigeants nominaux : présidents, rois, congressistes, députés, généraux ne sont pas les véritables dirigeants ».  
(Synarchiste, 1941)

"Nominal leaders: Presidents, Kings, Delegates, Parliamentarians, Generals are not true leaders."  
(Synarchist, 1941)

KADMI-Cohen wrote:

« Un Kahal mystérieux pousse l'homme « inspiré », parfois choisi longtemps d'avance, pour devenir l'instrument du « Grand Œuvre ». Il peut alors bouleverser un état, renverser le cours des choses, braver les oppositions, tromper les peuples par des retournements spectaculaires et dramatiques à l'étonnement des foules ignorantes de la préparation de ses voies par d'autres mains et des appuis occultes qui font durer jusqu'au jour marqué de sa chute, une fois sa mission remplie, ou lorsque ses prétentions dépassent la mesure qui lui a été comptée ». (Synarchiste, 1930)

"A mysterious Kahal pushes the "inspired" man sometimes chosen long in advance, to become the instrument of the "Great Work". He can then overturn a state, reversing the course of events, face opposition, deceive the people with dramatic reversals to the astonishment of the masses who are ignorant of the preparation of his ways by other hands and occult support which enable him to last until the appointed day of his fall, once his Mission is accomplished, or when his claims exceed the limits that were spelt out to him."  
(Synarchist, 1930)

Then this excerpt from Mage Papus (Dr. Encausse):

« Tout groupe social, comme tout être humain a des organes visibles et invisibles. Pendant que les lois actuelles sont appliquées, d'autres lois s'élaborent en secret quelque part, comme le soleil noir évolue dans l'ombre pendant que le soleil blanc illumine le présent.

À côté de la politique nationale de chaque état, il existe des organismes peu connus de politique internationale. Actuellement la constitution en deux cantons suisses de l'Alsace-Lorraine, la libération de la Pologne devenue le centre d'une Suisse balkanique, la disparition de l'Autriche-Hongrie et la constitution des États-Unis d'Europe après l'écrasement définitif de la féodalité militariste, sont des problèmes qui se posent dans ces conseils internationaux auxquels prennent part, non pas les politiciens de carrière ou des ambassadeurs galonnés, mais quelques hommes modestes, inconnus, quelques grands financiers supérieurs, par leur conception large des actions sociales, aux politiciens orgueilleux qui se figurent, une fois ministres éphémères, gouverner le monde.

Un réseau bien organisé d'agences télégraphiques avec des directeurs anglais, un solide bureau international d'informations économiques avec des consuls allemands, un groupement de directeurs français de banques d'émissions, des informateurs belges, suisses ou japonais, font un outil social vivant et agissant autrement puissant qu'un parlement ou qu'une cour peuplée de courtisans.

Une grève venant à propos pour arrêter la construction d'un cuirassé ou l'essor d'un port de commerce, un traité de commerce négocié au moment favorable sont des manifestations inattendues de ces actions sociales d'origines occultes qui n'étonnent que les profanes, car il existe des profanes à tous les degrés, même avec de beaux « décors » bien blancs.

Or à toute époque, il a existé non pas en « astral » mais bien sur notre plan physique des hommes qui aspiraient à réaliser certaines réformes sociales sans appartenir aux organismes visibles des sociétés. Ces hommes réunis en deux petits groupes créaient les outils variables avec le moment, le pays choisi et l'état des esprits à l'époque.

Ils agissaient d'après une vieille science d'organisation sociale issue des anciens sanctuaires d'Égypte et conservée pieusement en certains centres dit hermétiques ».

(Revue « Mystéria », avril 1914)

"Every social group, like any human being has visible and invisible organs. While current laws are applied, other laws are elaborated in secret somewhere, as the black sun moves in the dark while the white sun is shining. Besides the national policy of each state, there are organizations unknown to international politics.

Presently the constitution in two Swiss townships of Alsace-Lorraine, the liberation of Poland became the center of a Balkan Switzerland, the disappearance of

Austria-Hungary and the United States Constitution in Europe after the final collapse of militaristic feudalism, are problems that arise in these international councils where those who participate are not career politicians and high ranking ambassadors, but some unknown moderate men, some major financial executives, by their broad conception of social actions, proud politicians who feature, one time short-lived ministers are those who rule the world. A well-organized network of telegraph agencies with English managers, a strong international economic information office with German consuls, a group of French issuing Bank managers, Belgian, Swiss or Japanese informants, are a social tool alive, active and more powerful than a parliament or a court populated by courtiers. A strike coming by the way to stop the construction of a battleship or the development of a commercial port, a commercial treaty negotiated at a favorable time are unexpected events from these social actions with occult origins which can only be surprising to lay people, because there are always laymen at all levels, even with beautiful "sets" very white. Whereas, at all times, there have been people not "astral bodies" but physical men who aspired to achieve certain social reforms without belonging to visible corporate bodies. These men gathered in two small groups created tools that vary with the period, the chosen country and the state of minds at the time. They acted according to an old science of social organization from former sanctuaries of Egypt and piously preserved in some so-called hermetic centers" ("Mystéria" Review April 1914)

Truly, in our time, with our knowledge, a spiritual and earthly warfare will soon be engaged. A science and divinity destroyed in the ancient days and then in the new world in the Tower of Babel, and finally during the exodus from Egypt opposes God and His Son Jesus Christ. In our time, we gave after the prophecies.

# CHAPTER IV

## The Plot

This is undoubtedly a strange way to introduce the world of today. However, a very well organized movement influences morals and the socio-cultural ideologies of our world. This occult movement is called ILLUMINATI. It uses weapons like drugs, satellite movements influencing the masses, law and money. It controls the disc and CD industry, Video cassette & DVD, the film industry and today, it has control over virtually all world media. Through the internet, it communicates now by confidential websites.

### PART I - Confounding weapons

Many psychologists have written books on the influence of the band from adolescence. Obviously, at this age the band becomes more important than parents. In fact, the stumbling blocks being the place where the adolescent may be devoured by the fox as the chick in its first flights. A band grows together, from the age of five to seventeen. Like all boys and girls of this age, they play hockey, football, they do swimming, build strong relations, and participate in the same holiday camps, shop and follow fashion. Briefly, the group of young people who make up the band do their tricks together. They become very closely linked. In the absence of parental control on the band, it will be more or less influenced by communicational means.

Martinists thinkers soon realized that the more children are kept away from parental influence, the more control could be exercised over them. Under these conditions, they quickly created a family mode, where the contribution of both parents was necessary to ensure family welfare. Naturally, the child put in day care centres will quickly break off parental influence, making the child vulnerable to media communication which subsequently becomes his way of thinking.

During adolescence, drug is often introduced into the band. Today, at the age of twelve, a greater portion of the youths has already experienced the effects of drugs. You know what it is: the "leader" introduces the latest in the "gang". The others follow and try to overtake and vice versa. Initially, the adolescent experiences a new sensation, and then bit by bit, he tries new drugs until he becomes something other than himself. Once captivated by the charm of the drug, it is difficult to part with them because it becomes his world, his environment, his activities, his thinking and his youth. It takes a lot of courage to do an about turn; he leaves behind a part of his life. Then he becomes lost because most of the things he learned to love are components of this lifestyle. If he tries to find what he left behind him, he will forcibly start touching drugs. At the outset thousands of young people usually say that they will not make the same mistake as the others, that they consume only marijuana or hashish, and that they will come out of these chains. Drug is not an individual problem but a social one. He may be able to come out of it but his friends will not necessarily follow his example. And if he changed the law of the place, on the contrary, he will be neglected and would have to rely on himself alone. Few have the chance to join a new band. But in general, the individual is much more likely to relapse into the environment from where he came than finding a way out. We could compare the phenomenon of band in adolescents with that of wealth and social status in adults. For the young, his band is sacred! Imagine therefore the asset "managers" of the brain!

### 1) **Drug**

Very athletic, talented, honest, and intelligent boys have become: nonchalant, aimless and never reaching the goals set earlier in life due to the effects of drugs. How can we describe drug? Drug is a voice that comes into someone and each time it speaks to him and pronounces words that undermine his principles, values, and goals. It breaks the barriers of the individual and incorporates him into its own path. What is this voice that directs and controls all this youth; voice that destroys the deepest aspirations when the person is under its control, that puts ideas so fast that it is better not to have, and this voice that washes the brain increasingly every time? Many foods are created for man and some are toxic, they make him lose the right to govern

his person and take authority over him, make him to cross barriers that he would not have crossed. Once these barriers are crossed, the individual, in his hatred against himself, assimilates it as a lifestyle in order to stifle the weight of his conscience. If the Creator had intended that the human body should determine and support the intoxication and the degree of drug saturation, he would have made the human body differently.

Of course it depends on the drugs used, one can break links with this vicious cycle but in some cases, it takes more than seven years to rebuild and regain the moral principles lost along this path. The other young men of the band who remain under its control keep on marking time in life. Here we are talking about consumption of soft drugs; they have not yet reached the level of extreme drugs such as "Angel Dust", heroin or morphine. Many addicts will tell you that despite the help received from withdrawal treatment, the daily psychological battle is long and arduous. The links created with drugs give rise to anxiety problems, conscience and insanity. The only effective remedy is Jesus Christ. It would be interesting now to analyze the difference between a person trapped in the world of drugs and another in the calm world of God.

Here's a piece of writing found on the corpse of a young girl who died from an overdose of heroin; her corpse was discovered in a telephone booth by the forces of order:

Serve Galar<sup>35</sup>

"King Heroin is my shepherd; I'll never be satisfied. It makes me lie down in sewers. It guides me in troubled waters. It destroys my soul; it leads me in the paths of perversion because of its effects. Yes, I will walk through the valley of misery. And I will fear all evil, for you, Heroin, You are with me your hand and your capsule try to comfort me; they stripped the table of its food in front of my family. You take away sanity. My cup overflows with bitterness, certainly the passion of

---

<sup>35</sup> Small White Book, Catholic 1979.

heroin stalk me all the days of my life, and I will dwell in the house  
of the damned forever."

Here is Psalms 23 of David:

The LORD is my shepherd; I shall not want.

He makes me to lie down in green pastures:

He leads me beside the still waters. He restores my soul: he leads me in  
the paths of righteousness for his name's sake. Yea, though I walk  
through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for you  
are with me; your rod and your staff they comfort me. You prepare a  
table before me in the presence of mine enemies: you anoint my head  
with oil; my cup runs over. Surely goodness and mercy shall follow me  
all the days of my life: and I will dwell in the house of the LORD  
forever.

Amazing, isn't it? The formulation is similar except for the fact that the Psalms of the girl was dictated by the spirit in her which finally dominated and killed her in cold blood. Is this a mere coincidence? I do not think so. If we gather facts like this all over the world we can compile a book.

This devastating weapon called drug, has disrupted in the space of a generation, moral values established for millennia. It has destroyed the basic order of citizenship, trained a flippant and rebellious youth and ultimately paving the way for the father of lies. I think particularly of the numerous cases of vandalism, depression, murder, suicide, without considering its ideological effect on younger generations. This diabolical weapon was introduced among the youth of America and Europe, by those who control the communicative structures in industrialized countries.



## 2) Communication infrastructure

Communication infrastructure is a curious phrase to mean the combination of all means of communication throughout the world. This includes all audio and visual means that convey information to the individual as a living entity. Various means are part of this infrastructure, radio, television, magazines, newspapers, cassettes, discs, compact discs, videocassettes, DVDs, films, and not forgetting the Internet which is the latest. Each of these media channels are influenced by intellectuals, writers, specialists, singers, poets. In short, those who run and control fashion are people with longhair. Unfortunately, the communication infrastructure is now concentrated in the hands of a very small group of people. This group dictates Information to each media, segment information according to age groups and thereby amplifies the discrepancy between generations. By so doing, someone who is now forty years old lived in an era of violence. Indeed, this individual has watched animated cartoons of extreme violence, has been invaded by sex, moral liberalism, was immersed in a world of consumption, and has been beset by money, drugs and music. We could therefore speak of a person conditioned by a global society. All orchestrated at the base by a specific and restricted group who set the stage for those leading communication. Originally, rock music was a form of revolution against religious morals of Christianity. Very quickly, they wanted to get rid of all the established taboos around sexuality, which were actually repressive to individual freedom. Unfortunately, a very organized team undertook the responsibility through this revolution, to exceed the limits permitted by God and later introduced diabolical weapons: drugs and pornography. Nowadays, the music industry handles topics like sex, drugs and satanic reign. The youth of this new generation from the outset, is almost already defeated. Regardless of the style of the popular music, it will be guided in one way or the other towards sex, drugs and Satan as king of this world.

The music industry is obviously exploiting only these themes. It is very difficult for a musical group singing for God to break into the industry. But who owns this market? A very rich group often called Freemason. For example, the singer Ozzy Osbourne admits that the cover of his

album and sales strategy are dictated in advance by a group of individuals whose identity is unknown. Several other satanic groups make the same claims.

Communist countries have been dazzled by a group of atheist thinkers who conveyed an ideology and seduced two generations. Men and women of these countries have forgotten God in their lives. Take USSR and its associates of yesterday: in all these countries the State directed and controlled information from all types of media. So we guess information in a pure state did not exist. It was biased and distorted. In fact, all thoughts which were contrary to Communist ideology were rejected by the communication infrastructure in these countries. Are there differences with the capitalist communication infrastructure? No, there is virtually none. The capitalist leaders choose the information to be transmitted to people, direct and segment the Media; entrench non-compliant information. The only difference occurs when someone denounces a lie: when this happens they become less intransigent and allow the information to pass while ridiculing it. The elite holding the communication infrastructure tells us lies and is guiding us directly to the Antichrist.

a) **The audio industry**

The following is a typical example of ideological manipulation. The recording industry or compact disc has been for generations, a means of emotional release for the adolescence. The experiences during this very critical stage of adolescence will have a great impact on future social behaviour of the individual. Music that is meant for the youth market or "teen club" is now segmented. Naturally, small subsets coexist within each of these segments. Here are excerpts from rock and punk which conditioned the morals of youths in the years 1970, 1980, 1990, 2000.

The majority of the following facts come from the testimony of Pastor Gary Greenwald, a cassette entitled "The god of rock" and registered at the World Congress of 1981, Philadelphia's "Full Gope Business Men's Fellowship International". These extracts on satanic music are a combination of Catholics and Protestants testimony.

1) The hard rock band Black Sabbath began its performances tour by asking thousands of young people present, to make a special sign of allegiance to Satan.

2) The Kiss band is a logotype of K.I.S.S. meaning: "Kings in Satan's Service". This fact comes from the mouths of members of the group Kiss (ref. Rolling Stone magazine).

3) Gene Simon from the K.I.S.S. group said:

"I've always been interested in what human flesh tasted like. And I've always wanted to be a cannibal. "

4) The K.I.S.S. music band makes allusion to topics like witchcraft, Satanism, hellfire, astrology and astral projection.

5) Some of the song titles of the KISS band:

- Destroyer
- Dressed to kill
- Hotter than Hell
- The god of thunder

6) Here is an excerpt from the song "The God of Thunder" of the KISS band:

I was raised by a demon trained to reign as one. I am the lord of the wasteland, a modern day man of steel.

I gather darkness to please me and I command you to kneel before the god of thunder, the god of rock & roll".

7) Hundreds of thousands of young people have displayed posters of KISS in their bedrooms or

in their living rooms. Do they know that they display a poster which says "the Kings at the Service of Satan"?

8) Some groups add the Satanic Z to their album covers. These groups are Kiss, Black Sabbath and AC DC. The Satanic Z is a constant which has the shape of a small flash as on the forehead of Harry Potter.

9) Occult symbolism was often added to the covers of album. For example, pentagram is used to invoke demons and the hexagram, a six-pointed star as the Star of David is used in High Sorcery to cast spells. We also find the kind of esoteric that revolves around the pyramids.

10) We also find on album covers "Horned Hunter of the Night" represented by the head of a goat. The goat's head directly refers to Satan.

11) We also find on some covers "Swastika" well known Nazis symbol. Interesting fact: Hitler was a follower of occult sciences and a fanatic of the pendulum.

12) The hard rock group AC / DC wrote songs such as:

- Highway to Hell
- If you want blood, you've got It

13) Here's an excerpt from the song "Hell's Bells" of AC DC group

“ I'm rollin' thunder pourin' rain.  
I'm comin' on like a hurricane.  
My lightnin's flashin' across the sky!  
You're only young but you're gonna die!  
Won't take no prisoners, won't spare no lives  
Nobody's puttin' up a fight!  
I've got my bells and I'm gonna take you to hell.  
I'm gonna getcha!  
Satan getcha!  
Hell's bells  
Yeah!

Hell's bells!"

The letters AC DC refer to the name we give to the electric current. Roughly electrifying, this song!

14) Other songs of AC DC band

- Shoot to thrill
- Taking heroin
- Givin' the dog a bone

15) The themes heavily exploited by the group AC / DC are sex, drugs, violence and perversion.

16) The AC / DC band, in its song "Dirty Deeds Done Dirt Cheap", repeats and repeats yet this title. It is truly a dirty job done for the devil that they announce here. A hoarse voice repeats these words and strange laughter are heard. Note that in several cases there is real diabolical possession, since at times the spirit physically speaks of course with a harsh and severe voice. Bizarre laughter of the song can be transposed as in the field of diabolical possession because sometimes the spirit exclaims with a shrill voice. In short, in these cases of real possessions, the spirit likes to frighten in doing anything that can annoy "human ears." "Dirty Deeds Done Dirt Cheap" is unfortunately successful in this coup in quite an effective manner.

17) Many celebrities die in a doubtful manner, Jimmy Hendrix died choked by his own vomit. Note that sometimes in real exorcisms, some of the unfortunate victims of spirits begin to vomit.

18) Two weeks after the death of Hendrix, Janis Joplin died after injecting herself with the content of two syringes in her arms; one was full of heroin and the other one full of liquid cement. It was the seventh time she was attempting to commit suicide.

19) The media and rock stars do not tell us how these artists die.

Drug overdoses are common. Note that in some cases, these stars die with their heads severed in very odd accidents, almost supernatural.

20) Ozzy Osbourne, former chief singer of Black Sabbath, once said:

"I don't know if I'm a medium for some outside force, whatever it is. Frankly, I hope it's not what I think it is: Satan. There's some force outside, some supernatural force that's using me to bring forth my rock and roll. I hope that force is not the devil, Satan".

Indeed, in cases of evil oppression, victims feel impelled by a force coming from outside. The pretext of "external force", which is common in human passions, should not even be used here.

21) It is certain that many such groups have sessions during which they pay homage to the devil. Those are just forums through which they receive the words of this music. This music is given enough time on the radio.

22) Bill Ward of Black Sabbath said:

"Satan Could Be God."

Bill Ward said he saw the movie "The Exorcist" twenty-six times and that he could not resist it, it was an obsession.

23) The girl who played the title role (the possessed) in the movie "The Exorcist" was admitted to hospital for serious psychiatric problems. It is needless to add that these problems started some time after shooting this movie.

24) About movies, note that the film director Roman Polanski (Rosemary's Baby) is part of a

satanic cult. In this film, he refused to use the "Ketchup" Film method to simulate a human sacrifice. He demanded that the blood of a murdered dog be used. Polanski went a long way since his movie "Dance of the Vampires."

25) What should we think of the films "The Shining, Psycho, Damien, The Omen, The Rosemary Baby, The Devil in the guts, the race against hell? We are entitled to ask the question. For my part, it seems that an increase of a certain syncretism "parapsychology, Satanic and occult "is already underway in the domain of cinema. In other words, are we heading for a new religion that will combine these three elements blithely and this, in part, to confuse the issue and the other to move towards a certain "Homage or contemplation of evil personified by Satan? This idea cannot be rejected. If indeed some infiltration occurs at the expense of music, why not in the film? The future revealed it with several "soft" productions as "my beloved sorceress", Sabrina the trainee sorceress, Gwendolyn the Lord of the Rings, Harry Potter. While horror films like "hard" are regularly produced to entertain cinema halls.

26) A mystical force emerges in the heart of a civilization that has already declared the death of God.

27) The punk band "Talking Heads" wrote a song containing this sentence:

"Heaven is a place where nothing ever happens."

One might paraphrase by saying: "We must go to hell! The flames are high! It is an endless party. Heaven is platonic! It is just the playing of harps!

28) Satan has always wanted to be God. He has always desired it. He wants to be worshipped. Lucifer was the light, beauty, wisdom. He was the archangel of music for God. Satan has nothing left. He lost everything. And he is always taking revenge. Today he destroys beauty, wisdom, music. These are the same three elements that made him acceptable to God. These elements are always present in God's children because they were created in His image and likeness. Satan is now violence. He still calls for rebellion and insurrection against God. Satan wants the downfall

of God's children through rebellion and violence. These are the same things that caused his downfall, especially in rock and punk where rebellion and violence are encouraged. This is done by attacking wisdom, beauty and music.

29) Wisdom is ravaged by drugs.

30) Beauty is scarred by the lifestyle of punk (and rock & roll):

- The face is painted in fierce colours (e. g Kiss);
- The eyelashes are dyed in all colours;
- The hair is dyed green, pink, yellow, etc.;
- The pins pierce the ears, nose;
- The beauty of the body is scarred with a knife, razor blade.

31) Music is bruised: rock & roll, punk.

32) Punk is a degeneration of the real music. It is animalistic. It is thirsty of rage, violence and profanity.

33) The punk band "The Dead Kennedys," wrote a song whose title is "I Kill Children"

“God told me to skin you alive. I kill children, I love  
to see them die. I kill children and make their mamas  
cry.

Crush them under my car; I want to hear them scream;  
Feed them poison candy and spoil their Halloween!”

But is it God who told him to skin the child alive? Here, the Dead Kennedys use a very subtle method: the music obscures the words in order not to allow an easy understanding of the atrocity of the message. Nevertheless, the words penetrate the unconscious by subliminal processes.



34) A mother came to Pastor Gary Greenwald and told him that her daughter was possessed. She was a fan of punk music and rock & roll. Here is the transcript of a letter the girl left for her mother before leaving her family forever:

Mom,  
Sorry, but I have to leave the world. If I live here "he"  
will punish me. I love you. Don't ever forget Diana,  
because I am no longer her. "He" is in control.

There are three facts to note about this letter:

- a) It was not the name of the girl (Diana) at the bottom of this letter. To believe the mother of the girl, what was scrawled at the bottom of the letter looked like a satanic symbol;
- b) the handwriting on the letter did not resemble that of the girl, if it is truly "Diana" who wrote that letter, then there is the possibility that she was possessed at the time she wrote this letter.
- c) If the elements in b) were to be true, we should believe that this mysterious "He" who controlled her should be of essence an evil spirit.

35) Satan wants to put hatred in the hearts of young people when they listen to rock music in their bedroom. He wants them to hate their parents and the church. He can then extract them from the family circle in order to destroy them.

36) The punk band "Blondie" in their song "Die young, stay pretty," seems to call for youth suicide. Excessive repetition of the title throughout the song seems to tell young people: "Why do not die young? Why grow old and wrinkled? Why do you not die young and remain so beautiful? Commit Suicide. "One wonders if the basic idea here is not to glorify suicide by remaining in eternal youthfulness!

37) It is clear that one of the main themes of punk music is self-destruction. To paraphrase: "Cut your veins! Die young! "

38) Recently, a young man working at this same television station 40 went with team to videotape what was going on in Cuckoo's Nest punk club. He went to the club at the request of an evangelical pastor. In that hall full of "drinks", the young Man was horrified to see a young musician beaten until blood was oozing out. The young man stated that what he saw was

so bizarre and outrageous that he felt sick. Many young people had pins in their ears and nose. The swastika sign was painted on their bodies or their jackets and some had tattooed swastika on the flesh of their arms or that of their hands. They had razor blades sewn into their shirts and, hitting on each other while dancing, they cut themselves repeatedly. Some shirts were soaked with blood. The musicians often said: "If you like our music cut your body for us!"

39) A sure sign of demonic possession is to be cut. This act is done during contemporaries exorcisms, like in the days of Jesus.

40) The signs of a good fan of punk are scars and cuts on the face, arms and throughout the body.

41) The "bash dancing is a group of young punkers equipping their jackets with razor blades or equipped with special bracelets to impose on themselves and musicians physical mutilation. A "bash dancing is successful when there is blood and suffering. The "bash dancing is a ritual.

42) The young punkers write the word "redrum" (redrum) on their shirts, their foreheads, their bodies. If we reverse the order of letters, we find the word "murder".

43) Murder is behind this violence and brutality.

44) Another symbol used by punkers is "999". It's subtle and ironic reversal of the number of the Beast of the Revelation, 666. The book of Revelation tells us that this is the number that Satan will impose on men if they follow him in the last days. Here comes the spirit of the Antichrist, the spirit of murder and manslaughter. It is this spirit of murder and homicide which is behind rock and roll and punk music.

45) The group "999" has a song whose only words are: homicide ", Homicide! Murder! Homicide! Homicide!

46) The "backward masking (inversely masked) method is a method by which we mean some words on magnetic tape when the latter is unwound as usual but we hear the words quite different when spooling the reverse of that magnetic (same for disc though it cannot easily unwind). The human brain is so complex that he manages to decode the full message which ends up lodging in the sub conscious mind.

47) The "backward masking" method is perhaps the most known subtle subliminal method. The first to use were the Beatles with their song "Revolution Number Nine." In this song, they repeated the words "number nine, number nine, number nine, number nine ... "Once the tape is reversed, we hear:" Turn me on, dead man! Turn me on, dead man!  
Turn me on, dead man! ... "A free translation would go something like the following:" Excite me sexually dead man! "

48) At that time, John Lennon said:

"Christianity will go! It will shrink and vanish.  
I needn't argue about that: I'm right!  
And I will be proven right! We're more popular than  
Jesus, now!  
I don't know what will go first, rock and roll or  
Christianity! "

Lennon seems to demonstrate here that Christianity and rock & roll are both in the arena.

49) At the "Cuckoo's Nest", club young people had carved the symbols 999 on their heads.

50) Examples of messages from the "backward masking" method in punk music:

- Satan, he is God
- Take the mark and live
- Jesus, you're the nasty one

The revelations of this quotation make us to reflect on the projected target and the reign of Antichrist. It is astounding to hear those words for our young generations. They talk of the cursed mark of Satan, a heavenly hell. Would they now be conditioning the minds of our younger generations? Because who else will form the repressive force of the Antichrist? Why speak to youths in these terms?

I would like to chip in another interesting fact: The former musician of the Black Sabbath group has faced difficulties in singing in various countries, problems due to the riots he caused with his satanic songs. Whereas it appears he went under the name of Ozzy Osbourne.

A few years ago, Ozzy Osbourne was visiting Montreal. He asked young people who came to his show if they had ever received communion. He circulated a spittoon and

Young people spat into it, thus denying Christ. An interesting fact: the Black Sabbath band was the first group to sing publicly for Satan. Early in their career, Black Sabbath meant Black Sabbath. But the Sabbath is a covenant in the Old Testament; it means that Christ must come. In modern times, it is the Antichrist. Why is he now using the name Ozzy Osbourne? This word Osbourne has the same sound like "Us born" Who is born? What does Ozzy mean with the satanic Z?

Recently, in 1997 a rock group<sup>36</sup> "Marlyn Manson" that promotes Satanism murder and rape, was banned in several American cities including Jacksonville, Richmond, Calgary, Vancouver, Toronto, Ottawa. The different motives for the authorities to cancel his shows: fellatio on stage, tearing a Bible in Salt Lake City, mutilation, sadomasochism, violence against animals. He encourages people to develop interest in Nietzsche and says he is Satan's apostle. His last album was "Antichrist Superstar".

---

<sup>36</sup> The Press 27 July 1997 Editions, Arts and Spectacle Section, Montreal.

The Press July 19, 1997 Editions, Section C9, Montreal

Many people believe that this reality emerges from fiction and therefore, they and their families are sheltered from the decisions of some occult groups whose power is shaded. Nothing is false anymore. Before 1950, drugs in North America and Europe practically did not exist yet; the Mafia has been around for centuries. Sexuality was more hidden, thus, many rapes were avoided in the world. People helped each other, nowadays; selfishness and indifference is the watchword unfortunately yielding no fruits. In those years, there were jobs and today, if you have a job, you may consider yourself privileged.

Like it or not, people realized that to incline the ideas of the masses towards theirs, they had to hold the communicative means of society to convey their ideology. So swiftly, the financial magnates are endowed with communicational infrastructure and manipulate information regardless of media or channels. They have a monopoly of the industry and control nearly all means of information.

#### b) **Television**

Looking at time spent on television, radio, movies, reading newspapers and journals, we readily understand that people have little time to devote to God.

But what attracts people to these information channels? Nothing really valid: violence, frustration, sex, money, beauty, male and female with several other stereotypes. Exposure to these visual media pushes the viewer into deep frustration and anger not guided by their normal senses hence they go to sleep in that angry mood not being able to do anything given that their conscience is troubled. That is why some individuals get involved in violence and murder.

Just because of television. Some isolate themselves and become insensitive to things happening around them while others are unable to respond when those feelings are directly guided towards them. Finally, there are people who act and react unconsciously independent of their own beliefs due to the influence of television.

Many people today are no longer active; they simply copy from their favorite artists. They forget to live their own lives and rather live the life of others. This is a sad reality. Awaken feelings of

violence and frustration, conveyed by a film only gets worse with stress, nervousness and anger. Also, many people today suffer from diseases caused by these things such as: insomnia, stress, restlessness, arthritis, rheumatism and others.

You may say I'm exaggerating when I talk of the TV and say that all these negative feelings arouse in us intense states of anger and lulls us to sleep. Television has a good way to make evil seem good and vice versa. Like the satanic disks that young people listen. It digs more profound generational conflicts. And what about the words of the prophet Isaiah 5:20 "Woe to those who call evil good and good evil; Who put darkness for light and light for darkness, who put bitter for smooth and sweet for bitter!" . Here, for example, are some techniques of manipulation of the brain that goes through unconsciously.

#### c) **The subliminal**

The subliminal is a technique of ideological manipulation of the unconscious. Here's what is called subliminal advertising: It was an experience in a movie wherein an image of Coca-Cola was inserted in a film within 1/60<sup>th</sup> second. Consciously, we do not see the image but on the contrary, the eye captures and saves in our sub conscious mind. Consequently, a significant volume of Coca-Cola was sold compared to that sold to people who had watched the same film without the subliminal advertising.

Other techniques, known as cervical associations, are being tested in the USSR and the United States. This is conditioned by the consumer learning imaged using advertisements. The pulse on the brain about the images may, with the knowledge of the person, pass messages through a simple subliminal advertisement to those initiated. Can we find someone more faithful in recruitment?

#### d) **Barriers**

The various distribution channels such as: fashion magazines, sports magazines and other visual media like television, film, video, DVD and CD Rom set lay much emphasis on beauty, sex,

money and happiness. To this are added Great Masters of the ideological manipulation of the unconscious, Dr. Cayce, Dr. Murphy and Dr. Dasylva. With the communicative means they have at their disposal, they can certainly manipulate ideologies, especially that there is no serious organization charged full-time to detect the subliminal messages and other phenomena affecting the unconscious and to report to the public. All this is hidden but still demystified by a small group of individuals who can be easily corrupted.

It is not surprising that the girl harassed by a desire to please and the man harassed by the desire to produce a perfect image of the "macho" are both discouraged. In fact, it happens that man, disappointed by what he cannot be gets revolted. Destructive and aggressive behaviors such as bulimia, anorexia, rape, crimes passion, jealousy, envy and many others may come from here. This happens because people are conditioned by the values of the world. This overexposure to beauty, strength, youth, often hides feelings of envy, jealousy, selfishness, money, aggression, disrespect and rejection of the human person. On the contrary, it is rare to see one grow in love, joy, peace, patience, faith, goodness, faithfulness, gentleness, temperance and benignity. Presumably, as the fruits of the Holy Spirit, as the Bible says in Galatians 5:22. It is also for these reasons that we have an unprecedented divorce rate in these times of hatred and violence.

One day, I attended a play entitled "The toy merchant and his son." Here is a summary:

A toy merchant and his son created toys. They loved them with a perfect and infinite love. But a wicked man sowed rebellion in the toy against the merchant and the separation became eternal. Then the son of the toy merchant turned into a toy and the villain Seller destroyed him. But the dealer rebuilt his son with an indestructible alloy because he had obeyed without rebellion. In a transposition, we would say that he was holy and without the original sin. In this way, all the toys who during their lifetime wanted to come back to the merchant Toy and his son were able to do so thanks to the son, because they knew when they were destroyed, that they would be rebuilt with an indestructible alloy and that the wicked would be destroyed. Seeing this and in order that the toys do not accept during their lifetime to return to the toy merchant through his son, the bad seller of toys distributed more playthings in order to blind the toys: beauty, physical appearance,

war, sport, dance, fame, money, social status and more. Several toys took so long to raise these things so they did not care to accept the reconciliation offer with the toy merchant and his son. Destruction took them unaware and it was already too late. Are we like these toys? Toys that have not accepted in their lifetime to return to the toy merchant through his son who put on them an eternal powder during their acceptance, when destroyed could not be rebuilt with the indestructible alloy. Since this they knew this alloy during their lifetime. After their destruction, they remained so forever with the bad seller. Beware here! I'm not saying you should not be a soldier or proud physically, but make sure first of all to be in the way of God and accept the free gift of eternal life of holiness and the rest will come.

The masses are remote-controlled by the communication infrastructure. The music industry and the manipulation of the subconscious mind are tools used to engraft rebellious ideologies in the youths in particular. Finally, the media gradually lull people into thinking collectively; left for us to detect the thought...But who are these architects who deceive the world by disseminating false information which condition our youth to worship Satan?

## PART TWO - A well established organization

The Illuminati is a secret society. Until recently, its existence was suspected but not confirmed. The numerous evangelistic campaigns held between 1970 and 1980, caused many people to withdraw from it. This secret organization opposes God in its manner of worship. It aims at creating one system of government, one currency, one legislature, one army and one police.

### 1) Its origin, purpose and structure

It is believed that this organization was founded on 1st May 1776<sup>37</sup> in Bavaria. However I remain skeptical about these claims because the date is too close to that of the United States Constitution.

---

<sup>37</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974 - 1976, Page 77 Full Text.



Its creation is attributed to Adam Weishaupt, supported by the "invisible college and the **Royal Society**"; banking dynasties and the richest men of the world at that time amongst others.

It is not known whether Benjamin Franklin<sup>38</sup> directly or indirectly contacted the lodge of the Bavarian Illuminati or whether it was during his trips to England that he was initiated into the secret lodge of the "Rothschilds". They possibly took upon themselves the works of "Comenius". As such, this secret lodge of the old Scottish rite was probably the instigator of the American and French Revolution. The freemason fathers of the U.S Constitution were probably among the real founders of the Illuminati. Certainly the pyramid, the thirteen stars<sup>39</sup>, the eye above the pyramid and the thirty-three degrees of wisdom are attributed to Kabbalah. A brother "Comenius", a mason of the 15th century whose real name is John Amos Kominsky, born in Moravia in 1592 and died in 1670 produced a document of great Christian value on educational reform as the "*Social Archetype Framework*" and forwarded to the **Royal Society**. The document was reproduced by Papus and Saint-Yves d'Alveydre in a type of martinism transposition. The Bavarian Illuminati, who actively prepared the French Revolution of 1789 and the Freemason fathers of the American War of Independence, adapted this same framework. Besides, if we look at the back of the U.S dollar, we can see his effigy. In fact, the U.S seal does not have a duplicate; it is therefore surprising to see the pyramid. Benjamin Franklin was responsible for erecting and establishing the Postal Corporation and the U.S currency. Above the eagle representing the American nation were thirteen stars. These stars indicate the supreme council that would direct the destiny of the United States of America and the world until the completion of the Weishaupt<sup>40</sup>

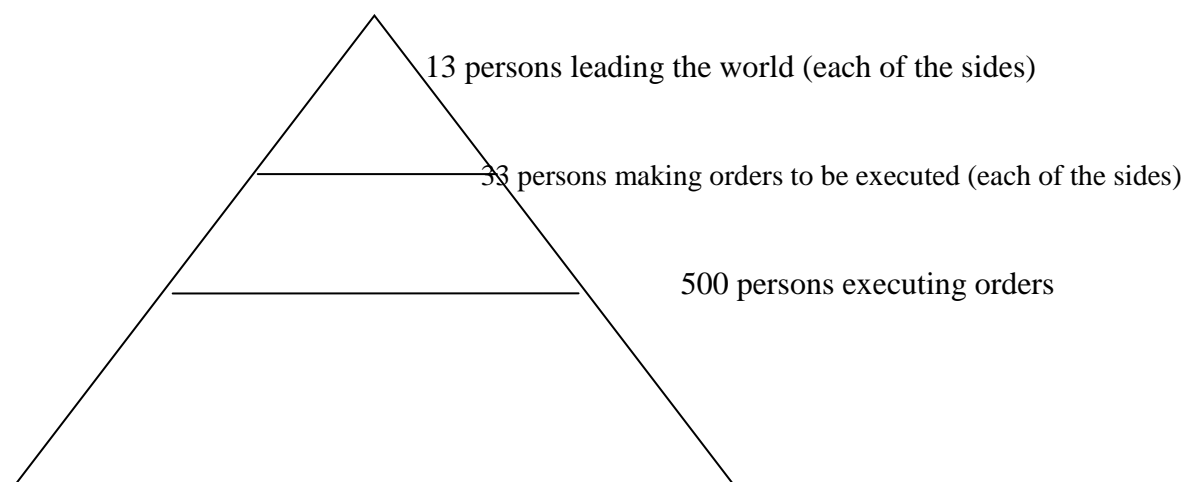
---

<sup>38</sup> Freemasons' Templars by Jean-Paul Bertrand, Rocher Editions, copyright 1991, ISBN 2268 01 100 - 3, Page 282. Benjamin Franklin was initiated a Freemason in 1731 and then in 1734 and 1749 he was Grand Master of Pennsylvania. In 1756 he was introduced to the Royal Society during a time when the ideology of freemasonry was strongly propagated. Between 1757 and 1776, he spent considerable time abroad, in England and France. From 1776 to 1785 he was the first U.S. ambassador to France. In 1778, in Paris, he became a Master member of a particularly important French lodge, the "Nine Sisters" which also included people like John Paul Jones and Voltaire, he became Master of the "Nine Sisters", a position to which he was reelected in 1780. In 1782, he became attached to a much mysterious Masonic conclave, "The Royal lodge of West Carson Temple Commanders."

<sup>39</sup> *SOON A WORLD GOVERNMENT? A GREAT ONE AND AGAINST THE CHURCH* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Publishing, Saint-Cénére, c.c.p. Rennes 2074-79, Pages 7-10 and 56. Full text in these pages. The author describes in precise terms the work of Comenius, i.e. the thirteen stars, pyramid, the board of thirteen illuminated, the council of thirty-three degrees of wisdom.

<sup>40</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, Pages 76, 262. If we know Adam Weishaupt so well, it is because in 1785, a mail carrier of the Illuminati transporting important documents was struck by lightning. Collected by the police, these documents enabled numerous arrests and discovery of several records crammed

Plan. The rest of the pyramid identifies the thirty-three board members and the 500 companies or the world's richest men. They operate on the four sides of the pyramid, i.e. religious, political, economic and socio-cultural. Here is the structure and operation of this secret society:



The ILLUMINATI is headed by a senior panel of thirteen members from each of its sides. Every government, Public corporation, multinational, must execute orders. Refusal or failure to execute orders is punished with death penalty. Such deaths are generally very violent and sarcastic. Since the War of independence, every war, revolution, insurrection, decolonization, economic crisis, meltdown, effort toward globalization and others have been engineered by the Illuminati. They artfully planned the 1789 French<sup>41</sup> revolution, the war of Succession, the Russian Revolution of 1917, the first and Second World Wars, colonial losses, the Vietnam War, the League of Nations, the United Nations Organization, European Union and others. The Weishaupt plan adapted from Comenius translates as follows: "Increase monetary power and its links to crush

---

into hiding. The Original Writings of the order and sect of the Illuminated, were reproduced in 1798 by John Robinson in "Proofs of a Conspiracy" by Father Augustine Barruel "Memories of Jacobinism history". The author argues on page 76 and 262 of his book that Lafayette and his troops enlightened the Atlantic, during the American War of Independence. Jacques Bordiot page 262 of his book says: "In 1826, a Freemason of New York, William Morgan, published a book denouncing the infiltration of illuminism into the Masonic lodges: he was assassinated shortly afterwards by an agent of the illuminati from England". Because of this event writers and historians have attributed the plan to Adam Weishaupt. Only insiders know the truth.

<sup>41</sup> If the two revolutions were not both instigated by the same levels of Freemasonry, why would France donate a Statue of Liberty to the United States of America?

and control the world". About 1840 the Masonic lodge "League of righteous men"<sup>42</sup> engaged the services of the revolutionary Karl Marx who postdated and codified the principles and projects fixed seventy years earlier by Adam Weishaupt in a communist party manifesto. Then, Saint Yves d'Alveydre (1849-1909), adjusted the "Social Archetype framework" to that of "Synarchic pact" for SYNARCHY whose mission is thus: Synarchy is at the service of fundraisers, in a common and spiritual goal. Marx, Hitler, Lenin, Stalin, Mao Tse Tung and many others were members of the illuminati.

Today, the illuminati control the entire global banking system. Through the "International Bank for Settlements" they have control over all the central banks of every country in the world, including the Federal Reserve Bank (United States). Already in the late 70s, the food and oil industry and virtually all communication infrastructures, 65% of transportation companies, 75% of insurance companies and majority of trust companies were under their jurisdiction. Personally, I would say that it is possible if not certain, that all multinationals with subsidiaries operating under the "Swift" system be their property.

Naturally, the data available to us date from the 1970s because the various published materials which can enable us to cite names in this book are pre-1970 works. Of course, through the satellites of these occult groups, we can get the names of known leaders engraved there. Although many backed out from the 60s and 70s, thereby making one very suspicious when associating names, it appears that the names of companies as well as the satellite names of the Illuminati organization have changed since that time until today. However, I checked on the internet and discovered that most of the names were still in existence. Blood marriages were able to change the names of important leaders in the Illuminati structure in 2005. Let me digress here to say that although I have a busy work schedule, I would be happy to write a second book about this secret society with more fresh data. For those who may have interesting information with supporting evidence, you can contact me using my website e-mail: [www.denisboivin.org](http://www.denisboivin.org),

---

<sup>42</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 263 Full text. The League of Righteous Men was the name under which the German illuminists were hiding. It can be traced to the French Revolution or the secret society of "Seasons of Blanqui. Louis Auguste Blanqui (1805-1881), inventor of the formula: "Neither God nor master" was an unrepentant revolutionary, who participated in various insurgencies, which the Commune. He founded his company on the Enlightenment of the Seasons, who took part Blanquists the unfortunate uprising in 1839, and the revolution of 1848

Among those who led, controlled and influenced the Illuminati during its long journey, are the thirteen major druids who sat at the top of the pyramid. Here we have several names. The international bankers giving it financial strength are: Rothschild, Rockefeller, Schiff, Morgan, Warburg, Lazard, Kahn, Loeb, Kuhn, Krupp, Wolf, Marburg Warbourg, Givotovsky, Baruch, Morgenthau, Lehman, Worms, Dreyfus, Oppenheim, Seligman, Vanderlip, Sulzberger, Frankfurter, Harriman, Schroeder, Mosseri, Lewishon, Lambert, Speyers, Baring, Erlanger, Fould, Mallet, Mirabaud, Hambro, Grenfell, foundations, the B'nai B'rith and others. Through powerful bodies, they control all world money through brokerage firms and credit unions, trust companies such as: Lazard Brothers &, Kuhn, Loeb Co., Goldman Sachs, Chase Manhattan, Dillon, Morgan Guaranty, Lehman, Salomon Brothers., Wood Gundy Inc., Merrill Lynch, Bache, Hutton, Shearson, Warburg Paris, Bache & Baker, Rothschild and Pitney Bowes, MSE Worms, Banque de France (Bank of France), Crédit National, Crédit Lyonnais, La Plata, La Bruce Baltzerrand Taak, Bank of New York Deutsche Bank, Hamburg brother Deskonto Gesellschaft, Nya Banken, Reichs Bank, First National Bank, Bank America, Chase Mahattan Bank, Commercial Bank Italia, Bank Lanbers, Belgian Bank, Industrial Bank of Congo, Ford Foundation, Rockefeller Foundation, Carnegie Foundation, Melon, Commonwealth Fund of New York, Fund for the Republic, Sloan Foundation, Trust Herman Goering, Pirelli Trust, Trust Lever Brothers, Manufactured Trust, Trust Krupp, G. I. Fabens, and many others.

Although we cannot name all of them, nowadays, it is virtually impossible to be part of the world financial elite without belonging either directly or indirectly to this organization. The Illuminati functions through a Freemason network. Although High finance heads the organization through mother- TRANSNATIONALS like: The Round Table, Society of the Great Red Dragon, Synarchy and Propaganda (P2) with headquarter in Rhodes-Stead. We cannot give the exact orientation of all mother-TRANSNATIONALS because we run the risk of mixing up facts. But to fully explain to the reader the purpose of this organization, I will continue with the mother lodge The Round Table or "ESTABLISHMENT". Since 1966, the Round Table controls eight countries<sup>43</sup> or regions of the world, namely: England, South Africa, Australia, New Zealand,

---

<sup>43</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 92 Full texts.

India, Japan, USA and Canada. For the U.S, it compromises through the Council on Foreign Relations and its 27 satellites.

But we shall explain in this chapter how this organization since its creation has undermined the U.S government policy. Academic institutions backed by the Foundations worldwide supply these well-structured organizations with Synarchic staffs. These "invisible colleges" are distributed worldwide but during the Cold War they were concentrated in Eastern Europe. Ordinary people are unaware of these invisible colleges. They are illuminists' strongholds. Their graduates are initiated freemasons; who get the best positions in our governments, multinational organizations or Masonic- inclined institutions. I mean that each TRANSNATIONAL chooses technocrats who lead our governments and the Masonic agencies through these institutions. To cite just a few names<sup>44</sup>: Institute of Public Administration, the Thirteen-Thirteen of Chicago, the Ecole Nationale d'Administration (National School of Administration) ENA, in France. The brightest initiated technocrats assume high positions within our governments, the UN, NATO, EEC, Foundations, private and central banks<sup>45</sup>. The Reece report that we shall see in this chapter will highlight the infiltration through foundations and the recruitment policy of the Illuminati throughout the various American universities. While in USSR, managers or Synarchic technocrats<sup>46</sup> are a third power group often more powerful than the Party and Government. In order to increase and consolidate their dynasties, industrial and financial feudalists have incorporated the brightest technocrats by way of marriage and on the other hand, they orientate their offspring towards the technocrat industry where they constitute over three quarter of the student<sup>47</sup> population.

---

<sup>44</sup> *SOON A WORLD GOVERNMENT? A GREAT ONE AND AGAINST THE CHURCH* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Publishing, Saint-Céneré, c.c.p. Rennes 2074-79, page 72 Full text.

<sup>45</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 60-61. Full text in these pages.

<sup>46</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 61. Full text. "A revolution was brewing in the Kremlin. It would be the theater of an increasingly conspicuous struggle among the Party, army and newcomers, technocrats, whose integration into the life of the USSR was done quietly, but plays an important role in the daily life of the Soviet Union. Mr. Pigasse assures that its leaders are in the hierarchy just below the great tenors of the Central Committee. They constitute the real government of the Soviet Union and are constantly seeking to increase their power at the expense of the party "Jean Paul Pigasse -" Kremlin: smoldering revolution" in Enterprise, P 22-2-1969.

Indeed, each government derives its main source of income through taxes and savings bonds. Now it turns out that to issue savings bonds, our Governments must be supported by international finance or a small group, called international bankers. Why do you think these international bankers require our governments to support them financially? If it occurs that the government fails to repay national debt, guarantees affecting the well-being and freedom of all taxpayers of the world are claimed. These guarantees are the political military and economic forces of the country.

So, if the international monetary system were to collapse, “international bankers” will become masters of the world. In addition to maintaining their own institutions, these banking dynasties, on their part, inherit the major State corporations of our governments. A reassessment of monetary values will not affect those institutions, but the monetary system as a whole. Since the beginning of the century, there have been many cartels: oil, steel, automobile, sugar, food and others. Would it be possible to have the cartel of banking dynasties on an international basis? Without the support of bankers, which multinational could engage in global markets, and impose its own price? The world's wealth being in the hands of such a limited group, it is not surprising to find trace of their complicity acts since 1776.

## 2) Its operation

With the world's taxpayers' money obtained through banks, insurance companies, trusts, foundations, Mutual funds and trust company, the illuminati institutions are able to be creditors of our governments. After all, what is a bank? If not the art of making money with the savings of the masses. In other words: "make money from nothing".

The strategy is simple: lending to governments, State corporations, multinationals and others with as much money as they wish. For the Illuminati, money represents the Golden Calf in the days of Aaron and Moses. When the bank recalls payments, some collapsing governments are unable to meet their obligations. By means of negotiation, Governments are obliged to negotiate in order to maintain power. Currently, several countries are technically bankrupt; infiltration of Synarchic

officials introduced by the Illuminati in key positions has enabled the collapse of governments. Everything suggests that the one world government is at hand. Laws, agreements and structures to enable the Illuminati to manipulate have been long established. Here's an example: Although a public<sup>48</sup> vote revealed in the sixties that 80% of Americans were in favor of Bible reading and public prayer in American schools, the Supreme Court, voting eight against one and six against one, removed the power and influence of Bible reading and prayer in classrooms. Today, I am convinced that the popular vote would be much lower. Our young generations have been seduced by someone else. Faith in God brings the fruits of the Holy Spirit.

#### a) **The Council of 33**

The Council of Thirty-Three is responsible for enforcing the orders of Thirteen. They intervene on all four sides of the pyramid, namely: economic, socio-cultural, politico-military and religious. It is said that at this level and above, the initiated must have made a human sacrifice or killed someone in cold blood. They give orders through different factions such as: Bilderberg Group, Masonic lodges, political organizations, government agencies, churches (witchcraft), commissions, associations, media and others. The authority of the Thirty-Three is indisputable worldwide. They infiltrate all policy sectors of society and make it evolve the way they want. As you must have seen in the above example, the "religious" sector is the most important to control. They must at all costs, prevent the growth of Christianity, which they see as a threat and even more, we shall see. In this sense, governmental regulations and various organizations, collusion and corruption, have helped them to reach this end. Notably, various Protestant Christian Churches have been crippled in their growth movement; their "leaders" have been bought over. Meanwhile the leadership of the Catholic Church has been infiltrated by Freemasonry, as we shall show in Chapter Five.

---

<sup>48</sup> *Focus on the World of Tomorrow* by Willard Cantelon, Editor R. Lebel, 5, Allee Baco, 44 Nantes, copyright 1972, P-119 Full Text.

## b) 500 or the Bilderberg Group

The idea and its development were designed by Joseph Retinger<sup>49</sup> but it was implemented by king Bernhard in May 1954. This committee is made up of the 500 richest men of the world, all of them billionaires. King Bernhard of Holland was the president of this organization. His men are responsible for carrying out orders from the Thirty-Three or committee, the Bilderbergers Advisory Committee<sup>50</sup>, composed of the most prestigious CFR (Council on Foreign Relations) members and its branches. They request excessive loans, move or close multinationals, accelerate unemployment, increase inflation, create shortages, destroy stockpiles; exacerbate famine through inadequate food distribution and manipulates communications infrastructure.

They are so powerful that Congressman John Rarick had this to say about them<sup>51</sup>:

*"But the Bilderbergers, by collective agreements, have financial power such that, by withdrawing their funds, they can push a country to bankruptcy or, as was announced in October, creating a trade balance deficit with U.S and other countries reaching 821 million in a month. American investments were transferred to foreign banks and the exchange rate of U.S dollars dropped in foreign exchange institutions in order to create a panic that comes to worsen the dollar crisis. And those who created panic quickly maneuvered to benefit from their swindling through devaluation"*

*While recalling the precedent in 1957, the Congressman Rarick declares: "The process is not new" Shortly after the first Bilderberg conference held in United States, sparked off the dollar crisis, blamed on France which was accused of repatriating U.S gold*

---

<sup>49</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, Pages 218-219. Full text in these pages

<sup>50</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 227 Full text.

<sup>51</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 226. Full text. Quote from John R. Rarick in The Review of the News of January 12, 1972



*against dollars to compensate a decrease of 50% of its bullion reserve.*

In the past, we were under the gold parity and currently we are under the flexible exchange rate following the collapse of the monetary system in 1971.

This can give you an overview of the powers of "international bankers", given that the Bilderbergers themselves are under their control. Is it necessary to recall that the Important characters were secretly affiliated to it<sup>52</sup> such as: Jean Lesage, the Prime Minister of Quebec and Lester B. Pearson, Prime Minister of Canada; Valery Giscard D'Estaing, president of the French republic, Robert Schuman, the creator of the ECSC forerunner of C.E.E.; several prominent members of the EEC and ministers serving in important positions in our governments. Also, William Lyon King Mackenzie, former Prime Minister of Canada, was one of the trusted men of the Rockefellers. Bad experiences with Dan Smoot, author of "The Invisible Government" and Jacques Bordiot, author of "*A Hidden Hand Leads*" forced them to be very careful to reveal names. However, let's be honest, it is not the people that determines the politicians, but rather the economic elite. When the people vote, the Illuminati has already secured its interests, knowing very well that the party which comes to power does not matter, the candidates will act on its recommendations or that of the Bilderbergers Group. The popular vote is just a shadow of democracy.

### 3) Organization of the Illuminati for the U.S

After succeeding in converging international politics towards a world government with the help of the Illuminati of Weishaupt which enabled the success of the American and French Revolution, International Finance decided to centralize. Thus, over the years they founded structures and committees to achieve globalization on the basic ideas of the ILLUMINATI sect.

---

<sup>52</sup> A Hidden Hand Leads by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 223 Full text

## **Rhodes-Stead Society<sup>53</sup>**

It was founded in 1891 by international bankers on the initiative of two richissism thinkers, Rhodes and Stead. This society coveted capitalist-imperialist exploitation *because its real purpose was indeed the Messianic project of world government under the leadership of small College of Initiated persons. Eventually it subjected itself to the dictatorship of one of its co-opted members.* It became interested in education and created pulpits: Beit, Mortagua Burton in Oxford, a Rhodes pulpit in London, a Stevenson pulpit at Chatham House, a Wilson pulpit in Aberystwyth. Rhodes devoted part of his fortune to create a Rhodes House center and Rhodes Scholar grant at Oxford, while Milner was developing the first colonial institute of the world, Toynbee Hall. But to expand its business very quickly, it was bound to consider the ownership of a group of thinkers who would lead its work across the world. Therefore, they divided the world into four (4) TRANSNATIONALS:

**The Round Table:** England, South Africa, Australia, New Zealand, India, USA and Canada.

**The Synarchy:** European Union and its satellites

**The Great Red Dragon society:** China, Indochina and the USSR, when time comes, the latter could be brought back into the Synarchy.

**Propaganda 2 (P2):** Italy, Central America, and South America

### **a) The Round Table<sup>54</sup>**

---

<sup>53</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 90-92. Full text among these pages

<sup>54</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 94-95 and 13. Full text in these pages.

To explain the modus operandi, we shall continue with the TRANSNATIONALS of “The Round Table,” because I’m Canadian. It was founded in 1909 by Milner with Young synarchic professionals fresh from Oxford and Toynbee Hall who reached high positions in government and finance: backed by international bankers such as Astor, Lazard, and Morgan. The Round Table was to become the inner units of Freemasonry. Its goal was to continue the orders of Rhodes Stead society. *Eventually, this society would be intending to be the government of the Antichrist, but for now, she just wants to form the invisible<sup>55</sup> government.* Its initial goal, to infiltrate American universities, hence the Morgan group had the upper hand on Harvard, Thamas Lamont on Columbia; Whithney on the Yale and Princeton, Carnegie Foundation and the General Education Committee of Rockefeller, created in the image of All Souls College of Oxford. Infiltration propaganda in five daily newspapers: The New York Times, New York Herald Tribune, Washington Post, Boston Evening Transcript, Christian Science Monitor. With the growth of the United States, The Round Table was obliged to have a substitute in the person of CFR (Council on Foreign Relations) in order to operate in the United States.

#### **b) Council on Foreign Relations<sup>56</sup>**

Officially founded in 1921 by Colonel Mandhell House, the CFR's occult mission is the establishment of a socialist totalitarian world government through the paralysis of technocracy; infiltrate the American government and take control over its foreign policy. Funded by Morgan, Rockefeller, Carnegie Foundation, Ford Foundation, Schiff, Kuhn, Loeb, Harriman Warburg and Baruch until 1971, five presidents of the United States emerged from it. Herbert C. Hoover, Franklin D. Roosevelt, Dwight Eisenhower, John Kennedy, Richard Nixon... From 1971, it is impossible for me to state the names of the personalities related to CFR who influence American foreign policy.

*Since August 22, 1973, the policy of the Council on Foreign Relations has become the Official policy of the U.S.* This tells the whole story about democracy and the presidential race. To

---

<sup>55</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 227. Full text these pages.

<sup>56</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, Pages 133-142. Full text in these pages.

achieve its purposes, the CFR has several satellites. The main ones are listed below. It goes without saying that all these institutions are financed by the financial core of the ILLUMINATI. Each of these organizations provides our democratic governments with advisers and technocrats of high echelons. It is obvious that these administrators must pursue the objectives of the CFR in order not to be forgotten or dislodged by the great capitalists. Here are some few satellites of C.F.R.:

c) **I.P.R. (Institute of Pacific Relation)**<sup>57</sup>

It was founded in 1925; the Institute has had various problems with the FBI in matters concerning the spy system<sup>58</sup>. It had 1,800 highly confidential intelligent service documents. The McCarran Committee treated this subject in a superficial way. It was dislocated in March 1961.

d) **F.P.A. and W.P.A. (Foreign Policy Association and the World Affair Council)**<sup>59</sup>

She did a lot of subversive propaganda in favor of socialism through seminars Studies in eight weeks. In 1967, 250,000 high school students participated.

e) **C.E.D. (Committee for Economic Development)**<sup>60</sup>

---

<sup>57</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, Pages 142-144. Full text in these pages.

<sup>58</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, Page 143. The McCarran Commission enabled the identification of many communists within IPR. Laughlin (C.F.R.), who was advisor to President Roosevelt, Frederick Vanderbilt (CFR), Alger Hiss (CFR), a senior official at State Department, charged with spying for the USSR, Owen Lattimore (CFR), and Harry Dexter White (C.F.R.). Among the members who gave way to the pro-communist: Robert Barnett (CFR) "Rhodes scholar" Ralph Bunche (CFR), a Harvard professor, Deputy Secretary General of the UN; Harlan Cleveland (CFR), "Rhodes Scholar", John Paton Davies Jr., seven times exonerated of communism accusation; Arthur H. Dean (C.F.R.) Phillip C. Jessup (C.F.R.), Joseph E. Johnson (CFR), George Catlett Marshall (CFR) Former Chief of Staff for the U.S. Army during World War II, author of the Marshall Plan, economic aid to Europe, former Secretary of State for Defence, Nobel peace in 1953, Edwin O. Reischauer (CFR), Harvard professor, ambassador to Japan; Dean Rusk (CFR) President Kennedy's minister, Summer Welles (CFR), former minister, Charles Yost (CFR), ambassador to the UN. For more details on the Institute of Pacific Relations and the Case of Amerasia, read John T. Flynn - *While You Slept* - The Devin-Adair Company New York, 1958, reprinted: *American Opinion*, September 1961, chap. 14 and 15.

<sup>59</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 144-145. Full text in these pages.

The C.E.D. aims to provide education, research and statistics from the concept of the CFR. This serves to strengthen, support and advance theories or laws facilitating global system regarding the opinions of the Senate and the electorate.

f) **AC (Advertising Council)<sup>61</sup>**

It was founded in 1941 at a cost of 100 million dollars paid by the Rockefeller Foundation; aims to select the advertisements that are of national interest and could qualify for free distribution in the mass media. Imagine the result.

g) **Public Policy Committee<sup>62</sup>**

They choose the adverts they can broadcast free of charge on account of the State.

h) **A.C.L.U. (American Civil Liberties Union)<sup>63</sup>**

Founded in 1917, the goal is to sow discord in democracy by using various antimilitarists communist flavor groupings.

i) **I.A.D. (Institute for American Democracy)**

It is a section of the Judeo-communistic Anti-Defamation League Organization of B'rith B'nai, the Jewish Freemasonry.

j) **CC (Common Cause)**

It was founded in 1970; it serves to evaluate the attitude of the people towards the Establishment. In fact, international bankers do not care a hoot about cause. What they want is to undermine democracy and thus lead the word gradually towards communism. They know quite well that when communism-socialism shall spearhead, the Antichrist will sweep all these militaristic and

---

<sup>60</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 147. Full text in these pages.

<sup>61</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 148. Full text

<sup>62</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 148. Full text.

<sup>63</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 148. Full text.

progressive movements which they have funded and encouraged. The international bankers do not give a damn to the price to pay and get there: it is your money that they spend and when the monetary system collapses, all the values and collective debts will be canceled.

When our governments need specialists, they choose them even those of the so-called scientific or educational organizations. Thus, they work to move the policy of CFR towards internationalism-socialism or one world government.

However, the countries forming the former Iron Curtain are much more infiltrated than those of the West. The technocrats of the Eastern bloc were trained in the illuminists' bastions. For many years now, the Illuminati control the USSR and its satellites. What they want is to destabilize in order to better reign.

## 4) Foundations and Trusts

The main opponents of this book will tell you that family dynasties have disappeared with the inheritance laws in force in the United States, nothing more than lies. Politicians working for the ILLUMINATI quickly allowed an opening in the tax system through foundations, while refusing to inform the mass public. Indeed, the Foundation Act is flexible; to a large extent it even allows profitable transactions. Our dynasties can start under a new name, while retaining control over their assets by voting preferred shares. Here are the benefits of foundation<sup>64</sup>:

- 1) Assets which are transmitted as a contribution to a charity, tax deductible.
- 2) Upon the donor's death, the assets are free of inheritance tax
- 3) The property or the company remains intact;
- 4) If the donor is a corporation, it continues to operate as before;
- 5) The foundation itself is exempted from taxation forever;

---

<sup>64</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 154. Full text. According to Gary Allen - "Foundations" in American Opinion, November 1969 - reprinted. Collective Foundations and Tax-Free Cash "by Gary Allen and Harold Lord Varney - American Opinion, p3.

6) The personalities that make up the Executive Board or the Board of Directors are in a strategic position to enrich themselves by a process which, although not charitable or social, is still legal, and even if they are not, they can be performed in virtually any opportunity.

The great financial dynasties quickly realized the advantage of a foundation. Thus, in 1976<sup>65</sup> there were:

- 1) 14 Rockefeller<sup>66</sup> foundations
- 2) 7 Ford foundations
- 3) 6 Melon foundations
- 4) 5 Carnegie foundations

All these dynasties are part of the Illuminati and Weishaupt plan or to great capitalists, towards a socialist-totalitarian world government. To that end, here is the sad story of an honest and upright man who believed in democracy.

1 August 1951, Eugene E. Cox, Democrat congressman from Georgia, called for the establishment of a Commission of Inquiry on foundations, accusing them of corrupting social order and interference in foreign policy. He notably cast doubt on the Rockefeller foundations, Guggenheim, Rosewald and others.

The project was buried in committee, but Cox brought it up again on 10 March 1952. He was charged with anti-Semitism and racism, for having attacked the Guggenheim and Rosenwald Funds.

Given the importance of the financial and political interests at stake, it was a death struggle. It was the unfortunate Cox, facing opposition from Republicans and abandoned by part of his

---

<sup>65</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 155. Full text.

<sup>66</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 155. Full text "Repeatedly prosecuted for interference with free competition, Rockefeller's Standard Oil was convicted in 1911 by the Supreme Court and had to break into several companies: Standard Oil of New Jersey, Socony (Standard Oil Co. Of New York), Standard Oil of Ohio, Tide Water, Vacuum Oil, Humble Company, etc.. But Rockefeller was to maintain control over these companies without being incriminated for monopoly tendency. To this end, he formed the foundations which he distributed securities of various companies. Thus, by itself, the Rockefeller Foundation received more than four million shares of Standard Oil of New Jersey (in 1968, \$ 15 billion in sales, \$ 1.3 billion of net profit), two million shares of Standard Oil of Indiana, etc.. And fourteen Rockefeller Foundations have been identified..! Information from: Christian Jelen and Olivier Oudrette - The Industrial War, chap. 4.

Democrat party, who found himself unable to continue his work and died during investigation. The Commission dismissed the case.

Carroll Reece, Republican member, took up the case and carried it to a new Commission on 27 July 1953. He received the same answer as that given by the Cox Commission. However the Reece Commission was able to limit itself to the search for "political goals", "propaganda" and of "attempts to influence legislation." The Eisenhower<sup>67</sup> administration was very rebellious to this Commission. Also, among the five members constituting the Reece Commission, three were chosen from among the deputies who voted against the investigation. We understand what it means.

Despite objections, resistance, pressure and even the collusion of one of its proven members with representatives of the seven largest foundations - including systematic obstruction made the president to stop work on January 3, 1955, after eighteen months of investigation - the Commission held sixteen public hearings and drafted a report published on 16 December 1954 by the Government Printing Office.

The findings are edifying. With supporting evidence, the foundations are accused of using their money to influence the educator who ends up becoming an agent of social change and a protagonist of the evolution of our society into some form of collectivism," have a strong influence on our foreign policy and information on public opinion in international issues" with "some of them intermingling with some intermediary organizations" and "through the introduction of members and advisers of government"

It is clear that "These combined efforts resulted in the spread of globalization, particularly in the direction of a world government and a breach of American nationalism. Foundations ... showed a generally progressive trend in their approach to international problems. "

In the final report of the Reece Commission, we can read:

"The statement of Miss Casey (verbatim record of the hearings p. 877 et seq) Clearly shows interpenetration between the Carnegie Endowment for International Peace and some of its

---

<sup>67</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 157. Full text.

"It is true that President Eisenhower felt vulnerable for having also placed his fortune in a foundation"



associated organizations, such as the Council on Foreign Relations and other foundations, with the State Department. Truly speaking, it is not the intention of the leaders of these foundations and organizations to deny this interpenetration. They make it a glory in their reports. To this end, they have begun vital projects for the State Department, they virtually created small departments or groups within the department and have provided advisors and staff trained by themselves or following programs which they have funded; and they play a significant role in the designing of foreign policy in its principles and in its details. They have to a greater extent always acted as direct agents of the State Department. And they have actively embarked on costly propaganda to influence public opinion ("education"?) to support policies which they helped to define." Due to lack of means, time and money, Reece had to limit his inquiry to a few big Foundations: Carnegie, Rockefeller, and Ford.

The conclusion of the Reece Committee is somewhat breathtaking. Even though infiltrated and doomed to failure, the Commission was obliged to make such findings. We should not generalize all foundations. But many wealthy American Foundations, not to talk of trusts and others, are administered by members of the CFR, or satellites of the Illuminati.

In 1969 it the number of registered<sup>68</sup> foundations was estimated at one hundred thousand (100 000) in the United States. The findings of the Reece Committee do not even help to bring out the tip of the iceberg.

Just to give you an idea of "interpenetration"<sup>69</sup>, among the few foundations that it managed to investigate.

FOUNDATIONS	NUMBER OF BOARD MEMBERS	NUMBER OF MEMBERS WHO ARE PART OF THE COUNCIL ON FOREIGN RELATIONS
Ford Foundations	15	10
Fund for the Republic	18	7

<sup>68</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 154. Full text.

<sup>69</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 159-160. Full text of these pages

Rockefeller Foundation	20	12
Rockefeller's Brothers Fund	9	4
Carnegie Corporation of New York	16	10
Carnegie Endowment for International Peace	26	18
Carnegie Foundation for the Advancement of Teaching	26	15
Carnegie Institute of Washington	22	8
Sloan Foundation	16	12
Commonwealth Fund of New York	10	6
Twentieth Century Fund	20	13

The press, magazines and other media quickly choked the findings of this commission. The ILLUMINATI holds virtually all communicational vehicles of the planet. The government in power had better be quiet, it was the mandate of F\* Dwight D. Eisenhower (1953-1961), a member of the CFR. Some authors say he had about a hundred and one (101) members of the illuminati under his government. For the reader, F \* signifies a Freemason.

We therefore realize that the international bankers and illuminists thinkers have well planned, directed, coordinated, organized and controlled our governments through their secret operations. Democracy is corrupt, almost overcome by money. Nearly 3.5 billion individuals had to change their office at the global level with serious barriers to their human freedoms in the Law of God. And this is to further enrich the few men who have as "Great Work" (a Freemason term), to bring to power Antichrist.

## 5) Towards two democracies

Obviously, the introduction of two democracies like the United States and the French Republic had been thought out long ago. From 1654, the “Invisible College”, operating as communication networks in the mother-lodges addressed this issue. There is a virgin territory in America where it was possible to verify Masonic foundations. Between 1600 and 1780, Masonic ideals were elaborated upon by many scholars, by freemasons like Voltaire, Hume, Locke, Adam Smith, Diderot and Rousseau. The theory of “human rights” emerged from them. In the years 1700, there was only one “invisible college” in the world, and the *Royal Society* made up of English fundraisers and the illuminated of the time such as: Robert Boyle, Robert Fludd, John Dee, A. Seyer, Anderson, Payne, Desaguliers and Isaac Newton. Naturally, when they prepare a revolution, the majority of freemasons are not initiated into the esoteric lodges or into alchemy, it is a freemasonry based on principles incidental to Christian values. I do not see colonialists swapping their Christian worship with the fight against principles that are opposed to the doctrines of Christ. On the contrary, during the French revolution in Europe, Freemasonry was definitely more esoteric and alchemic. Masonries are kinds of nets from which nice fishes are gotten at times. This world is sealed off, only those who control it know the labyrinths; and the corridor that leads to its summit is esoteric, alchemic, martinistic, satanic and luciferian. When the French Republic was solidly established, France offered a liberty statue to America, a typical freemason symbol made by the freemason Frederick Bartholdi.

### a) The American revolution<sup>70</sup>

In the 18<sup>th</sup> century, it was difficult to determine with proofs whether someone was freemason or not for the simple reason that many lodges were not updating their registers or did not send their registers to the mother-lodges. For example, King George III had three freemason brothers: the Duke of Cumberland became Grand Master of the English Grand Lodge; Henry, Duke of Gloucester, we have only traces of acceptance, on 16 February 1766; about the Duke of York, we

---

<sup>70</sup> Freemasons' Templars: The transmission of the mystery by Michael Baigent / Richard Leigh, Rock Publishing, copyright 1991, ISBN 2268 01100-3, P-224 - 321. Full text in these pages.

have no information. If things are very obscure in the case of the Royal princes, imagine the case of a commander. Meanwhile, there were two Great mother-Lodges in the kingdom: the Grand Lodge of England and the Grand Lodge of Ireland. The “college of the invisible” infiltrated freemasonry in the British Army through the Grand Lodge of Ireland. It is not known if this was done willfully or through negligence, but they had a lot of difficulties in updating their registers; imagine therefore the registers of military lodges which were granted by patent letters. In fact, as soon as a military lodge was formed, it was travelling with the regiment and the mother-lodge never had news of it. Whenever a regiment was dissolved, usually the new regiment itself will form another lodge. Nevertheless, the majority of commanders who had been to Ireland were infiltrated by freemasonry. These mobile lodges used to carry their mobile outfit and regalia in trunks, besides the regimental colours, were silver and other purely military items. Usually the commanding officer presided as Master of the original Lodge and could be succeeded by other officers. The small grades given enabled the conveyance of the Freemasonry social ideas and the maintenance of a Protestant faith. Also, they provided a way of communication that allowed the eradication of injustice; the Lodges approached men of different social backgrounds and categories such as: soldiers, officers, junior officers and superiors. In the military, this equality was not tolerated. So at every opportunity and high ranking officers and common soldiers jumped on the first opportunity to be companions in Freemasonry.

Also, the "College of Invisibles" was enlisted in the services of the British high command in London. In England the F \* William Pitt, later Duke of Chatham, became secretary of state, and embarked on a massive redistribution of the army and the Royal navy. Officers were demoted, rigid and doctrinaire, they were either fired or resigned, and command was placed in the hands of younger men, dynamic, flexible and innovative. In the New World, senior officers and commanders with their lodges belonging to the freemasonry were sent there. These military nomad lodges went unrecorded at the Grand Lodge of Ireland. Thus, the brothers Howe, Amerst, Wolfe, Cornwallis, Clinton, Carleton and Ligonier were Freemasons faithful to their cause, and they were placed in strategic positions from the top Command of England without the knowledge of the king. Formally, we can say with evidence that out of seventy-four officers of the

Continental Army, thirty-three were freemasons<sup>71</sup>, but as I have explained, it is quite possible for the figure to be more than this.

During the Seven Years War, British policy made North America a good seller, so the colonists fought alongside regular troops against French settlements in the New World. Consequently, many settlers were introduced to Freemasonry. This fraternity was established to give good assistance to the American Revolution. Among others, several American generals learned their trade in these battles. On the civilian side, December 8, 1730, Benjamin Franklin printed in his newspaper "The Pennsylvania Gazette," the first written reference to Freemasonry in North America. Meanwhile, at the level of the civilian population in the new world it was the Grand Lodge of England, who distributed the first patents. Around 1756 the Grand Lodge of Scotland started to provide patents. The ranks of the Grand Lodge of Ireland were higher in civilian life, but these lodges were rare. After the Seven Years' War between France and England, the French colonies in North America became British property. The British Parliament and George III inflicted a progressive tax on the colonies. It is unknown if this was a voluntary maneuvers on the part of the "Invisible College" on the parliament to create a tense situation in the colonies. After all the New World offered this blank slate, this social laboratory where Freemason ideology could emerge to form an ideal society.

The real question to ask in this revolution is how and why Britain lost this war? She alone had the means to lose or win. Historians have suggested the following reasons: all of North America had taken up arms against Great Britain, the British army did not have its element in North America, British army officers were incompetent, inept and lazy, corrupt, outdated, psychologically and tactically defeated. In reality this is false. Great Britain had the support of 38% of the settlers in addition to the population of Canada. During the war, there were at least fourteen (14) regiments "Loyalists" very attached to Britain as a mother nation. These were spying, providing information, offered food and shelter to British troops. During the Seven Years War, one of the Howe brothers (George), Wolfe, Braddock died. We are not considering the exploits of James Wolfe who sailed up the St. Lawrence River and seized the Plains of Abraham, or that of William Howe and Amherst on Montreal. Before his death Howe was one of the leading innovators in the

---

<sup>71</sup> Freemasons' Templars: The transmission of the mystery by Michael Baigent / Richard Leigh, Rock Publishing Copyright 1991, ISBN 2268 01100-3, P-266. Full text

piecemeal genre of war which finally characterized the North American operations. Howe left the prejudices and built irregular forces with reconnaissance patrols, adopted the camouflage outfit<sup>72</sup>, put the officers and men on an equal footing. Then, Amherst adopted Howe innovations and found others like a dark brown coat without tails, without laces, without any ornaments, troops wearing the Indian regiments outfit of sharpshooters or elite snipers dressed in dark green, units mounted for lighting missions and guerrilla operations, light infantry regiments. It is from Amherst that men like Charles Lee, Israel Putnam, Ethan Allen, Benedict Arnold, David Wooster, Joseph Frye, Horatio Gates and Philip John Schuyler acquired the discipline of the soldier and combat tactics for North America, while Hugh Mercer, John Nixon, and George Washington learned with Commanders Braddock and George Howe. All these future generals of the U.S. Army had learned from these British masters. The main British commanders during the War of Independence restrained the brutal zeal of subordinates and were very competent.

Indeed, they could destroy the revolutionary army in a flash time, but they did not. Why? The British high command was strangely slow, unsystematic, apathetic, lethargic and debonair. Most military personnel who served during the War of Independence, men and officers from both sides, were Freemasons, or imbued with values and attitudes promoted by Freemasonry. The ideals for which the colonists declared Independence and fought were Masonic. She was opposing a people of the same origin, same language, who fought together during the seven years war and sharing the same ideals under two different armies. This war was unpopular in Britain and in the Parliament. Moreover, virtually all men who were there directly involved, soldiers, officers, commanders were opposed. Clinton and Cornwallis fought against their will, with an extreme reluctance. Howe was even harder, again and again expressing anger, grief and frustration that caused him the command assigned to him. His brother, Admiral Howe, shared his feeling. The settlers, said he was "the best people the most oppressed and afflicted of the earth" Amerst showed the same reluctance, his rank allowed him the luxury of refusing to go fight on the ground. In 1778, King George III appointed him commander of the units stationed in

---

<sup>72</sup> Freemasons' Templars: The transmission of the mystery by Michael Baigent / Richard Leigh, Rock Publishing, copyright 1991, ISBN 2268 01100-3, P-253. Full text. "He rejected the unnecessary embarrassment, he cut the tails of their coats and hair of their heads, brown the barrels of their muskets, wrapped their members lower leg guards to protect them from thorns, and fills the voids in their knapsacks thirty pounds of meat, so as to make them independent for weeks."

America. Amerst refused, threatening to resign. Amerst refused the direct order of King and subsequently that of Parliament. In Canada, Carleton shared Howe's belief. The espionage network was strictly Masonic. This committee consisted of freemasons Robert Morris, John Jay, Benjamin Harrison, John Dickinson, Benjamin Franklin and Silas Deane. All American generals were Freemasons: Richard Montgomery, David Wooster, Hugh Mercer, Arthur St. Clair, Horatio Gates, Israel Putnam, John Stark, John Nixon, Joseph Frye, William Maxwell, Elias Dayton. Lafayette, Steuben, Pulaski, Kosciuszko and Kalb were all Freemasons. George Washington, a prominent Freemason under the Grand Master of Virginian Randolph, was appointed commander in chief because of his relations with the Masonic "Invisible College".

The "Boston Tea Party marked the beginning of the War of Independence, December 16, 1774, however, the project was developed by Samuel Adams and the Sons of Liberty ", twelve members of the St. Andrew lodge participated with two detachments of the militia supposed to guard the cargo of Dartmouth. Nineteen men from the militia participated in casting the Dartmouth tea boat in the waters of Boston Harbor. This operation was a mutual agreement between the settlers and the British army. On June 11, 1776, Congress appointed a committee to draft the Declaration of independence. Of the five members of this committee three are Freemasons. Franklin Livingston, Robert Livingston, Roger Sherman, the other two Thomas Jefferson and John Adams were not freemasons. At least, history cannot prove it.

The Battle of Bunker Hill set the tone for the war. Despite the sweltering heat, Howe ordered his troops to advance, in serried ranks, loaded with all their equipment weighed more than fifty pounds per man, under fire from settlers, and to take positions with the bayonet. The bullets of the settlers, were flying in a well-disciplined manner learned from the British army during the Seven Years War, were bloody attacks and it took four assaults for Howe's troops to win the position. General Thomas Gage and William bore the blame and Howe was dropped as commander in chief. Gage was not a Freemason; he disturbed the plans of the "Invisible College." The goal: to gain time until Louis XVI of France decides to enter the conflict. Thus, he would deprive England of precious colonies and greatly diminish the supremacy which England was about to enjoy in the world.

On 13 November 1775, Richard Montgomery took possession of Montreal, he wanted to take Canada by taking possession of Quebec, but lost, and during the battle, he died and his army was on the run. Carleton shared the same ideas with Howe. He did not pursue the American forces and, moreover, he released the American prisoners in captivity. On the 22 August 1776, at the Battle of Brooklyn, Howe's army suffered 65 dead and 255 wounded, but inflicted the loss of 2000 men at his opponents. Instead of chasing the colonists defeated, he allowed them to escape. When Fort Washington was captured and that the Hessian mercenaries passed prisoners through bayonets, Howe began raging. Washington fell back on Manhattan and Howe occupied. Washington built a retreat across New Jersey, Delaware and took refuge in Pennsylvania, his army dropped from 13 000 to 3,000 men. Howe gave Washington time to heal his wounds. Howe was not seeking Washington; it is the reverse that was happening. December 26, 1776, Washington made his famous crossing of the Delaware and attacked a detachment of German mercenaries in Trenton by surprise. Then, avoiding the main body of British troops led by Cornwallis, he won a second victory on 3 January 1777, a second victory for Princeton. Howe did not reply, although his army was greatly superior in number and resources. He abandoned New Jersey and led his troops into Pennsylvania. On 11 September, he repelled the attack on Washington at Brandywine, October 4th at Germantown, Washington inflicting heavy losses. In each case, Howe did not attack first, nor pursued the defeated Washington. Howe courteously left Washington time to heal its wounds and rebuild its army and establish his winter quarters in peace.

Under orders from Carleton, there was a man named Burgoyne, he had a deep hatred against the settlers and he never became a Freemason. He was a friend of Lord George Germain, Senior courtier of the king. The latter returned to England and proposed a military plan to the king. The plan was bold and could be very effective. The plan was to have two armies, one from northern Canada and one from the south, walking toward a junction point, cutting colonies in two separate parts, after which distinct regions could be conquered individually. The king approved the plan. In March 1777, Carleton resigned and Burgoyne replaced him. Carleton hastened to find support, food and supplies for Burgoyne so that he should quickly leave Quebec with his army. Burgoyne was fast running, but his loss was more certain. The success of the plan depended crucially on the



cooperation of Howe, who at the time was engaged in operations around Manhattan. Lord Germain was a careless man, for any error, the order intended to General Howe was not copied correctly. Howe never turned up for the appointment. It is clear that Howe, Amerst and Carleton were in bad faith in this story. This gave the revolutionary forces victory in Saratoga in October 17, 1777 and Burgoyne and his army was defeated. This victory would decide France to take part in the conflict with an ensuing loss of thirteen colonies.

The defeat of Saratoga was not decisive in terms of power. Howe, still had the same number of soldiers, he could have made a blitzkrieg before the French forces organized themselves in the colonies. Instead, he resigned and his brother the admiral did the same, leaving the army and the Navy reeling. Clinton replaced Howe. Washington's army was in poor condition and endured two new winters as harsh as Valley Forge and suffered after each of them, with mutinies which paralyzed it. But, Clinton and Cornwallis did not attempt to exploit the situation. In December 1778, British forces captured Savannah. In May 1780, Clinton captured Charlestown inflicting a cruel defeat on the settlers. In August 16 1780, Cornwallis battled the forces of Horatio Gates.

August 7, 1781 Cornwallis established his base at York Town and remained blocked there. On 30 August, a French fleet temporarily took control of the area around the town and landed troops in under the command of Lafayette and Baron von Steuden. Three weeks later, the Army of Washington arrived. Cornwallis with 6,000 men found himself besieged by 7000 settlers and 9000 French soldiers. While the soldiers of Cornwallis surrendered, their commander went, in a good mood and ordered the regimental band play "the world upside down." The 27 February, Parliament opposed any further action against the settlers. England could still easily win this war by sending the army of Clinton to Canada. In April 1782, the East Indies, Admiral Rodney surrounded the French fleet and completely destroyed it. It was now a question of sending new armies, either in Canada or the United States to reclaim the Thirteen Colonies. Yet, February 4, 1783, the new British government proclaimed the end of hostilities. This war was essentially Masonic in the guise of the "Invisible College". In fact here is an example: Among the prisoners of war captured by Howe, was a mason named Joseph Burnham. Managing to escape, he found night refuge in an open ceiling of a military lodge. Burnham landed right in front of the lodge of British officers. There was an exchange of signs. They generously assisted Brother Burnham who

was then transported in secret and in haste to the coast of New Jersey. Freemasonry has a strong influence on the U.S. government from its formation right up to its development. The United States owes its birth and existence to Freemasonry. There is no doubt that Freemasonry made its contribution to the structures and functioning of American government. These schematic structures and in their geometric designs are reminiscent of ingenious mechanical models produced by the "Invisible College" and the Royal Society, a century earlier. They reflect the political implementation of the "experimental method" that they wanted. Federalism established by the civilian government created by the Constitution of 1787 is identical to the Grand Masonic Lodge system of Government, created in the Anderson Constitutions of 1723. Freemasonry actually offered a smooth running model of federal system. It was at least a prototype applicable to the government. The Constitution of the United States is a purely a Masonic document. Five men were at the origin of the constitution: Washington Franklin, Randolph, Jefferson, Adams, the first three were Masons. Adams was on the same wave length and Thomas Jefferson acquiesced.

February 4, 1789, Washington was elected first president of the United States and John Adams, Vice President, Richard Montgomery Freemason swore in the first President of the United States. On April 17, 1789 Benjamin Franklin died. On 14 December 1789, Alexander Hamilton submitted proposals for the establishment of a national bank. Jefferson opposed but Washington signed them. The "Great Seal" of the United States was printed on the American dollar. It is undoubtedly Masonic. An all-seeing eye in a triangle surmounting a pyramid with four sides and thirteen degrees above followed by thirty-three degrees lower in where a banner proclaims the advent of a "new secular order". A lifelong dream date for Freemasonry, on 18 September 1793, the foundation stone of the Capitol was officially laid. The Grand Lodge of Maryland presided over the ceremony and Washington was asked to play the role of Master. Then came an orchestra, followed by Washington, escorted by all officers and members of the lodges, wearing full Masonic decorations. Arriving at the excavation where the stone was raised marking the southeast corner, Washington was given a silver plate commemorating the event and the name of these lodges, He disposed of the containers having corn, wine and oil, symbolic emblems of Masonic traditional rite. Then Washington and his entourage took their places at the eastern cornerstone, where the president, from a three degree platform typically Masonic, delivered a speech. New Masonic songs followed, and a final burst of artillery. The Mallet, the silver trowel,

square and level used by Washington for the ceremony are now in possession of Potomac Lodge # 5 District of Columbia. The deck and belt he wore are preserved in his own lodge, Lodge # 22 in Alexandria. Capitol and the White House become the focal points of geometry, originally designed by Architect Pierre L'Enfant, which was later modified by Washington and Jefferson to produce octagonal patterns incorporating the particular cross that the Masonic Templars had as its emblem. In December 1799, Washington gave up the ghost; he was buried in his Mount Vernon area, with all Masonic honors by Lodge # 22 of Alexandria, whose members held the pallbearer.

The question everyone is asking: Was George Washington a member of the ILLUMINATI? The answer is provided by Thomas Jefferson:

"As Weishaupt lived under the tyranny of a despot and Priests, he knew that caution was necessary even in spreading information, and the principles of pure morality. This has given an air of mystery to his views, was the foundation of his banishment ... If Weishaupt had written here, where, no secrecy is necessary in our endeavors to render men wise and virtuous, he would not have thought of "any secret that machinery for that purpose ".

#### **b) The French Revolution<sup>73</sup>**

The revolution was exclusively a Masonic work. Of course, the principles underlying this revolution are almost the same like those which led to the American war of independence, that is to say, democracy, human rights and voting rights of the people. Even though this claim of "equality of the people" or "people's government by the people" existed in the writings of the popular thinker Rousseau, the various Masonic lodges of the time were not unanimous about it. Naturally, to achieve this revolution it needed an appropriate climate for such a change. Among these factors were: the bad entourage of Louis XVI, his advisers who failed to make the needed changes at the right time. Although Louis XVI was a brave man who loved his people, he did not have the charisma of a monarch and people took advantage of his weakness, an idle and lazy

---

<sup>73</sup> Freemasonry and Revolution by F. G. Hourtoulle, CARRERE Publishing, copyright 1989, 9 bis, rue Montenotte, 75017 Paris, ISBN 2 86804 640 1, P1-503 Full text in these pages.

nobility enjoying many privileges acquired for centuries through bloodshed, a high unnecessary clergy with huge privileges wallowing in luxury at the expense of the taxes of the middle class and the people; a lower clergy stuck on the people and outraged by the conduct of senior clergy; the middle class furious to pay almost all taxes even heavier because of the many privileges granted to the nobility and high clergy and more demanding and considerable. They were about one third crushed by the nobility and the clergy, a people not listened to, uneducated, inconsiderate claiming their rights to the amazement of the Freemasons fathers of the Revolution. But in this climate of turmoil and uncertainty, the strategy of Freemasonry was very smart. Here are the steps:

- 1) Oppose one third of the lower and top clergy.
- 2) Infiltrate the nobility with new ideas. In this jaded intellectual world of XVIII century, no longer believing in the faith of the Church, the nobility had to gorge on philosophy, mysticism, occultism, seeking the absolute and the dream. This class in search of strong feelings sought a new ideology that they found in the Freemason ideology and at the same time was "Hara Kiri". This comprised one third.
- 3) The middle class this "third", forming a solid Freemason block, wanted to overthrow their impotence through democratic measures on tax, a policy backed by fundraisers of currency devaluation and a debt policy for Necker to have twice of a third. I.e. it monopolizes two-thirds vote and the clergy and nobility the other third.

Obviously, behind this Freemason strategy, there are real reasons for this revolution, namely: the abolition of royalty and nobility, the formation of a Democratic Republic and the formation of a central bank. This was the main purpose of the Bavaria Illuminati who quickly infiltrated the crucial lodges. In this group were the Marquis of La Fayette and "Americans", the Duke of Orleans, Necker, Robespierre and bankers. But the reaction of people was unexpected and save time for the "Great Work" and cost the lives and high-sounding titles of some members of the illuminati. Also, they learned to mute the word "democracy" in the lodges of the nobility and clergy.

At the eve of the 1789 revolution, there were 85 regular and 18 so-called irregular lodges in Grand Orient; about 70 lodges in the Parisian region depending on the Grand lodge of Clermont, 900 lodges in the province, the lodges of the Grand lodge of Clermont were temporal and short-lived as well as the relief content; hundreds of irregular military lodges unrecognized by the Grand Orient, 4 lodges in Avignon and 4 others in Savoy. To remain modest, we can talk of 1250 lodges distributed all over France before the 1789 revolution. While being conservative, by putting 30 persons per lodge, the minimum being 7 persons to form a lodge; we have a total of 40 000 Freemasons over a population of 26 million inhabitants. The lodge members are respectable persons of the society, most of them occupying high posts in the various structures as: royal, municipal, military, legislative and others. It was therefore very easy to plan and control the people during the first days of the revolution. F\* Necker carried out a disastrous finance policy which led to the collapse of the government and starved the people. Necker was directly linked to the bankers<sup>74</sup> to the detriment of the royal regime and the clergy. Dismissed from his post by the King on August 24 1788, he was claimed with much fanfare by the freemasonry, the manipulated population was part of nobility and the clergy. This is a clever support plan by fundraisers as we shall see later in this chapter. Necker reinstated, he continued his borrowing policy to avoid the collapse of the State and personally advanced 2 million to the State Treasury but these were only palliative measures and he still had to define method of electing this General Assembly whose announcement sparked off considerable political activities with a great wind of hope. Of course, it goes without saying that in a good system, they had to continue with the finance method which is known and approved. But in time of crisis where money is devalued, a third of the middle class could not fight this deflation of the monetary system alone. This required the restructuring of the General Assembly for a more equitable tax distribution which will enable the provision of money in the coffers and pay creditors. Faced with the nobility revolt, Louis XVI and Marie-Antoinette were bound to agree with Necker's opinion and the doubling of the third was decided. The lodges were going to have many masons. Thus a community of about 40 000 F\* over a population of 26 million will have to elect between 319 and 332 F\* on 1336 members of the constituent National Assembly, distributed as follows:

---

<sup>74</sup>Bankers reduced banknotes, maintained currency devaluation, and through this policy they increased public debts and finally starved the population rendering it regicidal.

- 1) Clergy: Out of 340 seats, 29 are freemasons plus 1 probably.
- 2) Nobility: Out of 318 seats, 109 are freemasons plus 9 probably.
- 3) Middle class: Out of 678 seats, 181 are masons, plus 3 probably. This group remained homogeneous since they had a common interest.

This contingent of about 320 F\* united in the Constituent National Assembly rapidly and unanimously established a lodge under the name “Breton Club”. They won more people for their cause not only among the middle class, but also within the nobility and clergy. To them were added some new news converts who supported the cause of the work, on 23 June 1789, they requested one vote per head at the Constituent National Assembly. On 27 June 1789, Louis XVI consented to one vote per head at the Constituent National Assembly. But they won because the King wanted to lose. People started thinking that the King allowed himself to be beaten. The real question is thus: Did he have any choice? Necker’s finance policy was disastrous. May be he hoped that by granting concessions, he would obtain the restoration of the constitutional monarchy by winning the support of the people to the greatest surprise of freemasonry. During the night of 13 and 14 July, the faction of the Duke of Orleans was helped by bankers and exchange agents who decided to close down the Stock Exchange. They distributed money and guns to the people. Amongst the bankers accused of funding the uprising are the Laborde Brothers of Merryville and Boscary. The crowd seized guns from ex-servicemen and captured Bastille. Contrary to what was desired, the crowd did not attack the King; then the people demanded their rights. Freemasonry quickly occupied high ranking positions within the militia in order to have to control over the people. A division of opinion ensued within the ranks of the freemasons. The Duke of Orleans was dreaming of a constitutional monarchy in which he will be King. La Fayette took the command of the army and was aspiring for a future as glorious as that of George Washington. Time proved him wrong, the people being in support of a constitutional monarchy with the people’s right to franchise. All the nobility, clergy members and the middle class people who wanted to reestablish a regime according to their whims and caprices without considering the interest of the people were surprised to find an uncontrollable popular uprising very irritated against the injustices which they were subjected to. Probably, the illuminati were in support of La Fayette. However, the rioters in the midst of the people were lined up under the control of the Duke of Orleans and his friends Robespierre, Mirabeau, Desmoulins and Danton, all members of the illuminati. Consequently, it did not matter how it shall be done, the Monarchy

must disappear; the bankers swore on their banknotes. The National Assembly complained about its uncomfortable position, but the Duke of Orleans and his factions continued their sycophant maneuvers to put in place group of “leaders” provoking riots amidst the people and starving them. They used the patience of the people, patience which was easy-going for they lost many freemasons including La Fayette who had to escape, time having disproved him, was arrested in Austria and locked up in the Olmutz prison cell till 1792. Finally, events brought about the 10<sup>th</sup> of August 1792 which marked the end of the Constitutional Monarchy and the beginning of democratic. Of course France and the people went through a kind of cleansing which saw the death of many by guillotine including the Duke of Orleans in 1793.

## 6) The Banking system

This hidden world in the eyes of ordinary people harbors beautiful and deep secrets. Only those initiated are understood there. Let’s attempt to discover some insights.

### The International bankers

From the 18<sup>th</sup> century, the international bankers understood the essence of unity: that is how they constituted the “*International Syndicate*”<sup>75</sup> known in England under the name “*Merchants Bankers*” and the US under the name “*Investment Bankers*”. It was made up of the following bankers: Baring, Boyd, Hope, Labouchère, Parish, Bethmann, and Rothschild without having the wealth that was going to give them Waterloo coup<sup>76</sup>; afterwards John Pierpont Morgan of New York joined them. The motherhouse of the Syndicate was found in Frankfurt. It distinguished itself from the other bankers in the following points:

- 1) Cosmopolitan and international
- 2) Contacts with governments; they were interested in government borrowings.
- 3) Was manipulating only money, rarely dealt in goods.

---

<sup>75</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, Pages 12-13. Full text.

<sup>76</sup> With the news of Waterloo, Nathan Rothschild, first informed by telegraph, made a lot of noise at the London Stock Exchange about the victory of Napoleon, he swept all the titles and values which dropped sharply, the next day he sold at high rate when the truth had been restored. He made considerable profit to the point of being placed among the first international bankers.

4) Practiced secret policies and was attached to occult influence of finance on international political life.

In mid XIX century, “The League of Righteous Men”, involved Karl Marx<sup>77</sup> to continue the works of Adam Weishaupt as explained above. Among other things, in the fifth proposal, they said:

“<sup>78</sup>Centralize loans in the hands of the state, by means of a National bank, whose capital will be owned by the state and shall enjoy an exclusive monopoly”

High International Finance was going to pick up this conception again for the capitalist world.

“<sup>79</sup>The Central bank according to the system is an official institute, but under private capital and management, with exclusive privileges which enables to obtain absolute control of the country’s finance and economy”

Effectively, in creating a network of central banks, linked to an executive officer, the international bankers would automatically become the masters of the world. Through some type of maneuvers, they will impose the basic idea on all countries and this shall be justified by the prevailing economic situation. And right from the beginning through Synarchic officials or officials of private banks. The central bank shall look for means to take control over its government.<sup>80</sup>

1) By provoking state indebtedness

---

<sup>77</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 266. Karl Marx: The Red Prussian by Leopold Schwartzschild, Grosset & Dunlap, New York, 1947, quoted by Alan Stang. French socialism against Marxism by Robert Aron, Grasset, 1971, quoted Current Values, 16 August 1971, P 33. Marx and Engels wrote the Manifesto cared very little of the proletarian masses. In fact Friedrich Engels was born in Barmen (East Prussia) in 1820. His father was the wealthy owner of a weaving factory, with branch in Manchester, England. He saw fit to take refuge in Manchester, where he lived comfortably from the proceeds of his manufacture; benefits derived from the "convicts of hunger" for his weaving. Engels widely assured the subsistence of Karl Marx. For if in public and in their writings, Marx and Engels were strong advocates of proletariat, to whom they lent all the qualities, he was quite differently in private. During his conversations, Engels spoke of the proletariat with profound contempt, calling them "those types", "these donkeys," these stupid workers who swallow anything. «They blamed their lack of intelligence, sickening "Apathy and petty jealousy." For his part, in 1866, Marx considered the Parisian workers' as "luxury workers, who are, unwittingly, to belong very much to the old junk. Ignorant, conceited, pretentious, talkative, inflated with emphasis."

<sup>78</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 19. Full text

<sup>79</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 19. Full text

<sup>80</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 19-20. Full text



- 2) By borrowing from the treasury following the daily strategy.
- 3) Through concerted actions of the central banks on foreign exchange and consequently on the economic activity of the country with its social consequences.
- 4) Through manipulation by politicians “cooperatives” eventually compensated through heavy profits made from the business world.
- 5) By a financial backing in their political career.

Then, between the two wars of 1930 in Basel, the *Bank for international settlements* was created with the objective to recover monetary reserve surplus of central banks in the whole world and to relocate them elsewhere in the world. Nevertheless, we shall come back to topic in the course of this chapter.

Nowadays, the Central Banks are connected to an executive bank. The Central Banks of various countries are under the control of International Bankers. But, it took a lot of bloodshed, people paid with their lives just to prevent such things.

#### b) **The Federal Reserve Bank**<sup>81</sup>

In 1860, the election of Abraham Lincoln as president triggered the war of succession (1861-1865) between the Southerners (pro-slavery) and the Northerners “federal” but, the real Masonic reason was to unite the country, for they feared the possible separation of the Southern States and at the same time they wanted to ensure the supremacy of the North over the South to prevent the states from crumbling. For it was henceforth known that the United States of America would be the country to lead the world restructuring plan. From the beginning of the campaign to ensure funding, the treasury disbursed 450 million dollars of bank notes “greenbacks”, without coverage and without bank support. The war went on (1861-1865), in 1863, the *National Bank Act* was passed authorizing the issuance of bank notes against the purchase of treasury bonds bearing interest by any National bank. So the “*Investment Banker*” lost the monopoly of public debts. Here are the bankers who funded this war: Morgan, Kuhn Loeb, Seligman, Speyer, and

---

<sup>81</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 27-35 and 100 – 114  
Full text in these pages.

Rockefeller. Some International Bankers even funded both sides<sup>82</sup> i.e. Southerners and Northerners. For a banker, there is nothing as profitable as financing a war:

- 1) Countries are indebted
- 2) They are able to control the government
- 3) Once everything is destroyed, they make fortunes in lending money for reconstruction.
- 4) It increases the need for a world government.

Upon the surrender of General Lee, the government adopted a deflationary policy which gave budget surpluses, so they could quickly withdraw Treasury bonds from the market. The rapid expansion of the U.S. economy, using a broad appeal to private capital, ran the risk of losing control in the hands of Wall Street. All this enormously displeased the high international finance. Mr. Jacques Bordiot in his book *A Hidden Hand Leads* theorizes that Abraham Lincoln could have been murdered indirectly by them. Booth might have acted as hired killer for them. In fact, during the investigation, an important detail was not clarified. Booth made a trip in late 1863, early 1864 to Paris. He came as a Southerner representative, but John Slidell had already occupied the position with high finance. Still, says Bordiot, "Would the death of a hardened enemy and Southerners and Central Banks not leave the hope that a successor would prove more receptive to any negotiations?"

After Lincoln's death, they judged that the time was ripe to take charge with the creation of a Central Bank, but they met resistance from the Banks of the West, which pitched their clients against "Investment Banker". Then they charged J. P. Morgan to clamp down on the resistance by artificially provoking panic at Wall Street, which he succeeded in making eloquently. Thus, an investigation into the creation of a Central Bank in Banking Law Journal in December 1909, "showed that 55% of bankers surveyed supported the establishment of a Central Bank, provided that it should be free from Wall Street and monopolistic interest." Senator Aldrich, Morgan's right hand man, was charged with the presentation of the proposal to Congress. But he made the mistake of claiming from Congress the "Federal Reserve System". At that time the President of

---

<sup>82</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 103. Full text

"Both camps were funded by the Rothschilds: the Northerners by their agent August Belmont, the Southerners by their parents, the Erlanger"

the United States, William Howard Taft, had openly expressed his opposition to the Aldrich Bill. The project was rejected in Congress in 1911.

Their plans were halted, until the presidential elections of 1912. The incumbent President William Taft was sure to win the next election. Against him, was the Democrat candidate Thomas Woodrow Wilson who had no chance. Wilson belonged to Morgan since 1907. With the financial support of J. P. Morgan and the alumni of Princeton backed by freemasonry, (F\*=Freemason) Thomas Woodrow Wilson was elected governor of New-Jersey in 1910.

For the presidential election of 1912, the tactic was to divide the votes of Republicans. They presented the F \*<sup>83</sup> Theodore Roosevelt, who had yielded his place to Taft, but he contested under the Progressive Party ticket, an invention of JP Morgan. To financially support the operation of the Progressive Party; were Rockefeller, Schiff, Baruch, Morgan, Morgenthau, and Rothschild. On March 4 1913, F\* Thomas Woodrow Wilson, became the twenty-eighth President of the United States. Needless to say he owed a lot of services to "The Establishment"; Also, Wilson was vulnerable in his private life "Peck's Bad Boy"<sup>84</sup>. It is said that a Saturday morning in the summer 1912, his friend Bernard Baruch entered the Democratic Party headquarters in New York, towing Wilson "like a poodle at the end of his leash. Before his election Wilson had been under the surveillance of F\* Colonel Edward Mandell House, affiliated to the secret society of Illuminist *Master of Wisdom*, the same one that founded the *Council on Foreign Relations*.

The number of Illuminists in Wilson's cabinet was fast increasing. During his tenure of office (1913 - 1921), the high finance prepared itself from 1913 to make war against the Hohenzollern Empire by the assassination of Archduke Ferdinand announced by the Party and Clam F \*

---

<sup>83</sup>For the reader, as from now, F\* signifies Freemason

<sup>84</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 32 Full text. Ref. Curtis B. Dall pp109, 136, 139.140. Following financial difficulties the son of Mrs. Peck needed 30 000 dollars. He would have engaged the services of a lawyer from New York, Samuel Untermyer in which during an interview at the White House President Wilson asked him the sum of 250,000 dollars. After some haggling, Wilson had to pay 100,000 dollars and he nominated Louis Brandeis to the Supreme Court.

Colonel House<sup>85</sup>. A war that only those initiated knew, because the public did not even suspect it. They created the League of Nations. While, in December 22, 1913, the Federal Reserve Act, presented to Congress by President Wilson with the drafting approved by the international banker Paul Warburg was adopted by 298 votes against 60 in the House of Representatives, and by 43 votes against 25 in the Senate.

The Federal Reserve Act stipulates that the organization is headed by a Federal Reserve Board of Governors, composed of seven members appointed by the President of the United States for a period of fourteen years, renewable for one member every two years. So the Council is completely independent of the president and monetary policies of the government. Suppose that a president is elected for two terms which is the maximum that he can expect, He will change the fourth man at the end of his mandate. He will eventually not be able to dictate his monetary policy, since he will not be the president in office. In fact, he will not even think of that, unless prompted by the High finance, because that will pay his second term election? The seven members are bankers and thugs of "The Establishment" whose career depends on their devotion to the Illuminati. The Central Bank of Canada and several other countries have a similar structure.

### c) **The Bank of England**<sup>86</sup>

Already in 1852 the Finance Minister Gladstone said "the government itself had no real power in finance, but should let the sovereign and unchallenged Money Power"

In 1946 the Labor government nationalized the Bank of England, but it did not change a lot in the interference of High Finance. *The Court* is composed of two Governors, including a deputy, with five-year term, assisted by sixteen members from private banks, with four-year term, renewable quarterly. Through their influence, seventeen (17) international private banks decide. Among these: Merchants Banker: Rothschild Lazard, Baring, Schroeder, Hambro, Morgan and Grenfell.

---

<sup>85</sup> *Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, D 40. Text. What is disturbing are the allusions to this tragic end of Archduke Ferdinand by Colonel House Master of Wisdom "four years before the attack which can be read in the book of M. Poncins on Freemasonry.

<sup>86</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 21 full text.

#### d) **The Bank of France**<sup>87</sup>

In 1789, the lawyer Taboureaux de Montigny presented a draft National Fund, which he alone would nominate people able to watch over public funds. This was not in the sense of a Union with competition. But the well staged revolution by Freemasonry would allow the bankers to show their discontent. Also, he speculated the reduction of Bank notes<sup>88</sup>. The system found itself facing bankruptcy, and the Executive decreed forced loan with reassessment of the bank notes. However, Bonaparte in Egypt was approached by Bourbaki on behalf of Bankers Perregaux and The Couteulx, saying that two million were available for a coup. And that was the Constitution of the Consulate. Bonaparte recognizing, hastened to form a union; on January 10, 1800, he deposited the Bank of France project as a private company with the Minister of finance, the Bank would consist of a Central Committee of fifteen members appointed by the General Council formed by the Regents elected by the two hundred largest shareholders.

April 22, 1806, Napoleon changed the statutes, following the unfortunate operation on the Spanish currency, and he confirmed that "the 200 shareholders who will make up the General Assembly will be those registered, for the past six months, the strongest shareholders ". This was a declaration of High Finance control over the Central Bank of France. In 1936, the Popular Front reformed the statutes of the Bank of France; the Popular Front could elect two (2) members and the other twenty-one (21) members being appointed by the state. If you want a better management of a bank, it takes only career bankers that you find in the Union.

Then, on 2 December 1945, the Bank was nationalized; the state became the sole owner without changing the statutes. So far, the governors appointed to administer it, are all bankers who did their apprenticeship training in the private sector. Despite the nationalization, High Finance controls the General Council of the Bank of France.

---

<sup>87</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, page 21-25 full text.

<sup>88</sup> Larousse 1963, assignat = Paper money issued in France in 1789, pledged on the sale of national goods and soon to depreciate completely.

It should be noted that replacing the monarchy with a democracy, created a deep change in Catholicism. France under the reign of kings was colonizing. Through this, the Catholic Church exported religion in the new colonies. But in becoming a democracy, the policy of High Finance will be quite different, not attached to the Church. Today, Canada and the United States send missionaries to this country.

#### e) **The Russian Revolution**<sup>89</sup>

Although the Russian Revolution and the Iron Curtain were arrested in Masonic circles, since 1817, the manuscript in this regard describes the Slavs in detail from the “United Slavonian Lodge<sup>90</sup>”:

« Par une alliance fédérative et un gouvernement républicain mais sans porter préjudice à leur indépendance respective, unir les huit pays slaves dont les noms étaient inscrits sur un sceau à huit compartiments : la Russie, la Pologne, la Bohême, la Moravie, la Dalmatie, la Hongrie avec la Transylvanie, la Serbie avec la Moldavie et la Valachie »

"Through a Federal alliance and a republican government but without prejudice to their respective independence, to unite the eight Slavic countries whose names appeared on a seal in eight compartments: Russia, Poland, Bohemia, Moravia, Dalmatia, Hungary with Transylvania, Serbia with Moldova and Wallachia"

To put this in context, we will give the countries today.

ROMANIA composed of Transylvania, Wallachia, Moldavia, and Dalmatia.

CZECHOSLOVAKIA composed of Moravia and Bohemia

YUGOSLAVIA composed of Serbia

---

<sup>89</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, Pages 24 and 115-124 Full text in these pages.

<sup>90</sup> *Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Publishing, Saint-Cénére, ccp, Rennes 2074-79 P 129. Full text.

It should be noted that these countries formed the Iron Curtain. In the text the word “Republican” can be read referring to an American political party. This confirms that "The Establishment" or the funding head is primarily located in the United States. And that largely explains the War of Succession. To come back to the Russian Revolution, it is known to have been premeditated by the Illuminists Masonic Lodges. But why? It was above all a spiritual war. When we discuss Chapter 5, we will look at the causes in greater details. But it suffices it to say that the Catholic Church in the middle Ages was very powerful, it was probing, several Jews and heretics died. One category of people said “that's Christianity, a strong and wicked central church that kills”. Then, in secret a new ideology has gained ground. People who believe in it took a religion of mystery; wealthy Jews and true heretics found themselves in Kabbalah. And these same people worked to reduce the strength of Catholicism, and believe in their hearts that Christians are the wicked beings on earth. Personally, I cannot understand how a born again Christian can break the commandment "You shall not kill (Deut. 5: 17)”. Also, for them, all densely Jewish-Catholic Christian empires must be destroyed or assimilated. A change conveyed by an ideological liberal or totalitarian government in which the Catholic religion will not have influence.

- 1) France
- 2) Russia
- 3) The Empire Austria-Germany-Italy
- 4) The Vietnam
- 5) Spain
- 6) The former colonies now independent

The Tsarist Russia persecuted the Jews, and B'nai B'rith did not like pogroms' policy. This anti-Semitism due to Catholicism which probably considered the Jews as destroyers of their religion and their traditions and Jewish customs made life very difficult for their co-religionists. So Jacob Schiff undertook an extensive campaign against the Tsar.

But another more important reason was going to change the course of history in 1917. In Indeed, Britain, France, other European countries were quick to own their own central banks, but the Czar

refused to create a central bank under foreign control. This attitude explains why so many international bankers financed the revolution of October 1917.

The idea of Adam Weishaupt and the manuscript written by Karl Marx for the Society of Righteous Men gained grounds since 1848. Between 1817 and 1825 one hundred and forty five Masonic<sup>91</sup> lodges at least for the most Martinists sheltered, in Russia, dreams and socialist conspiracies of intellectuals and many officers. The Illuminati abound in St. Petersburg and Moscow. Undeniable proof that the Illuminati is behind the October 1917 revolution, so was the Alexander Column on St. Petersburg Winter Palace (Leningrad). It is decorated with the insignia of the illuminati, the "all-seeing triangle." This same sign is found on the American currency with the Great American Memorial of St. Lawrence accompanied by the motto "Annuity Coeptis Novus Ordo saeculorum. I.e. the new order of Centuries promised to those who undertook it.

Jacob Schiff<sup>92</sup> was a personal friend of Miliukov, a freemason and certainly Martinism, author of the revolution of March 1917 that drove the Tsar. During the revolution, Lenin, Sumenson and Koslovsky were traveling on a train in Germany or Switzerland, while Trotsky was in Canada at Halifax.

Obviously, we all know that for a revolution to succeed, it requires financial support and underground organization operated by Freemasonry. Otherwise, after a few days the system collapses. And that's what he did, because Miliukov sent a telegram to diplomatic allies, asking for help. These would have forced Miliukov to put back Nicolas II on throne. Quickly, Lenin, Trotsky and others returned to Russia, with much cash and some conditions<sup>93</sup> to organize the October Revolution of 1917 and support the new dictatorship.

---

<sup>91</sup> *Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Publishing, Saint-Céneré, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 129. Text.

<sup>92</sup> *Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Publishing, Saint-Céneré, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 135. Text.

<sup>93</sup> *Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Publishing Saint-Michel, Saint-Céneré, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 149-150. Text.

February 12, 1919, U.S. Congress (the Senate Inquiry on Bolshevism) R. George A. Simon, Methodist, was invited to testify and gave evidence on the number of Jews participating in the Soviet government most of which came from East Side of New York Wickham Stees, writer and English magazine and member of the British Masonry, in his book "Through Theatrical years ", says not only attempts to recognize the Bolshevik government to Peace Conferences in Paris but also the interview he had with Colonel House, during which he denounced Jacob Schiff and other international financial Warbourg as promoters of the 1917 Revolution to convert Russia into an exploitation ground.



The following International Bankers Certainly participated in support of the Russian Revolution: Schiff, B'nai B'rith, Warburg, Kahn, Loeb Givotovsky, Morgan, Rothschild, Lazard, Rockefeller, Milner, Khun, Warbourg<sup>94</sup>, Hanauer, Guggenheim, and Breitung.

From the outset, Russia could have been crushed economically. The Bolshevik minority but aggressive party, was funded by the Illuminati to overthrow the Provisional Government of Miliukov. Because as mentioned, it was feared before, that he could give back the throne to the monarchy with the help of allies. The party had 18 000 aggressive activists. They became masters of the winter castle in Petrograd (now Leningrad) and fought the Imperial forces cut off from supplies. With the help of the Masonic lodges that conditioned the population, they a small number of Russians foreign to the revolution. Lenin conducted a so-called free election in which he promised peace with the armed forces and police exhausted to be on the front. Thus, he won the votes of the military, police and some Russians, 45% of the people's vote. Unfortunately, he was short of 15% votes in the election compared to the revolutionary socialist party which had 58% of the Russian people's votes. On the strength of his military and police, and of its electorate mostly in central and strategic positions, Lenin refused to give power to the "Soviet" or social-revolutionary party. The result: 6% of the population built a totalitarian regime of which 94% of the population was captive. Contrary to what is claimed on several occasions, the USSR could collapse, as<sup>95</sup>:

1918- War Trade Board is a resolution to carry out more trade

---

Let's finally recall the Encyclical "Divini Redemptoris":

*"We know in fact that many of them (the people of the Soviet Republic are suffering under the yoke of wicked men who largely are foreign (alien) to the true interest of this nation and others have been misled by false promises. We condemn the system (rerum rationes), its authors and accomplices who view this nation as the best land on which they have sown the seeds of a long-standing doctrine developed from there to spread through the whole earth»*

<sup>94</sup> *Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Publishing, Saint-Cénére, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 134. Text.

<sup>95</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, Pages 277. Full text.

1922- Economic breakdown: U.S.S.R. received a great financial, economic and food aid from Kuhn, Loeb and Rockefeller.

1928 – 1933 – Five year plan with long American credit and bankers like Kuhn, Loeb.

1932 – The United States and some European countries assisted Russia in opposition to the National Socialism.

1941- The United States granted the Soviet Union lend-lease advantage during the Second World War.

1958 – Soviet growth rate witnessed a heavy drop; sales of Westerners' production materials increased. "Henry Morgenthau Jr., Finance Minister, in collaboration with Harry Dexter White, Deputy Secretary of State and Harold Glasser, serving at the treasury department furnished the Russian government with money printing press (banknotes in dollars), as well as several cargo lots of special ink and four aircraft cargo lots of special paper for the printing of our currency in West Germany, in order to pay two years salary to German soldiers. It is certified that cash inflow to the United States were estimated at about 19 000 000 000\$<sup>96</sup>," How many are there in Eurodollar?

1969- Catastrophic drop in food production, particularly in wheat; President Nixon promulgated the Export Administration Act and granted the supply of a very significant quantity of cereals at a rate lower than market price.

But, why maintain a totalitarian communist regime in power? In reality, there are three excellent reasons:

- 1) To destroy Christianity in the morals and customs of Russians. The Communist regime especially during the reign of Lenin and Stalin was very dissuasive, persecuting and dangerous vis à vis Christians. So, by imposing a totalitarian and repressive regime, it was an attempt to destroy this strong Orthodox (74.6%) and Catholic (7.6%) presence.
- 2) By isolating the communist regime they were giving it a chance to secretly emancipate. This is how they were able to create two atomic and nuclear super powers and inculcated into the public the need to conserve the League of Nations which later became the United Nations Organization. Naturally, this unification of countries is a first step towards a totalitarian socialist world government.

---

<sup>96</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, Pages 243. Full text. Quoted by Curtis B. Dall - F.D.R. *My Exploiter Father-in-Law*, p 81, according to a reprint of Economic Liberty, Oakland, California. Curtis B. Dall which recounts the fact, points out that this incredible deal "Hopkins-Morgenthau-White" was made with at least tacit agreement of the highest figures in the White House. We Note that MM. Henry Morgenthau Jr. and Harry Dexter White were in the CFR (Council on Foreign Relationship). Harry Dexter White was convicted in 1952 by a Senate Committee, having been a secret Soviet agent.

- 3) By separating USSR from the rest of the world, a superpower was shifted to the background thereby mainly serving the interest of the Illuminati. The USSR became a vast territory to explore without compensating workers to the advantage of fundraisers whose first government was composed of many Jews who came from East Side New-York and from “Invisible College”. The centralization of GNP in the hands a pro-Illuminati regime paved the way for the promotion of war industry and the two super powers, leaving us to watch the need for a unique interplanetary world government. Just as the Council on Foreign Relations where they had their school for synarchic officials. These technocrats quickly started disputing power between the party and the government in the interest of TRANSNATIONALS. After the disintegration of USSR in 1985, the Republics becoming independent one after the other, TRANSNATIONALS quickly created 15 Central Banks linked to one federation.

After the Second World War, on the 11 of February 1945, three members of the Illuminati all 33 degrees met in Yalta. They were Roosevelt, Churchill, and Lenin. The iron curtain had just been exposed to the world. As a strange coincidence, it was the exact demarcation of the *Slovakian Illuminist lodge*, a well known plan since 1917.

« Par une alliance fédérative et un gouvernement républicain mais sans porter préjudice à leur indépendance respective, unir les huit pays slaves dont les noms étaient inscrits sur un sceau à huit compartiments : la Russie, la Pologne, la Bohême, la Moravie, la Dalmatie, la Hongrie avec la Transylvanie, la Serbie avec la Moldavie et la Valachie »

“Through a federal alliance and a republican government but without prejudice to their respective independence, unite the eight Slav countries whose names were inscribed on an eight-compartment seal: Russia, Poland, Bohemia, Moravia, Dalmatia, Hungary, with Transylvania, Serbia with Moldavia and Walachia”

Indisputably, the hidden goal of this conspiracy was the same that pushed Russia at least thirty years earlier into isolation. Nowadays, in 1997, even with the collapse of communism and the Iron Curtain, it remains clear that the Illuminati achieved their invisible objectives, a people without Christian faith, subjected to technocrats. Nations no longer question the United Nations Organization, contrarily, it is indispensable. Internationalism will soon appear, when time comes, it is completely useless to back the Iron Curtain. On the contrary, bankers see that as

huge sums of money poorly invested. So, for them, allowing these countries to manage in a wild capitalism will be the best social training towards a homogeneous world. In their time, the illuminist Masonic lodges although well infiltrated into all sectors of social and governmental activities of these countries shall wake up to form a solid body in a World Government. For we should not forget that if the prophecy against Gog and the countries of Magog turns out to be referring to the Antichrist, then the Antichrist will come from USSR so, its collapse constitutes a major Trojan horse which shall be re-established by the Masonic lodges and the powers of fundraisers on due time.

#### **F) Bank for international Settlements (BIS)** <sup>97</sup>

The Bank for International Settlements is located in Centralbahnplatz 2, Basel, Switzerland. Created in 1930, this Bank is the Umbrella Bank for Central Banks of 120 countries in the world. Eleven (11) countries have a seat on its Board of Directors, namely Belgium, Canada, France, Germany, Italy, Japan, Holland, Sweden, Switzerland, the United Kingdom and the United States. Sometimes, these are members from Central Banks. International Bankers control this Bank, and it goes without saying that this institution is the major strength of the ILLUMINATI. Understanding its power requires a prior knowledge of economic rules. Let's consider the Canadian banking system, one of the best in the world. Its system is relatively simple. Savers do business with chartered Banks like: Royal Bank, Canadian Imperial Bank of Commerce, Laurentian Bank, Bank of Montreal, National Bank, Bank of Nova Scotia, Toronto-Dominion Bank and others. These banks have branches all over Canada and some in the United States. Savers put their money there. Depending on instructions from the Central Bank of Canada, chartered Banks are obliged to keep a stock and send the rest of savings to the Central Bank. Let's assume that I make a deposit of \$ 100 at the Laurentian Bank and the Central Bank guidelines are 10%. The Laurentian Bank will keep \$ 10 and send \$ 90 to the Central Bank of Canada. The principle is the low probability that all the savers would at the same time in the same day withdraw their savings at once.

---

<sup>97</sup>Document on the Bank for International Settlements (BIS) July 1997, <http://www.bis.org/about/fatsh97.htm>.

At the Central Bank of Canada, the remaining \$ 90 is kept depending on cash flow needs. Thus, depending on its policy, the Central Bank of Canada may choose to keep \$ 20 in its cash reserve and give \$ 70 to the Bank for International Settlements. The example I used is the case of a single saver; imagine what it would be for the whole country.

Firstly, the Bank for International Settlements is the exclusive custodian of Central Banks. Secondly, Central Banks confide important shares of their reserve to it (BIS). In this way, the Bank for International Settlements makes billions from currencies speculated in foreign securities. Our governments face a shameless blackmail. Thirdly, it acts as a Trust Officer or a receiver in case of bankruptcy like in Mexico and New Zealand.

Other institutions affiliated to the Bank for International Settlements include: Group of Ten (G-10) Central Banks, Centro de Estudios Monetarios Latinoamericanos (CEMLA), Executive Meeting of East Asian and Pacific Central Banks (EMEAP), Central Banks of South East Asia, New Zealand and Australia (SEANZA), South East Asian Central Banks (SEACEN), South Asian Association for Regional Cooperation (SAARC), Gulf Cooperation Council (GCC), South African Development Community SADC.

The Bank for International Settlements is the main donor of the International Monetary Fund (IMF) or the World Bank of the United Nations. It plays an active role in the European Bank for Reconstruction and Development (ERBD), Institute for Biological Research and Development (IBRD); we have every reason to wonder if such a small privileged group is not benefiting from very advanced medicine. In the Organization for Economic Cooperation and Development, among others, there is a unit called Nuclear Energy Agency (NEA) [a flying saucer?].

Among the one hundred (120) Central Banks which follow the policy of the Bank for International Settlements (BIS) are: Oesterreichische Nationalbank (Austria), Bahrain Monetary Agency (Bahrain), Banco Central do Brazil (Brazil), Bank of Canada (Canada), Banco de la Republica (Colombia), National Bank of Croatia (Croatia), Central Bank of Cyprus (Cyprus),

Banco Central del Ecuador (Equator), Eesti Pank (Estonia), Suomen Pankki (Finland), Banque de France (France), Deutsche Bundesbank (Germany), Hong Kong Monetary Authority (Hong Kong), Reserve Bank of India (India), Bank of Israel (Israel), Bank of Jamaica (Jamaica), Bank of Japan (Japan), Banque du Liban (Lebanon), Bank of Mauritius (Mauritius Island), Banco de Mexico (Mexico), Reserve Bank of New Zealand (New Zealand), Norges Bank (Norway), National Bank of Slovakia, The South African Reserve Bank, Banco de Espagna (Spain), Central Bank of Sri Lanka (Sri Lanka), Sveriges Riksbank (Sweden), Bank of Thailand (Thailand), Türkiye Cumhuriyet Merkez Bankasi (Turkey), Bank of England (United Kingdom), Board of Governors of Federal Reserve System (Washington) Federal Reserve Bank of New York (United States). Other member countries include: Belgium, Italy, Holland, Switzerland, Bulgaria, China, Czechoslovakia, Denmark, Greece, Hungary, Island, Ireland, Korea, Latvia, Lithuania, Poland, Romania, Russia, Saudi Arabia, Singapore and others.

### **G) Great Fundraisers**

In order to understand the realities of our world and their chronological arrangement within the Illuminati, the reader should know now that most International Bankers are Jews. Personally, I have nothing against that and I'm even very happy because they serve a clear purpose for me. That is, bringing to power the False Messiah, according to Kabbalah. Obviously, for us Christians it is the Antichrist. But I'll explain in detail what "Kabbalah" is all about in the fifth Chapter of this book. The fact that the great fundraisers are Jews reassures me, because the Jewish people suffered tremendously in the middle Ages from the hands of a unregenerate Church which failed to bring the fruits of the HOLY SPIRIT of GOD into the world. In Chapter 3, we saw, the atrocities committed by nations against GOD's PEOPLE. Knowing this, it will be easier to understand the converged goals of Freemasonry and High Finance in the political integration of the ILLUMINATI. At least, they had the same objective until the Second World War.

## **7) The Chronological Order of the Illuminati**

First of all, even though we believe that there are possibly more than four (4) International

Illuminists worldwide, all the monetary power of the ILLUMINATI is found in the United States and England, although there are some rich bases in Asia such as Hong Kong and Tokyo. That is why President Ulysses S. Grant could declare in 1872 *"Our great Republic is intended as a guide to all the others ... Our Creator is preparing a world which on due time will become a great nation which shall speak only one language and where armies and navies will no longer be necessary.* Before Congress in 1941, F \* Franklin D. Roosevelt reiterated the Grant program with more authority: *"We must be the Great Arsenal of Democracy: it is a problem as urgent as war itself."* And more recently, in 1992, during the Gulf War, speaking of the military Multiforce supported largely by the powerful American technology, President Carter said, *"This new order ..."* These same words found on the U.S. dollar and which were inscribed by the Freemasons fathers of the 1776 American Revolution.

As for the Masonic lodges of SYNARCHY, since 1817, the term "republican government" was found in the Slavic lodges that prepared the Russian Revolution. Besides, Nihilism<sup>98</sup> is the Russian branch of the Universal Republican Alliance whose headquarters is in New York and its founder, the Italian revolutionary Mazzini<sup>99</sup> was a great friend of Albert Pike. Albert Pike, was born in Boston in 1809, he died in Washington in 1891, was a Luciferian theurgist; he first exercised his activity in the Scottish Rite, to which he belonged as Sovereign Grand Commander of the Supreme Council of Charlestown. As Saint-Yves d'Alveydre wrote in 1890 *"is the United States of Europe this desiratum? For Americans: Yes. For Europeans: No P 111 "*.

This Masonic indecision between The Round Table and Synarchy shows a contrast between the different mother-Lodges. So the great fundraisers distanced themselves from the SYNARCHY, author of the French Revolution.

Also, Fabre d'Olivet, a friend of Saint-Yves d'Alveydre, declared in 1824: *"Despite all denials,*

---

<sup>98</sup> USUAL DICTIONARY, Quillet-Flammarion Publishers, 26 rue Racine, Paris, 1963. Nihilism: Doctrine of a revolutionary sect formed in Russia in the fight against Tsarist absolutism. Its followers, carried out many terrorist attacks, and the Tsar Alexander II died in one of them.

<sup>99</sup> *Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Publishing, Saint-Céneré, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 130 Full text.

*we are bound to realize that the famous financiers who rule the world are merely implementing in their interest of course, theories of secret societies located on either sides of the ocean. Particularly those that have been shaped by the great scholiast of esoteric Synarchy Saint-Yves d'Alveydre P 47". In such a way that Saint-Yves d'Alveydre strove to strengthen the guidelines of Masonic lodges within the Synarchy to the detriment of High Finance. In this way, he said: "Synarchic Plans in their primitive expressions, predate the conspiracy of financiers who run the world and remain flexibly adapted to the times and events despite the underhanded battles, often ferocious, that are fought on the national and international scene by the said financiers appearing like temporal executors of a vicious imperialism that transcends time and depth P 180."*

A major disagreement between the ESTABLISHMENT and Masonic lodges which make up Synarchy had to divert International Bankers, once the process of the Second World War begun.

We have learned how the Illuminati misappropriated the riches of our world. Now, let's see how it disposed of it through historical and ideological facts. In this context, we may guess, the first and second world wars, the League of Nations, the State of Israel, decolonization were planned steps towards the process of a World Government.

#### **a) The 1914-1918 War**

Thomas Woodrow Wilson in 1912 as the twenty-eighth President of the United States negotiated the price of power. Thus, The Round Table controlled by Rothschild and whose interests in the United States were represented by Morgan and Baruch in 1912 made Wilson to officially approve at the headquarters of the Democratic Party the obligation to intervene in the Great War (1914-1918 ), the creation of a Central Bank and the founding of the League of Nations. "As early as 1912, the General Staff of the U.S. Democratic Party, an offshoot of international high finance was preparing a possible war in Europe even though nothing seemed to indicate. And in this



perspective, they ensured the slavish obedience of President Wilson to the Party's decisions, whatever they were"<sup>100</sup>.

The assassination of Archduke Francis Ferdinand of Austria and his wife in Sarajevo in 1914, predicted in the International journal of Secret Societies (Mgr Jouin) in 1912 by Colonel House of "Master of Wisdom"<sup>101</sup>, had as a Masonic objective, the destruction of Austria-Hungary, the elimination of the Hohenzollern dynasty, Catholic power. This condition was already part of the Rosicrucian's program in the XVII century<sup>102</sup>, while the High Finance with a Jewish majority promised to give Palestine to the Jews at the proper time. This is the secret treaty signed in London in 1916 by Colonel House, on mission in Germany under Wilson's instructions. According to this treaty, prepared by House and Louis Brandeis of the Supreme Court, the United States undertook to go to war alongside England on the condition that, in return, England will have the obligation to guarantee Palestine for the Zionists in due time<sup>103</sup>. As can be realized, there is a conflict of interests between Freemasonry and High Finance, although they pursue anti-Catholicism. Here is an excerpt from Comenius extracted from "Lux in Tenebris", in the year 1657:

### **THE HOUSE OF AUSTRIA WILL BE DESTROYED**

And Saint-Yves d'Alveydre wrote in 1890<sup>104</sup>:

Une coalition pour écraser non seulement les  
Hohenzollern mais l'Allemagne? Mais les Indes  
seraient déjà perdues pour les Anglais!  
(Jeanne d'Arc la Victorieuse page 7)

---

<sup>100</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, Pages 33 and 102-103 full text.

<sup>101</sup> *Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Editions, Saint-Cénére, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 80-81 full text.

<sup>102</sup> *Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Editions, Saint-Cénére, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 43 and 130 full text.

<sup>103</sup> *A Hidden Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, Pages 105 full text.

<sup>104</sup> *Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Editions, Saint-Cénére, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 50 full text.

A coalition to crush not only the Hohenzollern but Germany! But India would already be lost to the English! (Joan of Arc the Victorious page 7)

**b) The League of Nations<sup>105</sup>**

In September 1916, under the authority of Colonel House, about a hundred and fifty teachers, lawyers, economists, politicians and others including members of "The Round Table", Walter Lippmann, Norman Thomas, Allen Dulles, who later became Chief of the Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), John Foster Dulles who later became Secretary of State, Christian A. Herter future minister. They put up the Covenant of the League of Nations (League of Nations Covenant) precursor of world socialism. The League was essentially a Masonic creation, and its first president was a French mason Leon Bourgeois<sup>106</sup>. The LON (League of Nations) automatically forced the U.S. government to have a foreign policy based on the dumping of foreign affairs, contrary to the isolationist policy of the parties in those days. The International High Finance funded the project as Schiff a representative of B'nai B'rith, Warburg, Kahn, Rockefeller and Morgan.

The unrealistic equality which required major nations to tow behind the scenes with the smaller nations was the main cause which led the U.S. government under the pressure of the people to terminate this agreement. Quickly, with the withdrawal of United States, the LON became a Communist fortified castle. In the conflict between Italy and Ethiopia, it was a problem related to the Second World War. The economic and financial sanctions imposed on Italy, during a meeting on 11 October 1935, deeply angered Mussolini. For various reasons of which you have been given the most important, the LON was dissolved at a General Assembly held in Geneva from 8 to 18 April 1946; its assets were transferred to the United Nations Organization (UNO). From January 10 to February 14, 1946, during the first UNO General Assembly in London, it was decided:

---

<sup>105</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, Pages 125-131 and 194-206 full text among these pages.

<sup>106</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, Pages 125-131 and 194-206 full text among these pages.

- 1) formation of the Security Council
- 2) establishment of the Economic and Social Council

The headquarters of the United Nations Organization (UNO) is in New York and the land on which its headquarters is based, was a gift from the Rockefeller. Made necessary by the Second World War, the United Nations Organization is funded by the American people. Essentially, the main objective were dictated in the seventeenth century and incorporated in the Synarchic Covenant # 591<sup>107</sup>.

A social economic order of all peoples  
 A cultural order of all nations  
 A federal order of all empires  
 In a real League of Nations whose law is based precisely on the  
 profound realities of world cultural life.

Most people around it have strong tendencies towards totalitarian socialism, Freemason, synarchic officials, and often to organizations linked up around the main Mother Lodges. ***Created ostensibly to maintain peace and global security, the UNO on the contrary proves to be a major instrument in the hands of international finance for the triumph of the World Government***<sup>108</sup>. As regards its operation, we will explore in more detail in Chapter 5.

## b) The 1940–1945 War<sup>109</sup> 110

---

<sup>107</sup> *Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Editions, Saint-Cénére, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 48 full text

<sup>108</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, Pages 33 and 102-206 full text in these pages.

<sup>109</sup> *Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel, Editions Saint-Cénére, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 16-31, P 50-52, P210 full text in these pages.

<sup>110</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, P 166, P 174-193 full text from these pages.

Other reference documents: Paul Rassinier - Parliament in the hands of the Banks and The Revolution of Dupes, High finance and the Revolution, George Bernados - The Great Fear of good thinking; Henry Coston - Money in German Politics, Peter Ferguson - The financiers of Hitler and Henry Coston - Europe Bankers, Secret Origins of the War 1939-1945, special issue of French Plays, June 1957, René Clay - The Grynspan Case, Proceedings of the Convent of the Grand Orient, 1933; Jacques Beam - The role of Freemasonry in the preparation of the Second World War, George Champeaux - The Crusade of Democracies, 1943.

The causes of the Second World War are profound. Obviously, the previous events in France in 1848 saw the emergence of Masonic secret societies like the lodges: "Philalethes", "Trinosophes", "Friends of Truth," "Heaven helps those who help themselves" " Banquet Reformists," and others where revolutionary clubs were being multiplied. But, the most secretive and dangerous was the "Carbonari" divided into superimposed "Sales", in collaboration with the Supreme Councils of Scottish Rite to which the F \* Mazzini and the Grand Orients belong. Behind him was the F \* Kossuth and F \* Palmerston, Her Majesty the Queen of England's Minister. In addition to its main mission: the fall of the Pope and Italian unity, Mazzini incited very young people to a Universal Revolution. Thus he founded "Young Italy", "Young Germany", and "Young Europe". He wanted a European revolution that will sweep the worldly powers of the "Pope" and thrones to build around a system of universal democracy. Here is the main reason behind the famous International Masonic Convention in Strasbourg in 1847.

In 1848, revolutions broke out one by one, but that of 24 February in Paris was the kick-off. Finally, it only triumphed thanks to the treachery of the F \* Odilon Barrot, a situation which directly brought F \* Arago, Ledru-Rollin, Cremieux, Marie, Garnier-Pages, Marrast, Louis Blanc, Caussidiere to the Provisional Government. On May 12, 1849 in the "Globe", the High Masonic lodges program was unveiled in the following terms:

Il est à craindre que les événements de l'année précédente (1848) n'aient été que la première scène d'un drame fécond en **RESULTATS PLUS LARGES ET PLUS PACIFIQUES**. L'échafaudage dressé par le Congrès de Vienne était si arbitraire et si artificiel, que tous les hommes d'état à opinion libérale voyaient bien qu'il ne supporterait pas le premier choc de l'Europe.

Tout le système établi par le Congrès était en dissolution et Lord Palmerston a agi sagement **LORSQU'IL N'A PAS VOULU PRETER SON CONCOURS POUR OPPOSER UNE DIGUE AUX VAGUES ENVAHISSANTES**.

Le plan qu'il a formé est celui **D'UNE NOUVELLE CONFIGURATION DE L'EUROPE**, l'érection d'un royaume Allemand vigoureux qui puisse être un **MUR DE SÉPARATION ENTRE LA FRANCE ET LA RUSSIE...**

**ENFIN UN ROYAUME D'ITALIE** supérieur dépendant de la maison de Savoie.

It is feared that the events of the previous year (1848) have only been the first scene of a fruitful drama with **MORE WIDELY AND MORE PEACEFUL RESULTS**. The scaffolding erected by the Congress of Vienna was so arbitrary and artificial, that all Statesmen of liberal opinion rightly saw that it could not withstand the first shock of Europe. All the system established by the Congress was dissolved and Lord Palmerston acted wisely when he did not **WANT TO OPPOSE A BARRIER TO INVASIVE WAVES**. The plan he formed is that of a **NEW CONFIGURATION OF EUROPE**, the erection of a strong German kingdom that can be a **WALL OF SEPARATION BETWEEN FRANCE AND RUSSIA...**  
<sup>111</sup>**FINALLY AN ITALIAN KINGDOM** superior depending on the house of Savoy.

This was a major modification of Europe. However, as a first step the Germanic Confederation which was predominantly Austrian and Catholic had to be replaced with a German Empire, German and Protestant. Here I must make a point: the Catholic Church whose leadership is centralized opposes and fights the worldly powers of the kings of the earth. Meanwhile, Protestants have no worldly power that represents them; their faith is based purely on a celestial kingdom. Also, through a Protestant nation, Freemasonry has all the latitude to grow in strength. They achieved this objective during the First World War through the destruction of the Hohenzollerns Empire as "Comenius" had predicted the fall.

While the team of Mazzini; consisting of Pyat, Kossuth, Lemmi, Crispi and High Italian Lodges continued their anti-Catholicism progression against the Pope's worldly power in Italy. Hence, in 1992, the fascist party of the dictator Mussolini took power after his "march on Rome" what was going to be the Kingdom of Italy. In May 1919, Hitler, first class Corporal, decorated with the Iron Cross was designated as a member of an investigation and purging commission against the Communists. In September he was appointed to investigate the German Workers' Party, founded by the Munich locksmith Anton Drexler. Hitler as well as Captain Roehm, the journalist Dietrich Eckart, Rudolf Hess, Alfred Rosenberg and Herman Goering became a member. On September 8, 1920, the party was renamed as the National-Sozialistische Deutschen Arbeit Partei (National Socialist Party of German workers). On July 29, 1921, Hitler became the party leader. On 10

---

<sup>111</sup> *Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Editions, Saint-Cénére, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 20 full text

April 1932, with the 200 000 members, Hitler presented his candidacy to the Republic against field marshal Hindenburg. He was elected. On 28 January 1933, Hindenburg appointed Hitler as Chancellor of the Reich. On 2 August 1934, Hindenburg died; Hitler combined the functions of Chancellor and Head of State as the Führer. In 1922, with the appearance of the Synarchic movement, in the Synarchy Mother Lodge there was the withdrawal of three lower lodges in Germany. Only two groups of lodges were going to remain in Germany, "Old Prussian" nationalists, aristocratic, military and anti-Jewish, referring to the Johannine Masonic Templar traditions ROSICRUCIANISM at the time of Frederick the Great, and the "humanitarian" lodges relating to the Anderson constitutions. Here, we must mention a historic event: there is a complete contrast between Anglo-Saxon and Prussian secret societies. The person who provoked this anti-Semitic outbreak is not known but it is however clear that it was caused by the Synarchy Mother Lodge. Hitler chose the model "Old Prussian" matching his Nazism model, nationalism and anti-Semitic feelings already heavily involved in the very occult "THULE" lodge. In that lodge, there was the desire to impose an INTERNATIONAL freemasonry (exclusive Anglo-Saxon condominium), Aryan race, as financial donors from Germany, Austria and Italy permitted it. The following were behind Hitler to sharpen the desire of Germany to impose such union or condominium: Lanz, theorist of National Socialism and Aryan racism, the famous secret society the Thule Group, then, the nationalist freemasons and anti-Jews, supposedly disbanded, but regrouped in "The National Christian Order of Frederick the Great"<sup>112</sup>. As a freemason, Hitler was certainly aware of the future dismemberment of Germany in favor of the "Iron Curtain" and the likely response of China. Given what Hitler wrote in 1928:

Le rassemblement de tous les peuples européens n'évitera pas pour autant l'hégémonie américaine et que le premier rival pour cette union américaine serait d'abord la Russie d'aujourd'hui et plus encore la Chine avec plus de quatre cents millions d'hommes.

The gathering of all the peoples of Europe will not prevent U.S. hegemony and the first rival to this

---

<sup>112</sup> <sup>112</sup>The reader will be aware that anti-Semitism is contrary to Christianity, like Rosicrucianism, martinism, Satanism, Luciferianism, witchcraft. But Satan is the father of lies, it is not surprising to see all these lodges, either inferior or superior, denominations or Luciferian Church bear names that give the impression that they are Christians.

American union today would initially be Russia and China with more than four hundred million men.

Hitler did not believe in a European Union based on peace, according to him, it should have been imposed by Synarchy, that is to say a conqueror. Thus, he said:

Tenter de réaliser l'Union pan-Européenne par l'Union purement formulée des peuples européens sans qu'elle ait été imposée par une puissance prédominante en Europe... cela conduirait à une entité dont toute la force et l'énergie seraient absorbées par des rivalités et des querelles intérieures comme le fut la force allemande dans la fédération allemande.

Trying to achieve the pan-European Union by the Union purely made of European peoples without it being imposed by a dominant power in Europe ... would lead to an entity whose whole strength and energy would be absorbed by rivalries and domestic quarrels, as was the German force in the German federation.

In these excerpts, we see that Hitler and his party were very aware of the Illuminists objectives of U.S. LEADERSHIP regarding the European Union, which we will see shortly.

Also, there was this political environment, the High Masonry was looking for a man of iron able to contain communism within his country. The Germany-Austria-Italy block in 1849, although short-lived, played this role in time and place. Also in his book "Occult Theocracy" Lady Queensborough, said:

Après la guerre européenne de 1914, certaines banques, conscientes de la menace du Satanisme, rebaptisèrent le bolchévisme de crainte que le monstre ne leur échappât des mains. Elles choisirent certains hommes dont l'intégrité, le patriotisme et le courage leur donnaient confiance et, leur payant un salaire, les tinrent prêts, comme un noyau, pour se rallier à un chef au signal donné. (Tome I, page 619)

After the European war of 1914, some banks, aware of the threat of Satanism, renamed Bolshevism for fear that the

monster would escape from their hands, they chose some men whose integrity, patriotism and courage gave them confidence, and paying them a salary, held them ready as a nucleus to rally behind a head at a given signal. (Volume I, page 619)

Also, there is the financial support of Reich<sup>113</sup> which raises several questions. Although Ernst von Borsig, Chairman of the Association of Metallurgical Industry, and Grandl an industrialist, Herman Aust, Fritz Thyssen got interested in the party from the onset. Once it reached 200 000 party members, Emil Kirdorf of Ruhr, Georg von Schnitzler of IG Farben, Cuno of the Hamburg-Amerika Navigation, leaders of the Allianz Insurance Co., Deutsche Bank, Commerz und Privat Bank, Dresdner Bank and others also joined. As soon as it exceeded the 13.5 million votes in elections, the following joined: Schacht, former president of the Reichsbank, Krupp von Bohlen, and Kurt von Schroeder. Despite this, it turned out that their often obliged support was clearly insufficient to provide Hitler with a powerful army.

From 1933, Hitler banned Freemasonry; being a member of the ILLUMINATI himself, while Mussolini prohibited the activity of lodges. However, it was no longer possible to infiltrate an Anglo-Saxon Masonic lodge to destroy anti-Semitic feelings. And we have in the person of Hitler, a Corporal frustrated by the United States' intervention in World War I to defend Zionist interests, a German nationalist fighting for a permanent INTERNATIONAL Aryan without (IRON CURTAIN), what the AMERICAN LEADERSHIP in the person of B'nai B'rith and other International Bankers denied him. So, what remains is the "Old Prussian" lodge of Aryan racism whose staff and itself were marked. It was now necessary to restore the Masonic Union; the National Grand Lodge of Czechoslovakia organized an International Masonic Convent in Prague from August 8 to 31, 1936, under the theme: fight against German National Socialism opposed to

---

<sup>113</sup>*Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Editions, Saint-Céneré, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 50 Full text.

In fact, if one refers to what the "Charivari" says about a book, "Financial Sources of National Socialism", published in Amsterdam in 1933, copies of which disappeared and which have not been possible to disprove, Since 1929, Guarantee Trust has been looking for a man to make a counter-national revolution. She found Hitler. His first payment took place at the German banker Mendelssohn's place. There have been meetings. The big case was then funded by "Guarantee Trust, Deterding, President of the Royal Deutch" (Shell, BP, etc.) Always through Mendelssohn and the "Rotterdamse Bank" and "Banco Commercial Italiano". This book with Dutch title "Dree Gespreken met Hitler" was written by Sidney Warbourg, the man whose bank had financed, with others, the Russian Revolution of 1917!



the idea of Democracy. The annexation of Austria in the third Reich on the 13 of March 1939 did not even startle them. It was only when Germany annexed Sudeten that Freemasonry reacted but the links remained cut between (Germany-Austria-Italy); and the International freemasonry, and Czechoslovakia was preparing to be occupied.

All these elements put together led to an extraordinary anti-Semitism in the history of humanity. There was this incident of Friday, November 7, 1938 in Paris: Herschel Feibel Grynszpan shot down adviser Ernst vom Rath, the murderer of a young Jew aged 17. It has never been possible to clarify the motive for the attack, the file disappeared. During the occupation Grynszpan, was sought and put to death in a concentration camp. On 14 November 1938, the last Jewish rights were abolished in Germany because of the act of Grynszpan; and the Jewish community was under a collective fine of one billion marks. Although Palestine was already a Jewish homeland, Britain feared a revolt of Arab countries. Also, there was this KADM Cohen<sup>114</sup> escape attempt which was aborted by a communiqué from a local English radio and this made several thousand Jews to lose their lives. The Reich, regardless of its anti-Jewish policies, granted the possibility of emigration. Already a first wave of bankers, big merchants, scholars and academics warned, began to emigrate. But for the Ordinary Jew, Mr. Everybody, him, where could he emigrate? Wherever they went, they were not received. The British government having already accepted 11,000 Jews, rejected the project allowing 10 000 young Jews to settle in Palestine. France and Switzerland were economically, financially and politically incapable to accept more Jews. The United States, "objected the U.S. law prohibiting the right of emigration to any person not having more than \$ 1000. Nations of the world at the time have a major responsibility in this massacre.

All these things together give us three choices. Only insiders can answer it.

- 1) Synarchy has trampled on fundraisers.
- 2) Fundraisers agreed to let their fellow believers die to demonstrate the need for a Jewish state, a country Israel

---

<sup>114</sup> *Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Editions, Saint-Cénéry, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 148 full text

Ref. KADM Cohen - "The American abomination" KADM Cohen imprisoned by Gestapo during the war was released on the intervention of Marshal Petain with the help of Papal Nuncio Msgr. Valeri. He had, apparently, devised a plan to save the Jews of France by evacuating them to Palestine. The Marshal's Office and Nunciature had provided financial needs. A Radio blunder (?) in London exposed this plan. KADM-Cohen and his group were arrested after the occupation of Vichy by the Germans...

3) An undetectable spiritual war crept in without the knowledge of the Mother Lodges.

Personally, I think it is a mixture of the three, the F \* Allen Dulles was in the circle of founders of the League of Nations with his brother John Foster Dulles. Among foreign financiers who supported the rise of Hitler, there was the bank of J. Henry Schroder Co., whose director was Allen Dulles, a founder and member of the CFR and also member of "The Round Table". This became the intermediary banker between the Nazi Party and the American bankers who financed the war. Allen Dulles was the main brain behind the Central Intelligence Agency (C.I.A.) from 1953 to 1961. However, Mr. David Yallop assures us in his book *"On behalf of God"* that Licio Gelli was the Grand Master of the irregular Propaganda Lodge 2 (P2), controlling Italy, Central and South America. He organized an escape route for the Nazis who wanted to flee to South America. Among those who escaped, there was the Gestapo chief Klaus Barbie, known by the nickname Butcher of Lyon. Barbie had nothing to pay as the cost of his trip was fully paid by the U.S. Counter Intelligence Corporation. Barbie strove to set up the "Betrothed of Death" and his group committed political assassinations on request including that of the Bolivian Socialist leader Marcela Quiroga Cruz and contributed to the rise to power of General Garcia Meza in Bolivia in 1980. Klaus Barbie used his knowledge of the time of Nazism as a "security adviser" of Colonel Gomez, a man who has shed Bolivian blood - Page 158 and 162. So if war criminals were protected by the Council on Foreign Relations after the war, it must be considered that the Jewish massacre for them was just a consequence. He mostly considered probably their F \* of Thule lodge.

But the High Finance left a mark in this war. In 1930, a bill tabled by three Nazis deputies: Strasser, Feder and Frick, provided for the expropriation without compensation of holdings of the "banking and finance magnates," the Jews of Eastern Europe, and the nationalization of major banks. At that time, Hitler had to withdraw it for reasons related to the funding of the party. We know what happened on due time. Following the orders of 1940-1944 against the Jews in France, leaders of the major banks like Rothschild, Lazard, Dreyfus and others were exiled, their enterprises went into bankruptcy. Others would have seen that recognition is not in the habit of the obliged, such as: Banca Commerciale Italiana nationalized

by Mussolini in 1931, Thyssen fled to Switzerland in August 1939 for having protested against Hitler's aggressive policy: he fell into the hands of the Gestapo in France in 1940. In both cases, Mussolini and Hitler erased their creditors. Originally the Germany-Austria-Italy block had been formed so as to offer a serious resistance to the USSR in order to avoid that the Communist monster invades Europe and escape from the hands of High Finance. Hitler as a member of the Illuminati made known the intentions of international Jewry, as a fervent nationalist, he opposed to this short time of glory. As the supremacy of the Aryan race prevailed in Masonic lodges, and that Paganism was well run between (1918-1939). Hitler decided to form a TRANSNATIONAL with old European countries which he invaded one by one until the Antikomintern Pact. As soon as they saw that Hitler was trying to form a TRANSNATIONAL which might become more powerful than the U.S. LEADERSHIP, the HIGH FINANCE hastened to put pressure on various governments to declare war on Hitler. However, if F \* Franklin D. Roosevelt<sup>115</sup> did not intervene as warmonger, forced by fundraisers and freemasons, Hitler would have fought one day or

---

<sup>115</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, Pages 192-193 full text. It has often been referred to the Jewish ancestry of Roosevelt. Curtis B. Dall wrote: "From what I could gather, Franklin Roosevelt's ancestry was a mixture of English, Dutch, Jewish and French "op. cit. p98. On the role of President Roosevelt as warmonger, was the testimony of James Vincent Forrestal U.S. Secretary of the Navy, 19 May 1944 to July 27, 1947, where he became the first Secretary of State for Defense until March 2, 1949. In his Journal (French edition, Paris, 1952, p 113-114), he wrote on 27 December 1945: "Played golf today with Joe Kennedy (Joseph P. Kennedy had been Roosevelt's Ambassador to Britain in the years immediately preceding the war). I told him about his conversations with Roosevelt and Chamberlain from 1938. He said that in 1938 Chamberlain believed England had nothing to fight and she could not run the risk of war with Hitler. Kennedy's Opinion: Hitler would have fought against Russia, and Great Britain would not have been dragged into the conflict if there was Bullitt (William C. Bullitt, then ambassador to France) throughout the summer of 1939, had insisted with Roosevelt that the Germans were stopped net in the Polish case, neither France nor Great Britain would declare war for Poland without continual pinpricks of Washington. According to him, Bullitt repeated to Roosevelt that the Germans would not fight, Kennedy and that they would fight and invade Europe. Chamberlain probably said it was America and Jews around the world who had pushed England by force into the war. During the telephone conversation that Kennedy had with Roosevelt in the summer of 1939, the President kept on telling him he had to push the iron in the kidneys of Chamberlain and Kennedy invariably replied that this would not serve any purpose if the English did not have iron to fight the enemy, which unfortunately was the case ... What Kennedy said during that conversation is largely consistent with the comments that Clarence Dillon had already made and which were summed up like this: Roosevelt had asked him to secretly establish relation with the British to ensure that Chamberlain manifests greater firmness with the Germans. Dillon said that at the request of Roosevelt, he had spoken to Lord Lothian in this direction, and that his approach had to be roughly parallel to that which Roosevelt pressurized Kennedy to do to Chamberlain. It is likely that Lothian would have told Chamberlain about conversation with Dillon". The bellicosity of William C. Bullitt, a Freemason of high rank and affiliated to the Council on Foreign Relations, is attested by Szebnek in his Journal of April 11, 1935, p60. For his part, Mr. Stone writes that in 1938 the Virion bank Kuhn, Loeb & Co. "was in motion at the service of the intelligentsia surrounding the F \* Roosevelt. Poland which Hitler wanted to ensure was the trap and the man for the job was William Bullitt, diplomat, former agent of Schiff, Kuhn & Loeb; he travelled through Europe to push for the declaration of war than the F \* Groussier, then Grand Master of the Grand Orient of France, said was required by New York (Pierre Virion - *One World Government Soon?* P 52)

another against Russia and China would have ended everything. Although Roosevelt urged Chamberlain to go to war, the situation in the United States was different. Indeed 80% of the population objected to any armed intervention in Europe, the proximity of the 1940 elections would have been fatal if he had shown sympathy for war. Under the theme "Hitler bluffs," on September 27, 1938, the colonial secretary Georges Mandel (Louis Rothschild), said to the Board President Edouard Daladier "We'll make you a hero in spite of yourself. Hitler is bluffing. You just have to resist him to cover yourself with glory" The September 28, intervention of last resort between Hitler, Mussolini, Chamberlain and Daladier. On 29 September, it was concessions granted to the Germans. The concessions were approved in the House of Deputies and communes. But soon a wave of pride, driven by freemasons seized the media and the populace. The First Lord of the Admiralty Duff Cooper resigned and then accused Churchill Chamberlain for choosing shame. Major Attlee said that England and France suffered the greatest Diplomatic defeat in history at Munich. Many followed suit as: Hore Belisha, Anthony Eden, Lord De la Warr and Sir Vansittart. In France, Leon Blum denounced the policy of Munich a "shameful capitulation," "a disgraceful concession," "treason." While Henry Kerillis spoke of Munich traitors, seconded by Emile Bure "The Order at work." Albert Bayet, Genevieve Tabouis calling for war as: Louis Levy, Orestes Rosenfeld with the people, Paul Levy in charge of listening, Jean Fayard for the ingenuous, Louis Joxe and Maurice Schumann for the Havas Agency, Pierre Brossolette for the Radio Agency, Henri and Maurice Bourdet Bénazet to the Parisian Post, Gabriel Peri and Jacques Duclos in charge of Humanity, Jean-Richard Bloch for the evening periods and several others.

During the crisis of autumn 1938, Bullitt was warned that a war would last for six (6) years, and end with a complete disaster in Europe and a triumph of communism. A conflict between Germany and Russia would weaken the Reich, and then the Americans would intervene to force Germany to capitulate, but only after England and France would have declared war. The United States needed two years to complete their weapons, because an exhausted Europe will be an easy prey to the USSR. So, it was necessary to provoke war. On 12 January 1939, a secret report to Colonel Beck alleged that various Jewish intellectuals from the U.S. had participated in a warmongering campaign to activate America's precipitation into war. Particularly the friends of President Roosevelt, the financiers Baruch, Lehmann, Frankfurter, and Morgenthau had all participated in the revolution of October 1917. More characters affiliated

with the Council on Foreign Relations, like Ben Cohen, Rosenman, Harry Dexter White were among them.

Members of the Council on Foreign Relations encircled President Roosevelt and Department of State. Many were Soviet agents like Alger Hiss, a senior official at the State Department, Roosevelt's adviser<sup>116</sup>, President of the Carnegie Endowment for International Peace, who was sentenced to five (5) years imprisonment.

On February 1, 1939, the Grand Masters of the two great French lodges came again to Roosevelt; the first time was on 24 September 1938 in favor of Czechoslovakia, requesting the convening of an International Conference of all States concerned by the problems of Central Europe. Roosevelt seized the opportunity to inform them that the U.S. will no longer support democratic countries if they observed the Munich agreement. Meanwhile F \* Bullitt warned the French freemasonry that no compromise between the Democrats and Hitler's Germany would take place.

On the eve of the Second World War, The Round Table used all its powers within our governments to ensure that Hitler was not arrested in Austria, the Rhineland and Sudetenland. Subsequently, at great expense, they manipulated the different populace to go to war. These were allies, composed largely of Protestant Christians, Baptists, Evangelicals, Pentecostals and Catholics who shed their blood under the command of Freemasons Generals, just as the American Revolution of 1776. These were the Christians who in order to free all Jews from the concentration camp, agreed never to see their children, their wives and gave their lives, the ultimate proof of love. These Christians returned disillusioned by the horrors of war, some forsook the faith. This brought about a breach in morals and was passed on to future generations. Destroying Christianity is the avowed purpose of Freemasonry.

---

<sup>116</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, p 161 full text. Even before the start of World War II, President Franklin Roosevelt had been warned that Alger Hiss (C.F.R.) was an important Soviet agent. Information came from the head of the Soviet "mailbox" in Washington, Whittaker Chambers, who wanted to pay for his inquiries so that his past actions be forgotten. But the CFR Roosevelt refused not only to believe in the treachery of Alger Hiss, but refused to verify the information. Alger Hiss became a very senior official at the State Department, played an active role in the foreign policy of the United States. His maneuvers at the Yalta conference in favor of the USSR had catastrophic consequences for the Western world. In 1950, for denying under oath that he was Communist and Soviet spy, Alger Hiss was sentenced to five years in prison for perjury, proven by the discovery of secret documents reproducing films prepared to be sent to Russia. He was released from prison in November 1954. On the Hiss case, see: Ralph de Toledano - *Seeds of Treason* - Henry Regnery, Chicago 1962, Whittaker Chambers - *Witness*, Random House, New York Whittaker Chambers became editor of Time, at a salary of 30,000 dollars per year.

Whereas, they should have been aware that distancing Christianity means increasing anti-Semitism. The IRON CURTAIN and the REICH amply proved it. If there was anti-Semitism in the middle Ages, it was due to the fact that the spirit of the antichrist was behind a religion. Even Protestants were considered heretics and killed. For this reason they had to migrate in such great numbers as the first settlers in the United States. Lenin, Stalin, Hitler were antichrists, not only because of the horrors they agreed to commit, but because with the help of a powerful machine behind them, they contributed greatly to take away peace, love, tolerance, joy, goodness, charity and patience from the earth. Encouraging the spirit of Satan is to accept that the False Messiah coming should be an Antichrist. And he will be, he shall destroy two-thirds (2 / 3) of the Jewish people and shall hope to change times and completely annihilate God's people.

#### d) **A Jewish homeland**<sup>117</sup>

Although the return to Israel was well established in the Jewish customs and traditions; notably the "Super flumina Babylonis" in Psalms 136, "If I forget you, O Jerusalem, let my right hand be paralyzed." It was only towards the end of the eighteenth century, caused mainly by revolutions in Central Europe, ghettos and pogroms in Russia, that Jewish social awareness started to focus on the return to the Promised Land. Naturally, some Movements and poets kept alive the flame of return as: the Zionist movement in 1886, Moses Hess, with his book "Rom und Jerusalem" in 1862, claiming the right of Jews to realize their national aspirations, Leo Pinsker with his book "The Self-Empowerment" calling for a Jewish people with their own territory. But the first movement to draw attention was the "Lovers of Zion" (Zion Hovevé), to which the barons Edmond de Rothschild and Hirsch and major Jewish financiers of Europe were interested. The movement succeeded in implanting some Jewish settlers from central<sup>118</sup> Europe in Palestine. However, there were already some Jewish groups, remaining from ancient times in Jerusalem, Hebron, Safed and Tiberias.

---

<sup>117</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, P 105-114 and Pages 229-239 full text in these pages.

Other reference materials: Jacques Soustelle - The long march of Israel, Dan Smoot - The Dan Smoot Report in The Review of the News, 21-11-1973, Pierre Larrivé - Promised Land, but to whom?; George Loïc - The Reconstruction of the Temple in Journal of Historical Issues, November 1934, p63; Henry Coston - Financiers that lead the world.

<sup>118</sup> It was mostly Jewish emigrants from Central Europe and Russia, fleeing pogroms and ghettos, and wanted to get rid of England and France.

But the real founder of Zionism was the journalist and Austrian -Jewish playwright Theodore Herzl (1860-1904). He was a city dweller, active, successful author, taking advantage of life; he could not speak Hebrew and believed in the assimilation of Judaism by Christianity. He imagined a mass conversion of Jews and a grand Judeo-Christian reconciliation.

But in 1894, as a journalist, he was invited to cover "The Dreyfus Affair" that Herzl was following for the *Neue Freie Press*. He was amazed to see the degree of anti-Semitism caused by this case. This restored his sense of membership. In 1895 he wrote "The Jewish State," and he mentions the need for the people to own a region of the world where Jews worldwide could live permanently. The book was a big success, written in German; it was translated into French, English and Hebrew. In his book, he proposed a program of introduction and Creation of a society of Jews to organize the operation, and a Jewish Company with a capital of 50 million pounds sterling to finance the project. Two locations were then proposed either Argentina or Palestine, and emigration had to be organized. The project was opposed by High Finance stationed with the "Lovers of Zion" and Orthodox Jews who considered it as blasphemous embarking on such a project without waiting for the Messiah.

However, with the support of the writer Israel Zangwill, Max Nordeau, Max Bodenheimer, he organized a congress in Basel, August 27, 1897. The meeting saw the participation of 204 delegates from all countries, all languages, and two representatives of the Order of B'nai B'rith, Jewish Freemasonry. The purpose of the movement was unveiled there: "The establishment in Palestine of a Jewish homeland legally and publicly recognized."

Until his death in Vienna, on July 3, 1904, he kept on struggling. Faced with constant opposition from the authorities of Judaism and the various parts of the doctrine, without any political support or financial support, it took him five years to successfully register the Jewish Colonial Trust in London. He even went as far as declaring: "It's the first time I've seen the ability of Jews to establish a bank put to question" In reality, the International Bankers, "made things difficult for him" because they felt it was not yet time for a mass emigration to Palestine.

Despite this, an increasingly significant and continuous migration to Palestine kept on growing. The strongest contingent was made up of Russian intellectuals, socializing, determined to settle

on the land of their ancestors. Immediately, the Immigration Planning Office and the Jewish National Fund were created in Jaffa in 1908 and were interested in buying land in Palestine. The following year Tel Aviv was founded and Hebrew proclaimed as the language of communication. Until 1914, the main suppliers to this fund were the Jewish leaders in London: Montefiore, Wolff, Rothschild, Cohen, Goldsmid and Hilfsverein but, especially B'nai B'rith and the Jews of the United States. In August 1914, when World War I broke out, the National Fund was put aside in The Hague and a Provisional Committee chaired by "Justice Brandeis" was set up in New York. We know that Louis Brandeis owed his appointment to the Supreme Court thanks to a blackmail orchestrated against Wilson about an extra-marital affair. Those who took part in this committee Stephen Wise, an influential personal adviser of President Wilson;

Eugene Meyer, future president of the Federal Reserve Board (Central Bank), Nathan Straus and the international financier Felix Frankfurter, a nephew of "Justice Brandeis." In May 1916 the secret agreement "Sykes-Picot Treaty" outlined the division of the Levant in the English and French spheres of influence. France officially recognized in Britain a protectorate over Palestine, by which the United States undertook to go to war alongside England provided England engaged to secure Palestine for the Zionists at the right time. The Financiers founded the British Palestine Committee. On February 7, 1917 the following met in London: Sir Mark Sykes, Lord Rothschild, James of Rothschild, Herbert Samuel, Chaim Weizmann, Nahum Sokolow, George Picot, Aristide Briand, and President of the Council and French Minister of Foreign Affairs for a Jewish state. On April 6, 1917, The United States entered the war. The American financiers lent to all belligerents in order to amass the Proceeds from this war.

Meanwhile, Colonel House, as Louis Brandeis, had been imposed on Wilson by International Jewish bankers Paul and Felix Warburg, Otto H. Kahn, Louis Marburg, Henry Morgenthau, Jacob and Mortimer Schiff, Herbert Lehman, the Rothschild banking complex and all pro-Zionist members of The Round Table ". At that time, the Council on Foreign Relations had not yet been founded by Colonel Mandell House. On November 2, 1917, British cabinet, published as a letter from Lord Balfour to Lord Rothschild, the statement:

"Her Majesty's Government is favorably considering the establishment in Palestine of a National Home for the Jewish people, and shall use all effort to facilitate this achievement, it is clearly understood that nothing shall be done which may jeopardize the civil and religious



rights of the non-Jewish communities existing in Palestine nor the rights and political status which Jews enjoy in other countries ...”

Shortly after, the Israelite Sir Herbert Samuel was appointed as the British High Commissioner to Palestine. His mission was to plan and integrate Jewish immigration. This was to ensure the growth and rapid spread of the Jewish population in Palestine in order that a Jewish State and more especially the country of Israel be born.

In April 1920, the San Remo Conference confirmed the Balfour<sup>119</sup> declaration. Between 1919 and 1939, the British government eased up the emigration program in Palestine. Indeed, at the end of 1919, an organization led by a man named Jabontinsky was responsible for the self-defense of the settlers, and numerous incidents of retaliation ensued between Jews and Palestinians. In addition, there were concerns that Brenden Bracken<sup>120</sup> notified Churchill and Chamberlain. The dictatorship of Mussolini and the rise of Hitlerian Nazism which militated in favor of pan-Arab nationalism, and the possibility of a Second World War which was increasingly imminent; made it necessary to avoid a situation where Arab nations could join the "AntiKomintern Pact". The Jews who escaped the death camps in Germany and the threat of Communist, the fear of Nazism, encouraged a vast campaign for emigration to Palestine. On 14 February 1947, the British government submitted the Jewish problem to the UNO meanwhile on May 12, 1948 the Jews decided to proclaim the state Israel.

Although Truman did not oppose a Jewish state, neither he nor the other presidents could resist pressure from the Jewish lobby, whose financial power determined their election into the White House. Ben Gurion having proclaimed the establishment of the State of Israel on May 14, 1948 at

---

<sup>119</sup> *Soon a World Government, a great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Editions, Saint-Cénére, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 148 full text.

In April 1919 the British Government published a White Paper entitled "Russia # 1". In the introduction, information was found about the report addressed to the Foreign Office (L. Balfour) in 1918 by Oudendyke his business representative in Russia, on the origins, purposes and consequences of Bolshevism which must be eradicated quickly. As soon as it appeared, this white paper was withdrawn from circulation and replaced immediately by a second edition in which the Oudendyke information had disappeared. And I might add, was L. Balfour probably waiting for Oudendyke's report to know whether the monster was under control in order to reconfirm the "Sykes-Picot Treaty in San Remo.

<sup>120</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, P -229 full text. In the Forrester Journal, the American Navy Secretary. "Branden expressed his concern, nota Forrestal, regarding the commitment of some two hundred members of the new Parliament to support the Jewish National Home. He said this could cause an explosion in the Middle East which has become a tinderbox and that millions of Arabs would be willing to take up arms immediately if such a program was implemented. He added that the Russians would probably be delighted with such disorders and that they had already adopted a very aggressive attitude in Persia. "P 90.

midnight, eleven minutes later, the White House officially recognized it. Since May 14, 1948, the U.S. government has never ceased to fund, support and supply Israel. From the attitude of the financiers, it is obvious that the USSR was a huge deception, and that the fate of the world is decided by them and the INTERNATIONAL freemasonry. If not, why did they take the risk of allowing hundreds of millions of Arabs step over to communism which would have been disastrous for the free world as under Hitler? The Soviet had the same fear, at least during the Cold War.

Let's consider this example even though I do not want to go beyond the year 1948. In 1967, the State of Israel asked for help. This young state just 19 years old and whose agricultural exports could barely support its military activities needed the support of a super power. On August 9, 1967, in Tel Aviv, seventy billionaires came from fourteen (14) different countries to respond to the call of Levi Eishkol. It is quite surprising "I cannot even imagine how many billions represent the people present in this hall" The U.S. delegation consisted of forty (40) members, I will not mention names. The topics, some say, largely overflowed the economic and financial but it remains secret. However, in April 1968 in Jerusalem, during a second meeting with the Bilderbergers this time, Mr. Charles Clore began his meeting with the following topics: "

The problem of gold; support to countries opposed to the gold standard; attacks against France and de Gaule, the bringing to order of Poland and Czechoslovakia; campaigns against arms supplies to Arab countries; large credit grants for Israel to arm himself, as necessary below world rate, the global reorganization of the power of Israel through very significant loans, all of that form what we must develop and we are united in this unique objective"

I am convinced that such an appeal was launched by any other country apart from United States, and the Diaspora did not pay much attention to it. What is striking in their attitudes is that it is certain that "High Finance continues the messianic dream of the hegemony of Israel." As Christians, we shall say that the desired goal is identical to prophecies. We sincerely hope that the Jewish people will rebuild the ancient temple of Solomon. Certainly, God will perform what he has attested through his prophets. However, the one you will bring to power will stop the daily sacrifice and single handedly seek to destroy all of you, one third will survive because they will turn to Jesus the True Messiah and shall not come into Jerusalem, or in the cities. Those in Judea shall flee into the mountains.

e) **China**<sup>121</sup> <sup>122</sup>

There is little information on the Great Red Dragon society and *The Order of the Black Diamond*, but for the fact that the Chinese secret societies that constitute it are inspired by Taoism and its tendencies toward mystic freedom for the individual. They have an esoteric cult of Science; their followers are controlled through colleges of the initiated. The first gives secret teachings concerning politics. The second controls the execution of occult instructions. The third which is the highest is composed of very senior Insiders versed in magnetism, occultism; it conceives political plans and is capable of ensuring performance by mobilizing the body of the nation without any visible intervention of the state. Its mysticism supported by its isolation, its orientation, its objectives in globalization, are only known by very high insiders.

However, Saint Yves d'Alveydre, who transcribed the "Synarchic Covenant " for Synarchy in the posthumous edition of his " India Mission " published in 1910, wrote:

« Je leur ai signalé (aux Européens) dans mes missions précédentes combien peu la Chine était une quantité négligeable dans la balance des puissances de la terre. Deux ans avant la guerre, j'ai dit que ses armements, ses instructeurs militaires européens, son évolution lente mais certaine, après des emprunts d'État probables vers un pied de guerre appelé tôt ou tard à devenir formidable pour l'Europe. Et ce que j'ai déjà dit s'est en partie réalisé y compris l'emprunt d'État souscrit à Londres. Après avoir ainsi prévenu toutes nos patries de la maîtrise à la fois rationnelle et physique qu'elles avaient à prendre en considération dans la puissance de cet Empire, je continue mon œuvre dans cette mission de l'Inde en Europe et de L'Europe en Asie.

A cinquante ans de distance, vous verrez l'Asie renaître à l'Esprit de son antique synthèse celtique. Les armes à la mains, l'Asie vous empêchera de venir la troubler dans son ordonnance de la loi du règne de Dieu et, Chine et Islam en avant, sous la conduite de

---

<sup>121</sup> *Soon a World Government, a great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Editions, Saint-Cénére, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 142-147 full text in these pages.

<sup>122</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, p 143 full texts among these pages.

vos propres instructeurs militaires, elle viendra vous imposer de mettre votre signature au bas de la promesse sociale des Abramides...

Entre ces deux perspectives, je ne pense pas que l'Europe pensante tôt ou tard puisse hésiter.

En attendant, je fais des vœux pour qu'entre la Synarchie et l'Anarchie, les politiciens essayent de trouver un moyen terme : ils trouveront que des attermolements funestes. »

"I pointed out to (Europeans) during my Previous missions how little China was a negligible quantity in the balance of powers of the earth.

Two years before the war, I said that her weapons, her European military instructors, her slow but sure evolution, after her state loans likely on a war footing called sooner or later to become formidable to Europe.

And what I said was partly achieved including government borrowing subscribed in London.

Having thus warned all of our homelands on both their physical and rational mastery which had to be taken into account in the power of this empire, I continue my work in this mission of India in Europe and from Europe to Asia.

Fifty years later, you will see the rebirth of Asia like in its celtic<sup>123</sup> past.

Arms in hands, Asia will prevent you from disturbing her in the law of the reign of God and China and Islam in front, led by your own military instructors; they will come and force you to sign at the bottom of the Social promise of Abramides...

Between these two perspectives, I do not think a thoughtful Europe sooner or later can be hesitant.

Meanwhile I wish that between Synarchy and Anarchy, politicians should try to find a middle ground: they will only find fatal procrastination. "

By reading these few lines, the declaration of Hitler in 1928 is now well understood. Moreover, it is unofficial that Asia is no more lagging behind the West. However, China remains impenetrable and communist. Who runs this China?

---

<sup>123</sup> seem to mean efficiency to construct, fabricate, invent in the European manner.

When I described a few organizations that revolved around the Council on Foreign Relations, I mentioned the INSTITUTE OF PACIFIC RELATIONS (IPR), founded in 1928. Whereas in 1945 the Office of Strategic Services (OSS) recognized the verbatim reproduction of the “top secret”, official documents.

A search of the IPR had resulted in the seizure of 1800 documents removed from the secret archives of several government departments, Foreign affairs Intelligence Agency of the Army and Navy. Among these documents were, ultra secret reports concerning the positions and dispositions of the Chinese Nationalist armies of Chiang Kai-Shek, then a US ally, information of the utmost importance for leaders of Communist China. The investigations of a Senate subcommittee for state internal Security called "McCarran Committee, succeeded in identifying many communists among the members of I. P.R. and even Soviet agents like Laughlin Currie (C.F.R.) adviser of President F. Roosevelt and his representative in China Israel Epstein; Frederick Vanderbilt (CFR), Alger Hiss (CFR), Owen Lattimore (CFR), Harry Dexter White (C.F.R.). Even George Catlett Marshall (CFR), former General Chief of Staff for the U.S. Army during World War II, author of economic aid Plan to Europe, Former Secretary of State for Defense, Nobel Peace in 1953, was placed under investigation (see Institute of Pacific Relations in footnotes below).

IPR from its founding date of 1928 until its closing date in March 1961 had the responsibility to infiltrate at high levels Synarchic officials or technocrats in the direction of the Council on Foreign Relations especially in the political and economic domains. The countries mostly affected by its intervention were Russia, China, Japan, Pakistan and Philippines. The intelligentsia based in New York through The Institute of Pacific Relations has selected men of their choice for positions in the State Department on Asian affairs. The report on "Foreign Policy Association" published in Savannah reveals that it is the American policy which led to the disastrous conquest of China by communism and that the tragic fault of the Korean War, the recognition of Red China have destroyed the prestige of United States. In this sense, this text speaks lengthily about the complicity of action between the Illuminati and Communism, all invented.

Washington 16 Juin (Dépêche d'agence)

« Au cours de sa réception au National Press club M. Walter Robertson, secrétaire d'État-adjoint pour les affaires d'Extrême-Orient a également affirmé que la Mandchourie avait été le prix demandé par Staline pour entrer dans la guerre.

Cette décision, selon M. Robertson a été ratifiée par Roosevelt, Churchill et Staline à la conférence du Caire en 1943, ce qui a permis ainsi à l'U.R.S.S. de transférer, après la guerre, le contrôle de cette vaste province aux communistes chinois. Parlant ensuite de l'effondrement économique de la Chine libre, le secrétaire d'État américain a souligné le fait que le gouvernement des États-Unis avait refusé un prêt au général Tchiang Kai Chek en affirmant que si le gouvernement américain avait agi de la même façon en Europe au lieu d'apporter une aide importante, l'Europe serait aujourd'hui communiste ».

Washington June 16 (Dispatch Agency)

"During his reception at the National Press Club M. Walter Robertson, Assistant Secretary of State for Far Eastern Affairs also stated that Manchuria was the price demanded by Stalin to enter the war. This decision, according to Mr. Robertson has been ratified by conference in 1943, thus allowing the USSR to transfer control of this vast Communist Chinese Province after the war, Speaking of economic collapse of the Free China, the U.S. Secretary of State stressed that the United States government had refused a loan to General Chiang Kai-shek stating that if the U.S. government had acted similarly in Europe rather than providing substantial assistance, Europe would be communist today."

What is happening with money within the U.S. government? The trade Union. Who wanted to have Manchuria to go to war through Stalin? The ILLUMINATI. So it was voluntary and with supporting evidence that China has become communist and is under the control of Freemasonry. As for Chiang Kai Check, he was initiated a Freemason apparently in the "Shanghai" lodge in San Francisco. He was probably punished for wanting to remain Chinese before being Communo-globalist. The one they chose was Mao Tse-tung, he exterminated between 25 and 26 million Chinese the equivalent of the population of contemporary Canada or France in 1789.

I strongly suspect I.P.R to be still active behind communist countries under another pseudonym. Among other things, she is probably continuing her work of positioning agents in Communist governments while directing her technocrats who are graduates of insiders' college to high government positions for the Illuminati.

Regarding the allusions made by Saint Yves D'Alveydre on a possible military action in Europe, for my part, I think that if Hitler was a big threat, among other things if he succeeded in winning over Islam to his cause, then China would have intervened in Europe. But Hitler could not rally Arab countries to his cause. Through the reaction of Islam, we can understand that Kabbalah which unites all Freemasonry homogenize the different religions of the world to the exception of Christianity as we shall see in Chapter 5.

For now, I would just note that the Establishment with postwar modern weaponry decided not to allow military expansion in China, but to provide for its economic vitality. In this respect England gave an economic force enviable by all countries to China on 1 July 1997, its internal policies on childbirth and blood scandal at the expense of atrocities limit its population. It is about to decrease significantly in population over the coming decades. Should a world government come into existence. This shall be applied through the United Nations demographic policy substantially identical vis-à-vis China and possibly India.

#### **f) The European Union<sup>124</sup> <sup>125</sup>**

I would say that the EU is the outcome of Synarchy or that it is Synarchy. Already, the King of Bohemia Georges Podiebrad (1420-1471), proposed a European Confederation. Then in 1620, the Duke Scully devised a very Christian Council of Europe. "But the conception dates from "Comenius", for Saint-Yves D'Alveydre citing the works of Comenius said: "The fall of the Papal

---

<sup>124</sup> *Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Editions, Saint-Cénére, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 45, P 109-111, P 117-118, P 138 full text among these pages.

<sup>125</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, P 224 and P 270-271 full text in these pages.

Empire will pave the way for the birth of a secular European federation ". We now know that the Catholic world was rocked with the French Revolution, Italy, Russia and the Hohenzollern Empire.

The thesis "United States of Europe" is of American origin. Indeed, the Establishment designs internal organization leading to world government like the United States. From the beginning of SYNARCHIE, Saint Yves D'Alveydre in the codification of the Synarchic Covenant, cast doubts on the leading ideas from America in 1890, and said:

« Les États-Unis d'Europe sont-ils ce désiratum? Pour les Américains : Oui. Pour les Européens : Non. Ce serait une singulière méthode de conciliation que de proposer aux souverains cette abdication qui du reste n'avancerait pas la question. Les États-généraux d'Europe synarchiquement constitués répondent seuls au desideratum qui est posé.

La loi sociale dont ils sont la forme appartient à la révélation, au livre saint de toutes les Églises du monde comme à la Science historique pure et simple ».

"Is the United States of Europe this desiratum? To Americans: Yes. For Europeans: No. This would be a singular method of conciliation than to propose to sovereign states this abdication which would not advance the issue. The General Assemblies of Europe synarchically constituted are answering the posited desideratum alone.

Social law which is in their image belongs to the revelation of the holy book of all the churches of the world as in pure and simple historical science,"

In this confusion, after the war of 1914-1918, the High Finance saw it appropriate to form the United States of Europe. It is in this vein that the Earl F\* Coudenhove-Kalergi spokesman for the Synarchy in Europe, formed the "Pan European Movement," in 1922. In 1923, the "Pan-European Union" in 1924 "The Pan-European Review". In 1926, the first Congress of the Pan-European Union took place. It was quickly surrounded by the F \* Benes, F \* Nitti, F \* Paul-Henry Spaak<sup>126</sup>, Belgian Minister for Foreign Affairs from 1936 to 1947 and Prime Minister

---

<sup>126</sup> Paul-Henri Spaak, father of the European Common Market and NATO Secretary General, described "The Beast" in Chapter 4 as a central computer located in Brussels. He said in one of his speeches: we do not want another committee, we have too many now. What we want is a man of such stature that is able to gain the allegiance of all



1947-1948; F \* Aristide Briand, President of the Pan-European famous memorandum, sent to twenty-six governments (1928). Then, in 1930, he founded the European Federation of Parliamentarians and in 1936, the Young Europe Union and many others. Of course, money is not a problem. It is a matter of implanting in the people the idea of a European Union, using different movements that make their way if supported financially. According to the logic of SYNARCHY, they include in the Plan of 9 July 1934, of the Synarchic Covenant:

#### Section 581

In this sense, the French Synarchic Empire is needed by us as the primary factor of the Federative Union of Europe.

#### Section 582

Sooner or later, the European Union must get out a proper balance and a synarchic combination of imperial origin: French, British, Roman, Germanic and Slavic involved in today's Europe.

The wheels implanted for a European Union, is paramount for a world government. The launched movement would have been interrupted, at least during the (1939-1945) war. As already in 1936, it became obvious for the SYNARCHY that war would be inevitable. The freemasons began to prepare their offensive vis-à-vis Nazism.

In 1946, the F \* Winston Churchill expressed the need for a "United States of Europe", obviously pushed by the ESTABLISHMENT. In 1948, the Organization for European Economic Cooperation (OEEC) was created to allocate funds under the Marshall Plan of U.S. aid for the reconstruction of Europe. Surely, George Catlett Marshall was a member of the Council on Foreign Relations. What better strategy did he have to administer the fund apart from creating a basis of understanding between "Free", countries resulting of course in a stronger organization? Arriva Robert Schuman, French Foreign Minister, part of the Bilderberg Group, on May 9, 1950, proposed pooling of resources of coal and steel, and then he exclaimed:

---

people and to remove us from the economic doldrums in which we plunged in. Send us such a man; be he god or devil, we will welcome him.

Europe will not be formed at once, or constructed by everyone. It will be done through concrete achievements by first creating solidarity. The gathering of European nations requires that the age-old opposition of France and Germany be eliminated.

Of the five founders of the Economic Community of Coal and Steel, three men are certainly to be recognized as members of the SYNARCHY: Robert Schuman Paul-Henri Spaak, Jean Monnet, head of the Anglo-Canadian Telephone of the Automatic Electric Co. He was president of the first common organization: the High Authority of ECSC from 1952 to 1955. Naturally, there was infiltration of synarchic officials. On 25 March 1957 the Treaty of Rome created the European Economic Community (Common Market) and the European Atomic Energy Community (EURATOM). Six countries were signatories: Germany, Belgium, France, Italy and Luxembourg and the Netherlands. On 1 January 1973, Denmark, United Kingdom and Ireland joined. On March 13, 1979, to ensure monetary stability for European currencies, ECU (European Currency Unit) was born. What a coincidence! The ancient Roman Empire had the same currency, ECU. You see how prophecies are meaningful. On 1 January 1981, Greece added. In January 1986 the members increased with Spain and Portugal. The Treaty on European Union was signed in Maastricht February 7, 1992. Then the European Union witnessed another growth again on 1 January 1995 with Austria, Finland and Sweden joining. The European Union on 1 January 2005 was composed of 27 members States.

<i>entry into the EU eb...</i>		<i>Country</i>	<i>surface area km<sup>2</sup></i>	<i>population</i>	<i>capital</i>
1958	B	Belgium	30 500	10 292 000	Brussels
1958	D	Germany	357 050	82 360 000	Berlin
1958	F	France	547 026	59 343 000	Paris
1958	I	Italy	301 225	58 018 000	Rome

1958	L	Luxembourg	2 586	447 000	Luxembourg
1958	NL	Netherlands	34 000	16 101 000	Amsterdam
1973	DK	Denmark	43 070	5 367 000	Copenhagen
1973	GB	United Kingdom	244 046	60 075 000	London
1973	IRL	Ireland	70 280	3 873 000	Dublin
1981	GR	Greece	131 944	10 596 000	Athens
1986	E	Spain	504 782	40 428 000	Madrid
1986	P	Portugal	92 080	10 303 000	Lisbon
1995	A	Austria	83 850	8 140 000	Vienna
1995	FIN	Finland	337 010	5 195 000	Helsinki
1995	S	Sweden	449 960	8 910 000	Stockholm
2004	BG	Bulgaria	110 993	8 107 000	Sofia
2004	CY	Cyprus	9 251	677 000	Nicosia
2004	CZ	Czech	78 864	10 274 000	Prague
2004	EST	Estonia	45 227	1 361 000	Tallinn
2004	H	Hungary	93 030	9 973 000	Budapest
2004	LT	Lithuania	65 301	3 681 000	Vilnius
2004	LV	Latvia	64 500	2 351 000	Riga
2004	M	Malta	316	384 000	Valletta
2004	PL	Poland	312 685	38 629 000	Warsaw
2004	RO	Romania	238 391	22 390 000	Bucharest
2004	SK	Slovakia	49 035	5 403 000	Bratislava

2004	SLO	Slovenia	20 251	1 995 000	Ljubljana
------	-----	----------	--------	-----------	-----------

And those remaining....

<i>entry into the EU</i>		<i>Country</i>	<i>surface area km<sup>2</sup></i>	<i>population</i>	<i>capital</i>
200?	TR	Turkey	779 452	71 200 000	Ankara
?	AL	Albania	28478	3 100 000	Tirana
?	BY	Belarus	207 600	9 900 000	Minsk
?	BA	Bosnia - Herzegovina	51 129	3 900 000	Sarajevo
?	HR	Croatia	56 538	4 300 000	Zagreb
?	IS	Iceland	103 033	300 000	Reykjavik
?	MK	Macedonia	25 713	2 100 000	Skopje
?	MD	Moldavia	33 700	4 300 000	Chisinau
?	N	Norway	323 877	4 600 000	Oslo
?	CH	Switzerland	41 288	7 300 000	Bern
?	UA	Ukraine	603 700	47 800 000	Kiev
?	YU	Yugoslavia	99 580	10 700 000	Belgrade
			<b>1 574 636</b>	<b>98 300 000</b>	

### **Detailed information on the expansion**

In 1995, the total population was 370.7 million being 40% more than the U.S., and 3,241,800 square kilometers, three times less than the United States. There are 11 official languages.

Willfully, I will only give a rudimentary overview of its operation. In order that the reader may see its integration, I have consciously underscored the year 1995. In 1995 its operation was relatively easy; the European Council is composed of Heads of State and Governments of member countries of the European Union and the President of the European Commission. The Council of Ministers consists of representatives of each Member State entitled to take engagements for the Government of his country. The composition changes depending on the agenda. If the subject of discussion concerns agriculture, it will be done by the ministers of agriculture, if it concerns finance, it will be done by Finance Ministers, and so on. The difficulty of the European Union has never resided in its politicians, because they are almost all directly or indirectly related to Synarchy, if not to the ESTABLISHMENT or to the BILDERBERG Group, but in public support. Now that they got it, they shall single handedly decide the destiny of the European Union. The headquarters is in Brussels and the European Parliament is elected by European citizens for a term of 5 years. The parliament has 626 parliamentarians. When the Parliament sits in Strasbourg, they review proposals, guidelines and European regulations which they accept, modify or deny.

### **Other agencies**

The **European Commission** is made up of twenty (20) Commissioners. Its role is to propose joint projects and after the decision of the European Union Council, it ensures their execution.

The **European Court of Justice** consists of 15 judges, assisted by Advocates-General, appointed for six (6) years by mutual agreement of the Governments. That is to say, do just what you are asked to otherwise...

The **European Court of Auditors** is composed of 15 members appointed for six (6) years, by unanimous decision of the Council of the Union and after consulting the European Parliament. My remarks are identical to that of the European Court of Justice (do just what you are asked to otherwise...) The Court of Auditors monitors the legality and regularity of receipts and community expenditures.

## **Advisory bodies**

**The Economic and Social Committee (ESC)** has 222 members representing workers, businesses, artisans, families and consumers in each country of the Union. There are honest people with different perspectives and synarchic officials with identical views and with their charisma and their personalities they divide members. Especially since the selected groups are naturally in opposition. The Economic and Social Committee is consulted before the adoption of many decisions. This means that if Technocrats do a good job the majority will be in favor of the decision of the SYNARCHY, otherwise they are only consulted.

The **Regional Committee** is appointed for six (6) years with 222 representatives of municipalities, departments and regions of Europe, they are consulted by the Council of the Union or the European Commission in all matters affecting regional interests (same opinion as that of the Economic Committee).

## **Financial agencies**

**The European Investment Bank (EIB)** is composed of Member States of the Union European. The EIB's mission is to support a balanced development of the Union through the funding of long-term projects, such as the development of trans-European transport networks and telecommunications.

**The European Monetary Institute (EMI) and the future European Central Bank** In 1999, a European System of Central Banks (ESCB) and European Central Bank (ECB) were responsible for issuing and managing the single European currency, the euro. This last procedure was observed in February 2002. Located in Frankfurt, this institution succeeded the European Monetary Institute (EMI) and independently controls the monetary policy of the European Union. Its mission is to fight inflation, ensure price stability, manage the euro and the supply of money, lead foreign exchange transactions, hold and manage the official exchange reserves of member states and ensure the smooth functioning of payment systems.

It is certain that the "United States of Europe", as formerly called by the Illuminati, now the European Union under SYNARCHY, had to have a Central Bank. Within the European Union, there is a hidden central computer called the beast, which records births, existing since 1960 in Brussels. The beast being the Antichrist should not be confused with the appellation of their occult computer; it will cause all big and small to receive a mark. Moreover, we shall also see in Chapter 5, how powerful the Beast is. The beast coming out of an eleventh country will take control of the world government. The music of "Ode to Joy" prelude to the 4th movement of the IXth Symphony of F \* Ludwig van Beethoven is a purely Masonic work.

## g) Decolonization <sup>127 128</sup>

The colonization of a people always started with religious support. This was the method used by England, France, Belgium, United States, Holland, and various other countries, upon their arrival in new territories. They soon made this assimilation in customary exchange between good and evil, proper and improper. The people could trade among themselves. In Indeed, the stage of acceptance of Christianity was paramount, because knowledge of language, manners and social acceptance, determined the future step in colonization. All these exchange of knowledge was crucial in learning and the integration of a mode of life.

This ongoing or exceeded stage saw the start of economic lift, exploitation of natural resources, building of infrastructure and the setting up of different status among the colonized, always maintaining good relations as far as possible. But initially there was a desire to make or give the best of both civilizations. Crudely, I described it as colonialism. Clearly, in some cases, failure ensued, as in the case of Indians in America.

Postwar colonies witnessed growth; this suggests why it became normal for a colony to become a country itself. Having created a natural link between the former colonies which were now countries, logically, there was bound to be continuity in the domain of trade and economic activities between the new country and the colonizing country. This would have been a natural transition or a fair return.

However, in most cases, this did not happen. The money minded men saw that the colonies were rich and introduced the expression self-determination. This notion hid a dictatorial government principle based on feelings of contempt for human species and a cruel hypocrisy. It is under the principle of "free determination" unanimously invoked by the lodges of Geneva in 1920. For example here is the Martinist thought:

---

<sup>127</sup> *Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Editions, Saint-Cénére, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 45, P77 and P121-126 full text in these pages.

<sup>128</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, P 207-217 full text of these pages.

« Le premier degré de la souveraineté des peuples,  
c'est leur impuissance ou leur servitude »  
(Claude de Saint-Martin, 1797)

"The first stage of the peoples' sovereignty, is their inability  
or servitude  
(Claude de Saint-Martin, 1797)

Anti-colonialism has a hostile policy towards Catholicism and Christianity in the spirit of the ILLUMINATI. During the Second World War, SYNARCHY infiltrated into the Moroccan troops which were among the French army (Tabor), in the Algerian battalions, Tunisians and Senegalese sharpshooters who fought for France, the idealism of "free determination". Probably all postwar revolts were caused by the determination to get fundraisers to appropriate the wealth of the colonies; and Freemasonry to destroy the Catholics islets. Specifically, there is no better way for people to abandon faith<sup>129</sup>, as wars and revolutions. It is in this vein that Saint-Yves D'Alveydre wrote in 1884:

À travers notre civilisation dévastée, les fruits sanglants  
de ce fanatisme et de cette politique internationale et  
coloniale seront foulés au pied comme une vendange  
abominable.

Through our devastated civilization, the bloody fruits of  
this fanaticism and of the international colonial policy  
will be trampled upon like an abominable harvest.

Meanwhile Otto Kahn identified with Schiff, Kuhn, Loeb and the Rhine-Westphalia union as Financiers of the Russian Revolution of 1917, said:

"A French wealth that is not well appreciated is her great colonial  
empire. They represent, just as other French colonies, a very beneficial  
field of action..."

Also we read in the Synarchic Covenant # 106:

---

<sup>129</sup> The term abandon the Faith does not mean one can lose his salvation. This means that the previous Christian community with the horrors of war became lukewarm, and the next generations left to themselves, without a guide, lost faith.



"The capitalist and colonial era is over for France. 1922! ... Let's put aside capitalism. But Indochina! Tunisia! Morocco! Guinea! Black Africa! Algeria? These ultimate disposals leave no doubt to intelligent people on the diligent execution of the instruction. "

The Dutch, Belgian (Congo), American, British colonies were going to follow suit. In this regard, the U.S. Congress declared, following the loss of their colonies:

« L'ère capitaliste et coloniale est révolue pour la France. 1922 !... Laissons de côté le capitalisme. Mais l'Indochine? la Tunisie? le Maroc? la Guinée? L'Afrique noire? L'Algérie? Ces liquidations ne peuvent laisser aucun doute à des gens intelligents sur la diligente exécution de la consigne. »

The loss of our African colonies is spearheaded by the works of one Irving Brown duly assigned by the CFR, His bosses and accomplices in the company of the late Mrs. Eleanor Roosevelt<sup>130</sup>, backing revolutionary movements there in the name of "Universal Intelligence" ... and safe-deposit box.

The CENTRAL INTELLIGENCE AGENCY (CIA): talking about it is to evoke Allen Dulles (CFR), who was its leader from 1953 to 1961, behind which Irving Brown and his work appears SETTLEMENT OF FRENCH AFRICA. This same policy of integration of the CIA as a satellite of the Illuminati has always persisted beyond Dulles.

After "decolonization", the fundraisers recolonized<sup>131</sup> with capital under "free" institutions to ensure the benefit of destabilization operations. Among other things, they jointly exploited the Sahara.

Nowadays (1997), is there not a policy of assimilation of Christian masses by mass immigration in Canada? This "free trade", is only of benefit to the United States, and requires mass immigration to sustain our economy. This lack of respect towards the Judeo-Christian population

---

<sup>130</sup> Eleanor Roosevelt was the wife of the late President F \* Franklin D. Roosevelt.

<sup>131</sup> Other References: Jacques Bergier and Bernard Thomas - The Secret War of Oil, Henry Coston - Europe of Bankers, Christian Jelen and Olivier Oudiette - The Industrial War, Peter North - Flights of the Vultures on Congo.

when dealing with immigration policies is legally supported by the Charter of human rights. Who is the architect of this work?

#### h) **Vietnam**<sup>132</sup>

The Vietnam War was psychological, both in its horror as well as its consequences on the people: American and Vietnamese. President Ngo Dinh Diem, contrary to what the media of the other world wrote inaccurately and even slandering in their campaign of sabotage, the government resisted from the Sino-communist pressure in the spirit and with the forces of the people, moreover, by putting the Civic efficiency of Catholicism on the limelight. After becoming a French colony in 1857, Indochina, rich in natural resources, quickly became coveted by fundraisers.

Thus, the High Finance and SYNARCHY worked out their plan to destroy two nations. Obviously, the fathers of the (1964-1972) generation despite their participation in the Second World War came back knowing that they had participated in a clean war. They contributed greatly to preserve democracy. So they came to conserve Christian and biblical values in their homes, and to instill them in their children. Besides in the sixties, the U.S. population was in favor of reading the Bible at 80%, in schools. So the war became necessary in the ideology of martinism to eliminate a Christian community which had become too powerful and opposing the Great Work to be done.

In Vietnam, President Diem resisted communism, while preserving the Catholic values transmitted by France in 1857. For SYNARCHY and International Bankers an opportunity for the advancement of the World Government was underway. First, destroy the government of Ngo Dinh Diem and weaken Christianity in the U.S, through the psychological extermination of the future faith of the next generations due to effects of war. Secondly, help the U.S. government to indebt itself by prolonging the conflict; this by giving neither weapons nor the budget nor the necessary permits to quickly win this war. Also, they made sure to give large military and weaponry contracts to the ILLUMINATI. Within one (1) year term, young people were ordered

---

<sup>132</sup>*Soon a World Government? A great one and against the Church* by Pierre Virion, Saint-Michel Editions, Saint-Cénérec, ccp, Rennes 2074-79, P 77, P 122 and P 145 full text in these pages.

by conscription to fight in Vietnam, the American students in campus revolted. Americans powerlessly watched the disruption of families and painful rifts. This situation seriously accounted for the abandonment of the faith by future generations.

In this way the F\*Dwight D. Eisenhower, having about one hundred and one(101) ILLUMINATI under his government and boasting himself of being one gave key positions to men of the Organization. Thus Eisenhower, in October 1954, provided direct assistance to Diem to defeat the French government. Then, Christian Herter (CFR) (1959-4-12) replaced John Dulles as Secretary of State; Lyman Lemnitzer (CFR) (1959-7-1) became head of Army and Chairman (October 1960), Thomas Gates (1959-12-1) received the post of defense Secretary, George Decker (October 1960) went as Chief of the Army, David Shoup assumed the position of the USMC (United States Marine Corps), Lionel McGarr became Commander of the Military Assistance Group-Vietnam. In October 1960, Kennedy elected President of the United States had as Secretary of State Dean Rusk (CFR), Defense Secretary Robert McNamara (CFR), and National Security Adviser McGeorge Bundy CFR). It was Robert McNamara who purged the army of patriotic American Generals; moreover, he was a zealous worshipper of the "Universal Intelligence" cult, their religion. Allen Dulles, the CIA chief, used to supply the Kennedy Administration with information that was often biased then, under the proposal of his advisors: Rusk, McNamara and Bundy, Kennedy (CFR) began tense negotiations with the Diem Administration of Vietnam.

Certainly, John F. Kennedy was part of the Council on Foreign Relations, but as Dynasty, he was not the slave of International Bankers. Also, he could rely on his own funds to start a second term as president. Other nominations took place under his term of office; Earl Wheeler and Maxwell Taylor (1962-10-1) became respectively Army Chief and Chairman in place of George Lyman Lemnitzer and Decker, David Mc Donald (August 1963) assumed the post of Chief of Naval Operations. Undeniably, they embarked at the Council on Foreign Relations to make negotiations difficult between the two countries. In due course, there were missiles in Cuba in October 1962. Kennedy had short-circuited the Illuminati in his plan of deception by the nuclear threat, by not allowing the installation of missiles in Cuba. Obviously, the management of weapons by the United Nations was going to be a failure. Moreover, Kennedy refused to rush the U.S. into war. Since September 1963, despite the tense situation, artificially

Kennedy lowered the role of the U.S. military to that of support or assistance to Vietnam. As this situation displeased the ILLUMINATI and jeopardized their goal, on the advice of its diplomats (CFR) Kennedy agreed to send (1963-8-22) Henry Cabot Lodge (CFR) to put Vietnam in better shape. He and the CIA planned the coup. The regime of Diem collapsed under their common work. Diem and his brother were assassinated on November 1 1963 and on November 22, 1963 John F. Kennedy was shot.

John F. Kennedy as President of the United States was about to conduct a deep household clean-up. It is believed that this dynasty was ejected from the ILLUMINATI, and that is why, a Kennedy will NEVER ascend the throne.

Saïgon 10 septembre 1963

Selon l'Agence Associated Press, M. Dan Duc Koi, directeur général adjoint de l'Information, ancien consul général à Bangkok, ainsi que d'autres fonctionnaires auraient disparu au cours d'une « purge » entreprise à la suite des accusations portées contre la C.I.A. d'avoir formé un complot pour renverser le gouvernement Diem.  
(Le Figaro 11 septembre 1963)

Saigon 10 September 1963

According to the Associated Press, Mr. Dan Duke Koi Deputy Director General of Information, former Consul General in Bangkok, and other Officials reportedly disappeared during a "Purge" of the company following accusations against the CIA for forming a conspiracy to overthrow the Diem government.  
(Le Figaro, September 11, 1963)

Lyndon B. Johnson, Vice-President became President on the day of the death of his predecessor, went forward with the opinion of the Council on Foreign Relations until the declaration of war. In this sense, it is interesting to highlight this newspaper article. In Le Figaro, January 5 1966 a long article by Walter Lippman became significant. Walter Lippman "Bilderberger" (1957), an influential left-wing journalist, but also a member of "The Establishment" noting Johnson's indecision between negotiation and offensive in Vietnam wrote:

« Tandis que les avions prendront l'air, que les troupes iront de l'avant et que le Congrès votera les Crédits, le Président découvrira en effet que la confiance dans son gouvernement SE TROUVERA PROFONDEMENT

ÉBRANLÉE, À MOINS QU'IL N'AIT PRÉCISÉ SES  
CONDITIONS DE PAIX.

...ses grandes réalisations à l'intérieur des États-Unis  
sont menacées par son échec à faire la paix au Vietnam.  
Il est sur le point de lancer son pays dans une  
GRANDE GUERRE qui durera des années sans même  
apporter l'espoir d'une solution rationnelle.  
Nos activités au Vietnam ont amené l'U.R.S.S. à  
s'opposer à nous et, pour peu que nous gravissions  
suffisamment d'échelons, elles le conduiront au conflit  
ouvert sous une forme ou sous une autre. »

"While the aircraft will take the air, that the troops  
go ahead and that Congress would vote appropriations,  
the President shall discover that trust in his  
Government is deeply RATTLED, UNLESS HE  
STATED HIS CONDITIONS FOR PEACE.

... His great accomplishments within the U.S. are  
threatened by his failure to make peace in Vietnam.  
He is about to launch his country in a GREAT WAR  
that will last for years without even bringing hope of a  
rational solution. Our activities in Vietnam led the  
USSR to oppose us, and as long as we ascend  
sufficient levels, they will lead to open conflict in one  
form or another. "

Reading between the lines, this means to Johnson, go to war, but do not exceed limits specified in the conflict; a long war without hope of a rational solution. Richard Milhous Nixon put a final end to the Vietnam War in late 1973. Early 1974, he succumbed to the Watergate scandal, he was the first American President to resign dishonorably. However, his commitment to claim the gold convertibility in 1971, even though in juxtaposition with the policy of "Bilderberg Group" spared the USA from bankruptcy. Globalism postponed, he managed to give a respite to Christianity. This gesture of ending the slaughter in Vietnam, a burden that American families and youth were finding it hard to bear, earned him the humiliation. The ILLUMINATI would have liked this war to last longer. His second term having begun, he would have forgotten his promise. Probably, through these concrete gestures, Richard M. Nixon emerged as the greatest President of the United States of America. Obviously, this war quenched could not turn on again. The American people would be appalled.

i) **American politics**

It would be interesting over time to examine the number of U.S. Presidents who were freemasons<sup>133</sup> or members of the Council on Foreign Relations. As far as they could reveal the identity of their followers in public, at least from 1945, this book being an evangelical tool, we shall not go beyond 1974. But it is obvious that after 1974, the world political situation has not improved.

NAME	DATES	FREEMASON	CFR OR OTHERS
George Washington	1789-1797	<b>F*</b>	
John Adams	1797-1801		
Thomas Jefferson	1801-1809	<b>NOTE 1</b>	
James Madison	1809-1817		
James Monroe	1817-1825	<b>F*</b>	
John Q. Adams	1825-1829		
Andrew Jackson	1829-1837	<b>F*</b>	
Martin Van Buren	1837-1841		
Wm H. Harrison	1841		
John Tyler *	1841-1845		
James K. Polk	1845-1849	<b>F*</b>	
Zachary Taylor	1849-1850		
Millard Fillmore	1850-1853		
Franklin Pierce	1853-1857		
James Buchanan	1857-1861	<b>F*</b>	
Abraham Lincoln	1861-1865	<b>NOTE 2</b>	
Andrew Johnson*	1865-1869	<b>F*</b>	
Ulysse S. Grant	1869-1877	<b>F*</b>	
Rutherford B. Hayes	1877-1881		

---

<sup>133</sup> Freemasons Templars , the transmission of mystery by Michael Baigent / Richard Leigh, Edition of Rocher, Jean-Paul Bertrand Publishers, copyright 1991, ISBN 2268 01100 3. P-318.

James A. Garfield	1881	<b>F*</b>	
Chester A. Arthur*	1881-1885		
Grover Cleveland	1885-1889		
Benjamin Harrison	1889-1893		
Grover Cleveland	1893-1897		
William McKinley	1897-1901	<b>F*</b>	
Theodore Roosevelt*	1901-1909	<b>F*</b>	
William H. Taft	1909-1913	<b>F*</b>	
Woodrow Wilson	1913-1921	<b>F*</b>	
Warren G. Harding	1921-1923	<b>F*</b>	
Calvin Coolidge*	1923-1929		<b>C.F.R</b>
Herbert Hoover	1929-1933		<b>C.F.R</b>
Franklin D. Roosevelt	1933-1945	<b>F*</b>	
Harry S. Truman*	1945-1953	<b>F*</b>	<b>C.F.R</b>
Dwight D Eisenhower	1953-1961	<b>F*</b>	<b>C.F.R</b>
John F. Kennedy	1961-1963	<b>NOTE 3</b>	<b>C.F.R</b>
Lyndon B. Johnson*	1963-1969	<b>F*</b>	
Richard M. Nixon	1969-1974	<b>NOTE 4</b>	<b>C.F.R</b>

## NOTE 1

It has never been proven that Thomas Jefferson was a Freemason. However, he did not believe in the God of Christians. His beliefs were directed towards a "Universal God" good. He had many similarities with Kabbalah. Indeed, this<sup>134</sup> is what Thomas Jefferson wrote to his predecessor John Adams<sup>134</sup>: "I sincerely believe like you that banking institutions are more dangerous than standing armies."

---

<sup>134</sup> G. P. Putnam & Sons, New York, 1899, Vol. X, p. 31.

**NOTE 2**

Abraham Lincoln applied for membership in Tyrian Lodge of Springfield, but it was a political trick to garner support and votes. No response was given to his membership request. However, during the Civil War (1862-1865) many senior positions were occupied by Masons.

**NOTE 3**

John F. Kennedy resigned from the Council on Foreign Relations.

**NOTE 4**

Richard M. Nixon as President of the United States did not want his name to be associated with the Council on Foreign Relations. His name did not feature on any record after his accession to power. Some rumors say he resigned from there in 1962. However, he maintained in his administration at least seventy members of the CFR

From August 22, 1973, the policy of the Council on Foreign Relations became the U.S. government's official policy. This means that the Council on Foreign Relations prescribes U.S. policy. The President-elect cannot be an obstacle for them. The ILLUMINATI has achieved its objective of controlling world currency and determining International policies. It is not impossible that U.S. presidents may not have been regular members of the Freemasonry, but were nevertheless part of the movement with the status of the so-called irregular Freemasons. This means that by their ancestral allegiance to the "Universal Intelligence" or by a secret initiation into the High Lodge, he was catapulted to the post.

Obviously, the advisors of our presidents are not from inferior lodges. To be part of the Council on Foreign Relations and its satellites, the initiated member must come from the Upper Lodge and must have a high degree of wisdom. Spiritual progress in Martinism, Luciferianism or Satanism is proportionate to the degree of wisdom in the High superior Lodges. The fifth chapter will explain in more detail the system of Freemasonry.

From 1900 to 1974, the advisers of our presidents were High insiders; they were either Freemasons or members of the Council on Foreign Relations and its satellites. Most people that I will mention are of late. The fact that their names feature in this book does not have anything to do with their spiritual orientation. The soul can only be seen by God alone. Some of them joined this group politically to highlight biblical prophecies.



Besides the International Bankers and the Presidents that have been mentioned, here are the technocrats who were part of the ILLUMINATI in the USA directly or indirectly, be it politically, militarily or otherwise, we find<sup>135</sup> Nelson Aldrich, Henry P. Davidson, Benjamin Strong, Frank A. Vanderlip, A. Piatt Andrew, Cleveland H. Dodge, Edward Mandell House, Williard Straight, John Hay, Cornelius Vanderbilt, Michael Whitney, Louis Brandeis, Stephen Wise, Eugene Meyer, chairman of the Federal Reserve Board, Nathan Straus, Walter Lippmann, Norman Thomas, Allen Dulles, John Foster Dulles, Christian A. Herter, Tasker H. Bliss, Jerome D. Greene, Archibald Cary Coolidge, Whitney H. Shepardson, James T. Shotwell, Frank Altschul, CA President General American Investors Corporation, Arthur H. Dean, Ambassador of Korea Thomas, K. Finletter, U.S. ambassador to NATO, William C. Foster, director of the U. S. Arm Control & Disarmament Agency, Averell Harriman, ambassador to Russia and Great - Britain, Phillip Jessup, Judge of the Supreme Court, John J. McCloy, president of the World Bank, High Commissioner in Germany, Chairman of the Board of Directors of the Chase Manhattan Bank, Adlai Stevenson, U.S. ambassador to the UN Clarence Douglas Dillon Robert S. McNamara, World Bank president in 1968, Dean Rusk, George C. Marshall, Arthur Goldberg, who was appointed judge of the Supreme Court, Henry A. Kissinger, who was a Soviet agent, the U.S. government knew before it even before he occupied the high post, Israel Epstein, Frederick Vanderbilt Field, Alger Hiss, Harry Dexter White, Robert Barnett, Ralph Bunche, Harlan Cleveland, Joseph E. Johnson, Bernard Noble, Edwin O. Reischauer, William T. Stone, Sumner Welles, Charles Yost, Eustace Seligman, Walter H. Wheeler, John W. Nason, Gerald F. Beal, Emile E. Soubry, Benjamin J. Battenwieser, Joseph E. Johnson, Harold F. Linder, A. William Loos, Henry Siegbert, Andrew G. Carey, Paul G. Hoffman, Patrick M. Malin, Reinhold Niebuhr, Louis Fraina, Marquis Childs, Chester Bowles, John K. Galbraith, Arthur M. Schlesinger, H. Humphrey, Jacob K. Javits, Franklin H. Little, Lason Arthur, John W. Gardner, Frank Altschul, J. Richardson Dilworth, Sol Linowitz, Thomas Watson, Donald K. David McGeorge Bundy, David E. Bell, Robert A. Lovett, William C. Bullitt, Leo Polovsky, Dean Acheson, Edward R. Stettinius, Harry Hopkins, Charles Bohlen, George W. Ball, Gale McGee, J. William Fulbright, Thomas L. Chadbourne, Reeve Schley, Nicolas Kagan, Walt Whitman Rostow, Jerome Wiesener,

---

<sup>135</sup> *A Hidden Hand Leads* by Jacques Bordiot, copyright The French Bookstore, 1974-1976, P 1-286 full name among these pages.

E. A. Guillon, Harold Brown, Kermit Gordon, James R. Killian, Lauris Norstad, Cyrus Vance, David E. Lilienthal, Gerald Smith, Paul Nize, Llewellyn Thompson, Harold Brown, Daniel Ellsberg, J. Irving Miller, Arthur Schlesinger Jr., Roscoe Drummond, editor of the Christian Science Monitor, Jacob Javits, Walter Reuther, Helmut Sonnenfeldt, James Sutterlin, David Henry Proper, Boris H. Klosson. It is the longest sentence I have ever seen. This was only the tip of the iceberg. There are between 1400 and 2500 members at the Council on Foreign Relations, depending on the era, occupying top jobs in American politics. That does not include its satellites and Central Intelligence Agency (CIA), an illuminist bastion. Nowadays, it is not surprising that most individuals held in high esteem by our media on the socio-cultural, political, religious, military, police and strategic posts in the structures of the system are likely Illuminists. NASA, the CIA, FBI, UN, and NATO; all the major spy networks or organizations working for Globalization are under the total control of the Illuminati.

### **What remains to be done for a world government?**

September 11, 2001 marked the end of the United States of America as a nation that monopolizes world money. The central fundraisers had made a lot of profits on North American scholarships even to the naivety of Goymys; that is to say Mr. and Mrs. everybody not belonging to the Illuminati. They had considerably lowered retirement funds, Mutual funds, holdings of ordinary investors and other portfolios. The destruction of the World Trade Center was to destroy evidence and falsified financial analysis tracks which could explain the "technology crash in 2000." In short, wipe any traces to the source of that mass spell. It was also a strong symbolic signal from freemasonry, martinism, marking the end of United States' monetary power.

Of course, already "the union of the international bankers' and their agency had begun to move their capital to the "Great Synarchy" or the European Union. Thereby leaving their politicians to teach the American people that henceforth, in order to survive European tariff barriers, North America had to adjust to a war economy.

The name of Osama Bin Laden and the Al Qaeda organization arose with major media impact whereas, people occupying important posts in the system allowed three planes to deviate from their path without reacting. Similarly, four days to the request of a second term of office as president, George W. Bush was in difficulties, with the risk of losing elections. On 30 October

2004, Osama bin Laden came from nowhere with strong media impact and pushed all indecisive electorates behind Bush.

What is challenging in all this drama of the Illuminati is to create a PAN-ARAB TRANSNATIONAL, the only part of the world they do not control. They share power with the Islamic religious world.

Mitigate the rivalry between the two sons of Abraham, Isaac, the legitimate son, the Jewish nation, from where the Messiah came, and Ishmael the illegitimate son of the maidservant, the Arab nation from which emerged a false prophet Muhammad. Yet Christ is clear about his ministry and everlasting priesthood.

Jesus Christ the same yesterday, today and forever.  
(Hebrews 13: 8)

Jesus will NEVER have a substitute; His priesthood is perfect and everlasting because he is the Son God, the Holy One. He who takes away the sins of the world; the Holy propitiation for all the sins of the world

According to Satanic plan, controlling this region of the world is paramount. They were willing to sacrifice more than 1 billion people to achieve their goal. The United States Army that has become that of the "New World Order" was preparing in June 2002 to invade Iraq. Pakistan strongly armed with nuclear missiles having a population of 250 million inhabitants mostly Muslim pointed its nuclear force towards North America. Immediately, India with 850 million inhabitants, part of the Commonwealth and the international Masonic "Round Table" retorted by pointing its nuclear missiles at Pakistan. Suddenly, Pakistan turned its nuclear missiles at India. Just to the North of India is a very populated country, China with a billion 300 million people. The consequences of a nuclear war would have been disastrous. According to some estimation it was considered at the time that about 500 million people would have died and one billion would have suffered from the effects of radiation. The masters of this dark world were ready to sacrifice all those lives and cause the fall of the United States of America to achieve the objective of the Great Work.

Among their desires is that of reducing the population of the earth and to weaken Christian populations by various methods such as: AIDS, bird flu and others. It is amazing how animals get diseases. Curiously, they may replace with humans this time. Perhaps the many specialists in biological weapons are working for the cause the ILLUMINATI. Africa will be ravaged by AIDS, Asia also with the help of senior State officials authorizing the exchange of blood plates, Europe and America with viruses such as bird flu and others.

It would also not be impossible that some North American and European cities explode on the pretext of international terrorism. Indeed, during the Cold War, the USSR developed a nuclear bomb transportable in a suitcase and non detectable by ordinary verification systems and airport customs. With the subtlety of this weapon, a person could arrive with the suitcase in a populated city, set it on and go in peace. With the fall of the USSR during the counting of nuclear weapons, 13 suitcases of such bombs were missing. Where did they go to?

In 1994, two Rwandan tribes Hutu and Tutsi speaking the same language and of the Catholic religion; clashed in a genocide, killing an estimated 900 000 people in the space a few months. Even the Nazis were not so quick in the massacre. The Canadian General Romeo Dallaire who was at the head of 2,500 UN peacekeepers sent there shook hands with the Devil as said in his book on behalf of peace. The UNO did not want to intervene because Rwanda was not a viable enterprise. A world government that promises to highly regard its fellow citizens or to reduce man God's masterpiece to mere cattle?

Recently, during the passage of Hurricane Katrina in Louisiana responsible for the disaster of the City of New Orleans, President Bush seemed to be awaiting orders from hierarchy to decide on whether to maintain the war in Iraq and open the monetary valves to redress the internal situation in Louisiana. It took the intervention of two public figures that had concern for their neighbors. Madame Celine Dion and Mr. Rene Angelil who openly expressed what millions of people were wondering in silence.

This forced the "international bankers" to act and to open the valves. Obviously, the bill was distributed to "Goyms" with the rising price of gasoline. Why did they move? Because they could

not create enmity with the people, they had to connive with nations to achieve their primary visible goal "the New World Order".

Let us not distance ourselves from God, we should find time each day to draw ourselves closer to Him by reading His word like John Todd did one day. Here is the testimony of a man who was once a member of the Council of Thirteen (13), in the religious section of the ILLUMINATI.

## PART III - Testimony of John Todd

Those who are skeptical about the seriousness of the information provided in this book about the ILLUMINATI can check these facts and names in the various books mentioned in the footnotes and bibliography. Anyway, the ILLUMINATI now openly display its colors. In light of these new revelations, let's look at John Todd's testimony.

.

### 1) Testimony of John Todd

*English transcription of the testimony of John Todd concerning witchcraft and music:*

### **John Todd's testimonial of his experience in witchcraft and of the Illuminati**



ONE THING I'D LIKE TO SAY BEFORE I GET STARTED, it never seems to fail that when I'm done a few of my brothers and sisters in the Lord have fear in their hearts. There is no reason to have fear in your heart. It seems like every time we talk about the Enemy, Christians become afraid rather than stirred up and fighting mad! So I just ask that if you have this fear in your hearts when this is over, that you just simply get in your prayer chamber or up front or someplace alone with the Lord and discuss the matter with Him.

THERE IS NOTHING TO BE AFRAID OF WHEN IT COMES TO THE DEVIL; HE WAS DEFEATED 2,000 YEARS AGO! And that's why I'm here; he was defeated 2,000 years ago! I think the thing that made me the most mad when I got saved was that I'd served somebody since I was a child, for over 20 years, that was defeated over 2,000 years ago! And I guess the only reason why I served him was that I didn't realize who he was until I got saved, it took that enlightenment.

AS BROTHER BERRY PREACHED THIS MORNING ON THE DEVIL BLINDING GOD'S PEOPLE'S EYES and THE WORLD'S EYES, take it for a fact, he can do it! For some 20 years I served him as a priest and as a high priest, and later as a Grand Druid and had many thousands of people serving him under me, and never once did I even realize who I was serving.

THERE WERE MANY THINGS THAT I LEARNED IN WITCHCRAFT, I'm not going to tell you what they were, but there were many things that I learned and many things that I taught as a standard teaching in Witchcraft. As you go through apprenticeship or as you go through what we call the "Outer Court," you are told to do things and you don't ask why you do them. If you do ask why do them, they tell you that you're being naughty and that you shouldn't ask, mainly because they don't know!

I NEVER DID KNOW WHY I WAS DOING THE THINGS I WAS DOING OR WHY I WAS TEACHING THE THINGS I WAS TEACHING. They worked, so we did them. After I got saved, it took salvation for me to find out why they worked. And I guess after knowing that, there is no way you can go back to what you came out of. Very quickly tonight--well, I can't be really quickly, but I'll try--I want to give my testimony, and then I want to turn it over for questions and answers.

I'VE LEARNED THE HARD WAY, AFTER FIVE YEARS, and IT'S NORMAL FOR ME TO SAY THE THINGS THAT I SAY, but it's astounding for you to listen to them. And I realize that when the meetings are over that many things I say are strange to Christians. Most of you grew up in Christian homes, or even if you were in the World, you were not very close to what I was into, so when I say things, to me they are everyday things.

I GUESS THAT'S WHY WE HAVE SUCH A SUCCESSFUL MINISTRY WITH THE PEOPLE IN DRUGS and THE PEOPLE IN THE OCCULT, because they tried to tell Christians for years the things they'd been into and the things they've experienced, and they look at them like they're crazy. Then I come along and I say, "Oh! Oh, sure I'll listen to you, I've been there!" I know the same things, and I'll sit there and I'll listen and they find it very outstanding that I believe in them, because I've experienced them too.

SO I DON'T GASP AT SOMEBODY WHEN THEY TELL ME THEY'VE SEEN DEMONS or floated things through the air or received answers on Ouija boards or made people do their own will by spells, because I was there and I know it's so, but at the same time I know how weak it is compared to what I have now.

WE WENT TO ST. PAUL WHEN THEY WERE GOING TO HAVE THEIR CONVENTION THIS YEAR, which they called off. They're having it right now in Washington, D.C., this is the last night of it, and it was in all the front pages of the newspapers down there. Christians

throughout the United States say, "You don't really expect us to believe that witches are that organized!"--No, they've just got Senators and Congressmen and top witches down there all in one convention, they're not organized, not at all!

BUT ANYWAY, WE WERE THERE, and MANY WITCHES CAME UP TO ME and ASKED ME WHY I WOULD BECOME A CHRISTIAN. See, witches have the opinion that Christians are either the most evil thing that ever lived or they're the most foolish people that ever lived. They wanted to know why I would become a Christian. I said, "Because I'm more powerful now than I was when I was a witch!"--That's not the real reason, but I said it in words they would understand. And they couldn't grasp that. I know how they feel.

WHEN I WAS IN WITCHCRAFT I NEVER CONSIDERED CHRISTIANITY UNTIL THE NIGHT I GOT SAVED. I never once considered it was an answer, I never considered that Jesus was an answer and thought that the things in the Christian church were foolish, at the least, and dangerous at the most--and I guess they are dangerous to Witchcraft. But to explain what I'm talking about very quickly: I COME FROM A FAMILY CALLED THE COLLINS. Some of them on this side of the Atlantic Ocean from England have changed their name to Todd back prior to the Civil War. That's not to say that all Collins are Todds or the family that I came from, but this family brought Witchcraft to the United States.

I WAS IN PHILADELPHIA THE OTHER NIGHT and I DON'T UNDERSTAND WHAT IT WAS ALL ABOUT, but after I left there the newspaper decided that their greatest campaign would be against me, and many things I said in my testimony they said they checked out and weren't so. It's funny, we checked them out and they still were so!--Like many things that I'll mention tonight.

WE EVEN WENT AS FAR AS TO SAY THAT WITCHCRAFT STARTED OUTSIDE OF SALEM, MASSACHUSETTS, and EVEN NAMED THE BAY THAT THE WITCHES LANDED AT that they named after the head witch, my ancestor, Frances Collins, and the newspaper said that place didn't exist. It exists. We looked at the map and it was still there! We don't quite understand quite what they were up to, but I guess they confused enough people to disregard it. We were wondering when people were going to get around to this, but anyway, I came from the Collins Family.

LET ME QUICKLY REMIND YOU, NO WITCHES WERE EXECUTED IN SALEM. There will be a book coming out shortly on this from Chick Publications. Except for one prostitute, everybody executed in Salem were Christians, and they were tried and convicted by a jury and by a pastor who was not a pastor but a slave trader hired by the Collins. The church was built by the Collins and the jury were all members of the Collins' church. Needless to say, they weren't Christians, they were Witches. We went back there and researched it!

BUT TO GO ON QUICKLY SO I DON'T CONFUSE YOU TOO MUCH ... OF COURSE I'VE ALREADY DESTROYED YOUR HIGH SCHOOL HISTORY LESSON, I have a habit of doing that. I'll destroy more than that before the night's over! But when I was a youngster I started practicing Witchcraft. I cast my first spell when I was eight, and I started studying for the Priesthood when I was 13. I was asked to join the Outer Court of the coven there in Columbus, Ohio, where I grew up, and at 14 I was initiated.

I WOULD LIKE TO ADD THIS BEFORE I GO ON, WHEN THE SERVICE IS OVER I WOULD BE GLAD TO TALK WITH ANY MASONS PRESENT, and I will compare my initiation to Witchcraft word for word, action for action, with yours. They are identical without change, and I'll be glad to discuss the matter with you.

AFTER THAT AT 18 I WAS INITIATED A HIGH PRIEST. This made me the ruling pastor, more or less. You see in Witchcraft, church is a little different, only the ministers meet, and they meet once a month. The congregation doesn't even know who is in it. They only go to their particular priest and ask for a favor, they never come together. But at 18 I was made the High Priest.

THAT MADE ME DRAFT-EXEMPT FROM THE U.S. ARMY OR FROM THE U.S. MILITARY SERVICE, because all of the denominations or Brotherhoods of Witchcraft are Federally recognized tax deductible churches and therefore their ministers do not have to serve! I stayed 4-D status, but a lot of us at that time thought it was important to get Witchcraft started at the different military bases, so we enlisted anyway, and that was in 1968.

WHEN I WAS DISCHARGED IN 1970 THERE WAS A COVEN IN EVERY MILITARY BASE IN THE UNITED STATES and EUROPE IN ALL FOUR BRANCHES OF THE SERVICE! So it grows very quickly. But I served Vietnam, flew back and re-enlisted for six years and served 30 days of my six-year term, went to Germany for that time. And up until this time I thought Witchcraft was just like being a Baptist or being a Catholic, it was a religion. I didn't realize there was anything to it except Witchcraft, and this is where most Witches are at. In fact at this time I believed in a godhead system of gods and goddesses and believed in it very devoutly, I'd been raised in it all my life. I believed in the psychic powers and that's all I believed in.

SO WHILE I WAS IN GERMANY ONE NIGHT, AFTER TAKING SOME DRUGS and DOING A LOT OF DRINKING, I GOT IN A SHOOT-OUT in the middle of downtown Stuttgart with an officer, and the officer got killed. Now the Army has a strict no-no about shooting officers, they don't like it, so they placed me in solitary confinement, and there I am, waiting for Leavenworth more or less.

WE'D ALREADY OFFERED A PLEA TO THE JUDGE THAT WE WOULD PLEAD GUILTY IF HE WOULD GIVE ME 30 YEARS and CALL IT QUILTS, and he tore it up and laughed at us. So I was pretty sure what was in for me, and I just sat there. And eventually through a riot that had happened at the stockade just a few days prior and a man being placed in solitary confinement with me and then released from the stockade, I got word back to the U.S. by phone of the predicament I was in.

I HAD BEEN IN GERMANY SUCH A LITTLE TIME THAT I HADN'T HAD TIME TO START A COVEN IN STUTTGART, and I had no way of getting the word out. So the man placed a phone call to Los Angeles, collect, to my foster mother and told the predicament I was in. I had told him to tell her to cast a spell on the jury so they'd think I was a real nice person, and that's all I thought they would do. I'd seen spells like this work many times--I've seen them work recently many times in courts--but I was not expecting what took place!



ABOUT THREE DAYS AFTER THE MAN MADE THE PHONE CALL, MY CELL DOOR OPENED and THERE STOOD A SENATOR and A U.S. CONGRESSMAN, a couple of Generals and an Honorable Discharge. The Honorable Discharge gave no reason as to why I was being discharged; I just had an Honorable Discharge like I'd served all my time. I had all my time and rank and grade, even my top-secret security clearance.

I WAS TOLD THAT MY COURT-MARTIAL RECORDS HAD BEEN DESTROYED and that my military file would be placed with a top-secret security clerk so nobody could get into it, and that was the end of it. The Senator and the Congressman left, I went to Ft. Dix and drew the rest of my papers and stuff, and headed for Columbus, Ohio, scratching my head the whole time wondering what type of spell was so good that it had Senators and Congressmen doing its bidding!

I STILL DIDN'T KNOW WHAT WAS GOING ON, SO I ARRIVED IN OHIO and I AGAIN BEGAN ASKING QUESTIONS THE DAY I ARRIVED THERE. I was told they had been expecting me and here was an envelope with a one-way first-class ticket to Kennedy Airport in New York City, \$2,000 for spending money, and I was to get on the next flight and they would make a phone call and tell them I was coming. That was fine except I wanted to know who "them" were. They said I would find out when I arrived, so I got on the plane, took off, landed at the airport and sure enough, somebody was waiting to meet me.

--A PERSON WHOSE BOOKS I HAD READ and WHO I HAD THOUGHT WAS ONE OF THE GREATEST WIZARDS, MALE WITCHES, THAT HAD EVER LIVED, and I felt very privileged that I could be staying with him learning more about Witchcraft from him. Now I gave his name--which I'm going to give a minute--in Philadelphia last Sunday night. I even gave his job at the time that I was staying with him, except the newspapers called the university that he was supposed to be working for and the university denied he'd ever been there.

IT'S FUNNY, I EVEN SAT IN HIS CLASSES AT THE UNIVERSITY. They have a way of covering things up. He has his own college now for Witches, and his name is Dr. Raymond Buckland, and at that time he was head of the Anthropology Department at Columbia University, although Columbia University likes to say that he never existed now.

BUT I LEARNED WITH HIM FOR AWHILE, LEARNED A LITTLE MORE IN MARYLAND, WENT TO CALIFORNIA and STUDIED SOME MORE. During this process I began to learn what most Witches don't know, and that is that the gods they've been worshipping don't exist, that they're imitated by what we call "familiar spirits" or spirit guides, demons--witches don't call them demons, they like to call them spirit guides--and that there is only one god and his name is Lucifer.

NOW THIS WAS A SHOCKING THING TO ME SINCE I WAS RAISED TO BELIEVE THAT THE DEVIL DIDN'T EXIST. You see witches aren't Satanists, they don't believe in Satan, and I was quickly explained to that Lucifer was a good god and not an evil god, and that Jesus was the imitator. So I learned, and I learned many things, both of Witchcraft, and I also learned why the Senators and Politicians were there!

THEY WERE THERE BECAUSE WE WERE THE RELIGION OF A POLITICAL ORGANIZATION CALLED THE ILLUMINATI, and I was told all about the Illuminati and its history. I was schooled in the things that it had done, and the things that it was going to do, and the things that I was going to do. And before I go on, I want to show you a few things that will help explain. (Charts:)

THIS THING YOU SEE UP HERE IS ON THE BACK OF YOUR ONE-DOLLAR BILL, and WHAT IT IS IS THE SEAL OF THE ILLUMINATI. America tells us it's the reverse side of the Great Seal of the United States, the only problem is that the United States has never sealed one document with it, ever, and never intends to! It was in existence before the United States was in existence, and I invite you, if you know your Latin, to look at your one-dollar bills later, and down at the bottom you will see some Latin.

IT SAYS: "THIS NEW ORDER THAT BEGAN 1776"--THAT MEANS NOT THE 4th OF JULY, BUT MAY 1st, 1776, THE CREATION DAY OF THE ILLUMINATI. It consists of three pyramids in a sphinx, which I'll go through very quickly. We've put a few blocks up here, but there are hundreds of blocks in each pyramid. This is the political organisation. This is the middle pyramid. This is some of the political and police organisations that they use, and we've put up ones that mainly concern the United States.

ON THE TOP OF EACH PYRAMID YOU WILL SEE A CAPSTONE WITH AN EYE IN IT. The capstone is the Rothschild Family or Tribunal that rules the Illuminati, they were the creators of it. The eye is Lucifer, their god and their voice. The first 3 top blocks are on every pyramid. (See above photo.)

THE TOP BLOCK IS WHAT I WAS INITIATED INTO, THE COUNCIL OF 13 CALLED THE GRAND DRUID COUNCIL. They only take orders from the Rothschilds and nobody else. They're their private priesthood. The Council of 33 is directly under them, that is the 33 highest Masons in the World. The Council of 500, some of the richest people in the World--there are 500, actually, some of the richest people and conglomerates in the World--it's their real power as I'll show you in a minute.

I DON'T THINK YOU CAN SEE MUCH OF THE WRITING ON THIS, BUT THIS IS THE ORGANISATION OF WITCHCRAFT. The Golden Dawn is the 4th block up there, and it's the Rothschild's private coven. The Aquarian Arts Festival is the organization that ties all of the Occult Brotherhoods together in St. Paul, The Witches Church of America I was a member of. The Church of All Worlds is located in St. Louis. These are denominations like Northern Baptist, Southern Baptists, Independent Baptists, etc.

THE NATIONAL COUNCIL OF CHURCHES, THE SATANIC BROTHERHOOD OF AMERICA, SCIENTOLOGY, UNITY, is the main platform for Witches to be speakers at towards what they consider to be Christian people. The Church of Wicca is another denomination; it's in Greenfield, North Carolina.

THE AQUARIAN ANTI-DEFAMATION LEAGUE IS AN ORGANIZATION THAT WAS FORMED BY ONE OF THE GRAND DRUIDS, ISAAC BONOVIKZ, and the American Civil Liberties Union. Its purpose is to pass laws and to sue Christian churches in Federal court for

defaming Witches and the Occult, and they have been winning millions of dollars in the Federal courts.

THE GARNARIAN BROTHERHOOD IS THE TRADITIONAL WITCHCRAFT IN ENGLAND. The Order of the Rose Cross--another word for it is Rosicrucians--they are a sacrifice order. And the Holy Order of the Garter is another traditional English Witchcraft group. (Points:)

THIS IS THE MOST IMPORTANT SYMBOL: THIS IS THE POWER OF THE ILLUMINATI. Without the Sphinx the mystery of the Illuminati would have no power. This is where all of its power comes from. You will notice the head of it is the Rothschild Family and the Council of 500. Under that, the Rockefellers, Duponts, Kennedys, Onasises and other families. Queen Juliana is also on the Council of 500.

OVER IN THE CENTER IS ITS HEART, THE BANK OF ENGLAND, THE BANK OF FRANCE, THE FEDERAL RESERVE ACT. Most people feel the Federal Reserve Act is a government organization. It is not! It has nothing to do with the Government of the United States; it is a stockholder company owned by individuals. Much of the stock is owned by non-Americans.

MANY BANKS and FAMOUS CORPORATIONS ARE OWNED OR CONTROLLED BY THE ILLUMINATI. We tell Christians across the U.S. that housewives and husbands cannot shop any day or any week without buying from a company that the Illuminati owns, it is impossible.

PHILLIP ROTHSCHILD ORDERED ONE OF HIS MISTRESSES TO WRITE AN 1100-PAGE BOOK that would describe to all witches how they would take control of the World through the Illuminati: It's called Atlas Shrugged. (By Ayn Rand) One of the things in it is happening on the front pages of the newspapers across the United States right now. In fact she spent a third of the book describing how they would raise the oil prices and then later destroy the oil fields and then they would also completely shut down the coal.

IT ALSO DESCRIBED HOW THEY WOULD BLOW UP GRAIN MILLS, how they would derail trains. Their sole purpose is to bankrupt their own companies and destroy their own companies until they destroyed the currency of the whole World, and still be so financially strong they would withstand it!

NOW TO GO BACK TO MY OWN TESTIMONY WHILE EVERYBODY GETS A BREATH! I know you thought you were going to hear a lot about spell-casting or spooky ghosts, but I surprised you, I've got something more spooky to tell you! Anyway, as I learned all this, I was taken up to Colorado Springs, outside of NORAD Center about a mile in the same location, and placed through an initiation for the Council of 13, and then I moved to San Antonio where I lived until I was saved and ruled a 13-state area that I had from there.

WHEN I WAS SAVED I HAD 5000 COVENS, IN OTHER WORDS, CHURCHES, TOTTALLING 65,000 PRIESTS and PRIESTESSES. That's just the ministers, not the congregation, so it is quite large. This State wasn't one of them, this is run by Mrs. Buckland, but

Ohio was one of them, so it's close enough. I lived there until I was saved on Labor Day of 1972. And what led to my salvation was this: THE GRAND DRUIDS MEET EIGHT TIMES A YEAR ON THE WITCHES' SABBATH AT VARIOUS LOCATIONS IN THE WORLD. I hosted the last meeting that I attended, it was held in San Antonio at the Casino Building. A courier from the London Embassy, a member of our State Department, brought a sealed courier pouch--so Immigration couldn't touch it--to the meeting and left it. It had never been opened from the time it had been sealed at the London Embassy.

DR. BUCKLAND CUT THE SEAL ON IT and TOOK OUT SIX LETTERS THAT WERE SEALED WITH THIS ILLUMINATI CREST. The first four were just business, money that we were to pay here and there and so on. Actually, the Grand Druid Council is nothing but glorified bankers, they write millions of dollars worth of checks to people in political and religious fields every month. But the last two letters led me to want to get out.

I HAD, AS A CHILD, ACCIDENTALLY ATTENDED A FEW SUNDAY SCHOOL CLASSES because I had nothing better to do, and during those classes I heard about the Book of Revelation and a few things in it--which was very strange, being back in the early '60s to hear anything like this, at least in the particular kind of church I was going to which was kind of liberal. So I had a little background of what the Christians felt was in their Bible. I thought it was foolish, but I had a little background.

NOW EVEN THOUGH I WAS A PART OF SETTING UP A WORLD GOVERNMENT, I ALWAYS KIND OF SNICKERED THAT THAT WAS EVER GOING TO HAPPEN, that we were serious, that it was kind of a little game we were playing. As long as the Rothschilds had all of the money to spend on our plans, we went ahead and spent the money. So I never took it seriously until we opened the last two letters.

NOW IN THE FIRST LETTER THAT WE OPENED OF THOSE LAST TWO, WAS A CHART, and IN THAT CHART IT LISTED AN EIGHT-YEAR PLAN FOR WORLD TAKE-OVER ENDING IN THE DECEMBER MONTH OF 1980. Since I have gotten out, I have not seen one thing fail or be delayed on that time chart. I'm not saying that it won't be delayed, but it's going to take a lot of Christians doing a lot of serious praying which I haven't seen yet. Next, the last letter we opened contained--now I'll have to quote it and then I'll have to explain, it, since witches say English but they say words that may not mean anything to you--it said:

"WE HAVE FOUND A MAN WHOM WE BELIEVE TO BE THE SON OF LUCIFER. We believe that through his works and our backing he can become ruler of this world, stop all wars, and bring peace, finally, to this war-stricken World." Now that literally meant that we had found a person so fantastically-powered that he could convince people he was their only salvation. Now that literally meant in Christian terms, he was demon-possessed like nobody had ever seen! (Ed: The Antichrist, 1Jn.2:18; Rev.13.)

AFTER READING THAT ON AUGUST 1, 1972, I DECIDED IT WAS TIME TO LOOK ELSEWHERE TO GET OUT. Now this hadn't been a new idea, before I was made a Grand Druid I had thought about getting out.--So had a young actress in California that was ordered executed and left hanging with her throat cut by one foot--which is one of the tarot cards--to tell all witches that she had betrayed witchcraft and this was her death. And after seeing this and what

happened to Sharon Tate, I decided I'd stay in. But now I wanted out. I didn't know how to get out and I didn't consider Christianity at all a way out, but I wanted to get out.

SO A MONTH ROLLED AROUND and I GOT DEEPER INVOLVED IN DRUGS. In fact, the night I was saved I weighed 149 pounds because I was doing \$150 a day worth of methedrine speed--mainlining it--what the street people call "crystal." So I was literally in a paranoid mess anyway because of this drug, and all these plans hadn't made me any more restful.

SO ONE SATURDAY AFTERNOON A BAPTIST PREACHER CAME ACROSS ME IN ONE OF OUR OCCULT STORES. He was there because overnight, just about, he had come to realize that Witchcraft was real, when he had always considered it a fable about witches flying on broomsticks with warts on their noses and pointed hats. The way he'd found it was he'd found his daughter an initiated priestess of a Witchcraft coven! He'd caught her casting spells in her bedroom one night.

SO IT BECAME VERY REAL TO HIM, and AFTER MUCH PRAYER and FASTING, HE DECIDED TO TRACK DOWN A FEW WITCHES and see if he couldn't witness to them. He wasn't getting through to his daughter so he thought he'd go to the head of it and if they got saved, maybe his daughter would get saved. So he found me in one of our occult stores called "The Spanish Bazaar" there in San Antonio and started to witness to me HE KNEW WHO I WAS BECAUSE I WAS GOING BY MY WITCHCRAFT NAME, LANCE, and just about everybody in town had seen me on television or read about me in the newspapers about Witchcraft. So he started witnessing to me and I told him in certain profanities that I didn't care for it and that I would like him to leave. So when this failed he decided that he wasn't going to get past the demons that were in me, so he started ordering the demons to be quiet. Then he proceeded to pray for me whether I liked it or not, and the prayer went something like this: "I DEMAND THAT SATAN STOP GIVING YOU HIS BENEFITS, INCLUDING DRUGS, I ORDER THAT TO BE SO IN THE NAME OF JESUS! And I command Satan to stop communicating with you supernaturally and I break your power of Witchcraft till you come face-to-face with the Gospel, and then I command your mind to be set free so that you can perceive the Gospel and make your own mind up."--Now this was necessary in my condition because I didn't have my own mind. And then he left.

I THOUGHT HE WAS CRAZY, SO I WENT UPSTAIRS and DID SOME MORE DRUGS because I couldn't understand why I was feeling the way I was feeling, and that was not too well at that moment. So that night, I didn't have anything to worry about, I did all my drugs up because I was expecting a very large shipment of drugs to come across at Laredo, Mexico.--Except something happened that had never happened before: The drugs got busted! The wrong guard that was not on our salary was on the border that night, and they even brought the wrong car across that had the wrong license number.

EVERYTHING THAT COULD HAVE GONE WRONG, WENT WRONG, and THE SHIPMENT WAS BUSTED and I WAS WITHOUT DRUGS. So when I found out about it, I made a few phone calls around different areas in the U.S. trying to find some drugs that could get to me very quickly. Most people had already used theirs up or were at the end of it, and I was told that I'd have some Tuesday morning--and that's a long time to wait for an addict as bad as I was!

SO ABOUT MONDAY NIGHT, LABOR DAY NIGHT, AS I WAS GOING THROUGH EXTREME PROPORTIONATE WITHDRAWAL, I got in my car and started to drive it out of the parking lot and almost drove it in the river! So I left it there and I went for a walk. I walked about four or five blocks and I came upon a movie theater. Now it was just an everyday movie theater--it's still there to this day--shows just regular pictures, not anything to do with the Christian Church, so I thought I was pretty safe. I paid my money and went in, sat down three rows back and wanted to get right into the movie.

AND THE MOVIE WAS CALLED "THE CROSS and THE SWITCHBLADE." Now that my seem funny to you, it was not funny to me at the time. So I sat there trying to make wisecracks at the movie all night and became interested in Nicky Cruz. See, you think with one mind--I think with the same mind with now as a Christian--but as a witch I thought with a different mind: Dave Wilkerson was the enemy and Nicky Cruz was the hero.

SO I SAT DOWN THERE and I THOUGHT, THIS GUY'S PRETTY GOOD, THERE'S NOTHING WRONG WITH HIM, maybe he'll convert the preacher over ... and then he got saved! Now that term meant nothing to us, but when he changed from the old Nicky Cruz to the new Nicky Cruz, that meant something, that was impossible!

THE CORNERSTONE OR THE WHOLE FLOOR OF WITCHCRAFT is that you cannot cast a spell, you cannot mix a potion, you cannot do a rite without a firm knowledge of astrology. It is the base for all practices in Witchcraft, and one of its teachings is that you are born a set personality and there is nothing you can do to change from that set personality, and mine was pretty raunchy as it was. (See No.107.)

SO IF NICKY CRUZ CHANGED, THIS WAS A MIRACLE THAT WAS NOT UNDERSTANDABLE TO ANY WITCH. So going out of there I was in a very confused state of mind, not realizing much of what had happened even to the point that I forgot I was even going through withdrawal. And as I walked out the door a young man walked up to me, handed me this tract and said, "Here, this is for you"--and turned around and walked off! Didn't give anybody else a tract, just left, and the tract was called "Bewitched," it was on Witchcraft. (See Nos. 290, 291, 666.)

NOW, I WAS RAISED IN A SUPERNATURAL WORLD. All our lives we had spent listening to spirit guides, and since that preacher had prayed for me, my spirit guides had not said a word to me. I was in a vacuum, much described like this: Have you ever gone through a trial where you pray and pray and you feel like you're not getting through? Well, this was the way I felt, and nothing was coming through. I was in a vacuum.

AFTER 14 YEARS OF DEPENDING UPON THESE SPIRITS TO TELL ME EVERYTHING TO DO, NOBODY WAS TELLING ME ANYTHING--because this preacher had taken authority over them and had ordered them to be quiet. And as I was reading this booklet I had sense enough to know that something was trying to get to me, something was trying to get through, but none of my spirit guides would be giving me books on Witchcraft that was telling me the Devil was behind it!

SO I THREW THE BOOK AWAY and WAS IN A BIGGER STATE OF CONFUSION THAN I'D EVER BEEN. I walked back to where my apartment was in the Casino Building, and it consists of several nightclubs back there, and I walked into one, the Club Aquarius. I walked to the back of the club and sat down in the office back there by myself and tried to think things out.

I SPENT SEVERAL HOURS TRYING TO THINK OF A CHRISTIAN CHURCH THAT I COULD GO TO and ASK QUESTIONS OF THAT WE DIDN'T OWN THE MINISTER OF. Now, that may seem kind of strange to you, but as an ex-Grand Druid it's not strange at all. Much that you see in churches that you just think is liberalism, is Taoism. I'll go over that more simply: They've taken the money and rejected the Lord!

IT'S KIND OF HARD FOR A MINISTER THAT'S NOT SOLD OUT TO GOD TO TURN DOWN HALF-A-MILLION DOLLARS if it's laid down as a bribe, and they can get even higher. In fact, one church I know of got eight million dollars in two years, and another one got ten million dollars in one year! So, they can receive some money.

ANYWAY, I DIDN'T HAVE A MEMBERSHIP LIST WITH ME SO I DIDN'T KNOW WHO WE OWNED and WHO WE DIDN'T, and I was afraid to call the wrong pastor because that could get me killed. So I sat there thinking a little bit and I remembered that the night before, one of our witches that was a prostitute in a downtown area had come screaming into the nightclub the night before about the coffee house called the Greengate Club.

STRANGE PLACE ... IT USED TO BE A BURLESQUE PLACE ABOUT THREE MONTHS PRIOR TO THAT, and THIS MINISTER CAME IN and PREACHED AN UNINVITED REVIVAL . The revival took about 15 minutes and 20-some people got saved, including the dancers, bartenders, the band, people in the congregation and the husband and wife that owned the place.

SO WHEN THEY GOT SAVED THEY DECIDED TO TURN IT OVER TO A BAPTIST CHURCH that they were going to--the Baptist Church that was praying and fasting for me! Now don't confuse Jack Taylor with the Pastor that came in, he was from another church. But he couldn't get his church to pray and fast for witches since his church thought he was crazy when he said "witch." So he called up Castle Hills, which was well-known for working in the power of God, and they asked some people to pray and fast and they got about 500 people to pray and fast over that weekend that I'd get saved!--And I firmly believe that had a lot to do with it.

SO, SHE HAD TOLD ME ABOUT THIS PLACE and SHE HAD WANTED US TO BURN IT DOWN, BUY IT OUT OR SOMETHING, BECAUSE IT WAS RUINING HER BUSINESS. I mean, here's a prostitute propositioning a soldier, and here's somebody over here preaching the Word of God to him! It doesn't work. So she was very upset, and I decided I would go look this place up. So I walked on over by the bus station and went in. It was about two in the morning and the place was supposed to close at midnight.

NOW I FIRMLY BELIEVE TO THIS DAY THAT GOD BREAKS COKE FOUNTAINS, because when I came in there the manager had stayed to fix the Coke fountain as it had broken down just as he was ready to close. So I walked in and he started witnessing to me, and it was fine for about, oh, 45 minutes to an hour, and I brought up Witchcraft. So, in a white, kind of

ghostly-like face, he called the Pastor and said, "I've got this witch down here!"

AND THE PASTOR SAID, "WELL, WE'VE BEEN PRAYING and FASTING THAT HE'D GET THERE, GO AHEAD and WITNESS TO HIM. We'll just call everybody up and start praying!" So they started praying and he started witnessing to me more, and started showing me things in the Bible, started praying for me. Pretty soon he was praying, and I was praying and the Lord was saving me!--And I've never forgotten it.

YOU SEE, I WAS BORN IN A WITCHCRAFT FAMILY WHERE I INHERITED EVERYTHING MY PARENTS HAD. In other words, I inherited their demons, or ones just like the ones they had. So I was never free from the time the doctor spanked me on the bottom in the delivery room until that night of '72. And you may have felt great when you got saved, but I don't think you felt as great as I felt when I got saved! We may argue that point.

BUT FOR THE FIRST TIME, I COULD THINK FOR MYSELF WITHOUT THIS HEAVY, LIKE COTTON IN MY HEAD, is about the only way you could describe it. And my feeling was that if they killed me going out of that place, then I would die happy!--And I walked out, not really thinking about any danger. The next night I was back and saying, "You know, I would like to live long enough to enjoy this!"

THE REASON FOR THAT IS THAT YOU DON'T LEAVE WITCHCRAFT ONCE YOU'RE INITIATED--ONCE YOU'RE IN, YOU'RE IN! To prove this point, there have been since my salvation about 500 people saved out of Witchcraft--that's not very many when you know how many millions are in--and 50 them have been killed in five years! My life is in danger all the time, my wife's and myself, and all the people that have come out.

THEY START AT \$10,000 BOUNTIES and WORK UP TO SEVERAL HUNDRED THOUSAND, but it's not just witches. I have a few contacts still back in the Illuminati that will do me favors every once in awhile; they don't understand why I would want to be a Christian, but they don't think I'm all that bad. Well, I had them run a computer check through one of the computers they have in New York that the occult owns to keep tabs on everybody.

I WANTED TO CHECK OUT A FEW OF THE CHRISTIAN MINISTERS THAT I MIGHT KNOW THAT HAVE THIS SAME PROBLEM, and Brother Berry's name came up and they've got \$10,000 on that man's head. Jack Chick of Chick Publications, Dr. Van Impe, Joe Boyd, Dan Hartree, my pastor Roland Rasmussen and many others, to go on and on. The witches have felt these men are such a danger to them that they have decided that they are better dead than alive and are willing to spend millions of dollars to make sure it happens.

SO IT IS A WARFARE, and IT GOES ON, and IT'S GETTING WORSE and WORSE, and we had to pray much before we came out to the East Coast. Everybody said I was crazy when I moved to L.A. to minister to the people out there, but they don't know the East Coast! It's been an experience, and we ask that you pray for us as we go around ministering.

MY WIFE IS USUALLY WITH ME ON THE ROAD, but she had to go back to Los Angeles on an emergency, and we ask that you pray for her while she's on the road. I think what I'll do now is simply open it for your questions and I hope that I have the answers. If you have a question, just



raise your hand. Let's see if we can do this without turning the lights out. Yeah, we can, praise the Lord! (Shows:)

THESE ARE TYPES OF JEWELRY THAT WERE CREATED BY DEMONIC INSTRUCTION TO VERY IMPORTANT PEOPLE. Christians are astonished when I tell them that the greatest Wizard that ever lived, male witch, was King Solomon. When he backslid he really backslid! And as great as his writings were in our Bible, they were as great in the Witchcraft bible! The very initiation rites and how to prepare Witchcraft bibles, how to conjure demons up, everything, even how to commit human sacrifice are writings that he created.

AND BEFORE I TELL YOU WHAT THEY MEAN I WANT TO SAY THIS: IT WAS IMPOSSIBLE TO BUY THIS JEWELRY, except for the Ankh outside of a witchcraft store until a few years ago. They were hand-made by silversmiths belonging to the priesthood and sold only to initiated witches in occult stores. Since then, the Illuminati have decided that one of the greatest tricks they could play on the Christians was to put this jewelry around their necks and on their hands.

THE REASON IS, THIS STUFF ATTRACTS DEMONS, THEY CLING AROUND WHERE IT'S AT. Now, if you're shocked to see the Star of David up there, that's because it's just recently been called the Star of David. For thousands of years it was called the Hexagram or the Crest of Solomon.

NOW WHEN A WITCH WANTS TO PRACTICE WITCHCRAFT, SHE'LL GET IN A PENTAGRAM, that's the five-pointed star in the circle, their strongest form of protection. Then they will lay this six-pointed star, or hexagram--which means "to hex" or to cast black magic or to put a spell on somebody--they'll put it in a circle on the floor and this will cause the demons to appear at their instruction.

IT IS THE MOST EVIL OF SIGNS IN WITCHCRAFT. I know I may not be getting through to you what I'm trying to get through, but it's dangerous to have it. The pentagram, the pinnacle with the one point up, means Witchcraft; two points up means demon-worship or Satanism.

IT IS INTERESTING TO NOTE THAT THE EASTERN STAR SYMBOL IS A TWO POINTS UP, FIVE-POINTED STAR. This symbolizes the goat head, which Satanists believe is representative of the Devil, and they use this goat head and worship it like they are worshipping the Devil.

THE ANKH MEANS THAT YOU DESPISE VIRGINITY, believe in fertility rites, practice fertility rites and worship the sun god Ra. The sun god Ra is the Egyptian name for Lucifer. THE PEACE SYMBOL UP THERE IS NOT THE PEACE SYMBOL. I didn't have to do the initiation that contained the broken cross because I was born into Witchcraft & it wasn't necessary, & people who have no Christian background do not have to do it. But if a person raised in a Christian church--whether they were Christian or not--wants to join Witchcraft, they would have to take a ceramic cross & turn it upside-down & break the cross bars down, symbolising their rejection of Calvary & the Christian Church.

THIS IS SAID TO BRING YOU PEACE OF MIND WHILE YOU PRACTISE WITCHCRAFT, that's where it got the word "Peace Symbol" from. We called it the Peace Symbol for the last 20 years, they've called it the Broken Cross for the last several hundred. Now which are you going to believe?

AFTER THAT YOU HAVE WHAT IS CALLED THE UNICORN'S HORN, OR THE ITALIAN HORN IS WHAT THEY ARE CALLING IT NOW SO THEY CAN SELL IT. Literally, the translation is: "You trust the Devil for your finance." If you don't trust the Devil for your finance, don't wear it. I can guarantee it has just the opposite reaction in a Christian's life. The last symbol is the symbol that initiated priests & priestesses, coven members, wear to show they have been initiated. NOW CHRISTIANS ASK ME, "WHAT'S THIS GOT TO DO WITH THE CHRISTIAN CHURCH?--WE DON'T HAVE TO WORRY ABOUT IT!" This morning we cast demons out of a young man who got delivered from this who had his initiation scar on his wrist who was a counselor & a member of Word of Life Ministries, the Word of Life Christian Club Ministries. They are everywhere, people!

THE YOUNG LADY WHO TOOK MY PLACE GREW UP, WAS RAISED & WAS A MEMBER OF THOMAS ROAD BAPTIST CHURCH in Lynchburg, Virginia, Jerry Falwell's church. Jerry doesn't know it, but that's where she grew up & was raised, & she now sits on the Council of 13. So, they are everywhere. Next question? (Question inaudible on tape.) Well, the Bilderbergers are in the 500. I didn't know you would know that term, so I didn't use it.

(QUESTION ABOUT TRILATERAL COUNCIL.) I'm sure you couldn't see the pyramid, but it was on the pyramid. The Trilateral Council is the Inner Council of the CFR, Council of Foreign Relations, which is the American name for the Illuminati. They are not there without full knowledge & they are handpicked by David Rockefeller, the leader of the Illuminati in the United States. OK? (Inaudible question.) I don't know. I wasn't over that state.

LET ME ASK YOU A QUESTION, IS IT A UNITED METHODIST CHURCH? Well, that's because the United Methodist Church has accepted the Omega Brotherhood, an organization started in Phoenix by United Methodist members who believe seances are Christian practice, & it is now accepted in the United Methodist Church. So he can be that & not be kicked out.

(QUESTION: WOULD YOU BRIEFLY OUTLINE THE STEPS REMAINING IN THE WORLD TAKEOVER PLAN BETWEEN NOW & 1980?) If the Pastor has no objections, OK. The reason I ask this is that it can be pretty frightening & pretty unbelievable. I like to leave that to the last question so they'll believe everything else I have to say before I say this! They usually reject everything after that because they're sitting around in shock!

WHAT REMAINS IS THIS, THEY ARE IN THE PROCESS OF A TRIAL-&-ERROR RIGHT NOW, & THEY TEST THINGS. Last year they tested what it would be like to be without fuel to heat your homes. This year they are going to see if they can't starve you, absolutely shut all electricity off in the East Coast. Now the timetable in the book Atlas Shrugs ended with this: "When the lights of New York City go out for the last time, we will have the World!"

NOW, THAT MEANT THAT TOWARDS THE END THEY ARE GOING TO CUT THE CITIES OFF COMPLETELY. There'll be a Teamsters strike, nothing will move for months, I

mean nothing will move. These strikes will be more violent than the coal miners' strikes are right now, & the coal miners will strike again.

THEY ARE IN THE PROCESS OF DESTROYING ALL STORED FOOD & FARMLAND IN THE FARMER'S STRIKE so that we will be without any food in the cities or in the country or anywhere except what is in the Federal storehouses. The air controllers will strike & nothing will fly over the skies of the U.S. except military flights. The longshoremen will strike & nothing will come off the boats, & the train engineers will strike & nothing will move. In other words, nothing is going to move at all.

NOW IF YOU LIVE IN A LARGE CITY, HOW ARE YOU GOING TO GET YOUR FOOD if they don't bring it to you? Everything will be paralyzed, nothing will move. At the same time there will be riot & revolution within the United States, in fact the whole World will be in it.

IT SEEMS STRANGE, & CHRISTIANS CANNOT GRASP THAT A MASS MURDERER LIKE CHARLES MANSON WILL BE RELEASED FROM PRISON. You should have heard the vote when he was up for release a month ago. He was kept there by two votes. Two votes kept him from leaving prison. Now, they didn't want him out, & let me explain something, he did not go there because the jury found him guilty.

THEY COULD NOT HAVE SENT HIM TO PRISON IF THE ILLUMINATI DID NOT WANT HIM TO GO. He went there for a reason, & we have talked to prison officials across the U.S. & people belonging to the motorcycle clubs & so on, & we have received the same answer: He has them united.

THERE IS A MASS ARMY WITHIN EVERY PRISON FROM COAST TO COAST. They have been promised weapons, military weapons. To verify this, the U.S. Army has said, & so has the Marine Corps, that in the last five years they have lost many of their small arms weapons to theft in the United States. That includes hand-held ground-to-air, heat-seeking missiles that can take a DC-10 out of the sky at 40,000 feet. One of the largest storehouses is in Baltimore & the second largest is in Philadelphia for these weapons, so they are very close to you.

HE HAS BEEN GATHERING AN ARMY, & OUTSIDE OF PRISON IT AMOUNTS TO OVER 100,000 PROFESSIONALLY-TRAINED MILITARY PEOPLE. They have been hiring ex-Green Berets, Rangers, Navy, to train them in camps--one is down in West Virginia to give you an example--to train them in special forces tactics. Every one of them is as trained as a Green Beret, & that is very well-trained! Manson will be released either next year or the following year, they haven't decided yet.

I'LL TELL YOU THIS, THE ONE THING THAT WILL HOLD THEIR PLAN UP IS IF THEY DON'T GET THE GUN LAW PASSED. These people will refuse to go out & cause havoc if people will be shooting back at them, so they have been promised that all the guns will be confiscated before they make their move. Now, they have been promised they will get this country, what they don't know is they have been set up.

THEY HAVE BEEN SET UP JUST SO THEY WILL KILL A CERTAIN AMOUNT OF PEOPLE: The figure at the present is that in the first year, one million people will be butchered. I

use that term because that is about how to describe what will happen, & I will leave it to your imagination & your prayer life as to who is scheduled to be killed.

THIS IS JUST SO THAT THEY CAN GET THE NATIONAL GUARD CALLED OUT. They recently passed a law that gives the President the right to suspend the Constitution & Congress & call Martial Law & call out the military. Now that would seem too harsh to us right now, but what happens when millions of people are getting shot at & killed?--Then they will be calling for it to happen! That's some of the stuff that's coming about. Some of it is legislation that is being passed right now.

HOUSE BILL 41 WENT THROUGH THE HOUSE & IS BEFORE THE SENATE RIGHT NOW. If it passes, it will pull much of the Federal tax deduction status of many of the Christian churches, & the ones that keep it, the people who give to them, their names will be printed with their addresses, their phone numbers & their work addresses of every giver in every Post Office in the United States. It's called House Bill 41. This will give those radicals your dwelling address & where you work so that they can come & look you up!

ANOTHER ONE WAS THE MARTIAL LAW ACT, WHICH HAS BEEN PASSED, & THE ANTI-HOARDING ACT. It is the one thing they fear. See, the whole thing is, if you can be independent of Federal help, their plan won't work. You must be dependent on the Federal Government for every bite of food, every light bulb in your house & every warmth that you feel coming through your homes. You must be dependent upon them.

NOW THE ANTI-HOARDING ACT FORBIDS YOU TO STORE OVER ONE-MONTH'S FOOD SUPPLY, to store medical supplies or fuel supplies over a month at a time. There is a reason for it--their reason. The last one is called the Genocide Act, some of you may have heard of it. They defeated it eight years ago but now it looks like it is going to get passed, it's before the Senate now.

IT CAN PUT YOU IN FEDERAL PRISON FOR CONVERTING SOMEBODY FROM THE FAITH THAT THEY WERE BORN INTO BY THEIR PARENTS. In other words, if you convert & Catholic, a Jew or a witch, & their parents press charges, you can go to Federal Penitentiary for it, & it's getting ready to pass now. (Inaudible question.) Well, you're talking to an ex-Illuminist who knows that there is no such thing.

ANYBODY COMING OUT OF THE ILLUMINATI CAN TELL YOU THAT THE COMMUNIST PARTY IS RUN BY ILLUMINATISTS, NOT COMMUNISTS. History will show it, that sometime back in 1776, Adrian Pike--then the head of the Illuminati, also head of the Masons at the time--said that they needed to create a political party that would frighten the World & keep it fighting each other until they could bring peace to the World--& then Karl Marx showed up. Now if you go to the British Museum, you can find two checks for several thousand pounds made out to Karl Marx, signed by Nathan Rothschild. OK?!

AND I CAN GO INTO MUCH HISTORY ABOUT THE COMMUNIST PARTY, HOW LENIN & TROTSKY BOTH STAYED AT THE KRUPP MANSION IN NEW YORK, financed by

Rockefeller & Krupp & Swifts & others: How they put four million dollars worth of Jacob Swift's gold to finance the revolution, sailed from New York Harbor where their ship was confiscated by the British Government as it tried to run a blockade during WWI.--How Woodrow Wilson called & ordered their release so America wouldn't go into the War, & how they were sent on their way. There's much history about it.

(QUESTION: WHAT DOES WITCHCRAFT HAVE TO DO WITH THE MASONS?) Well, other than the 33 highest Masons who are on the Council of 33, most Masons do not realize that they have taken the same rites that makes a person & witch. They have taken the same rites to become a Mason, except that we cut our wrists & they don't cut their wrists, that's the only differences!

IT IS EXACTLY THE SAME. I could lay a drawing of our temple down, your temple is laid out the same. I can describe our Witchcraft rites, yours are exactly the same. We've been doing it for 8000 years--what's your excuse? (Question about the organizations involved.)

LET ME READ OFF THE ORGANIZATIONS REAL QUICK: B'nai B'rith; American Civil Liberties Union; the Scottish Rites--by the way, Witchcraft is supposed to be the old religion of Scotland; the New York Rites; the Jaycees; & I want to explain about the Junior Chamber of Commerce. We in the Illuminati needed a group to fund & to finance the training of the radical groups that would be used later--the Jr. Chamber of Commerce was the group chosen to do the funding. The Masonic Lodges, both the White & the Blue; the Knights of Columbus; the Knights of Philistivis & the Oddfellows.

NOW, I WANT TO SAY SOMETHING ABOUT THESE LODGES: THAT MEANS ITS LEADERS USE THESE ORGANIZATIONS FOR THEIR PURPOSES, that does not mean that the members of those organizations know what's going on. Clear back after our Revolutionary War--you can find this in the Adams Chronicles--John Adams wrote George Washington asking him to beware of Thomas Jefferson & Alexander Hamilton & their misuse of the Masonic Lodges which Washington was a member of, & this is a direct quote: "Because they were using it for Illuminati purposes & the worship of Lucifer."

NOW I HAVE IN MY CAR PHOTOSTATIC COPIES OF BOOKS HANDED ONLY TO CHOSEN ONES IN THE 32nd--that means just the ones they've handpicked out of the 32nd Level & the 33rd Level--describing the initiation of the 33rd Level Masons, also describing what they thought of Jesus--believe me, it's not polite!--& who the true God is.

THEY CONSIDER JESUS TO BE THE IMPERSONATOR & the true god is Lucifer, & that's in black-&-white out of Masonic books. Now I've got them in my car, & if it gets into a debate after the service, I can go get'm & let you read'm out of your own books! Next question?

(QUESTION: BEFORE I WAS SAVED I HAD A DECK OF TAROT CARDS, & right after

James Bond came out I got rid of them because I started feeling I was getting answers & some of those answers were taking place & I was scared.) Oh, I'm sure. You got your answers from demons. (Q: Yeah, that's what scared me.) If you had read the 18th Chapter of Deuteronomy, you wouldn't have done it. You could have been stoned to death in the Old Testament for it.

(Q: ARE THE CARDS SET UP A CERTAIN WAY? Does it mean something the way the cards are set up?) Every drawing means something, & the demons control how they fall & use'm. But they can only be 90% accurate. Nothing in Witchcraft is ever 100% accurate. OK, next?

(QUESTION: WHAT ARE THE ILLUMINATI PLANS FOR ISRAEL?) THEY WILL USE ISRAEL TO GAIN CONTROL OF THE WORLD. All nations except the United States will go after Israel just before they take over the World, it's called World War III, & Jimmy Carter with the U.S. Government will step in & save Israel. (Dad: Already happening!) Right now, Carter is losing popularity. Don't let that deceive you, give him a year, he'll be a god to many people. OK?

THAT'S ALL I CAN TELL YOU RIGHT NOW, IF I TOLD YOU EVERYTHING I'D LOSE YOU. Just hang in there. I said what I've said tonight five years ago & people were ready to lynch me; now they're listening to me because they can see it in the newspaper, OK? (Question: What can we as Christians do?) Pray!

I'LL TELL YOU THIS, THE ONLY THING THE ILLUMINATI FEAR, AS I SAID, IS AN INDEPENDENT PERSON who can live, eat, sleep, stay warm & defend themselves separate from Federal help. You see, they tried twice before; they have never been this organized, OK? They've tried twice before in 200 years to rule the World & came very close. Once during Napoleon & once during WWI, they came extremely close to gaining the World both times. Now let's pray that the Lord messes up their plans one more time. I haven't seen it happen yet, but I'd like to see it happen!

(QUESTION ABOUT A COVEN IN PENNSYLVANIA SOMEWHERE.) I'm not familiar with the town. I wasn't over Pennsylvania, so I don't know. If you were invited to a coven down there, there's one down there. (Q: Are you sure?) Yeah. They don't invite you to covens unless there was one down there.

NOW I'VE GOT A QUESTION FOR YOU; HAVE YOU BEEN PLAYING WITH THE OUIJA BOARD AT SEANCES? (Q: Oh no, I'm scared of Ouija boards!) Well, I can only tell you they wouldn't have invited you down there unless you had been doing something of the occult, & I'll let it go at that.

(QUESTION: IS ROCK MUSIC AN OUTGROWTH OF WITCHCRAFT?)--YOU CAN'T PRACTICE WITCHCRAFT WITHOUT IT! Now when I was in there, I was president of the largest booking agency--they've had to change their name since then because of the publicity I've

been giving them--but at the time they were called Zodiac Productions. I knew most of the rock groups in the united States--I still do. Some of my closest friends are like David Crosby from Crosby, Stills, Nash & Young, & Graham Nash & others that are around there, & I still talk to many of them.

**MOST OF THE ROCK GROUPS ARE MEMBERS OF A WITCHCRAFT CHURCH.** That doesn't mean they've been initiated, it means that's their religion, & when they do a song they'll ask the witch coven or the temple to cast a spell over that song so that it will become a hit & sell. Now what takes place when a witch casts a spell is they order a lot of demos to do things. They don't know that's what they do, but that's in essence what happens.

**NOW THAT MEANS WHEN YOU GO BUY AN ALBUM & YOU TAKE IT HOME WITH YOU, IT'S LIKE BUYING A BOX OF CRACKER JACKS: YOU GET A FREE SURPRISE--IT'S CALLED A DEMON!** It goes along with the record. Now much of the music is written in witch language by witches. Elton John has made the statement that he has never written a song or sung a song that was not written in witch language, example: "Beyond the Yellow Brick Road" is 100% witch language.

**THAT'S WHY MANY SONGS, YOU DON'T UNDERSTAND.** That's why many people who listen to them don't understand until they get high on drugs & then all of a sudden the meanings start coming to them. Many songs have been written in witch language such as the whole album by Carole King called "Tapestry."

**THE BOOK OF PROPHECY TO WITCHES IS THE DOUBLE WHITE ALBUM THAT THE BEATLES PRODUCED** containing the song "Helter Skelter." Every song in it is prophecy. Oh, let's see • "Horse with No Name", "One Tin Soldier", I could list thousands of songs that were written this way. They definitely have demonic influence behind them.

**PARENTS, I WANT TO SAY THIS TO YOU, HAVE YOU NOTICED THE INCREASE OF REBELLION IN TEENAGERS IN THE HOME?** The reason is, it's your fault.--You let them listen to it. It stirs up rebellion. It's not the words in the song, it's the music. Witches know it, they hit certain chords on purpose. As many people that have once been in hypnosis, like Dr. Berry when he was younger was involved in hypnosis can tell you. (See "Musical Key," No.326.)

**THE MUSIC IS HYPNOTIC. IT STIRS UP A WAR-LIKE NATURE IN THE YOUNG PEOPLE.** Now they're going to "boo" me when this is over, but it's still the truth anyway. Now if you want to have them stay the way they are & you want to baby 'em, because you're afraid they might get mad at you & run away from home or something, you go ahead & let them keep on playing it because they're going to do it anyway. --OR YOU GO HOME & YOU BREAK THE RECORDS & YOU BURN THE COVERS! Now, when witches get saved, nobody tells them to get out of rock music. When they hand their Witchcraft items over to be burned--you notice I said

burned, not just thrown in the trashcan, it's Scriptural--they hand their records over too, because they've lived a in a World of the supernatural & they know the supernatural is tied in with music.

NOW, THE MOST PERFECT DESCRIPTION OF LUCIFER THAT EVER EXISTED IS IN THE 28TH CHAPTER OF EZEKIEL on the King of Tyrus. It describes Lucifer being created with musical instruments imbedded in his body. It's true, as a person who has seen him, it's true. He thinks he's a god & therefore he must have music because gods must have music. (See also Isa.14:4-21.)

NOW YOU CAN GO AHEAD & LET HIS MUSIC BE PLAYED IN YOUR HOME IF YOU CHOOSE, OR YOU CAN BECOME A STRONGER CHRISTIAN & GET RID OF IT! You're the parents, the parents are the ones. The kids are not going to answer for it. (Inaudible question.) No, it would become an effect. It's strange because they wouldn't have gotten attacked without Christian help.

SEE, WITCHCRAFT NEVER SACRIFICES ANYTHING THAT THEY DON'T GAIN 10,000 MORE, & when they lost the battle on purpose in court with the Moonies, that set the stage for the Genocide Act. While we were yelling, "Yeah, get them out of those false cults & rehabilitate them!" we were setting the stage for our own downfall. You don't give up freedom to a certain group without losing it yourself. They've always set it up this way, & I'm always surprised at how easy Christians fall into it. (Ed: Amen!)

(QUESTION: HOW DO YOU FEEL ABOUT THE JOHN BIRCH SOCIETY?) How do I feel about them? Did you see that pyramid? I'm against any organization whose leaders are 33rd Level Masons, & their leader is a 33rd Level Mason. Now, he's taken off his Masonic ring in the last couple of years, but he is still a 33rd Level Mason. You cannot hit the Illuminati & be part of it.

THE ILLUMINATI KNOWS THE PEOPLE ARE GOING TO FIND OUT ABOUT THEM, people found out about them without my help. Brother Berry knew about them before I came along. So we find out about them, & the best thing they can do is call your attention towards something else & say that's that. So they have reflected the attention on Zionism & have said that's where it's at. The only problem is that most of the people in the Illuminati aren't Jews. Their founders were Jews by birth, but not by religion. • /P>

BUT MOST OF ITS LEADERS, EXCEPT FOR THE ROTHSCHILDS, ARE GAELIC: SCOTCH OR FRENCH GAELIC. It's got nothing to do with Jews. My family & most of the people serving on the Grand Druid, their family trees go back to the pagan temples in Rome & Greece & England, to the original priesthood. Some go back as far as Egypt & Babylon. It's got nothing to do with the Jews. • /P>



SO I DON'T LIKE THEM. I DON'T LIKE ANYBODY THAT'S A HATE GROUP FOR ONE THING, & I've heard too much hate doctrine about the Birch Society. See, I'm not choosy about who I hit!--Ha! (Inaudible question.) Did everybody understand what he was saying?

A PERSON WHO HAS BEEN IN THE OCCULT & BEEN SAVED, ARE THEY MORE TROUBLED BY DEMONS THAN A PERSON WHO HAS NEVER BEEN THERE?--Yes, if they haven't been through a deliverance. But at the same time, they are a bigger weapon against the Devil. You can't trick a witch with false doctrine, they've heard them all. You can't pass off a phony Christian on a witch, & you can't pass a witch off on them that's a Christian.--They've been there, they know what to spot.

THAT'S WHY I LOOK AT A PERSON'S EYES WHEN I TALK TO THEM. If that person has demonic influence in their life, I want to know about it, I want to know who I'm talking to & who I'm not talking to. And when you've lived in a supernatural world & you have dealt with demons like witches have, it's no different when you spot them in a person who's professing to be a Christian who isn't living the life.

SO THEY ARE A STRONGER WEAPON AGAINST THE DEVIL, BECAUSE THEY SERVED HIM. See, as close as we are to Jesus now, as loving & compassionate as the relationship we have with Him now, that's how we felt about the Devil, whether we knew he was the Devil or not. And so when you are that close to something, you know about it.

IF YOU BACKSLIDE YOU STILL KNOW ABOUT CHRISTIANITY, SO A BACKSLIDDEN SAVED WITCH KNOWS ABOUT WITCHCRAFT--IT'S THE SAME THING. But they do have problems, & needless to say, the Devil doesn't like it, so we're hit a little harder than maybe somebody else might be. But at the same time, we grow faster & stronger because of it. (Inaudible question.)

YES, WE ARE STARTING A RETREAT. As I told you, many people have been killed that have come out of it. It has gotten so that witches aren't trusting to come out of it now. Very few are coming out because of the fear, & there is no place for them to go. I mean, when you ask a Christian, "Will you let this witch come into your home so they'll have a place to stay?"--& all of a sudden you visualize people throwing grenades through your window & shooting up your house, you change your mind!--Because that's probably what will happen.

SO, WE HAVE DECIDED TO BUILD A RETREAT SOMEWHERE IN THE WILDERNESS COUNTRY somewhere on the West Coast--I'm not going to say where--an armed retreat where these people can be safe till they grow, & then they can either leave the retreat or they can stay. And it will serve a double purpose--I don't want to go into--later for Christians. But right now, that's its purpose, & we're believing that it will get built. We need \$50,000, & in the month-&-a-half since we have been trying to raise the money, my pastor's received \$25.

SO, YOU SEE, IT'S KIND OF HARD TO CONVINCE CHRISTIANS THAT A PLACE LIKE THIS IS NEEDED when they can go home to their safe house every night, not realizing that for a witch to become saved or a witch to leave Witchcraft, their life is in extreme danger & they probably will be killed. It's easy to feel safe when you're safe. I guess that's why I feel it, because I'm in danger all the time, so I know how they feel. And I've had many a close friend that have become Christians & then been killed, so we are trying to build such a retreat.

(QUESTION: CAN A PERSON BE UNDER THE INFLUENCE OF A DEMON & PROFESS TO BE A CHRISTIAN & NOT KNOW IT?) Oh, I really don't think ... yeah, I guess you can. I have to look at it from your point of view. A woman that was a Christian was at Brother Berry's church this morning & we put her through a deliverance. In other words, we cast the demons out of her.

SHE WAS NOT POSSESSED--A CHRISTIAN CANNOT BE POSSESSED, I WANT TO MAKE THAT CLEAR--but she had demonic spiritual influences. She had tried to take her life, she was going into fits of depression to where her prayer life could not conquer them. She hadn't in 18 months felt the joy that she felt this morning when it was over. When you can no longer crucify the flesh, & it goes beyond just crucifying the flesh, then it's time you cast out the demon. (Q: This is done by prayer?) That's how it's done.

IT'S DONE THROUGH PRAYER & THE BLOOD & THE NAME OF JESUS. I don't pray to it, I just tell the devil to get out! Actually, it is very well noted, you can do it for yourself if you have the faith. Actually, they are the ones that are doing it anyway; we just have to say a prayer of rejection & we just take authority over them, but they could do the same thing if they believed it.

(QUESTION: IS TEX WATSON, THE FELLOW WHO KILLED SHARON TATE, BORN AGAIN?) That's what he says, yeah. (Q: And he is in prison now. Will he be released & is he a witch?) But you've got to understand something, if Tex a was born-again Christian he would tell all. There's been several people who are supposed to be born again of that group & they have not told anything. If they were born again, they'd be telling all, & they're not. That's why I don't believe it. You can believe it if you choose, but I don't, because I know Manson, he's an old buddy of mine.

I KNOW WHAT WENT ON & IT WASN'T A MASS KILLING, IT WAS A CONTRACT KILLING. Even the police who tried them knew that, but they didn't want to press it in the trial because they didn't think they could get a conviction if they pressed a conspiracy theory behind it. And I talked with the police officers behind it. No, I don't believe it. If Tex was born again & he was in prison, they'd be trying to kill him for one thing.

MANSON RUNS THE PRISONS, NOTHING GOES ON IN THERE THAT HE DOESN'T GIVE THE ORDERS TO, & that's from the very security guards that work there. Well, I don't

accept it, I'm sorry, but I came out of that world & I realize ... let me give you this: (See "Carter the Poor Example," No.909.)

THEY RECENTLY ASKED ANITA BRYANT WHETHER JIMMY CARTER WAS A CHRISTIAN OR NOT, & this was her answer. I'll use this as an example, & I loved what her answer was. Christians are so gullible & I really appreciate Anita for this, she said, "You're not a Christian because you say you're born again, you're a Christian if you have the fruit of the Spirit-- does he?" That's the whole question. If the fruit's there, they're Christians. If it's not there, you're going to grow up thorns & not apples, OK? That's all I can tell you. Yes?

(QUESTION REGARDING ROCK MUSIC IN THE CHURCH:) YOU'RE TALKING ABOUT JESUS ROCK. I mentioned a church earlier that we spent 8 million dollars in two years to build in Costa Mesa, California. They started Jesus Rock music. The reason for the 8 million dollars was to put rock music in churches that did not allow rock music. It's not what's sung on the tune, it's the music.

(QUESTION: CAN A PERSON BE A MEMBER OF A FUNDAMENTAL CHURCH & ACTUALLY BE A WITCH & NOT A CHRISTIAN?) ABSOLUTELY! They've spent millions of dollars putting "plants" in Fundamental churches around the United States. They train them in Christian beliefs. The newest form of blasphemy by a witch towards the Christian God is to sit there & praise the Lord & act like a Christian, laughing the whole time. Absolutely.

THAT'S WHAT REGINA, THE GIRL THAT TOOK MY PLACE DID. Her main thrust was to keep an eye on Jerry Falwell's church while she was Witch Queen of Virginia, & she was so good at it they made her a Grand Druid when I resigned. So there's a lot of it. In fact the church that reached me had four High Priestesses attending the church, & had it in a mess until they started finding out what was going on & took a hand & corrected the matter.

THEY HAVE TRIED RECENTLY TO GET WITCHCRAFT, THAT'S MAINLY THE OUIJA BOARD & SEANCES, IN MANY CHRISTIAN HIGH SCHOOLS. Because 95% of the people inducted into witchcraft in the last couple of years were inducted by their junior high & high school teachers in the public school system, by teachers that were scholarshiped & funded & put through college, that were coven members just so they could spread witchcraft. And so through many liberal practices at schools, they've been using Christian schools, so now they are trying to get in the Christian schools. OK?

(QUESTION ABOUT POLITICS.) I DON'T KNOW, I DON'T KEEP TABS ON THAT. The only thing I know about politics is what was happening when I got in, & I try to stay away from politics. I was very politically-minded when I was a witch. I try to stay very Christian-minded & you can't do both. I'll take this one & then I'm going to close. Yes?

(QUESTION: WHAT YOU SAID ABOUT DEMONS BEING AROUND WITCHCRAFT BOOKS; WHY DO YOU CARRY YOUR BOOKS?) What books? (Q: About the Masonic Temple.) Oh, those books aren't the same books. The two books that I have--& I don't have any with me tonight--one is written by Charles Finney who was saved out of the Masons, & another one was the first man executed by the Illuminati for betraying them, Captain Morgan. And this is the reason I carry those two books, because they expose. But I don't believe that a Christian can have books written by witches in their libraries & get away with it, & I don't own any. I burned all mine when I got saved. (End of lecture.)

\* \* \* \* \*

(The following is a lecture given a different night:)

WE HAD TO REALLY PRAY BEFORE WE COULD MAKE IT TO THE SERVICE TONIGHT, my wife & myself. We've been battling the flu & coughs. We've been pushing & we've opened ourselves up & weakened our bodies down.

LITERALLY WHAT I'M GOING TO DO IS TEACH OUT OF A BOOK THAT WE JUST DID FOR CHICK PUBLICATIONS about a month ago which should be seen in your Christian bookstores in about six months. It took 6 or 8 months to do the artwork on it, a book that we could write in about two days, & it's called The Angel of Light.

AND WHAT WE'RE GOING TO DO IS TAKE THE DEVIL'S SPIRITUAL KINGDOM & HIS PHYSICAL KINGDOM. The reason I want to do it this way is many people, many political organizations, conservative political organizations specifically, find the Illuminati in their journeys. I mean it's kinda' hard if you're going to fool around with politics & history not to see the conspiracy. But they look at this little thing over here, & they see a war is happening, or they look over here at this little political movement & they miss the whole picture because they look at it from the outside.

IT'S IMPOSSIBLE TO LOOK AT THE ILLUMINATI FROM THE OUTSIDE UNLESS YOU UNDERSTAND ITS STRUCTURE. Physical minds & computers cannot come up with the Conspiracy as powerful & as direct, as workable, that has hundreds of different little conspiracies off of it, that do not know that it's all one big Conspiracy.

IT'S IMPOSSIBLE TO DO SOMETHING LIKE THIS WITHOUT A SUPERNATURAL DIRECTION. We have a supernatural direction in the Christian Church, that's how come the Christian Church grew, we have the Holy Spirit leading us. Well, they have the Prince & Power of the Air. They have Lucifer leading them, & this is something I want to go into.

I WANT TO DESCRIBE HIM & GO INTO HIM IN THE WORD & MY EXPERIENCES, & then we're going to go into his physical kingdom, the Illuminati. If you have paper & pencil with you tonight, I recommend that you get it out, because I doubt that you're going to hear the things that you're going to hear here tonight quite like you're going to hear them tonight!

WHILE YOU'RE DOING THAT, I'D LIKE TO ASK THAT YOU TURN TO EZEKIEL THE 28TH CHAPTER STARTING IN VERSE 11, & we're going to read about 19 Scriptures here tonight in this Chapter. The 28th Chapter of Ezekiel is a prophecy given by Ezekiel who received it of the Lord. The Lord commanded him to give it. He was prophesying unto Satan himself. The prophet of the Lord stood there & prophesied unto Satan.

WE HAVE A CONFUSING PICTURE BECAUSE OF MANY PAINTINGS & MANY SUNDAY SCHOOL STORIES, that are based on tradition about the Devil's fall, & when we got into The Angel of Light we realized how many traditions we were going to shatter. But we had come to a conclusion before we wrote it that unless it said it in the Word--& no reading in between the lines, please--unless it said it directly in the Word we weren't going to put it down. We were going to put it down in the Word. And then I stood over here & said, well that's exactly the way it was in the occult.--And we matched the two of them up & they matched perfectly.

SO WE'RE NOT GOING TO TAKE YOU THROUGH ANY TRADITIONS TONIGHT, so if you have a lot of Baptist traditions you're going to get a lot of it shattered tonight between this chapter & the 24th chapter of Matthew, & you're going to walk out of here either a changed person or ready to lynch the pastor & myself! But let's take this tonight & I want the young people to pay attention to this.

THIS IS THE MOST PERFECT DESCRIPTION OF LUCIFER & when you're gone & if you're still listening to the garbage that you call music today, you need to get re-saved. Because this is the Scripture for it, read with me: "Moreover the Word of the Lord came unto me, saying..." Now I want to say something here about this chapter.

HE'S PROPHESYING TO THE PRINCE OF TYRUS, & many people believe that this was ... I can't think of this name now, but anyway, the ruler of Babylon. And if you'll get in Isaiah where it talks about Lucifer the fallen star, before he started prophesying to Lucifer, Isaiah was prophesying to the same ruler. (Isa.14:4.)

THE REASON FOR THIS IS THE PERFECT DESCRIPTION OF THE ILLUMINATI--& the Illuminati didn't even exist in its organized form at that time--it's because there was a ruler, a prince. A power was a ruler, & then there was the king over that prince, so it was the power behind that Earthly ruler. (See "Satan, King of Empires!" ML #961, Vol.8.)

AND THIS IS WHERE PEOPLE AREN'T LOOKING TODAY & ARE NOT PAYING ATTENTION TO EPHESIANS 6:12 TODAY. They're not looking at things with a supernatural stance behind the physical. While Walter Cronkite or somebody else gets on television & says this is happening, you ought to get down on your knees & say, "Lord, what's really happening?"--because it's not the way they're telling it! "Son of man, take up a lamentation upon the King of Tyrus, & say unto him, Thus saith the Lord God; Thou sealest up the sum, full of wisdom, & perfect in beauty."

THE FIRST THING WE WANT TO POINT OUT ABOUT LUCIFER IS, WHEN HE WAS CREATED HE WAS THE COMPLETE SUM OF ALL BEAUTY & WISDOM. You see, God wasn't created, but never had a created creature ever been created with such beauty & such wisdom, & that was Lucifer, "Thou hast been in Eden the garden of God, every precious stone was thy covering"--& it lists the stones & gold. And on down it lists, "The workmanship of thy tabrets & of thy pipes was prepared in thee in the day that thou wast created."--He was created with musical instruments imbedded in his body, that's how he was created!

YOU SEE, LUCIFER IS TRYING TO BE A GOD IN THIS PROPHECY, & we'll go on in it. He's trying to be a god, he's trying to be as great as God. He's trying to build a kingdom in the sides of the mountain of the North & so on, & it's a description of God's Kingdom. He knows that music was created for God, dance was created for God. He knows that if he is going to be a god he is going to have to have music.

YOU CAN'T BE A GOD WITHOUT MUSICAL WORSHIP, SO HE HAS CREATED HIS OWN MUSIC. It's not just Rock, I get sick of people saying just Rock. I'm down on all music except the music that is created for the Lord. The reason I'm particularly down on Country & Western, & if you ever listen to it, it's worse than Rock! It's more about lust, it's more about drinking, it's more about fighting than any other thing, & recently it's even begun to be about witchcraft.

SEE, WITCHES DON'T SAY "WITCHCRAFT" & THEY DON'T SAY "WITCHES," THEY SAY "PRACTICERS" or something like this, & they say "the force," for those who've been to "Star Wars." They say "the force," so they describe him as "the force." Now Tom C. Hall has come out with a song called, "The Force," & the music is the background music for witchcraft ceremonies, it's his music to the words of that song.

AND IN "STAR WARS"--WHICH IS THE BIGGEST THING THAT WITCHCRAFT HAS EVER DONE TO SPREAD ITS DOCTRINE--in "Star Wars" & in this song they say, "And may the force be with you till we're apart." This is almost identical to what witches say when they greet & part, so it's not by accident, People, nothing is by accident anymore. If I can get anything across to you tonight, you're going to walk out of here saying there's nothing that happens by accident. "THOU ART THE ANOINTED CHERUB THAT COVERETH"--HE COVERED

GOD'S THRONE, he was the chosen cherub. Now one of the traditions about Lucifer is that he was one of three archangels. Quickly, can anybody find a Scripture for that in the Bible?--It doesn't exist! That's a tradition. That's the problem, you've got too many traditions! He was a cherub, he wasn't an archangel, there's a difference. The Jews go in much more deeply than we do on angels, they still believe in the angels instead of believing in the Holy Spirit.

BUT I FIRMLY BELIEVE THAT THE DEVIL'S KINGDOM SUPERNATURALLY IS SET UP TO COUNTERFEIT GOD'S, & HE HAS SEVEN PRINCIPALITIES. He has set his spiritual kingdom up identical with God's Kingdom & there are seven--he wasn't one of them. A third of the angels rebelled with him, yes, that's in Revelation that happens, but that doesn't mean he was one of the three archangels. That's just our way of thinking. (Rev.12:3,4.)

THE CHOSEN CHERUB, "THE ANOINTED CHERUB THAT COVERETH; & I have set thee so; thou wast upon the holy mountain of God: thou hast walked up & down in the midst of the stones of fire. Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created till iniquity was found in thee." He was perfect till then. "By the multitude of thy merchandise they have filled the midst of thee with violence, & thou hast sinned: therefore I will cast thee as profane out of the mountain of God."

NOW WHAT IS THE LORD SAYING HERE? "I WILL CAST THEE OUT." If you think that Lucifer is locked out of Heaven, I suggest you go back & read the first Chapter of Job all over again, & then go read Revelation. Revelation isn't a history book, it's a prophecy book, & in there we find he'll get cast out. The Devil's walking here, this is his domain. He's our accuser, that's what Satan means, "accuser." He stands before the Throne of God constantly accusing us. I'll let you study this later, because I want to go on, but on & on it describes him.

THE MAIN THING I WANT TO POINT OUT IS HOW HE LOOKS. So in the sketch we drew for the artists for The Angel of Light, we drew him as the covering angel before God's Throne, covered with jewels. And when God's light shone through him it was like a prism, it changed the colors to where they come out, & colors are extremely important to the Devil. Everything he does is in colors, without them, nothing happens. It's like Jeane Dixon sees blue serpents, & we're going to go into that tonight.

ANYWAY, EARLIER TODAY I WAS TALKING ABOUT WHEN I'VE SEEN LUCIFER. I don't know why it's so astounding to Christians that somebody should see the Devil, but I suggest this to you: fight him really hard & I can guarantee he'll show up in your life. He'll pay you a visit & say hi!--No, I'm serious, I really am, it's not a joke. If you start fighting the Devil, if he doesn't show up--which is doubtful that he would--he will send somebody to imitate him & pay you a visit.

THE PASTOR & HIS WIFE WERE TELLING ME TONIGHT OF A VISIT THAT THEY'VE HAD. Will you confirm this visit, Pastor? Absolutely! It was a very spooky one, wasn't it, Sister? But because they did not fear, he had to leave. Now I want to say something to you very quickly while we're on the supernatural part of the Devil. The Devil can only interfere in a Christian's life through several things, he can only come in your home for this reason:

IF YOU FEAR HIM HE CAN COME IN BECAUSE YOU HAVE WORSHIPPED HIM, SO DON'T FEAR HIM! If you own something that belongs to him, such as the jewelry we described in Sunday School this morning; or such as books on the occult, or books on astrology which is the occult; or such as writings that are supposed to be best sellers, but come on people, they're loaded with stuff that Larry Flynt would love to put in his magazine!--Best sellers that are just descriptions for pornography books so Doubleday can make an extra buck!

AND THEN THERE ARE OTHER THINGS SUCH AS THINGS OR BELONGINGS THAT ACTUALITY WERE CREATED BY THE DEVIL SUCH AS ROCK MUSIC. Now I want to specify this, I am down on this because I am an ex-witch. Without it witches don't function. I dropped this out of my testimony this morning, I should have given it. One of the things that I was supposed to be was the head of this Brenner Enterprises in Texas which explains to the IRS why I was making all this money.

IT WAS A LOT OF MONEY & ONE OF THE COMPANIES I WAS SUPPOSED TO HAVE OWNED WAS CALLED ZODIAC PRODUCTIONS.--The name gives it away. It was a booking agency in Texas; it's changed its name, but it's still the largest booking agency in the U.S. for Rock groups. It was the group that was originally responsible for bringing the Beatles to the U.S. I got to meet most of the groups.

THE BEATLES WERE ALREADY APART WHEN I WAS THERE, BUT I GOT TO MEET SEVERAL OF THEM OFF & ON, & I met almost all of the groups that were in existence then, & a lot that are in existence now. I only found about this many (holds up a few fingers) that weren't occultists, that didn't confess when they were alone that their music came from "supernatural forces" as they would put it.

SO I WANT TO TELL THE TEENAGERS & THE PARENTS SOMETHING REAL QUICK BEFORE I GO ON: When witches do a book, they do a spell over the manuscript & they command demons which are under their authority to enter every manuscript that comes off the press, every copy of that book. So when you buy that book you get a little free gift, like when you open a little Cracker Jacks box & there's a little trinket in there. Well, you get a free demon, free of charge.

WELL, MOST OF THE ROCK GROUPS DO THE SAME THING, & I know, I've talked to one just recently--David Crosby of Crosby, Stills, Nash & Young that used to exist & is getting back



together--& he told me this is why his records & others' records zoomed to the charts. Many people tell me they do this so their records will be best sellers, & you get free of charge your own private demon.

SO PARENTS, IF YOU'RE COMPROMIZING WITH YOUR KIDS to keep them from running away from home, you are responsible for that article in the home because you're the head of the house. (Audience: Amen, preach it, Brother!) Now this is an ex-witch talkin' who knows about demons, so you better pay attention!!

MAYBE THAT'S WHY YOUR FINANCES ARE MESSED UP! Maybe that's why your kids & you are sick once in a while & you shouldn't be. The preacher asked me how much credit do I give the Devil for sickness? I said, "All of it, lock, stock & barrel!" Now let's go on or I'll be on that all night. ANYWAY, I WANT TO GIVE YOU SOMETHING REAL QUICK: THERE ARE SEVEN PRINCIPALITIES IN THE DEVIL'S KINGDOM. The way it's set up, there's Satan & then there's Beelzebub. I know a lot of Christians thought that was another title for Satan, but that's his prince. That would have been his position to God, that would have been his chosen angel. Under that are the seven principalities, & under the principalities are the powers, & under the powers, billions of demons. I just praise the Lord that the pit's locked & that most of them are there. But there's still millions running around.

BUT ANYWAYS, THE SEVEN PRINCIPALITIES ARE AS FOLLOWS: REGE, WHICH IS THE PRINCIPALITY OF THE OCCULT & many things that are under the occult. And this is for the young people; witches know the difference between witchcraft & Sorcery. That's why I don't like the modern translations of the Bible, because they list witchcraft as Sorcery.

SORCERY IS THE USE OF CERTAIN DRUGS THAT ARE ACTUALLY OCCULT DRUGS. There's a difference. Timothy Leary, when he wrote his book on LSD said, "You're not hallucinating when you take acid. Acid is blocking the physical senses out so that you can see a supernatural World!"--And since God doesn't use LSD, that only leaves one supernatural World left! And most people that have been on LSD for a long time will tell you, "I wasn't hallucinating when I saw that!"

NOW THIS IS WHY WE ASK MANY PEOPLE IF THEY'VE BEEN IN THE OCCULT & IF THEY'VE SAID NO, THEN WE'LL STOP & SAY, "BUT YOU'VE BEEN ON ACID, or you've been on coke, or you've been on a strong form of hashish or you've been on speed!"--Something that's classified as a hallucinogenic. That's a sorcery drug. The word "sorcery" comes from the word that we receive "pharmacist" from meaning the dispenser of drugs. In this case, sorcery means the use of drugs for occult purposes. Now there's other things that are in this, of course, there's witchcraft & all this.

THE NEXT ONE IS LAZERS. I was going to put all of this on the board but I decided to go through it real quick so I can use the board for other things. Lazars is sexual lust, & that says it

right there. You want to know all the things that are under Rege?--Everything that's in the 18th Chapter of Deuteronomy is under Rege.

ONE THING I USUALLY WARN CHRISTIANS ABOUT IS THIS CUTE LITTLE GAME GOING AROUND the Christian church that when a woman is pregnant with a child, somebody will get a button or a ring or a medallion of some type & swing it over their hand & say, "Let's see if you're going to have a girl or a boy."--That's called divination, fortune telling.

IF THAT WOMAN OR MAN THAT WAS DOING THAT CUTE LITTLE TRICK, THAT OLD WIVES TALE, were caught doing that in Israel, they'd take her out & stone him or her to death, & the person that was allowing it to be done! Today we're under grace, praise the Lord for that, or I wouldn't be here, but I'm telling you it's that serious! We could go into the demonic reasons for it, but you might gain troubles from it by allowing it to happen.

NEXT AFTER LAZERS, AFTER LUST, IS BACCHUS. I don't have the spelling on it, good luck. I'm sorry I didn't put everything on the board but I left my notes back in Ohio. Bacchus was even an old Roman god. A couple other of these principalities had gods named after them in different pagan countries during pagan times.

BACCHUS WAS THE ROMAN GOD OF WINE, IS PRETTY CLOSE TO WHAT HE WAS, & HE IS THE PRINCIPALITY OF ADDICTION. Now I've seen many people who shouldn't be doing deliverance because they don't know what they're doing, calling demons of nicotine out, demons of alcoholism, & the demon's standing there laughing at them because there's no such creature!

BUT THERE IS A DEMON OF ADDICTION, & THE REASON I SPECIFY THIS IS THAT HE DOESN'T CARE WHAT YOU FEED HIM, just as long as you're addicted to it. That can be food & caffeine as well as alcohol, cigarettes & drugs. Now food & caffeine are not bad except when you've got to have it & you use it as a solution to your problems.

TAKE FOR EXAMPLE A WOMAN IN A LIBERAL CHURCH, SHE HAD PROBLEMS & SHE DOESN'T GO TO THE LORD, SHE'LL GO TO HER LIQUOR CABINET & her pack of Marlboros--as she's hooked on both--or taking her prescribed barbiturates from the doctor. Now over in the Fundamental church this isn't allowed, except maybe the prescribed prescription from the doctor. And she'll go where? Does anybody know?

IF SHE HAS A LOT OF PROBLEMS, WHERE DOES SHE RUN TO IF SHE DOESN'T RUN TO THE LORD? What does she do if she gets nervous?--She eats! How many people get up in the morning & have got to have ... now I'm talking about having a cup of coffee to pop the ol' peepers up, "I gotta have my cup of coffee!--I'm gonna die if I don't have my cup of coffee!"

Come on, you've seen it!! An 8-pack of Pepsi in three hours, 16 cans of Dr. Pepper a day! Come on!

YOU TALK ABOUT ALCOHOLICS, WE'VE GOT SOME CAFFEINE ADDICTS AROUND HERE! There's a difference between drinking it because you like it, & don't kid me!! It's like the guy putting the cigarette down & saying, "Oh well, I could quit any time, I just like to do it." "Yeah, I could quit drinking 26 cups of coffee a day, but I just enjoy coffee!"--Then go to Sanka!-If you can stand the withdrawals! Come on, you know what I mean! It's the same demon! He does not care.

TO GIVE YOU AN EXAMPLE, I MENTIONED TEEN CHALLENGE TODAY. Teen Challenge will not accept anybody from the occult because they don't cast out demons & they can't handle them.--That's why they don't get much success with drugs anymore because since Dave Wilkerson got rid of exorcism, Teen Challenge dropped out of it, they don't do deliverance. So therefore the people come in, they get them off of cigarettes, they get them off of drugs, but they come out weighing 200 or 300 pounds & 26 cups of coffee a day & they've got the same demons!

THEY'RE FEEDING THE SAME DEMONS BUT THEY'RE GIVING THEM A NEW DIET! Can somebody tell me, amen? You understand what I'm trying to say? Oh, you understand? OK! Next after that is Pan. If you know Shakespeare, Pan says, "What fools these mortals be"--it kind of gives him away.

PAN IS THE PRINCIPALITY OF THE MIND. THIS IS THE DEVIL'S FAVOURITE PLAYGROUND. When you say sanctify the spirit, soul & body, this is the soul, the mind. Now, to give you an example, we run into Pan more than any other demon. Now we don't use names, but I'm giving you the names anyway, we just use categories in deliverance.

WE RUN INTO HIM BECAUSE OF THE DEMON OF REJECTION THAT HE IS OVER. And this is the base for everybody that has sexual problems, & the base where everybody has drug problems, & the base for everybody that has occult problems. Because they pick this demon up when they're a child, sometimes before they're even born, & they carry this thing that opens them up to other demons, trying to feed & fulfil the demon that's driving them from within. If you've ever seen a person with the spirit of rejection you'll know what I mean.

AND HE'S ALSO OVER NEURALGIA, DEPRESSION, SUICIDE, SCHIZOPHRENIA, PARANOIA, ALL THE MENTAL ILLNESSES. This is why people with rejection problems have deep depression, they try & kill themselves, they're nervous all the time, they all tie together, people! The next one after it is Set, & this will answer the Pastor's question he had about sickness.

SET IS THE PRINCIPALITY OF DEATH. He was the Egyptian god of the underworld, the same thing. Set is over all sicknesses, in fact there're 39 major illnesses--that's what the physicians say today--& the occult credits him with 39 powers, 39 little sub-groups. And it's interesting that it's believed that Christ took 39 stripes for our healing. (Ed: Amen!)

HOW MANY HAVE I GOT NOW? FIVE? I KNOW WHAT THE 7TH IS BUT I WANT TO LEAVE IT TILL THE 7TH. Okay, I've got Lazars, Rege, Bacchus, Set, Pan. I can't think of what the other one is. I'm trying to think of the category that's missing. Sheila, help! We don't have our notes with us! I'm gonna skip it, I'll come back to it.

THE SEVENTH ONE DOES NOT HAVE A NAME BECAUSE WITCHES DON'T USE IT. You see, witches will call these others up & will send them out or have them command demons to go out. They don't use this one. They call it a Christian principality. Remember I said earlier this morning there's no such thing as an undedicated witch; I had to get saved before I found undedicated people in religion! Now this is the reason why: IT'S CALLED THE PRINCIPALITY OF CONTENTMENT. You come to church, you might even come to Sunday nights, & if you're good you might even show up at prayer meeting on Wednesday, but that's if you have a few problems during the week & you need a religious fix. Come on, People, this is the reason. This is why churches don't grow, they don't have bus programs, they don't grow, they don't go out & canvas.

THAT'S WHY WHEN YOU COME TOGETHER FOR A WITNESSING NIGHT, YOU MIGHT GET 8 PEOPLE OUT OF 300 TO SHOW UP, because of this. I've walked into churches like that Calvary Chapel down in Costa Mesa with 3,000 young people.--You come back three months later & you've got 3,000 different young people! That's because they either backslid or went to a Bible-believing church so they could grow!

YOU CAN FEEL THE POWER, THE PRINCIPALITY IN THE AIR OF CONTENTMENT. When you walk through the door, you can suffocate!--That is if you came out of what I came out of & you know what they feel like. Anyway, I'm still trying to think of the last one. Oh boy, I'll probably remember it when the service is over. OK, let's go on to the physical kingdom.

OH, SOMEBODY ASKED ME EARLIER TODAY WHEN I WAS IN SUNDAY SCHOOL DESCRIBING LUCIFER--he must not want this to come out--about when he appeared. He did appear physical, & this might shock a few people. I've seen him sit down at tables at meals. I've seen him even have sexual relationships with women at witchcraft meetings, at higher meetings. In fact, the girl that took my place whose witch name is Regina, it means "the bride of Lucifer." Now the witches believe it too!

HE APPEARED ABOUT SEVEN FEET TALL, USUALLY CLOTHED IN DEEP PURPLE.--Sometimes clothed in red, sometimes clothed in gold--purple & gold. The only time I've seen him

clothed in anything else was about six hours after I got saved. He showed up as Satan--that was a shock--& he was clothed in black, but he still appeared the same. About seven feet tall, & I'd have to say not just handsome, but beautiful.

JET BLACK HAIR, SNOW WHITE SKIN, & THE COLOUR OF HIS EYES, INSTEAD OF BLUE, BROWN OR WHATEVER, WERE A DEEP VIOLET, almost deep purple. And when you looked in them, it was like looking down into the Grand Canyon. It's just bottomless, this power! And believe me, if he ever appeared to you, you'd know you were in his presence.

NOW I WANT TO GO ON TO THE PHYSICAL KINGDOM, THE ILLUMINATI. For those of you who were maybe not around this morning, the Illuminati means "The Light Bearers." Call it Great Conspiracy, call it what it's called today, "Moriah," which means "The Conquering Wind"; call it the CFR, which is its political name to this country; call it anything you want to call it, it's still the Illuminati, & I want to give some quick history about the Illuminati here. (Ed: Mt. Moriah, Jewish Temple, location of the AC Image!)

ITS OFFICIAL BIRTHDAY IS MAY 1, 1776--RECOGNIZE THE YEAR, PEOPLE? That's its official birthday. It existed about five to six years before, but that's its official birthdate. May 1st you have, the Communists have it, but all these countries that have ties with the Illuminati, May 1st is the most holiest day because it is Beltane to the witches, & Beltane is New Years Day, & all things begin on Beltane.

IT'S THE DAY THAT LUCIFER COMES BACK FROM THE UNDERWORLD & DWELLS IN THE SKIES ABOVE, ACCORDING TO THE WITCHES. Now I don't believe that doctrine now, but that's the doctrine we believed then. They spent between Halloween & Beltane under the Earth & came back in the summer months. That's how come the seasons change & all that good stuff. In other words, witchcraft is paganism.. All the witches call themselves pagans because they believe in the old pagan religions, which means "pre-Christian religion".

NOW, THIS IS THE STRUCTURE. The reason I've left the other blocks out, there's actually three pyramids, each one bigger than the next, but this is on all of them, the Capstone. Now I want to explain the Illuminati with these pyramids so there's so confusion.

THE FIRST PYRAMID IS "ORGANIZATION," not financial, not political, Organization. You'll find the Masons here, that's one of the originals. You'll find the Grand Lodges of the Orient, which is where the Illuminati started. You'll find the Scottish Rites, the York Rites, the Oddfellows, the Jaycees--any organization that is secret, that has an inner group besides the outer group, you will find there, as long as it's not directly occultism.

THE NATURES ARE IN DOCTRINE, & MOST MEMBERS DON'T KNOW THAT THE WITCHES BELIEVE & DO THE SAME THINGS THAT THEY DO. In fact, I think the

Masons would be shocked to look at a drawing, a blueprint of the Golden Dawn Temple--which is the Rothschild's private coven in London--& see that all Mason's temples are based upon that blueprint. They would be shocked to read that the Rothschilds do the same rites that the Masons do. You might tell a few Masons that, I may have just told a few of them that!

UP HERE YOU'LL ALSO FIND B'NAI B'RITH, A VERY VERY POWERFUL ILLUMINATI ORGANISATION. They couldn't be doing what they're doing today without B'nai B'rith. You'll find the American Civil Liberties Union, you'll also find a new one that was created off of it by the man that is actually the brains of the Illuminati today, Isaac Bonovitz. (Ed: B'nai B'rith: Jewish laymen's organization. Encarta 98 says that it is the world's largest Jewish organization, has a membership of about 500,000 in 51 countries.)

WHAT MR. BONOVITZ CREATED IS CALLED THE AQUARIAN ANTI-DEFAMATION LEAGUE. You may not feel it much out on the East Coast yet, but out on the West Coast the Christians have already felt it. It's won Federal suit after Federal suit of any Christian church touching witchcraft, of any Christian church taking the occult on.--And that's exactly what it is, it's the anti-defamation league to the Occult. (Ed: The Anti-Defamation League is a militant Jewish organization which also attacks anyone who criticizes the Jews or Israel, accusing them of "anti-Semitism.")

AT THE TOP OF EVERY PYRAMID YOU WILL FIND 500--THE 500 IS THE WORLD BANKING SYSTEM. It's a counsel of the 500 richest people in the World, & it's been in existence for hundreds of years. Some of the people on it today are David Rockefeller, Nelson Rockefeller, Phillip & Edward Rothschild--in fact all the Rothschilds; Queen Juliana & her husband. All the delegates from the Arab countries that own all your oil that doesn't exist ... Hmmm.

THE NEXT IS THE COUNCIL OF 33, THE 33 HIGHEST MASONS IN THE WORLD. After that is the Council of 13, the Grand Druid Council, this is what I sat on. After that there's a Capstone, the Rothschild's Tribunal--Edward, Phillip & Richard are the ones that are sitting up on the Rothschild's Tribunal now. It's believed that Richard is the third one, in other words, we aren't sure who the third one is. In it is the leader of the Illuminati: the all-seeing eye, Lucifer!

NOW HAVE ANY OF YOU BEEN NOTICING THE NEWS LATELY & they'll be talking about the stock market or the deflation of the dollar or something, & they'll show this pyramid & capstone from the back of the dollar bill? Have you been noticing the eye on it lately? The whole thing will be green & they'll make the eye blue with a big glare coming out of it, & the eye's twice as big as it normally is!

BECAUSE THE T.V. USES WITCHCRAFT SYMBOLS. Now see, you don't know witch language. They have their own witch language, symbols that you see everyday throughout the

World that witches understand. They put these symbols on their store names. They create their store names, because the witch language & witch symbols are for witches who are going by there. witches know who owns them, they know the Illuminati owns them.

I GUARANTEE, PEOPLE, THAT YOU PROBABLY SHOP WITH SATAN. You probably shop at ten stores including the gas situation, grocery store, department store & so on, & nine of them probably belong to the Illuminati. To give you an example, Federal Department Stores is the biggest department store chain in the World. One of their leading members, Lazarus, is the biggest stockholder. They own Gold Circle, they own K-Mart which is Kresge's, they own Lazarus, they own Federal Department Stores, I know a bunch of them in Baltimore, I forget all of them.

THEY OWN THEM THROUGHOUT THE U.S. I think Penny's is about the only one that they don't own. Sears belongs to the Illuminati, Montgomery Wards belongs to Mobile Oil which belongs to the Illuminati. There isn't one oil company that you can buy your gasoline at today that's not owned 100% by Illuminati stockholders. Shell was the last to go when they went down. Interesting that that's one of the things that's bringing us to our knees.

NOW I WANT TO GIVE SOME THINGS THAT ARE GONNA HAPPEN. I invite you to go home & research the 24th Chapter of Matthew if you are of the opinion that you are going to be raptured out of here without anything at all happening to you. Pastor, for their benefit, do you agree with this? (Pastor: Yes, I believe that a lot's going to happen before it.) It's going to get a lot worse.

NOW I WANT TO SAY THAT I BELIEVE IN THE RAPTURE & I BELIEVE IN THE TRIBULATION & I believe that hundreds of thousands of Christians are going to die within a few years.--Because they didn't read the Word of God which warned us in advance that it was going to be the way it is going to be, & they listened to preachers that told them & patted them on the back. Are you familiar with Jeremiah?--If not, I invite you to read it.

JEREMIAH STOOD UP AS A PROPHET OF GOD & WARNED THE CITY TIME & TIME AGAIN UNTIL DESTRUCTION WAS UPON THEM, & they threw him in a pit because the rest of the prophets of the temple stood up & said, "No, it's all going to be all right. It ain't gonna come because God's gonna save us!"--But God didn't say it. He said, "I'm gonna tear this city apart!"

NOW IN THE 24TH CHAPTER OF MATTHEW HE SAID THAT THE TIME WAS COMING--NOW THIS IS JESUS' OWN WORDS--the time was coming that would be so bad that you wouldn't be able to stop & go back in your house & pick up a coat! He even said pray that when you run--that's exactly what it said, flee, run as fast as you can, flee--& pray that it

doesn't happen in the Wintertime. Wow, would people run, & what did I say, I'd be spinnin' my tracks!

EUROPE HAS ALREADY BEEN PREPARED FOR THIS FOR YEARS, & across the U.S. people are waking up that are Christians & are preparing for a space of time. I believe it's going to be kind of short because it's gonna be so bad that it couldn't be long, nobody would live if it was long. It's gonna be short but to the point.

NOW A PLAN OF WORLD RULE WILL NEVER TAKE EFFECT IF YOU ARE INDEPENDENT OF THAT WORLD RULE. The only reason that the "mark of the beast"--that's what many Christians call it, or a tag of being one of the group that's buying & selling & so on--the only reason that would work is if you had to buy. If you don't have to buy, what good will it do you?

EVERYTHING SINCE JIMMY CARTER GOT IN THAT HE HAS DONE HAS BEEN TO SET IT UP SO YOU WILL NOT BE INDEPENDENT OF THE U.S. GOVERNMENT or any government that will exist later. You must function within them for every bite of food & every drop of gasoline, is the major plan. And that's why--it's what's hit them back--it hasn't come into effect yet. In fact the Gun Law, which was one of the most important steps, was to have been in a year ago. That's the only measure that they're behind on.

I MET A MAN FROM THE NATIONAL RIFLE ASSOCIATION (NRA) that without them being Christians I sure can appreciate some of the things they've done that I've seen from behind the scenes. Martin Iegues was Jimmy Carter's campaign manager who is the head of the National Gun Control Center in Atlanta, Georgia, which is the organization whose purpose it is to take every hand gun, every rifle, every shotgun out of every home in the U.S.

NOW THIS MAY NOT SEEM VERY IMPORTANT, & I AM AMAZED AT HOW MANY CHRISTIANS SEEM TO THINK THAT BEING A CHRISTIAN MEANS THAT YOU SHOULD BE AGAINST GUNS. How many of you think that, seriously?--That if you're a Christian you should be against guns, that guns are evil? I've got news for you: the Illuminati is so scared of every private-owned gun that it's unbelievable! It's the only threat to them.

THE ONLY THREAT TO THEM RIGHT NOW OF THEIR PLANS IS YOUR PRIVATELY-OWNED GUNS. Now I asked the Pastor if I could just throw in these things, & I have, & I'm going to give them to you, & if you were afraid this morning, I pray that you won't get afraid now! Lord help them.

THAT TIMETABLE THAT I SAW SAID WHEN CHARLES MANSON IS RELEASED THAT WITHIN SIX MONTHS OF HIS RELEASE THEY WERE TO START "HELTHER SKELTER." I've got a feeling I'm gonna get back on rock music now. The Beatles are classified in the occult



world as the four major prophets. That's right, there's more to the Beatles than meets the eye. Their White Double Album ... now this'll mean nothing to a lot of you, & a lot to the young people. Their White Double Album is considered to be the Book of Revelation to witches. That's right. That & a book called Atlas Shrugs.

NOW IN IT IS A SONG CALLED "HELTER SKELTER." You should listen to that song, I used to have a lot of drug friends get together & say, "I wonder what that means?"--Witches knew what it meant, it was part of witch language. It meant a time when the pit would be opened & the demons would be set free & the World would become insane in less than a 24-hour period & they'd be killing everybody--their next door neighbors, their kids, their wife, everything! The World would just completely go mass insane overnight.

NOW MANSON IS NOT JUST A MASS MURDERER THAT GOT SENT TO JAIL. Take my word for it, if you don't take anything else, please take my word for it. Manson would have never gone to jail had he not been told that that was where he was supposed to go. If the Illuminati would've wanted to keep him out, he would've never gone to jail. They need him, so they let him get convicted.

MANSON WENT TO JAIL BECAUSE IN THE SEVEN YEARS THAT HE'S BEEN IN HE HAS ORGANIZED FROM HIS JAIL CELL EVERY PRISON ACROSS THE U.S. Now we've talked to prison officials, & prisoners walk around in prisons saluting each other & say, "Helter Skelter's our salvation! Pray Helter Skelter will come! Helter Skelter will release us!" They're waiting for a time when the World will go completely insane & they'll flood out of the prisons & they firmly believe--it's not going to happen but they firmly believe it--that they will take over this country.

NOW, FROM TALKING TO BIKERS--BIKERS MEANING PEOPLE THAT BELONG TO ILLEGAL MOTORCYCLE CLUBS LIKE THE HELLS ANGELS, the Outlaws, the Pagans & so on--they have stopped fighting amongst themselves, people. They have stopped killing each other anymore. You could get in a Bike War & 200 people could lay dead in the street in no time at all. You never heard about it because they got rid of all the bodies & got rid of all the guns & so on. But Bike Wars went on like this all the time out in the country.

THEY STOPPED FIGHTING, THEY DON'T BLOW UP EACH OTHER'S CLUB HOUSES ANYMORE, they don't shoot each other's wives & this type of thing, they've quit fighting. They've won, they're brothers for the first time, & their leader is Manson. He did this to the Hells Angels when he was in prison there, that's why he's still there. He'll be out.

THEY HAVEN'T LET HIM OUT YET BECAUSE THEY'RE NOT READY FOR HIM. The moment they get the gun controls measures down & another law called the Anti-Hoarding act, which will be coming up next year which will say you'll go to Federal Penitentiary if you

stockpile food, if you stockpile ammunition & guns, if you stockpile medical supplies, if you stockpile gasoline, you're gonna go to jail if they find out about it.

YOU SEE THE FARMER'S STRIKE & THESE ACCIDENTAL GRAIN FIRES THAT WE'VE BEEN HAVING LATELY? People, come on, four of them?! There was one I heard on the news last night driving into Des Moines, several of the largest grain dealers around up in smoke! If you want to believe that, you go ahead & believe it, I believe it's set. They're cutting the food down. YOU DON'T FEEL IT YET, BUT WAIT TILL YOU GO TO THE STORE & TRY & BUY A HEAD OF LETTUCE & THERE'S NO LETTUCE. That farmer's strike is really good for the farmers & I'm glad the farmers want to get some more money, but the Illuminati always uses people, & the people who started that farmer's strike were the closest friends of Jimmy Carter in Georgia. His own sister is one of the leaders of it, not Ruth, the other one.

IT'S SO YOU WILL HAVE TO DEPEND UPON THE GOVERNMENT'S SURPLUS FOOD TO EAT, & you're not going to get it without a Government Card. We'll talk about that card in a minute, in fact we'll talk about it now. Anybody here recently within the last three years been in Europe, travelling through the Holy Land or anything, anybody? Shucks. This is the reason I asked you that.

HOW MANY OF YOU KNOW ABOUT THE TEN TOES OF DANIEL, THE RECONSTRUCTION OF THE ROMAN EMPIRE? The iron was still there, it was only mixed with clay. Now, when the Common Market was first formed there were ten, & Norway dropped out. The reason, Norway was not part of the original Roman Empire, & God's Word said it had to be part. About three months ago Greece said, "We will join you!"--they were the missing country.

NOW WHEN YOU GO OVER THERE & YOU BUY SOMETHING, LIKE SHOES MADE IN ITALY OR CLOTHING THAT'S MADE BY THE EUROPEAN COMMON MARKET, there's a good 85% chance that you'll see this emblem on it. Anybody know what it is?--666, called the three-tailed comet. Now this same mark appears in more places. If you look back, when Richard Nixon was in, our country decided it was going to buy a lot of World currency to be distributed in 1980 or thereabouts.

SINCE THEN THEY'VE DECIDED IT'S BETTER TO GO TO A CREDIT CARD. In other words, paperless money & so on, where you never handle the money. But when it was bought, this was on all the World common currency. Besides that, Jimmy Carter has decided that every red-blooded American who is really a red-blooded American, & I'm blood red, I'm an American, will own a security card to prove they're an honest American.

NOW, HOW MANY OF YOU HAVE BEEN IN A NEW DEPARTMENT STORE & HAVE SEEN THE FANCY CASH REGISTERS THAT ARE ACTUALLY COMPUTER BANKS? There's a slot that they run cards through. They've even done it with the phones now where you

can call by running a card through, a credit card. The reason is that you're going to have to have this magnetic security card, & this is on it. It's on it, People, pay attention, it's on it! If you get Revelations, you get the meaning.

YOU'RE NOT GOING TO BE ABLE TO BUY, you're not going to pay another payment on your home, on your car, you're not going to get any gasoline in your car, you're not going to get the Pampers for your baby, you're not going to get any bread & milk & hamburger at the store, you're not going to run down to Ponderosa or whatever they've got on the East Coast & buy a steak. It's gonna cease!

AND THE U.S. HAS GOT A BAD PROBLEM, IT'S CALLED "THE CORNER STORE COMPLEX." You know, at 10 o'clock at night you run down to the corner store & pick up a 6-pack of Pepsi--I hope it's Pepsi & not Coors! Come on, when there's the least little thing that we want, we run down & get it. What happens when you're not allowed to buy gasoline but you've got this card?--You say, "Well, I'll take the card, but when they tell me I have to have a tattoo, I'll quit it." Huh!

IF YOU TAKE THE CARD, YOU'VE DONE TAKEN IT! That's all you need. People, pay attention to me! This card is scheduled to come out in a year-&a-half, & the computer bank is already set for it in Dallas.

THE NICKNAME OF THE TALKING COMPUTER IN DALLAS IS NICKNAMED AFTER ITS BROTHER COMPUTER IN AMSTERDAM, "THE BEAST." We talked to member of the National Guard in California & they've changed their patch. He told me that in less than a year, Carter will have every National Guard in every State wearing this patch, & they're all hooked into the security computer called "the Beast." We're being set up.

NOW WHEN MANSON GETS OUT & "HELTER SKELTER" STARTS, IN THE FIRST YEAR, ONE MILLIONS U.S. CITIZENS ARE MARKED FOR DEATH. Now my question is, are you going to be one of them? Are you going to stay around & be one of them? I'm not going to be one of them. I've been running around for five years with people shooting at me, I've become an expert at it! Now listen to me, I've told your Pastor what to do, Pastor Berry, Dr. Rasmussen & others across the country, this isn't just John Todd, I'm doing something about it. Joe Boyd has been doing something about it for 20 years.

WHAT YOU BETTER START DOING ABOUT IT, PEOPLE, IS YOU BETTER START PUTTING A LITTLE FOOD BACK FOR YOUR FAMILY. I invite you to do a little experiment. Go home tonight & tomorrow get out a paper & pencil, housewives, & take all the food out of your refrigerator & your freezer & your cabinets & add it up in meals. I don't mean survival meals, I mean meals that you can work off for every member of your family.

FIND OUT HOW MUCH FOOD, IF YOU COULDN'T GET ANY TOMORROW, YOU WOULD HAVE IN YOUR HOME. Well, you're going to get a little bit of a warning because the Illuminati is going to try something. They're gonna try several little practices first. There's a huge Teamster's strike coming that's going to cut the food going into the cities. I don't mean a strike that's going to last a few days, I mean nothing is going to move!

NOTHING IS GOING TO MOVE, THE RAILWAYS ARE GOING TO GO ON STRIKE AT THE SAME TIME & SO ARE SPECIFIC AIRLINES. The Longshoremen are going to go on strike so nothing comes off the ships. In others words, nothing is going to move. Now you ought to go off to your grocery store, because if this happens, how soon would you die on your feet? Most cities will tell you within two weeks everybody would be starving. That's all the food there is in their storehouses.

THERE WAS A BOOK RELEASED 12 YEARS AGO CALLED ATLAS SHRUGS. It was a novel, supposedly, written by one of Phillip Rothschild's girlfriends at his instructions. It is a coded book for witches that tells how they are to gain control of the World. In this book there is sort of a parable about New York City, New York City is more or less the World.

THEY CLOSE BY SAYING, "WE HAVE WON WHEN THE LIGHTS GO OUT IN NEW YORK CITY!"--& I don't mean the power failure, people, either. They'll shut down all the trucks leaving, all the ships coming in, they'll shut all the planes coming down. When everything was shut down, then the lights went out for good.

WHEN THE BOOK WAS DONE, THE READER OF THE BOOK TAKES HIS HAND & LIFTS IT UP & DRAWS THE DOLLAR SIGN IN THE AIR. I'm going to draw this familiar sign of the dollar. It's a witchcraft symbol that means "to control & to scourge." It's 8,000 years old, people, & it was never of the dollar sign until we thought it was the dollar sign. Isaac Bonovitz says that "through this symbol we will now rule & control the World." & the book ends.

NOW IN THE BOOK, ALL THE WAY THROUGH, BUSINESSMEN THAT BELONG TO THESE ORGANIZATIONS PURPOSELY BANKRUPT OR DESTROY THEIR BUSINESSES so there aren't any businesses, & they drive the others out of business. And all the way through they use the battle plan called "the presence from below & the presence from above." Anybody that's studied Communism knows the same plan. That means the Devil must destroy all the regulations, & the bankers do it this way, & guess who's in the middle, people?--Us! That's what's coming.

NOW I'M GOING TO TURN IT OVER FOR QUESTIONS & ANSWERS, & I hope you've got a few. If I've got them I'll give you the answers. But if I don't have them, I may not give you the answer you want but I'll give you the facts. So if you have a question, you better ask it.

(QUESTION: ARE THERE ANY CHRISTIAN BOOKS THAT ARE FACTUAL ON

WITCHCRAFT?) I'm sorry to say there are no Christian books that are factual on witchcraft, except The Broken Cross & The Angel of Light. There are no others. The reason I've never written a book is because all the major Christian companies wanted to rewrite the book, & it would end up 50% untrue.

THAT'S WHAT MIKE WARSEE SAID, HE SAID HE DIDN'T WRITE HIS OWN BOOK, LOGOS WROTE IT FOR HIM. He said, "Now John, you know it didn't happen that way." I said, "Well why did you put your name to it then?" Well, there's no books on it. The only books that I've seen are witch books, & if you buy them, you're in trouble!

END...

## **2) Conclusion**

May be some of you have had a son or daughter addicted to occult science, to drug and satanic music, and who would be lost? Let them read this book. The word God is more powerful than a two-edged sword. Their confusion may be repaired by reading the Bible. Other parents have seen their teenagers change overnight to the extent of being bound or possessed. Modern medicine treats these cases casually as madness. Get in touch with qualified people in exorcism as members of Baptist Churches, evangelicals, Pentecostals and Protestants. They react promptly against such cases. The Catholic religion authorizes exorcism on condition that the victims manifest specific signs. But signs of demonology are not all obvious. In this case, contact other churches and they will help you in your Christian faith. Let us save what we can save before the coming of the Lord for it is by educating and teaching that we will save souls from the clutches of Satan.

The conversion of John Tood during the 70s was a great revelation to the whole world. Since then, various departments are closely monitoring the ILLUMINATI. Unfortunately, these good men do not discover and receive only a small part of the information conveyed by this group.

Of course, what these people do not realize is that the satanic reign begins when God remove His Church and the Holy Spirit on earth. The enemy, Satan shall have no power before God acts. So even if they are able to take control of the earth, and I know they are, they must wait for the time prescribed by God.

When we consider the existence of different entities announced by prophecies: European Union, the United Nations society, taking over control of the world by the ILLUMINATI, the return of Israel to his country, it is therefore worth concluding that we are on the verge of a world government. When leaders of countries are obliged to hand over powers of the nation to a global society because they cannot repay their loans, as Mexico and New Zealand, we can therefore consider that globalism is firmly implanted. It is no longer the communication infrastructure instilling a deep desire for change in nations.

But you are serving a purpose that is known by God since the creation of the world and whose fate is determined in advance. God through His Word, the Bible has revealed to us his elect, after this spiritual war. Christ will be victorious! Ha yes! It is soon coming, this reign of Antichrist prophesied in Isaiah 5:20:

Woe to those who call evil good, and good evil; Who put darkness  
for light, and light for darkness; Who put bitter for sweet, and sweet  
for bitter!

Therefore, we shall try to understand the origins of this Masonic and Jewish counterfeit movement and we shall analyze the role of the United Nations Society; and the UFO phenomenon with its potential ILLUSIONS.

## CHAPTER V

### **Deviations from the truth**

This chapter is structured into five parts: the development of the Church, the ignored Church, the confines of the Illuminati, the United Nations Organization (UNO) and God or UFOs and flying saucers.

#### **PART 1 - The development of the Church**

Often when referring to the Church, the Roman Catholic religion is usually cited as the source of Christianity. All this is a mistake; there is a church coming directly from the apostles and older than the Church of Rome. If it had not been constantly persecuted by the Catholic dogma, it would have given rise to a world of succulent fruits in the image of Christ. Besides the United States of America, Britain, Australia, part of Canada and Switzerland owe their history to these believers.

#### **1) Go you into all nations and make disciples**

First, it is necessary to clarify some highly important doctrinal points for the continuation of this book. After the death and resurrection of Christ, the apostles were shaken and remained silent in secret. There were twelve apostles, namely: Peter, John, James, Matthew, Thomas, Andrew, Philip, Bartholomew, James son of Alphaeus, Thaddeus, Simon the Zealot and Judas, who betrayed him (Mark 3:16-19). Judas did not accept Jesus Christ into his heart and killed himself, the Scriptures seem to tell us that he shall enter judgment, "... woe to that man by whom the Son of Man is betrayed! It would have been good for that man if he had not been born". This

quotation comes from Jesus himself in Matthew 26: 24. Obviously, if a man who lived with Christ, who saw his works, tasted the fruits of the Holy Spirit in healing the sick and doing all sorts of miracles in the name of Jesus and that he (Judas Iscariot) has not believed in God. Then, we can imagine how an ordinary man can deceive a church and raise himself to the highest position and then give that church a vocation far from God. Judas's position being vacant, the apostles, asked God to replace him and Matthias was chosen (Act 1:23-26). Together, they received the baptism of the Holy Spirit at Pentecost (Acts 2: 1, Act 2: 14). Then Jesus Christ chose on the road to Damascus, Saul who became Paul the Apostle (1 Corinthians 1: 1). So they were thirteen (13) apostles.

Of all the titles a man could receive in the Universal Church of God, that of an apostle of Jesus Christ is the highest and most prestigious. The thirteen (13) apostles and disciples strove to follow the words of Jesus (Matthew 28: 19, Mark 16: 15, John 15: 16): " Go therefore and make disciples of all the nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father and of the Son and of the Holy Spirit". Such was their ministry. In line with their ministry, they made disciples, laid hands, founded Assemblies, and in turn the disciples established other assemblies. The Good News of God that man died as atonement for our sins was announced to the Medes, Elamites, Parthians in Mesopotamia, Judea, in Cappadocia, Pontus, in Asia, Phrygia, Pamphylia, Egypt, Libya, Cyrene, Italy, Crete, Arabia and other regions in the wider world.

Some assemblies mentioned in the New Testament as the Thessalonians Ephesians, Romans, Galatians, Corinthians, Philippians, Antioch, Smyrna, Pergamum, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia and Laodicea are churches that the apostles and their disciples founded. The Bible does not mention in detail the work of all the apostles and disciples. Undoubtedly several churches or assemblies are not mentioned in the writings. Peter and John acted in Jerusalem as those centralizing the various churches. Naturally, when a letter was sent and became a principle, it was transcribed for each of the churches existing at the time. The Apostles were very conscious that the writings were to be sent to all assemblies. This is why at the death of the apostles usages and customs were introduced in the churches all formulated. Aware of the problems that could meet the new churches, " Paul gave exhortations (Colossians 1: 23). One of the most important is this:



1 Moreover, brethren, I declare to you the gospel which I preached to you, which also you received and in which you stand, 2 by which also you are saved, if you hold fast that word which I preached to you-- unless you believed in vain.

(1 Corinthians 15:1-2)

The gospel that the apostles announced is summarized as follows:

- 1) Jesus Christ is the Son of God and is God as the Father and the Holy Spirit.
- 2) Jesus Christ committed no sin for all eternity, his works testify it.
- 3) His sacrifice on the cross washes away all the sins of every man who consents to receive him.
- 4) Jesus Christ is the only mediator between God and men because of His atoning sacrifice and His Divine position.
- 5) As God, death could not hold him back; hence he resurrected and ascended into heaven.
- 6) Mary conceived by The Holy Spirit.
- 7) When you accept this, you are sealed with the Holy Spirit, justified and sanctified. Born again, you are seen Holy and eternal life begins. It is impossible for a man to be saved and do the works of evil.

The Holy Scriptures, Old and New Testaments attest these things. To be disqualified on one of these six points is equivalent to the loss of eternal salvation. Even Apostle Peter himself nearly fell into heresy: the converted Jews wanted the Gentiles to be circumcised. Apostle Paul had to intervene. Also, to keep the churches of Christ from heresies, Paul sealed all under the gospel and said that even if an angel of light came to tell us otherwise we should not believe (Galatians 1: 8, 2 Corinthians 11: 14). Heresies can be countered only through knowledge of the Word. Now aware of this, Paul and all the apostles expanded their works by centralizing activities in Jerusalem. All documents become ethical rules, doctrinal and prophetic in addition to the Gospels passed through this communication channel. Letters were copied to each of the existing churches, so that all are informed and can operate independently. The last book to be sent to various churches was the Revelation of John. The Lord allowed him to live longer than the other apostles to ensure that churches have in their possession all the sacred texts. These

texts were the doctrinal rules, ethical and prophetic. Everything was complete, nothing was to add. To cope with heresies everything was in writing. Also, around the beginning of the second century, the date towards which John died, the New Testament was in all Churches, transcribed handy by the brethren. The book content was the same in New Testament that we buy today.

The Church of Rome was one of the most persecuted Churches. For these reasons, long before Jerome translated the Bible in a very questionable manner in 378, many transcripts and translations of the New Testament and Old Testament were made in various languages by other churches. In this regard, we can recover from the early 3rd century irrefutable evidence of transcripts and translations of the New Testament. Priests in Gaul in early 4th century quoted the Scriptures in Gallic language and asserted that there had been many other translations before, just as good as the others.

## 2) The functions of the Church

Firstly, what is the Church of Christ? The Church of Christ is composed of the seven churches which were in Asia in the days of the apostles: Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamum, Thyatira, Sardis, Philadelphia and Laodicea. To each church, there was a warning and recommendation. Each was autonomous. We can read the recommendations and warnings of the Lord Jesus from Revelation Chapter 2 up to the end of Chapter 3. These are Churches that were going to evangelize for Christ in time of grace. Laodicea the Seventh Church that several biblical scholars and men believe to be the Roman Catholic Church will be spewed out of the mouth of Christ. It is the richest of Churches.

In each of these churches, there will be sincere souls who will accept Jesus Christ into their life as the Gospels explain. These small living stones will be part of the body Christ. Christ is the supreme head of the Church which is His body (Ephesians 1:3-23). The Church being consisted of all living souls giving himself to Christ to be saved, they are sealed with the same Holy Spirit and participate in the body of Christ forming the Universal Church of Christ (1

Corinthians 12 :1-31). Once a small living stone is part of the body of Christ, it is with Christ forever.

To remove a Bible verse from its context can lead to serious errors. Among others, this verse is often heard right or left: "Peter, you are rock and upon this rock I will build my church" Seen from this angle, it asserts the superiority of Peter over the other Apostles and in fact the first pope. But by reading this sentence in its context, it has a different meaning.

**13** When Jesus came into the region of Caesarea Philippi, He asked His disciples, saying, "Who do men say that I, the Son of Man, am?"

**14** So they said, "Some say John the Baptist, some Elijah, and others Jeremiah or one of the prophets." **15** He said to them, "But who do you

say that I am?" **16** Simon Peter answered and said, "You are the Christ, the Son of the living God." **17** Jesus answered and said to him,

"Blessed are you, Simon Bar-Jonah, for flesh and blood has not revealed this to you, but My Father who is in heaven. **18** And I also say

to you that you are Peter, and on this rock I will build My church, and the gates of Hades shall not prevail against it. **19** And I will give you

the keys of the kingdom of heaven, and whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be

loosed in heaven." **20** Then He commanded His disciples that they should tell no one that He was Jesus the Christ (Matthew 16: 13-20)

Looking at the whole sentence, we see that Peter was the first man to publicly acknowledge that Jesus Christ was the Son of the living God. Recognizing this, made him the first spiritual member (the first stone) to be born again or saved. Peter was the first member of the Spiritual Church of Christ; onto him would be added all other stones that would form the edifice of the Universal Church throughout the ages or times. The constituent members being Saints, all powers are given to them. By Faith, they can bind or loose on earth, demon, sickness and others. Also, wolves shall attempt to infiltrate the human Church; it is permissible to

put them out, meaning that excommunication is allowed in Church. It is possible to excommunicate even brothers and sisters belonging to the Universal Church of Christ, but it does not in any way leads to the loss of eternal salvation. These verses testify.

"Moreover if your brother sins against you, go and tell him his fault between you and him alone. If he hears you, you have gained your brother. **16** But if he will not hear, take with you one or two more, that 'by the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established.' **17** And if he refuses to hear them, tell it to the church. But if he refuses even to hear the church, let him be to you like a heathen and a tax collector. **18** Assuredly, I say to you, whatever you bind on earth will be bound in heaven, and whatever you loose on earth will be loosed in heaven. (Matthew 18:15-18)

It goes without saying that excommunication does not involve the loss of salvation received upon acceptance of Christ. It is essential that I lay emphasis here. The acceptance of the sacrifice of Jesus Christ must be accompanied by repentance of sins in one's own life. No Christian could accept Jesus Christ into his life without hating sin. So it is obvious that if someone comes to the Lord while working as a contract killer, he will logically not continue with this kind of work. This goes same for a prostitute or a stripper. In these cases fruits of the Holy Spirit are instantaneous. No man can serve God and Satan; he will hate one of them. Conversion or genuine acceptance is what ensures eternal salvation in Jesus Christ; this provides justification and sanctification. Any cunning attitude of a man facing this acceptance leads to the rejection of God. You know Satan and his fallen angels believed that Jesus was the Son of the living God, but that does not give them salvation, since they rejected the Light.

In the case of excommunication by the Church, it can be the case of a wolf in the midst of the sheep or the removal of a believer who by his sinful life dishonours his assembly like the case of an adulterous brother. Having followed the steps outlined above, he persists in his sin and defies his Church. It is clear that to accept such behaviour in the assembly will lead to internal and external complications. Indeed God says: "let him be to you as a heathen man and a publican"

Obviously because he has received grace, he is not lost. He will remain outside his assembly until he abandons his sin even if it is for a lifetime. Personally, for twenty (28) years that I am with the Lord, I've never seen such a gesture from the elders of my church. However, twenty three (23) years ago, an invitation to leave would have been given to a group that prevented our assembly from prospering. In such cases it is not excommunication, but incentive to leave. In the days of the apostles, Paul had to have recourse to this rule a few times to chase individuals who had disgraced the Church.

Here is another verse which constitutes a heresy that the Roman Catholic Church likes to put on the table.

...So Jesus said to them again, "Peace to you! As the Father has sent Me, I also send you... If you forgive the sins of any, they are forgiven them; if you retain the sins of any, they are retained." (John 20: 21 and 23)

By putting this verse in context, Jesus resurrected from the dead and sends his disciples across nations. The disciples by announcing the good news are a smell of death which produces death for some and an odour of life which produces everlasting life for others as so aptly said in 2 Corinthians 2 :10-16. Undoubtedly, if a disciple announces salvation through Jesus Christ to a pagan and he sends him away, the disciple becomes a smell of death for the pagan, because he denies that Jesus Christ bears his sins on the cross. So the sins of the pagan are retained. The reverse is also true, if the pagan accepts that Jesus Christ bears his sins on the cross, the disciple becomes a smell of life and therefore his sins are forgiven. We have never seen an apostle or a disciple in the Bible listing to the confession of a brother or a sister to forgive him. At most, we can forgive one another, and even without that intention, through Jesus Christ all sins are forgiven.

**5** For there is one God and one Mediator between God and men, the Man Christ Jesus, **6** who gave Himself a ransom for all, to be testified in due time, (1Timothy 2:5-6)

Since the days of the apostles, the Church was composed of elders, bishops, deacons, disciples, brothers and sisters. Besides, it would be interesting to state the requirements to become bishops.

**1** This is a faithful saying: If a man desires the position of a bishop, he desires a good work. **2** A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, temperate, sober-minded, of good behavior, hospitable, able to teach; **3** not given to wine, not violent, not greedy for money, but gentle, not quarrelsome, not covetous; **4** one who rules his own house well, having his children in submission with all reverence **5** (for if a man does not know how to rule his own house, how will he take care of the church of God?); (1Timothy 3:1-5)

The Church of Rome like all the others mentioned or not mentioned in the Bible was founded by the apostles or disciples. The Church of Rome was by Paul and it is believed he left for other cantons. Biblically, there is no evidence that Peter went to Rome. However, if we look at the archives of the Roman assembly, we see that Peter probably was at the head of the Church of Rome. Whereas the Christian faith was a smell of death to Nero and the first wave of persecution came. Legend has it that Peter died a martyr, crucified upside down to give glory to Christ. Pope? Certainly not, he did not even know the word and its meaning. When the word came into the vocabulary of the time, Peter had died about 400 years ago. Paul, Peter and the apostles would not have allowed a man to grab such earthly powers. Each of them made himself useful in the spiritual body of the Church according to their gifts and skills; they set each assembly so that it should be independent from each other. Especially since the word "pope" or its likeness has never existed in early Church and the Holy Writings.

As for whether Peter has the keys to the kingdom of heaven (Matthew 16: 19). The answer to this question is in the Bible. The Church of Christ shall exist until the rapture of the Church at the end of the period of grace. However, Peter was the first creature of God to enter this new way of redemption. Jesus had just confirmed the new passage between God and men saying "I will give you the keys of the kingdom of heaven." The Universal Church is the set of all believers of the earth in different times making up the time of grace.

The sacrifice of Jesus Christ on the cross gives the church its power. Naturally, everything is through Christ, and nothing without Him. In this sense, the Church is the bride of Christ during the time of grace. It is clear that in the sacrament of marriage, husband and wife become a single body. That is why Paul exclaims:

**22** Wives, submit to your own husbands, as to the Lord. **23** For the husband is head of the wife, as also Christ is head of the church; and He is the Savior of the body. **24** Therefore, just as the church is subject to Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything. **25** Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the church and gave Himself for her, **26** that He might sanctify and cleanse her with the washing of water by the word, **27** that He might present her to Himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle or any such thing, but that she should be holy and without blemish. **28** So husbands ought to love their own wives as their own bodies; he who loves his wife loves himself. **29** For no one ever hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, just as the Lord does the church. **30** For we are members of His body, of His flesh and of His bones. **31** "For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh.

(Ephesians 5:22-31)

Thus, each new member of the Universal Church is sanctified and justified before God by the atoning sacrifice of Jesus Christ on the cross. Immediately this member is holy, because Christ bears his sins, past, present and future on his behalf. This is the free gift of Eternal Life. From that

day the member is assured of his salvation and his going to heaven. This passage is by faith in Jesus Christ. This is the only means through which one can go to heaven during the period of grace. Only Jesus can save men, the other spiritual masters are just impostors established by the devil to lose many of the souls of men. And this is part of the diabolical plan of great deception that will soon happen.

Surely if Peter has the keys to the Kingdom of Heaven, it is because Christ gave this authority to the Universal Church. Eternal Salvation is accessible only through the acceptance of the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross. Yet this gift of Jesus to the Universal Church is done because each member who makes up the church is holy and guaranteed in his lifetime to have a place in the Kingdom of Heaven. However all authority belongs to Christ and Revelation 1:17-18, confirms very well.

I am the First and the Last...

I have the keys of Hades and of Death.

The Universal Church of Christ is all the sincere believers regenerated throughout the centuries comprising the stage of grace. The Church of Rome is one of several churches that make up the Universal church of Christ. All believers affiliated with any church are not saved. If a church obscures Eternal salvation by distancing itself from the holy doctrine and practices and customs established by the apostles before death, its faithful fans will be deprived of Eternal salvation. Besides, Apostle Paul said:

1 Moreover, brethren, I declare to you the gospel which I preached to you, which also you received and in which you stand, 2 by which also you are saved, if you hold fast that word which I preached to you-- unless you believed in vain. (1 Corinthians 15:1-2)

And Jesus reminds us in Matthew 7: 14.

Because narrow is the gate and difficult is the way which leads to life,  
and there are few who find it.



### 3) The Roman Catholic Church

To speak of the Roman Catholic Church, we must point a finger at the city of Rome and its Popes who make up the church. Soon, this church became political and worldly; it courted the kings of earth and enriched itself, until it can shamelessly blackmail them. Its growing power, it launched the inquisition in the Middle Ages. Its power over the kingdoms of Europe delayed science for a few centuries.

#### a) The Inquisition

I must say that the information I gathered in order to write this book deeply shook me. As I remain impartial vis-à-vis the story, I'll talk about these events stoically. Inquisition was the art of conducting an investigation to determine who was heretic or addicted to demonic science. Naturally, the true believers were considered heretics, let me explain, the Roman Catholic Church had abandoned its desire to maintain a clergy in opposition to the Scriptures, the Bible itself, force of all knowledge. So, by distancing itself from the power of the Gospel of Christ and anxious to maintain a celibate clergy and enrich itself, it committed numerous heresies that still linger today. These have been demonstrated in Chapter 3 of this book, the reader can refer it. False doctrines like the pope is the representative of God on earth, the Pope is infallible, the pope is above any man, the Pope has all the powers of apostle Peter and the key to the kingdom of heaven, the priest should forgive the sins of men by his priesthood, because he represents God on earth, praying to Mary, Joseph and other canonized Roman saints to intercede on our behalf to Jesus; paying for indulgences, and many others; were introduced over the centuries by the papacy and its obvious lack of knowledge of the Scriptures. Undoubtedly, this church became centralizing and courted the kings of the earth, it became powerful and power hungry. It shed the blood of the saints exterminating them in the name of Jesus, Christians committed to the sacred doctrine as discussed in this chapter. The error of centralizing the churches which the apostles avoided by making each of the churches autonomous and putting all things in writing to refute heresies was made. Synods, conclaves, councils under the auspices of a political and worldly church came in and modified the gospel of Jesus, up to the

extent of transforming a gospel of love where everything is decreed and contained in writing, into a pagan religion by their evolution in heresy. This gave rise to the creation of Inquisition. Nowadays, the Roman Catholic Church obscures salvation by Grace, to hundreds of millions of souls. The unfortunate faithful think that by their works they shall be saved.

As it is written: "There is none righteous, no, not one; ...  
There is none who does good, no, not one...  
Therefore by the deeds of the law no flesh will be justified in His sight,  
for by the law is the knowledge of sin. ..  
(Romans 3: 10 and 12 and 20)

and

**22** even the righteousness of God, through faith in Jesus Christ, to all  
and on all who believe. For there is no difference; **23** for all have  
sinned and fall short of the glory of God, **24** being justified freely by  
His grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus, **25** whom God  
set forth as a propitiation by His blood, through faith, to demonstrate  
His righteousness, because in His forbearance God had passed over the  
sins that were previously committed,  
(Romans 3:22-25)

and

For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ  
Jesus our Lord.  
(Romans 6: 23)

and

For there is one God and one Mediator between God and men, the  
Man Christ Jesus, (1 Timothy 2: 5)

From these few Biblical verses, we just destroyed the whole doctrine of papal infallibility, his intercession as mediator between God and men, his superiority over men, the confessional power

of priests, bishops, popes. The reader may be in doubt that I could still have quoted many other passages from the Word.

The Catholic Church itself in heresy and under its control, the kingdoms of Europe persecuted the faithful who were attached to the Holy Writings. Often these were churches founded by disciples or apostles which remained pure and attached to the Word of God. It goes without saying that there were also among these heretics major deviations from sound doctrine, but also Jews, Muslims and even those who worshiped Satan openly. However it must be admitted with objectivity that the majority of victims of Inquisition were indeed sincere believers in Jesus Christ and not attached to the Roman Catholic Church which wanted to be the only Apostolic Church in the world. Among others, they were the ancestors of Baptist, Evangelical, Pentecostals and Methodist Churches.

Irrespective of heresies, the Church has the duty to prevent wolves from entering the sheep barn as we have seen previously. But the Church has no authority to pass judgments on other religions or to fight Satanism on earth. Its role is Evangelical, defensive and to ensure that the rights of Christians are respected by our governments. Christians have an obligation to be the salt of the earth (Matt 5: 13). Also, each man has a life full and free to live, he comes face to face with the Gospel and then takes his decision. His eternal life will depend on this decision. The Lord says: To me belongs vengeance and recompense (Deut 32: 35, Rom 12: 19, Heb 10: 30). It is not for a Christian to judge the orientation of the soul of his neighbour, but only to Jesus on the Judgment Day. Also, the Roman Catholic Church has become a bunch of unregenerate men who have used this institution and the name of Jesus Christ to suffer their own kind. These same non-regenerated men are using our days of communism, capitalism, patriotism or Freemasonry to justify their murderous instincts by stirring up the masses.

But how was Inquisition operating? Once in its machinery<sup>136</sup>, it was almost

---

<sup>136</sup> The Inquisition by AH Verrill, Payot, 106, Saint-Germain boulevard 75006 Paris, p 66. "Dead or alive, there was no way out for the heretical or suspect of heresy, even if heresy was not proved, the verdict was never the words "not guilty" but "not proven guilty." Accused persons were never freed by declaring them innocent. Their cases were simply dismissed, and these unfortunate ones were constantly under the surveillance of the Inquisition and its agents, the inquisitor could call them when he wanted and continue the trial as if it never stopped. Once a person was suspected by the Inquisition, he was wrapped in a net that he was certain of never being able to escape, the more he struggled the more meshes were tightening around her."

impossible to escape. One could be caught up in its spiral, either through informants, false testimony, greed of the church, and other strange habits. Immediately, someone was suspected and considered a heretic, the Roman Catholic Church amassed all his property and the person lost all his rights. Naturally, with property amassed the Roman Catholic Church did not want to owe any amounts for mistakes made. Therefore, the trial of the heretic dragged on for years, until he admitted his mistake and denounced it publicly. Meanwhile, he was imprisoned and tortured. The pending trial could last indefinitely, so people were tortured psychologically and physically for twenty years<sup>137</sup>, many died before even having had a trial.

Among things used in torturing<sup>138</sup> were employees, there was the rack, the wheel, expandable table, infernos, the garrucha, and others. There were two categories of prison cells "muris Largus" and "muris durus" this latter with or without trial practically amounted to death. This psychological torture consisted of chaining and fastening up a person to the wall<sup>139</sup> in a very small cell which could just contain a human body upright and chained in isolation and in darkness with a disgusting food and putrid water. It could take days, weeks, and years. There are even men who were forgotten in these cells. Some authors speak of a satanic ritual that was followed by the inquisitors themselves. All guessed that it took a black soul to accept to work in this cruel injustice. Often the poor creature admitted mistakes which he was not guilty of just to get out of the dungeons of death. The accused was put on trial with testimony, the Roman Catholic Church was certain not having to return the property and the priest was pronouncing the sentence. These men had authority with unlimited powers over life and liberty of their fellow men. The verdicts varied depending on the countries, most often, it was burning at stake, being buried alive or tortured until all joints are dislocated; drinking thirty pots of water, or be attached to a wooden cross. The executioner broke all joints with an iron bar and then allowed him to die; return to prison with torture, eating bread and water, wear a cross on oneself.

Naturally the clergy was not allowed to torture or enforce a sentence by the pope; he instructed the secular to execute after denouncing and raiding the properties of the supposed heretic. Many a man got rid of his wife and vice versa. This gave way to a lot of jealousy, greed, backbiting and slander. The Inquisition was corrupted and turned into a machine to extract money from its

---

<sup>137</sup> The Inquisition by AH Verrill, Payot, 106, Saint-Germain boulevard 75006 Paris, P 249-115-117.

<sup>138</sup> The Inquisition by AH Verrill, Payot, 106, Saint-Germain boulevard 75006 Paris, p 249-251.

<sup>139</sup> The Inquisition by AH Verrill, Payot, 106, Saint-Germain boulevard 75006 Paris, p 101.

victims<sup>140</sup>. The Roman Catholic Church in such an injustice pocketed the property of victims of the Inquisition served to encourage nepotism,<sup>141</sup> despotism<sup>142</sup> of the pope and his curia. In terms of today, the Roman Catholic Church was a thief, looter, murderer, tyrannical and liar.

At the twenty-first century, people try to minimize the actual impact of the Inquisition by saying that few medieval people suffered. Besides the archives were destroyed for the most part, for fear that giving the exact figure of the number of potential deaths could become a legal matter. However, contrary to claims, Inquisition was fatal for many people either physically or psychologically.

The Inquisition was widespread in all European countries to a greater or lesser degree, depending on the Kings. Obviously, the Middle Ages having small kingdoms, the kings who wanted to survive had to work hand in hand with the Holy Roman Catholic Church. Otherwise they could quickly and radically plot his downfall. But gradually as the kingdoms became big and powerful, butchery ceased. England quickly abandoned it. Only Spain, Portugal and its colonies continued Inquisition until the 1820s, unfortunately, to the detriment of their economy. "From the beginning, Inquisition had no legal and Ecclesiastical obstacle; its progress could not be prevented. There was no relaxation of vigilance of its members; its power was growing and its organization expanding. Soon there were inquisitors in countries as far away as England, Ethiopia, Bulgaria, Central Europe, there were as many heretic courts that suspects could find neither peace nor shelter in the country where there was Christian domination.

All suspected foreigners were tracked and arrested. Thanks to the extensive information network that Inquisition had, his birthplace and his antecedents were verified. He could change home, take a false name, officials of Inquisition were sure of his whereabouts. If Inquisition saw fit, sometimes in a city or village suspected of harboring unknown heretics, each member of the community was obliged to appear in court, forced to abjure heresy and subjected to pressing interrogation whose skill far exceeded that deployed by our modern judges<sup>143</sup>. So Inquisition was very well organized. Another writer says: "The Spanish Inquisition lasted more

---

<sup>140</sup> The Inquisition by AH Verrill, Payot, 106, Saint-Germain boulevard 75006 Paris, p 56.

<sup>141</sup> The Concise Oxford Dictionary 1990. Nepotism: attitudes of some popes who gave special favors to their parents. Abuse of office to the benefit of one's family.

<sup>142</sup> The Concise Oxford Dictionary 1990. Despotism: form of government in which one person holds all powers

<sup>143</sup> The Inquisition by AH Verrill, Payot, 106, Saint-Germain boulevard 75006 Paris, p 68-69.

than three centuries, 1478 to 1820. It caused the exodus of Jews and Muslims. Spain lost about five hundred thousand people and suffered economic depletion”<sup>144</sup>.

For so many people fleeing the Inquisition, they needed a real fear and not a few isolated cases as the Roman Catholic Church as some authors would have us believe. Here, is the chronology<sup>145</sup>:

1215 - Innocent III, IV Lateran Ecumenical Council. A war had turned to a terrible massacre of Albigenia with Christian brothers and the papal army. Thus was born the establishment of Inquisition in the dioceses.

1243(?) - Innocent IV authorizes the adoption of torture in trials against heretics and denies any possibility of the convicted to appeal.

1376 - Gregory XI in Avignon, Eymerich, Directorium Inquisitorum. It is the "Summa Inquisitorial." very considerable manuscript diffusion throughout Europe, thanks to inquisitors.

1484 - Pope Sixtus IV. Torquemada, Instrucciones. Torquemada copy the Directorium

1488 - Innocent VIII with "Summit desiderantes affectibus. Sprenger, Institor, Malleus Maleficarum"

1494 - Alexander VI. Repertorium. Dictionary, copy of the Directorium, ignores the Malleus.

1503 - Julius II. Directorium Edition. Inquisition in Spain ensured the dissemination.

1542 - Paul III. He made a reform of the Inquisition first called "Congregation of Roman and Universal Inquisition ", it later become the " Sacred Congregation of the Holy Office ' ending with the "Congregation of the Faith."

1575 Gregory XIII. Reissue of annotated Repertorium. Increase in loans to the Anonymous Eymerich.

1578 - Gregory XIII. Reissue of annotated Directorium. By Order of the Holy Apostolic headquarter. The gloss often refers to the non annotated edition of Valencia, the Repertorium.

1834 - Gregory XVI. 15 July 1834, Inquisition was abolished.

The age of Enlightenment had done its work, from the late seventeenth century Inquisition was no more in force in major European countries. The Importance of the papacy was on the decline, new democracies in Europe and America began to press down the Roman Catholic Church.

---

<sup>144</sup> The Inquisition by Henri Maisonneuve, Horizon believer's Desclée Edition / Novalis, Copyright 1989, P 156-157.

<sup>145</sup> Chronology of the Popes by Jean Mathieu-Rosay Marabout Collection, copyright 1988, pages 36

However, any pope from 1215 to 1834 will be considered an inquisitor power in this book. At any time, a pope could have ended this religious massacre but none did. They preferred to steal other people's property in the name of religion without being controlled by the Holy Scriptures themselves they were heresy. Fortunately in North America, we had a good clergy who gave us good institutions. Normally, the British Empire immediately dissociated from the clergy state.

#### 4) The catholic chronology<sup>146</sup>

From the beginning of the Assembly of Rome founded by Paul until today, this church was the only ancient witness of a powerful institution based in Rome. Honesty requires us to say that this Church has moved away considerably from the holy doctrine as it gradually evolved. Even to the point of obscuring eternal salvation from the faithful. From a little humble assembly, it has become a political church based on favours of the kings of the earth, powerful and corrupt over the centuries. I could write books on this chronology, but this is not my goal. This work being for evangelical purposes, I will summarize this section on the papacy, and give a brief political overview.

Although the chronology of the popes began early in the Assembly in Rome, the term "Pope" appears only in the 5th century. Before this phase, the leaders of the Church of Rome have been only bishops according to the New Testament. To shorten the text, beside the name of a Pope or a Bishop if you see **(M)**, it means **martyrdom (I) Inquisitor, (T) murderer or accomplice to murder perhaps even the previous pope, (A) Killed by the curia or others**. Now let us tackle the various phases of the papacy.

##### **The Martyrs (67 (?) - 337)**

Although the New Testament does not say that Peter became head of the Assembly of Rome, the Lord himself referred to his glorious death. Roman archives allow also believe in this possibility.

---

<sup>146</sup> Chronology of the Popes by Jean Mathieu-Rosay Marabout Collection, copyright 1988, pages 1-496 full of text in these pages.

This church was heavily persecuted. Then, the situation of the Assembly of Jerusalem as the focal point of Churches had become increasingly precarious. We know that in the year 70 AD., The Romans attacked Israel and Jerusalem, the Jewish survivors were scattered across the nations. These facts, probably, Apostle Peter towards the end of his ministry took the leadership of the congregation of Rome or any other Churches existing at that time. The Bible does not mention perhaps the apostle was already dead. This Church having made a lot of falsehood, it is difficult to confirm the veracity of what may be a legend. Moreover, before the year 155, we are on a slippery ground to ascertain the accuracy of dates and writings, and even names.

Fiercely persecuted by Domitian Nero, Hadrian, Maximinus I, Decius, Gallus, Diocletian and Maxentius, the primary church was struggling to survive. These numerous persecutions explain its ignorance of the Holy Scriptures. The bishops of the early Roman Church are: Pierre (M ???), Linus (M) (67 -76), Anacletus (M) (76-88), Clement (M) (88-97), Evaristus (M) (99 - 107), Alexander (M) (107-116), Sixtus (M) (116-125), Telesphore (125-136), Hyginus (138-142), Pius I (142-155), Anicet (M) (155-166), Soter (166-174), Euleuther (174-189), Victor (189-198), Zephyrin (198-217), Calixtus (A) (217-222), Urban (222-230), Pontian (M) (230-235), Anter (235-236), Fabian (236-250), Cornelius (M) (251-253), Lucius (253-254), Stephen (254-257), Sixtus II (M) (257-258) Dionysius (260-268), Felix (269-274), Euthychien (275-283), Gaius (283 - 296), Marcellinus (296-304), Marcel (M) (307-308), Eusebius (M) (309-310), Mitiade (310-314), Sylvester (314-335), Marc (336).

Naturally as Jesus and the Apostles themselves had said, chaffs tried to enter the in the early Church through various doctrines and false teachers. At that time the main heresies encountered were gnosticism<sup>147</sup> arianism,<sup>148</sup> Manichaeism<sup>149</sup> and marcionism<sup>150</sup>.

---

<sup>147</sup> The Concise Oxford Dictionary 1990. Gnosticism: Doctrine based on Greek philosophy which teaches a radical dualism and founded the salvation of man on a rejection of the material submitted to the forces of evil as well as a higher knowledge (gnosis) of divine things.

<sup>148</sup> The Church ignored by EH Broadbent, The Golden Collection, Impact Editions, 230; rue Lupien, Cap-de-la-Madeleine P 22. Arian: From Arius of Alexandria presbyopia, who claimed that the Son of God was a created being, the first and the greatest of all, he is true, but could never be considered equal to the Father.

<sup>149</sup> The Church ignored by EH Broadbent, The Golden Collection, Impact Editions, 230; rue Lupien, Cap-de-la-Madeleine P 17. Manichaeism: The dual system was derived from Persian sources, Christian and Buddhist. Mani aspired to continue and complete the work started by Noah, Abraham, Zoroaster, Buddha and Jesus.



Regarding relations between the churches and their bishops, they evolved. Between 93 and 97 unrest in the church at Corinth arose. But the old apostle John was still living on the Patmos Island. But the matter was referred to Clement of Rome. Why? Rome was a persecuted church and we recognized the quality of its members and their zeal. Moreover Clement was probably ordained by Apostle Peter and was a disciple of Paul. So he was empowered by his experience to take decisions in the Church. In a tone of paternal kindness and marked with authority in his Letter to the Corinthians, he took side and settled the dispute. He settled the dispute on the basis of competence and not as the successor of Peter. Soter (166-174), wrote a letter to Bishop Dionysius at Corinth, in the fragment of this letter, the two bishops were on the same footing. Victor (189-198), the churches did not agree on the date of Easter, they sought the opinion of Rome. Rome decided and requested for authority to watch over all other churches. However the Churches of Asia sent him for a walk. About this time the idea of infant baptism made its appearance. Another striking change was made, one that made the meal in memory of Lord and his death - the Lord's Supper - an act done miraculously by a priest. These two false teachings even more marked the distinction between clergy and laity. It developed a system under clerical domination of the bishops themselves subject to the "Metropolitans" established over vast territories. Thus a human organization, with stereotypical religious forms, came to supplant the active power of the Holy Spirit and the guidelines of the Scriptures in the autonomous churches.

Felix (269-274) interfered to dismiss Paul of Samosata, bishop of Antioch, convicted of heresy by the Church members and replaced with Domnos by Rome. In fact the position of Rome was political; it is she who lobbied Emperor Aurelian military to depose the Bishop of Antioch at the request of the Church of Antioch. The decision was that of members of the Church of Antioch, and then it was endorsed. Under Julius I (337-352), the Roman Church imposing on the other Churches of the West by the political force it was exerting on the Roman emperor in the West interfered to make recommendations to the Church of the East. Here is what the Western Church responded: "While affirming their respect for the Roman headquarters, the Eastern bishops deny the Church of Rome the right to give orders. The importance of a church does not

---

<sup>150</sup> The Church ignored by EH Broadbent, The Golden Collection, Impact Editions 230, rue Lupien, Cap-de-la-Madeleine P 14-15. Marcionism: Marcion argued that the world was not created by God Almighty, but by an inferior being. False teacher, he falsified the New Testament

depend on the greatness of the city where it is established. Why does the West not meddle with the decisions of the East? Once in the case of Novatian or in that of Paul of Samosata, the East agreed, without disputing the sentence from the West. Let the same action be taken today. Otherwise, it will be separation. "Accustomed to the custom of the Churches of the West by its political pressure, Rome replied: "Do you not know that the custom is to write to us first, so that justice is made here?"<sup>151</sup>". This conflict persisted and in the year 410, Rome and Constantinople separated.

Meanwhile, the clergy occupied so many positions in the Church of Rome that Montanists and the Cathars who were attached to the pure teaching of the apostles had to separate completely. Who knows if the Albigenses, the Waldensians, Huguenots and many others were not the noble estate of that split or simply churches founded by the disciples and even apostles? However, these noble brothers and sisters who lived in peace were persecuted, subjected to Inquisition and hounded relentlessly by the Holy Roman Catholic Apostolic Church.

From year (88-97), we see serious doctrinal errors in the Church of Rome. In his letter to the Corinthians, Clement replied: "The deposed Priests must imperatively be reinstated in their duties. Troublemakers will be put under house arrest far away from Corinth. It is not for laymen to impose the law on priests who take their authority from God. For ordinations, hierarchy must be strictly respected"<sup>152</sup>. If this document is correct, then the Christian gentleness of the apostles and Jesus would have reduced since they are talking of punishments here. The apostles would have probably taught or exhorted these men. If salvation by Grace had been touched, these people would probably be rejected from the Church. Another issue, there seemed to be a secular class and clergy in the Church. In the days of the apostles, the secular class was the bishops, priests, deacons who could hold all the offices in the Church of Christ. Certainly, Paul mentioned that being celibate, he did more work for the Lord, for he did not have a wife to please. But it is not given to everyone to be a eunuch. Clement made the clergy superior over the secular class, a thing the apostles would not have accepted. Moreover is it not said that who manages his family well will be able to lead the Church of Christ? However, we see that many popes had children

---

<sup>151</sup> Chronology of the Popes by Jean Mathieu-Rosay, Marabout University Collection, copyright 1988, Belgium, p 57

and that secularism was gradually being abandoned as the clergy became powerful. So the cardinals, bishops, priests were from monastery and the proportion tipped toward the clergy for the Catholic Church. Calixtus (217 - 222) established a fast in gathering the harvest. You see, how they started adding to the Bible. Marcellinus (296-304) handed the sacred books of the Church under Diocletian. Eusebius (309-310) declared that there is no repentance for lapsis<sup>153</sup>. On what grounds did he stand between God and man? Does he not read the Scriptures? Alas! Marcellin had already handed it to them and during persecution there was no time to copy the holy scriptures of another church. Mitiade (310-314) was given the poisoned chalice, Constantine offered him the Lateran Palace. Finally an earthly palace, the ideas of possessions, money and power was soon going to arise and already they emerged. Emperor Constantine was going to lead the Roman Catholic Church; he being a first class Arianist: Mitiade (310-314), Sylvester (314-335), Marc (336) were docile.

So already in the early hours of the departure of the apostles, the Roman Church began to take a less tolerant way and then gave up the Holy Scriptures under Marcellin (296-304). As such, it distanced itself from the apostolic doctrines because of their ignorance of the word of God from the Bible. Then many divisions either erupted or were about to erupt. Obviously, if the majority took a bad way, a small group with God's intelligence followed the apostolic<sup>154</sup> and scriptural<sup>155</sup> path as we shall see in the chapter devoted to the unknown Church.

### **An agonizing Roman Empire (337-483)**

The union of the State-like Church witnessed a sharp internal division; persecuted, as it was, the Roman Catholic Church gradually became tyrannical and cruel. It accused all churches which did not endorse its doctrinal changes of heresy, and let the state punish its opponents. This Catholic Church in order to ensure its supremacy adjusted the holy doctrine in favour of its livelihood. The Catholic Church much weakened by persecution because of its partnering with the State, shared

---

<sup>153</sup> The "lapsi" are Christians who give up under persecution. Facing death, the reactions are unpredictable. As a true Christian, once again on their senses they wanted to return to the Church. Peter himself was a lapsi someday...

<sup>154</sup> The Concise Oxford Dictionary 1990. Apostolic: Who comes, results from the mission of the apostles.

<sup>155</sup> The Concise Oxford Dictionary 1990. Scriptural: Related to the Scriptures (New Testament or Bible).

its filth and degradation. In focusing on human leadership rather than the Holy Spirit, it distanced itself more from the pure doctrine, until it completely rejected it. Very quickly, the clergy claiming to have control over the secular class and being the intermediary between them and God aspired for lucrative and eminent positions in the same capacity as officials of the Court. Obviously, when we talk about fame and money, it attracts men who by their sins are prisoners. Quickly positions were negotiated according to general scholarship to the detriment of men filled with the Holy Spirit and seeking the pure scriptural truth. In course of time, the agonizing Roman Empire saw its last emperors, with their authority being diminished vis-à-vis the Church of Rome. Thus, Constantine Eulalius, Theodosius II Valentinian III, and Romulus Augustus: determined the destinies of this Church, until they were weakened by the Goths, the Visigoths and Huns. The popes of this time were: Julius I (337-352), Liberec (352-366), Damascus (T?) (366-384), Siricius (384-399), Anastasius (399-402) Innocent I (402-417), Zosimus (417-418), Boniface (418-422), Celestine I (422-432), Sixtus III (432-440), Leo (440-461), Hilary (468-483) Simplicius (468-483).

The Eastern Churches not united to the state were persecuted, but under Constantine a Synod was organized in (410) in Seulicie where the main leaders of the Eastern Church met. Bishop Maruta and Isaac were the initiators; it was decided that a federation will be formed in the East and West in the name of the Catholic Church. This Eastern Church would be linked to the state. The ecclesiastical capital of the East would be Constantinople, and that of the West would be Rome. All other churches not part of it would be regarded as heretics. The Church of Rome truncated the Holy Scriptures (296-304) for a terrestrial survival; this first of all led to a lack of Biblical knowledge against heresies, and secondly to a swelling pride of the Federated Church (Rome and Constantinople) against the other apostolic churches who could give it the Holy Scriptures. This cut it completely from its apostolic vocation. It became the enemy of the Holy Doctrine. Many other orders were imposed, such as the priests would henceforth be celibate. The bishops retained far off the Synod would be bound by the agreement. Meetings in private homes were banned. The parish boundaries were established, a Church for each. Reading was made at the Council of Nicaea and approved by signatories. The main heresy encountered at that time was pelagianism<sup>156</sup>. Other doctrines in accordance with the Scriptures were regarded by the Roman

---

<sup>156</sup> The unknown Church by EH Broadbent, The Golden Collection, Impact Editions, 230, rue Lupien, Cap-de-la-Madeleine P 29. Pelagianism: Doctrine according to which through baptism at birth the individual no longer has original sin and could have salvation by his own will.

Catholic Church as heresies, but it was really only separations in the early Church as: Donatism, Nestorianism. From that moment, all other churches not related to the federation of East and West, that is to say to the state, were considered heretics. All that was heretic was persecuted as we shall see later. Certainly, there was Inquisition, but from 387, the pre-inquisitional period began. Emperor Constantine led the Roman Catholic Church, the doctrine of Arius was considered heretical in the Council of Nicaea in 325. It reversed the decision and approved Arianism. This became the official doctrine of the Church from 352 to 378. Henceforth, Emperors will elect the Popes or confirm them on the throne. The state policy will be disciplined. With Julius I (337 - 352), the word Pope appeared for the first time. It talked about the transferable ministry of Peter in no way supported by scriptures. Damasus (366-384), in a battle between clans opposing Damase to his rival Ursinus, there was 137 dead. Damase was accused of murder, but acquitted in 378. Siricius (384-399) ordered the celibacy of the clergy. Innocent I (402-417) was the son of Anastasius (399-402). Augustine introduced into the church that if men guided by love are best, those redressed by fear were numerous and they always gave thanks thereafter. This became a supportive document for Inquisition. Leon in 452 marched out to meet Attila, leader of the barbarian Huns Mantua. Impressed by the authority of the pope, the latter agreed to withdraw and made peace with the Emperor. Rome was spared. Many changes began to take shape in the Federated Churches. Constantinople and Rome distanced themselves more and more from the apostolic and scriptural path. Dissension became visible.

### **Byzantium (483-715)**

During this era the reigning popes were: Felix II (483-492), Gelase I (492-496), Anastasius II (496-498), Lawrence & Symnaque (498-514), Hormisdas (514-523) John I (A) (523-526), Felix IV (526-530), Boniface & Dioscorus (530-532), John II (533-535), Agapetus (535-536), Silvers (A) (536-537), Vigil (T) (537-555) Pelagius I (556-561) John III (561-574) Benedict I (575-579) Pelagius II (579-590), Gregory (590-604), Sabinian (604-606) Boniface III (607), Boniface IV (608-615), Dieudonne or Godsend I (615-618) Boniface V (619-625) Honorius I (625-638), Severin (640), John IV (640-642) Theodore I (642-649), Martin I (A) (649-655), Eugene I (654 - 657), Vitaliano (657-672), Godsend II (672-676), Donus (676-678), Agathon

(678-681), Leon II (682-683), Benedict II (684-685), John V (685-686), Conon (686-687), Serge (687-701) John VI (701-705), John VII (705-707), Sisinnius (708), Constantine I (708-715).

In Gaul, Clovis had just overcome the last redoubt of the Roman Empire. Theodoric conquered Italy. Felix II (483-492), there was a break-up between Constantinople and Rome over the issue of "Monophysitism". The schism lasted thirty-five (35) years. Gelasius I (492-496) stated that the power of the bishops outweighs that of kings, because they (the bishops) will give account before the court of God for all men, be they kings. According to Scriptures, this was a fallacy, because salvation is personal for each man. No one is responsible for another man before God. Sumarque and his Synod proclaimed "No man has the right to judge the successor of Peter, which is only done by the court of God. The authority of the pope has never existed in the Word, how could there be a successor of Peter, while every man is a sinner and that Christ came by Grace? By these proclamations, the pope would crown the kings of the earth. Titles from the pope would be accrued when a king became Catholic, the People accepted the new religion. The Pope was superior to the kings; hence, it was easy to ask for political favours and money and to establish rules of conduct for dealing with reported cases of heretics. Pope Vigilius murdered Silver, they were caught in the war of favour between the king of Goths and Empress Theodora, and she worshipped icons. Sabinian (604-606) sold wheat to the hungry of the Church at usurious prices. Martin I (649-655) elected by the Lateran, was not in the grace of Constance II: he was exiled and died. Benedict II (684-685), It was now the supremacy of Rome over Ravenna. The time allotted to Byzantium ended. Paganism<sup>157</sup> was declared heretical. Serious disputes between Rome and Constantinople took place against Monophysitism, monotheism and iconoclasm.

### **Collapse of Byzantium and the West claim over papacy (715-882)**

The Church united in the state made its way; anything that was considered outside Catholic was categorized as heretic. The property of heretics were confiscated and split between the clergy and the secular class. Byzantium or the last remnants of the Greek Empire achieved their goal, while new nations emerged: the Germans and the Franks. The Roman Catholic Church Seeing Byzantium weakening turned to the future powers and already with its fame gained over the

---

<sup>157</sup> Paganism: philosophical religion of the Greek empire.

centuries, distributed high-sounding and flattering titles. The main people of the game were kings such as: Pepin Le Bref, Charlemagne, Louis Le Pieux, Louis II, Boris (Bulgarian prince), Charles II, Lambert of Spoleto, Louis Le Begue, Charles Le Chauve, Charles Le Gros, and Adalbert Tuscia. For these high-sounding titles, the Roman Church attracted the favour of the kings, and kings increase them their power. We are in the days when people were submissive to the king. Consequently, if the king changed his religious beliefs, the people must embrace the new religion. Alas! Most often under threat of severe persecution Ecclesiastical titles became increasingly important in the church, for people were paid or compensated depending on their titles. Therefore simony<sup>158</sup> increased. However, it was not at its ultimate point. Titles such as cardinals, bishops and priests were sold for a good price. Nobles were very fond of it. This resulted in the poor quality of the popes during the dark years and the Middle Ages. Naturally, one did not buy titles for prestige, but to make money. In this case, it was better to be near the pope and Rome. The Church United in the State received some money, seized the property of others. Having a good position in the Church could be regarded as a businessman stuck to a trustee or better still, a tax collector, as the property of others (heretic) were free and the tax collector was the one removing money from the cash box.

During this honest period of the papacy, popes were: Gregory II (715-731), Gregory III (731-741), Zechariah (741-752) Stephen II (752-757), Paul I (757-767) Constantine II (767-768), Stephen III (768-772), Adrian I (772-795), Leo III (795-816), Stephen IV (816-817), Eugene II (824-827), Valentine (827), George IV (827-844), Serge II (844-847) Leo IV (847-855), John VIII (855-857) Benedict III (855-858), Nicolas I (858-867), Adrian II (867-872), John VIII (A) (872-882).

Byzantium was in his decline, from Gregory II (715-731), the conversion of Germans was hastened and relations with the Franks were activated. Byzantium wanted to kill them and oppose an antipope, but his power did not permit him to do so. They were iconoclasts, that is to say, against the worship of icons, while Rome considers this practice very profitable. His successor Gregory III maintained the same course. Zechariah (741-752) was involved in the coup of Pepin Le Bref at the assembly of Franks and proclaimed the superiority of the Pope over the kings. Stephen II (752-757) honoured Pepin Le Bref with the title of "Defender of St. Peter" and of

"Patricius Romanorum." This was the gift of the Papal State. Paul I (757-767) proclaimed the Popes "the mediator between God and men, and the supervisor responsible for souls." It is a blasphemy because only Jesus is the mediator between God and men. The papal era was launched; all new coronations were to be done by the pope. They even had the audacity to refuse the crowning of kings<sup>158</sup>. Stephen III (768-772), only the clergy could elect the Pope, the secular class was discarded. Leo IV (847-855), the Saracen threat fell with the annihilation of his fleet. Nicolas I (858-867) condemned any war that was not purely defensive and was a moderator vis-à-vis the heretics. Also open to human rights, he stressed the need for a distinction between a real king and a tyrant and condemned the torture of thieves and brigands as a crime. This was the only pope who was interested in these things; no other pope followed his footsteps or supported this course of action. Adrian II (867-872), aged 75, had a wife and children. We remember that Serge (687-701) did not endorse the decrees of the Synod of Trulli, among others the obligation of celibacy for bishops. John VIII (872-882) found no support from the Charles Le Chauve and Charles Le Gros; he fell into a trap of a conspiracy. He was poisoned, but the poison was not acting fast enough, so they finished the unfortunate pope with a hammer.

Throughout the centuries that separate the Roman Catholic Church from apostolic times with our Lord Jesus Christ, many heresies have been accumulated in this institution for which this church sought political power and patronage of the Christian kings of the earth.

### **Dark ages (882-1046)**

The power that the papacy acquired over the centuries against the Universal<sup>159</sup> Church to seduce the kings of the earth faded with simony. Even the kings of the earth were shocked by the attitude of candidates whom they nominated. In Italy, the popes were the toys of large families, The Theophylact (880-962), the Crescents (962-1012), the Tusculum (1012 - 1046). Since 962, the Germanic Emperors as Otto the Great, Otto II, Otto III influenced the papal election. But their

---

<sup>158</sup> The Concise Oxford Dictionary 1990. Simony: Trafficking sacred objects, spiritual or ecclesiastical luggage.

<sup>159</sup> Universal Church: The Church consists of true believers in Jesus Christ.



removal did not stop barriers exerted by Italian families. Saracens were refused and contacts were made with Byzantium.

The popes who lived at that time were: Marin I (882-884), Hadrian III (884-885) Stephen V (885-891), Formosa (891-896) Boniface VI (896), Stephen VI (A) (896-897), Roman (897) Theodore II (897) John IX (898-900) Benedict IV (900-903), Leon V (A) (903), Christophorus (A) (903-904), Sergius III (T) (904-911), Anastasius (911-913), Landon (913-914), John X (A) (914-928) Leo VI (A) (928) Stephen VII (A) (928-931) John XI (A) (931-935), Leo VII (936-939) Stephen VIII (939-942), Marin II (942-946), Agapetus II (946-955), John XII (T) (955-963), Leo VIII (963-965), Benedict V (A) (964) John XIII (965-972) Benedict VI (A), Boniface VII (T) (984 - 985) Benedict VII (974-983), John XIV (A) (983-984), Boniface VII (T) (984-985), John XV (T) (985-996), Gregory V (996-999), Sylvester II (999-1003), John XVII (1003), John XVIII (1004 - 1009), Sergius IV (1009-1012), Benedict VIII (1012-1024), John XIX (1024-1032) Benedict IX (1032 - 1045), Sylvester III (1045), Gregory VI (1045-1046). It was a time full of nepotism, simony and iniquities. Today, a portion of this dark century was termed "Pornocracy".

Formosa called the king of Eastern France, Arnoulf of Carinthia for help, to deliver Rome from the Spoletains Family. He came in 894 and Formosa granted him the imperial crown. Appointed Pope, Stephen IV (896-897) under the control of Spoletains to avenge the Coronation insult, Arnoulf exhumed Formosa from his grave. His decomposing and putrefied body was dressed in pontifical vestments and installed on his throne, and they proceeded to more terrible trials in what is known today as "the Synod of the corpse." Formosa was accused of allowing himself elected bishop of Rome when he was sitting already at the head of another diocese. His election was then declared invalid, as were all the ordinations which he received. They then cut the hands of the corpse's fingers with which he had blessed the crowd, and then went to bury the remains of Formosa in the common grave of foreigners. That was not enough to Stephen VI, the psychopath: the remains of Formosa were again exhumed to be dispersed into the Tiber River. The crowd seized Stephen VI, threw in prison and later on strangled him. The Theophylact led Rome, Sergius III was their man. This is how they did put in jail his two predecessors Leo V (903) and Christophorus (903 - 904): then after an arranged trial, the two popes were strangled under his instructions.

Murderer of his predecessors, he inaugurated this period as "Pornocracy". At that time, those governing Rome were women and the popes were just toys of their ambitious policies and their personal pleasures. A certain Theophylact managed to impose his authority on the Roman nobility. Simple Judge in 901, he made out the title of consul, senator and Duke of the Roman people. But in reality, it was his wife Theodora, who ruled with her two daughters Theodora and Marozia, licentious and ambitious. Sergius III bowed meekly to all the demands of Theodora and especially those of his youngest daughter, Marozia. She just got married to Alberic of Spoleto, in 905. This did not prevent her from becoming, at fifteen, the mistress of Pope Sergius III and gave him a son, the future Pope John XI, whom she unhesitatingly imprisoned one day. It is unclear whether the mentors of Marozia, John X (914-928) Leo VI (928) and Stephen VII had intimate relations with her. However, she grew tired of them and had them murdered. The son of Marozia and Sergius III became pope (931-935). She also grew tired of him and made him put in jail. Finally, another son of Marozia, Alberic of Tuscia had enough of his mother's despotism. He won the support of the Roman nobility and had her thrown in jail. John XI was assassinated. No one knows what happened to Marozia.

Agapetus (946-955) promised the Duke of Spoleto Albert that his son would become the new Pope. Octavian became pope at 17 years under the name John XII (955-963). Avid hunter and dice games, John XII was completely corrupt. His Lateran Pontifical residence was immediately invaded by women, eunuchs and slaves became a palace of debauchery, the only area where the pope was undeniably competent. In his rude dialect, he swore by Venus or Jupiter and drank from the devil's love. Out of fantasy, one day he ordained a deacon in a pigsty and consecrated a boy of ten years as bishop. But other popes before consecrated children below 3 years and 5 years, that's simony. Finally, he died of the wounds of a betrayed husband. John XIII (965-972) was the son of the young Theodora. Boniface VII strangled Benedict VI (973-974), and then had John XIV (983-984) imprisoned in a cell where he died of hunger. John XV (985-996) was the son of Crescentius, the accomplice of Boniface VII in the assassination of Benedict VI. Crescentius had found favor with Otto II and Benedict VII took the habit and became a monk. He built the Convent of St. Alexis on the Aventine. His son John XV had facilitated the return of Boniface VII and was accomplice in the murder of John XIV. He usurped the throne and became pope.

Benedict VIII placed himself under the protection of Henry II. A Great captain, aware of the dangerous nature of the Saracens, he brought Genoa and Pisa to launch a fleet against them which succeeded to annihilate them. Byzantine troops stopped the Normans in 1018, and immediately exercised their influence in Italy. Benedict VIII asked for German military assistance. In 1022, he received help against the Byzantines from Italy; all efforts resulted in failure. The Emperor took advantage of this political and military failure to point out to the pope that he is above all a religious pope and should invest greater efforts to reform the Church. Thus, in the Synod of Pavia in 1022, Benedict VIII rose against simony and clerical marriage. Not that clerical marriage was a problem but because in the system of simony, the priests were paying for their expenses dearly acquired with the church property. Yet, the priests wanted heirs to continue the succession. By preventing the priests to marry, the Church was recovering its properties. And for the first time, disciplinary measures were considered against married priests who now faced deposition threats. These prohibitions, however, had very little response. Habits were still too ingrained.

Alberic II, Earl of Tusculum decided to be elected Pope John XIX (1024-1032). Secular, on 4 May 1024, they made him climb in one day all the degrees of the clergy, from a mere doorman to a sovereign pontiff. He sacrificed a fortune. But the investment paid off: once Pope, the ecclesiastic office is given to the highest bidder, then you can dip into the treasury of Saint Peter. He wanted to sell the title of pope to Constantinople, the clergy found it very difficult to dissuade him. Benedict IX (1032-1045, licentious, sold the papacy to his godfather Theophylact for 1500 pounds of gold. Gregory VI (1045-1046), from a Jewish family, probably purchased the tiara because it was in unworthy hands. Nevertheless, the Emperor Henry III who got wind of the story summoned him and learned the sad truth from the horse's mouth. He then summoned a synod at Sutras and the three popes were deposed: Benedict IX who sold the Tiara, Sylvester III who was elected by Crescentians in the absence of Benedict IX, and finally Gregory VI. The latter was sent on exile where he died in 1047.

### **Papacy dissociated from nobility (1046-1198)**

The latest intrigues of the papacy during the dark century brought shame to the monarchy. Henceforth, a pope was elected only for a short time by the monarchy and thereafter, the Curia assumed this right alone. This practice is still current today. This approach restored the prestige of the pope and he was much more present in the political scene on the side of the monarchy. The survival of tiara limited to village politics no longer took a universal dimension. Accordingly, the peoples participating during this papal period were the Germans, Franks, Prussians, Normans, and Worms. The dominant royal figures in this time interval were Henry IV, Henry V, Henry VI Louis VI Louis VII Louis IX, Lothar III and Frederick I. Naturally, simony and nepotism, plagues of the Middle Ages continued to abound.

The popes reigning at that time were: Clement II (1046-1047), Damasus II (1048), Leo IX (1049 - 1054) Victor II (1055-1057) Stephen IX (1057-1058), Benedict X (1058-1059), Nicolas II (1058 - 1061), Alexander II (1061-1073), Gregory VII (1073-1085), Victor III (1086-1087), Urban II (1088-1099), Paschal II (1099-1118), Gelase II (1118-1119), Calixtus (1119-1124), Honorius II (1124-1130), Innocent II (1130-1143), Anaclet II (1130-1138), Celestine II (1143-1144), Lucius II (A) (1144-1145), Eugene III (1145-1153) Anastasius IV (1153-1154) Adrian IV (1154-1159), Alexander III (1159-1181) Lucius III (T) (1181-1185) Urban III (1185-1187), Gregory VIII (1187), Clement III (1187-1191) Celestine III (1191-1198).

Nicolas II (1058-1061) formulated a new decree at the Lateran Synod: the election of popes was now reserved for cardinals. Gregory VII (1073-1085), proclaimed through the "Dictatus papae" that "the pope, universal bishop, has the right to interfere in all matters of Christianity; authorized to judge anyone, but cannot be judged by anybody; he has the right not only to name, move, remove the bishops, but also to depose the emperors and free their subjects from any oath of allegiance. Finally, he is the supreme leader of a Church that has never erred and will never err" He increased the centralization of government of Christendom: henceforth, Church and Papacy now merged together as well as Romanization and unification. At the Synod of Lent 1074, he imposed the celibacy of priests and declared invalid all acts performed by married priests. That is, the Church recovered its assets and a celibate priest taking a poverty vow will be cheaper to

Rome. He will not have a wife and children to feed. Hearing this, Germany revolted and Henri IV dismissed the pope. Gregory VII excommunicated Henry IV and freed all his subjects from their oath of loyalty to the monarch. The shock was terrible and all Germany panicked, and the German princes assembled at Tribur summoned the king to submit to the pope. Thus, the king had to be penitent. All the monarchs of the earth became conscious of the danger of the pope's universal power. Obviously, the reader must have read the verses showing that this claim of infallibility is completely false.

Paschal II (1099-1118) subtly proposed that the church should separate from the state, but cardinals, bishops and princes formally opposed. He was the only one who tried to change the Church from its course. His successor who wanted to return to the source lived for thirty-three days as pope. Lucius II was killed by the Roman people, unpredictable rural policy. Alexander III (1159-1181), during the third Lateran Council, posited that two-thirds majority votes of cardinals will be required to be pope. This rule is still in effect today. In October 1184 Lucius III (1181-1185) signed an agreement with Frederick Barbarossa against the Waldensian brothers and Cathar Churches regarded by the Catholic Church as heretical. Celestine III (1191-1198) worked to win the Christian kings in a crusade for Reconquista in the Iberian Peninsula.

Obviously, Gregory VII by placing himself above all the power of the pope gave room for other heresies of the Roman Catholic Church. In the same way, he made it possible to subvert any agreement or oath that was against the interests of this Roman Church at the level of the Catholic monarchs of the world. One of the paramount interests of this Church is to take strength and power. For this, it must grow in number, convert people. Many believers committed to the apostolic and scriptural values of other churches had to suffer. Inquisition was officially launched and the slogan was "believe in the Holy Roman Catholic Church or die." Nothing was spared, the true believers, Jews, heretics, other world religions and even Satanism or Luciferianism. However, nowadays, we are bound to note that those who were persecuted were really sincere Christians falsely accused of being heretics because they denied the claims of the Catholic Church to be the only apostolic or Universal Church and the Jews in large numbers were put in ghettos and pogroms. The Roman Church was financed with the property that were stolen from

the Christians considered to be heretics and the Jews. The Crusades against the Turks often cost the life of the heretics who made up the armies.

### **Papacy imposes Inquisition and crusades on the Christian monarchy (1198-1534)**

The various heresies from the papacy over the centuries together with those of the Gregorian claims led to the abuse of earthly power. The power, strength and wealth of this Church made the kings of the earth in the Middle Ages to deal with her. For she had so much authority that was impossible for a king to go ahead alone, the kingdoms were too small and too flimsy to create opposition. If a monarch tried to dissociate himself from the obligations imposed by the Catholic Church, his kingdom and his crown were at stake. Surely the pope will find a people or a group of Catholic kings ready to fight him and take ownership of his kingdom. The king was not even sure of his allies, that is to say noble dukes and others, as the oath could be terminated at any time. Even England had to accept the Inquisition in her territory despite her territorial advantage.

However, the kingdom not being silly, gradually manage to curb the earthly powers of the Pope. In this perspective, this change of events could be separated into three stages:

Stage 1: Absolute authority of the pope (1198-1304)

Stage 2: Kingdoms strengthened themselves to oppose the spiritual powers of the pope (1304-1431)

Stage 3: Pope became suspicious of the councils (1431-1534)

The catholic Kings found a loophole in Catholic papal authority and exploited it by trying to replace this authority with that of the council. This was tantamount to saying that the decisions of the council were above those of the pope. It was easier to influence a council than the pope. Although it was never ratified, the pope understood that he had to take a step back in the political decisions of the kingdoms and the kings themselves concluded that henceforth, they had the possibility to destroy papal authority.

Rome was still under nepotism, and simony, the sale of indulgences, trafficking of ecclesiastical responsibilities and the idolatry of icons. Inquisition having started, all of the papacy from 1198

to 1820 was considered as participant in this act of disconcerting immorality for a church. The Middle Ages lost many of its brightest minds, not to mention the brake that science was subjected to. Also as head of the Church, the pope could have stopped this despicable act, but none did. Only Nicolas V entered Germany without destroying anything and Clement VI helped the Jewish survivors of pogroms. The Popes covering this period divided into three stages were: Innocent III (I) (1198-1216), Honorius III (I) (1216-1227) Gregory IX (I) (1227-1241) Celestine IV (I) (1241), Innocent IV (I) (T) (1243-1254), Alexander IV (I) (1254-1261), Urban IV (I) (1261-1264) Clement IV (I) (T) (1265-1268), Gregory X (I) (1271-1276), Innocent V (I) (1276), Adrian V (I) (1276), John XXI (I) (1276-1277), Nicolas III (I) (1277-1280) Martin IV (I) (1281-1285) Honorius IV (I) (1285-1287), Nicolas IV (I) (1288-1292), Celestine V (I) (A) (1294), Boniface VIII (I) (T) (1294-1303), Benedict XI (I) (1303-1304), Clement V (I) (1305-1314), John XXII (I) (1316-1344), Benedict VII (I) (1334-1342), Clement VI (1342-1352), Innocent VI (I) (1352-1362) Urban V (I) (1352-1362), Gregory (I) (1370-1378) Urban VI (I) (T) (A) (1378-1389), Clement VII (I) T), Boniface IX (I) (1389-1404), Benedict XIII (I) (1394-1417), Innocent VII (I) (1406-1415) Gregory XII (I) (1406-1415), Alexander V (I) (1409-1410), John XXIII (I) (T) (1410-1415), Martin V (I) (1417-1431), Eugene IV (I) (1431-1447), Nicolas V (1447-1455), Calixtus III (I) (1455-1458) Pius II (I) (1458-1464), Paul (I) (1464-1471), Sixtus IV (I) (T) (1471-1484), Innocent VIII (I) (1484 - 1492), Alexander VI (I) (T) (1492-1503), Pius III (I) (A)? (1503), Julius II (I) (1503-1513), Leon X (I) (1513-1521), Adrian VI (I) (1522-1523), Clement VII (I) (1523-1534).

According to Gregorian claims, Innocent III considered himself as God's representative on earth: The Pope has powers over everyone, be they, kings or emperors, he enthrones and dethrones who he wants when he wants. Politically, he was not the only pope to do so in the Middle Age, but to give an overview of their power to the reader; I will recount some stories under Innocent III. The King of France, Philip Augustus divorced his wife Ingeborg of Denmark and married Agnes of Meran. Innocent III banned France <sup>160</sup> and forced the king to separate from Agnes of Meran. On the death of Henry VI, two candidates were listed: Philip of Swabia his brother supported by the

---

<sup>160</sup> The Concise Oxford Dictionary 1990. Banned: 1. absolute Condemnation putting someone away from a group. 2. Imperative established by a group or society which prohibits any act, behavior. 3. Censure depriving faithful of some spiritual things without excluding them from the church community.

majority of German princes and Guelph Otto IV. Innocent III gave his support to Otto in exchange for particularly advantageous concessions for the papacy. Otto, once King, planned to incorporate Sicily. Innocent excommunicated Otto and replaced his mentor of Sicily Frederick II as king of Germany in Nuremberg in September 1211. As soon as he became king, Frederick published the Golden Bull, a document by which the German princes officially recognized the Papal States with the new boundaries dictated by the Pope. King John Lackland opposed a decision by the pope concerning the Episcopal headquarters of Canterbury. Innocent III excommunicated the king, banned him throughout the country and even threatened to free the English of the oath of allegiance to their monarch. John Lackland, deserted by his subjects and threatened with invasion by the King of France, was obliged to save his crown, declared a Pope's vassal state and placed his kingdom under the suzerainty and protection of the papacy. Seeing this, Aragon, Portugal, Denmark, Poland, Bohemia, Hungary and Dalmatia in turn recognized the suzerainty of Innocent III. In Western Christianity, there were many opposition movements in the Church of Rome. Had this not been the case, Inquisition would never have emerged. The Catholic Church was accused of being a politicized and enriched Babylon, far from Christianity, her scriptural and apostolic ministry. She was also said to have denied the Universal Church of Christ and to have appropriated the name of Christ to enrich herself with it. Moreover, she was accused to have removed Christ's salvation by Grace and the Gospel to mankind and to have replaced it by the sale of indulgences, icons, sacerdotal power and sacraments of the Catholic Church. She was accused for having monopolized the Tiara and the papacy by a title and priesthood which are biblically inexistent, and keeping the kings and peoples in ignorance of the salvation by grace. Thus Innocent III launched a crusade against the Albigensians which led to a terrible massacre of indigenous people. Their aim was to add many other communities as shall be discussed in the chapter on the unknown Church. He decreed during the fourth Lateran Ecumenical Council, on November 11, 1215 to take action against the Albigensians, the establishment of Inquisition in the dioceses, Frederick II as King of Germany and Sicily, the obligation imposed on all of auricular confession whose use appeared in the seventh century but had never been imposed, and the decision to establish a fifth crusade for 1217.

Auricular confession means to confess our sins to a priest. It was never used by the apostles, the New Testament assures us. Instead, talking about Jesus and His ministry with the Father, the



Bible says "If we confess our sins, He is faithful and just to forgive and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness" (1 John 1: 9).

Honorius III, Gregory VIII and Innocent IV had the same guiding principle as Innocent III towards the brothers and other heretics. In the case of Gregory VIII, he asked that their torture be increased. Boniface VIII (1294-1303) said: "We say, declare, define and proclaim that it is absolutely necessary to every human creature, in order to save his soul, to submit to the Roman Pontiff!" If this were true, it would mean that there is only one Church. So why did Paul say in 1 Corinthians 7: 17, 14: 33, 16: 1, 16: 19 and several other verses in the New Testament that there are several churches all independent from each other. Clement V (1305-1314) condemned as heretical "order of Templars, the knight-monks who had distinguished themselves during the crusades in the East in the defense of the Holy Places. March 18, 1314, he executed the Grand Master of the Templars Jacques de Molay and many religious Catholics, whom the Pope ordered to be tortured: they were burnt at the stake. Their only crime being that they possessed a treasure which Philip Le Bel wanted. This was plotted with the pope. Alas! It was not the only Catholic order which the Church consumed, the Jesuits had their turn. John XXII (1316-1334) shone in the infamous trial led by the Inquisition against Master Eckart, the most prestigious genius of his age. Clement VI (1342-1352) gave full support to the Jewish victims of the bloody pogroms that broke out in 1348 in France and Germany and opened a refuge for the survivors of his kingdom. Innocent VI and Gregory XI increased the suffering of the Inquisition. Urban VI (1378-1389) crowned, he was attacked by mental delusion, serious personality problems and drunkenness. The Curia put an eye on him. There were series of plots. Six cardinals were put in chains and tortured horribly. He stabbed the Bishop of Aquillee and all the other cardinals in the plot except of two who escaped. Clement VII (1378-1394), as legate of Gregory XI in Italy, he had 4000 people killed to suppress the insurrection of Cesena. The Council of Constance held in 1414 and prepared by King Sigismund formed the project to reform the Church profoundly and establish the council over the pope. However, nothing stood out as an ecclesiastic settlement. Contrarily, the Council of Basel bound Pope Eugenius IV, reduced the severity of excommunication and condemned the habit of lightly declaring the ban. However, the wish of the council to be above the Pope was never realized. Anyway, the message that the kings wanted to give the Pope was received and recorded.

Nicolas V (1447-1455) was a daring pope, simple and not addicted to nepotism. In conflict with the last antipope Felix, he had to deal with a difficult political situation. He was soft in his expansionist policy of the Church in Germany. With Calixtus III (1455-1458), the sinisterly famous name entered the Borgia papacy. Nepotism in Rome was going to grow more and more. There was soon no position where one of his parents could not be found, and no fortress that was not controlled by one of his. The pontiff at Rome distributed sacred responsibilities to the highest bidder and conceded each day new grants to raise more money. Sixtus IV (1471-1484) bought the tiara, besides all that can be criticized as meanness in the Middle Ages; he did not disdain to take advantage of brothels which belonged to the Holy See. In 1483, he confirmed as Grand Inquisitor Thomas de Torquemada, himself (was said), to have sentenced 97 000 people and burnt alive 16,200 of them. Innocent VIII (1484-1492) had two illegitimate children before his priesthood: Theodorina and Franceschetto. He gave a charge to his son and married him to the daughter of Lorenzo the Magnificent. He married his granddaughter Battistina child of Theodorina to the King of Naples, Louis Aragon. He appointed Giovanni his grandson, the son of Lorenzo the Magnificent, a cardinal at the age of 13, Sixtus IV had appointed him prothonotary at the age of seven. He became Leo X. Other pontiffs had been much worse. After announcing a crusade against the Turks, he gave the sultan a curious service against an annuity of 40,000 ducats. The Pope was committed to retain the Sultan's brother Jem, who was a little too interested in the women of harem of Bajazet as prisoner in Rome. He is the author of "Summit desiderantes affectibus" followed three years later by two German Dominicans "Malleus Maleficarum", repression code where all the tortures inflicted on the unfortunate people suspected of trading with the devil was thoroughly planned.

Alexander VI (1492-1503) also known as Borgia, bought the tiara for 80 000 ducats of the Curia on the night of 10 to 11 August 1492. No one confirmed his promise by vows more sacred and no one kept them lesser than him. As new pope, he rushed to offer his family princely gifts. First, he is the father of Pedro Luis, Jeromin and Isabella; the mother is not known with certainty: then of his favorite mistress Vannozza, Cesar, Juan, Lucrecia, Joffre. Finally Giulia Farnese another mistress gave him more children. He married his children to the nobility and monarchy. Lucrecia was his favorite, twice; she was interim for the papacy. On the night of 14 to 15 June 1497, his son Juan was murdered. A few weeks later, Julia Farnese his mistress gave him a son who bore

the name Juan in memory of the deceased. The pope and his son Caesar continued to rob powerful families like Savelli, The Catani and Colonna. Their lands became duchies as Sermoneta which was given to a toddler of 2 years, Rodrigo son of Lucrecia. Another duchy was given to a child of three years, an illegitimate son of Alexander VI, whose mother was probably her daughter Lucrecia. The cardinalship was exploited to find another. The title was not free, the appointment was paying off. Moreover his murder, the law stipulated that in case of death a cardinal had to leave his possessions to the Pope. He liked orgies. Also, the description of the orgiastic evening of 31 October 1501, reported by John Burchard, master of ceremonies, is one of the crudest pages of pornographic literature. This orgy was spent with his daughter Lucrecia and Cesar his son and other relatives during which fifty (50) prostitutes danced naked. The dance was followed by a competition where the most spectacular prowess of virility was rewarded. He had the guts to increase the suffering of the Inquisition. He died in torment and anguish.

Pius III (1503), died ten days after his coronation. Was it natural death or poison? The possibility of attack was not proven. At that time, probably his title was being coveted. Julius II bought the tiara, recovered the lands which the Borgia had stolen from the nobility and married his daughters to nobles. The rest was completed by his personal army. October 31, 1517, Luther, an Augustinian monk, Wittenberg displayed his famous 95 theses against the sale of indulgences, launching the era of the Reformation and Protestantism. Protestantism, though in the politics of brethren of the unknown Christian churches, responded to the reprisals by the Roman Catholic Church with violence. It associated itself with the state of Germany and Switzerland in particular. Soon as the Catholic Church, Christians refusing to be part of the new United Reformed Church in the state became victims of a Protestant Inquisition. Germany was led by Luther and Switzerland by Zwingli.

### **Reformation, the age of Enlightenment, freedom of worship (1534-1878)**

The churches dating back to the apostolic era as the Cathars, the Paulicians, Waldensians and Albigensians by their courage and their martyrs have awakened among the nations a desire to return to the bases of the apostolic gospel. Thus a series of reformers like Martin Luther (1483 - 1531), Ulrich Zwingli (1484 - 1531) John Calvin (1509 - 1564) came to dislodge from Germany

and Switzerland the powerful Catholic Church to replace it with a reformed state religion much more apostolic and scriptural. Protestantism and Calvinism strongly opposed Catholicism with the support of the state. However, brethren like Anabaptists, Baptists, Mennonites and churches dating from the primitive apostolic times were regarded as heretics. They faced the Inquisition on both sides. Catholic countries were far more sadistic and cruel vis-à-vis the heretics. Between 1450 and 1650, the Catholic Church lost half of its sheep in favor of reformed state churches, brethren, mystics and many became atheist. The Spanish Inquisition lasted until 1820 in Portugal, Spain, and the Netherlands and in all their colonies. France was devastated by a civil war between Huguenots and Catholics. They represented a population of over two (2) million. These massacres took nearly two hundred years. Each time, the Catholic forces attacked and failed to honour their word. Word they were not required to comply under oath by the pope. All the Huguenots were virtually destroyed as was formerly the case of the Albigensians. This persecution lasted until the French Revolution. Freedom of worship was certainly one of the causes of the revolution. Many of the best elements of the nation vanished with the Inquisition. The age of enlightenment, precursor to the two democracies (France and United States) probably undermined the almighty Babylon, that is to say, the Roman Catholic Church and allowed survivors of the separated Churches of the state to emigrate in large numbers in the New World. Where by their intelligence and skill, they would live with the freedom of worship and contribute in large number to strengthen their economies. These are brethren who were descendants of Baptists, Mennonites, evangelists, Pentecostals who are so numerous in North America.

Is it necessary to present the kings of this time, most of them thirsty of the blood of saints and guided by riches and earthly glory? Still afflicted with the same evils, the Church of Rome was at its peak in nepotism, sale of indulgences, worship of icons, and traffic of ecclesiastical offices, simony and Inquisition. With the downward trend it was about to take these evils subsided. Let us present the popes of these periods: Paul III (I) (1534-1549), Julius III (I) (1550-1555) Marcellus II (I) (1555), Paul IV (I) (1555-1559), Pius IV (I) (1559-1565), Pius V (I) (1566-1572), Gregory XIII (I) (1572-1585), Sixtus V (I) (T) (1585 - 1590), Urban VII (I) (1590) Gregory XIV (I) (1590-1591), Innocent IX (1591), Clement VIII (I) (1592-1605), Leo XI (I) (1605), Paul V (I) (1605-1621), Gregory XV (I) (1621-1623), Urban VIII (I) (1623-1644), Innocent X (I) (1644-1655), Alexander VII (I) (1655-1667), Clement IX (I) (1667-1669), Clement X (I) (1670-1676),

Innocent XI (I) (1676-1689), Alexander VIII (I) (1689 - 1691), Innocent XII (I) (1691-1700), Clement XI (I) (1700-1721), Innocent XIII (I) (1721-1724) Benedict XIII (I) (1724-1730), Clement XII (I) (1730-1740), Benedict XIV (I) (1740-1758), Clement XIII (I) (1758-1769), Clement XIV (I) (T) (A) (1769-1774), Pius VI (I) (A) (1775-1799), Pius VII (I) (1800-1823), Leo XII (I) (1823-1829), Pius VIII (1829-1830), Gregory XVI (1831-1846), Pius IX (1846-1878).

Paul III (1534-1549) set up a committee of six (6) cardinals responsible for reorganizing the Inquisition. The committee's task was to ensure the purity of the Catholic faith with all its heresies taking more drastic measures vis-à-vis those suspected of heresy. The committee was named "Congregation of the Faith." Julius II (1550-1555) loved a joyful life, delighted in Carnival festivities, organized endless feasts, and had a passion for the game where he banked big. He also loved hunting and bullfighting. On 1 May 1551, the Society of Jesus was definitely confirmed, they became known as the Jesuits. It was an Order charged with the spread of the Catholic faith in the nations. They were not scrupulous about the much politicized means, with many tactics to compel the nobility to the Inquisition. Paul IV (1555-1559) was himself a Grand Inquisitor. Then he continued, the Jews were herded into ghettos and compelled to wear yellow hats as signs of distinction. Even the cardinals of the Curia were not free from the suspicion of inquisitors. He dared to say one day: "If my own father was somewhat convicted of heresy, I would gather with my own hands the wood of the stake. In 1559 he published an index of banned books which included the "Bible". Pius V (1566-1572) was Inquisitor in Como. He did his killer job so well that he was named General Commissioner of the Inquisition by the terrible Caraffa who became Paul IV. Gregory XIII (1572 -1585) involved himself in a plot by English Catholics to blow up the Palace with the queen and her people. A regicide for a good cause, because the queen was slowing down Catholicism in England. Sixtus V (1585-1590) came out clearly against banditry. The executions were everyday, everywhere the head of a bandit could be seen stuck on a fence. He extended the death penalty for robbery and adultery. The Council of Trent approved the translation of the Vulgate In 1546; the pope found that the translation was not fast enough. As pope, he was sure of the immediate assistance of the Holy Spirit, he decided to carry out this work alone. Although he was told that it was the work of scholars. In 1590, he proudly published the new Bible "Authentic." It was a disaster. It is understood that with the heresies of Catholicism, it was difficult to translate a Bible for the appointed commission. When he died, the

sale of the Bible was stopped. A full team of specialists took a decade to make the correction. In 1587 Sixtus V decided, with Philip II to bring back England into the bosom of Catholic countries. A strategy was devised but it ended in a defeat of the Invincible Armada in the round between July 31 and August 8, 1588. Spain lost its fleet, the instrument of its global hegemony. Then the Pope gave up hope of taking back England in her bosom and refused to pay Spain, whom he had engaged by contract to finance. Paul V (1605-1621), whose name is Camillo Borghese, was also an Inquisitor. He launched the last prohibition, but Renaissance was already being felt and people did not consider it. Venice begged the Catholic monks to leave the city and the Pope not to lose face, withdrew excommunication and prohibition, the kings of France and Spain having highly forced him. Urban VIII (1623-1644) left the Inquisition to proceed into the Galilee<sup>161</sup> trial, scholars and theorist, had to withdraw to preserve life. However, he was confined at home for twelve years. The other event was a damning testimony which sprouted as a cry of horror in witchcraft trials. It came from a German Jesuit Friesrich von Spee. He had accompanied to the woodshed over 200 women convicted of trading with the devil. In May 1631, he published his book *Cautio criminalis* where he said: "I swear under oath that of all the unfortunate persons I accompanied right into fire, none was guilty of the crime imputed to them. To continue this way, nobody will be immune to similar charges. Woe to those judges who want to use these trials only to help themselves with the assets of convicts."

The Treaty of Westphalia (1648) which ended the Thirty Years War between Spain, the United Provinces, the Holy Roman Empire, France and Sweden. This enabled the settlement of religious and territorial disputes. This would have put an end to the political preponderance of the papacy. Finally, we got to the Age of enlightenment, and soon the Catholic tyranny and Inquisition ceased in most parts of Europe. Innocent XI (1676-1689) opposed the cruelty with which the king of France faced the Huguenots in the revocation of the Edict of Nantes. He wanted to issue a bull

---

<sup>161</sup> The Concise Oxford Dictionary 1990. Galilee: physicist, astronomer and Italian writer (1564-1642). He is one of the founders of modern mechanics and played a major role in the introduction of mathematical explanation of physical laws. After many experiments, he discovered the law of falling bodies in vacuum, gave a first formulation of the principle of inertia, approached the principle of composition of velocities and highlighted the isochronous oscillations of the pendulum. By introducing the use of the telescope in astronomy (1609), it was also the source of a revolution in observing the Universe. He discovered including the relief of Moon, the main satellites of Jupiter, the phases of Venus and the presence of stars in the Milky Way. Rallied to world system proposed by Copernicus, he had to withdraw before the Inquisition (1633). Author's speech concerning two new sciences (1638), he also wrote essays on Dante and Ariosto.

prohibiting nepotism, but was prevented by the curia. Innocent XII (1691-1700) removed nepotism with "Romanum decet Pontificem." The only other popes who succumbed to nepotism after the bubble were: Benedict XIII (1724 - 1730), Pius VI (1755-1799) and Pius XII (1939-1958).

Finally, the age of enlightenment came. Europe woke up to several theories, science and new ideologies. Slowly and surely, the nobility forsook theology to embrace the new theories. The New World became a welcome attraction for many. Clement XII (1730-1740) found the political power of Rome on the decline. Indeed privileges of the Church and the rights of the Holy See were coldly ignored by the courts of Europe. He made the first denunciation of Freemasonry. Clement XIII (1758-1769) negotiated with the various courts of Europe which wanted the extinction of the Jesuits. However, in Spain, Portugal and France, the properties of the Jesuits were seized. In Naples, Sicily and Parma Jesuits were expelled. Episcopacy was launched.<sup>162</sup> Clement XIV (1769-1774) repelled episcopacy by giving the European courts through the "Dominus ac Redemptor" the dissolution of the "Society of Jesus or Jesuits." To save her tiara, the Pope sacrificed a Catholic order and monopolized 679 colleges, 176 seminars, 355 homes and 84 professed houses. They were 22 589 members in the Order. Then he gave the order to Monsignor Alfani to prepare the trial of the Jesuits. The latter put all his zeal with the picked fortune. Many people died in prison. The Jesuits were saved from extinction thanks to two non-Catholics monarchs, the Protestant Frederick II of Prussia and Catherine II of Orthodox Russia. Clement XIV was murdered, probably by a Jesuit. Pius VI (1775-1799) felt bad to see the papacy extinguished. He had lived the revolution of 1776 on the other side of the Atlantic. A country controlled by Protestantism, the brethren considered heretics and Jews. Obviously, this victory of democracy resulted in 1789 to the anticlerical French Revolution with the Huguenots almost exterminated by Catholic cruelty. That was the end of autocracy of Worship in the minds of the French. France was henceforth a democratic republic like the United States of America and the state took control over Church property. The Archbishop of Paris went to worship the "Goddess of Reason." The kingdoms began to proclaim absolutism<sup>163</sup> one after another. On 15 February,

---

<sup>162</sup> The Concise Oxford Dictionary 1990. Episcopacy: The theory that the House of Bishops has more power than the pope.

<sup>163</sup> The Concise Oxford Dictionary 1990. Absolutism: Political system in which all powers are only under the authority of the head of state.

1798, under Napoleon, General Berthier proclaimed the Republic in Rome and deposed the Pope. On 20 February, the pontiff was made prisoner and taken to exile. He died in exile in August 29, 1799. Times had changed.

The papacy was restored by Napoleon Bonaparte. Not for his faith, as he so aptly said: "We do not govern people who do not believe in God, we gun them" On February 19, 1801 through the Treaty of Luneville, Pope Pius VII (1800-1823) recovered some parts of his state. On February 15 Bonaparte signed a concordat in which he recognized Catholic religion as that of the majority of French citizens. This church had his full support as long as she made her faithful to be fully submissive to the government of Bonaparte. Leo XII (1823-1829) banned the Bible from being translated into national languages, banned smallpox vaccination and brought back Inquisition and the Jews were put in ghettos and stripped of their property. Same custom, they stole the property of Jews and heretics to enrich the dear Catholic Church. The Bible being translated only in Latin and dead languages, only the clergy maintained its dissemination their own way. Pius VIII (1829-1830) ended the Inquisition in the Papal States. Anyway, had he the choice? The Inquisition had virtually ceased with the French Revolution, Joseph Bonaparte in 1808, had virtually eliminated it. Ferdinand VII restored the Spanish Inquisition in 1814: it was definitely abolished by Marie-Christine, on July 13 1843; May 31, 1820, the American Inquisition<sup>164</sup> disappeared; the Portuguese Inquisition officially disappeared in 1821<sup>165</sup>. Only Hohenzollern and Russia were still attached to the pogrom, ghettos, and in some places, the Inquisition. It was clear that the monarchy and the democracies would no longer make the mistake of uniting the Church to the State and to lose important citizens in the economic evolution of countries such as: Jews, sincere Christians committed to the Scriptures and the apostolic laws, scholars and scientists. As for Satanists and Luciferian, very few went through the Inquisition. Before God on earth, they are free of their choice, during their lifetime they can always come back and ask for repentance for their sins. Gregory XVI (1831 - 1846) was pressed by Prince Napoleon to renounce all worldly powers, because the latter wanted to unite Italy. The pope summoned Austrian troops who

---

<sup>164</sup> The American Inquisition was practiced in the Spanish colonies. U. S.A. and Canada have never known this barbarity.

<sup>165</sup> The Inquisition by Henri Maisonneuve Desclée / Novalis, ISBN 2 89088 407 4, P 154-157.



occupied Parma, Modena, Ferrara and Bologna. He strengthened his absolutism on the Papal States. This time was called "Clerocracy". Consalvi regarded the nineteenth century novelties as inventions from the devil: gas lighting, suspended bridges and railways. In 1832 the "Mirarivos" wholly condemned: freedom of conscience, freedom of thought and speech, desire for reform, freedom of the press and separation of church and state. Pius IX (1846-1878) understood the very famous statement of the Lord "My kingdom is not of this world." Since Constantine offered his Lateran palace as a gift to Silvestre in the year 314, the Church of Rome never ceased to be politicized; its ambition to accumulate wealth and worldly powers came first before that of Christ. Thus, for almost 2000 years this Church has produced no fruit for Christianity, she instead damaged it. King Victor Emmanuel of Italy and Piedmontese occupied Rome on September 20, 1870 and suppressed the Papal States. Instead of being grateful, because at last, the pope was going to be able to lead the Roman Church and its flock, he excommunicated all who had participated in the capture of Rome. In 1850, the Catholic hierarchy was restored in England and in 1853 in the Netherlands. In 1854, he proclaimed the dogma of the Immaculate Conception. The Scriptures say that Mary was pregnant by the power of Holy Spirit. Why the dogma of the Immaculate Conception? July 18, 1870, dogma of Papal Infallibility was proclaimed with great contradiction. Peter was not infallible, how can the Pope proclaim himself infallible? It suffices to look at the history of the papacy to Understand that most of these men are great unregenerate sinners before God. The sacraments and dogmas of this church are their accusers before the Lord.

### **A kingdom which is not of this world (1878 - TODAY)**

The priests who make up modern history are Leo XIII (1878-1903), Pius X (1903-1914), Benedict XV (1914-1922), Pius XI (1922-1939), Pius XII (1939-1958), John XXIII (1958-1963), Paul VI (1963-1978), John Paul I (1978) (A), John Paul II (1978-2005), Benedict XVI (2005 - TODAY)

Leo XIII reconciled the Roman Catholic Church with the world of science, Italy and Germany. He condemned secular liberalism and Freemasonry. He authorized state autonomy vis-à-vis the Church. He supported the study of the Bible. He opened the Vatican archives to the scientific world. He gave freedom of rites to the Eastern Church. He was open to the problems of workers. But this realization came in too late, socialism and Communism had already exploited this

profitable market. He was called the "Pope of the workers." It would be wrong to claim that all the clergy followed suit for the convicts of hunger, exploitation of Children, power weavers and others. Many priests who dared to think like the Pope discovered at their expense that their bishop was bent on sparing some profitable relationships in the industrial milieu and was not happy to see priests who were too social. These priests were sent to good country parishes, far from industrial centers. Double game of the Church or a very big centralized ecclesiastical system that counteracts orders from the head? It is to avoid such things that the Scriptures have always advocated a set of Churches independent of each other, stuck on the limbs. He objected Americanism and opposed the creation of a "Biblical commission" to cope with the work of Catholic scholars. Thereupon, I understand the Protestants and the brethren who sought to ensure that the sacred books be translated faithfully. Many centuries ago they had the translation of the Word of God in popular language. Some languages have even been extinguished, and there are traces of the Bible translated. It must be admitted that the Bibles translated by Catholicism are similar to the Bibles of Protestants and brethren. Versions like Jerusalem and Tob are very well appreciated by the brethren. It seems that a pope brought himself down to the rank of bishop, returned to this same Holy Scriptures while abandoning the false dogmas dragged on for centuries, preached salvation by grace and recognized other Christian churches to become once again an apostolic Church.

Pius X (1903-1914) was a soft reformer; his opposition to modernism formulated in his encyclical "Pascendi of 8 September 1907, confirmed this. Benedict XV (1914-1922) got rid of Cardinal Umberto Benigni, who had a secret organization called inquisitorial "The Fir", a cardinal in the clergy who remained in the era of dinosaurs. Benedict XV strongly proclaimed that the fight against modernism would not be based on Middle Age inquisitorial rules. Anyway, he could return with the North American power and kingship tottering by the Freemasons? The Congregation of the Index was abolished. He was the pope of the First World War; the allies dramatically excluded the papacy from the peace conferences.

Pius XI (1922-1939) signed the "Treaty of the Lateran" after two and a half years of negotiations with Mussolini, who recognized the Kingdom of Italy with Rome as its capital. The Church received for the loss of his former state compensation of one billion one hundred and fifty million

liras. She was contented to assume her freedom over a State with an area of 44 hectares, the Vatican City. For its part, Italy guaranteed the sovereignty of the Papal States and the Catholic religion was given the privilege of being the only recognized religion of the kingdom; recognized as the only religion of the state, benefited from diplomatic immunity and all the privileges that go with this status, exempted from paying taxes in the Kingdom of Italy on both its assets and its citizens, exempted from customs duties on its imports and others. To manage this windfall, Pope Pius XI founded on June 7, 1929 a special administration and to lead this department, he appointed a layman, Nogara Bernardino. In 1930, the Catholic Church changed the conventional definition of the word "usury", saying that usury consisted of lending money at exorbitant interest rates. To this day the word usury means to lend money with interest and this is confirmed by Holy Scripture. Thus, the Church by changing the definition of "usury," nullified the following Councils: Arles (314), Nicaea (325), Carthage (345), Aix (789), the Lateran (1139); Nogara accepted the position on some conditions among which were the following: Any investment that he would decide to make will be completely detached from any religious considerations and he would be free to invest the funds of the Vatican anywhere in the world. Obviously, Christianity and Religion are fine but when topic of discussion rotates around money, the actions of the war industry and others, contrary to the holy doctrine, they are much more profitable<sup>166</sup>. An important concordat took place on February 11, 1929 with Mussolini and another with Hitler 20 July 1933 concerning the "Kirchensteuer" or church tax confirmation. It was about state tax always withheld by workers in Germany. One can escape it by renouncing his religion. In practice very few people do it. This tax represents between 8 and 10 per cent of the income tax levied by German authorities. The money goes to the Vatican and Protestant Churches. When Mussolini needed weapons to invade Ethiopia in 1935, a significant portion of his equipment was provided by a weapon factory that Nogara had acquired for the Vatican<sup>167</sup>. Pius XI in 1939 left to his successor "Vatican Enterprise," an annual world collection of Saint Peter's pence and a treasury built with the money of the faithful, the lira of Mussolini and the Deutsche Mark of Hitler. Seen in light of the Holy Scriptures, it was a total disaster, the pontiff had become a President and CEO.

---

<sup>166</sup> In God's name by David Yallop, Christian Bourgeois Editor, 8 rue Garancière, Paris VI, pages 132-134.

<sup>167</sup> In the name of God by David Yallop, Christian Bourgeois Editor, 8 rue Garancière, Paris VI, pages 134-139.

Pius XII (1939-1958) was the last pontiff devoted to nepotism. Three nephews, Carlo, Marcantonio and Giulio Pacelli obtained a princely title and became part of the elite internal Vatican Company in positions of Chairman and CEO. He was criticized for his silence during the Jewish massacre in which the Church was aware of. Albeit in a bleak Christmas speech 1942, whispered a few words in a discrete manner, "the hundreds of thousands of men who, without committing any fault, for some of them, only because of their nationality and race, were delivered to a quick or slow death." Why would he have acted otherwise, throughout the centuries, as history proved, this church robbed, persecuted and martyred these same Jews. Be it Hitler, who does so and in return the Roman Church receive from 8 to 10 percent of tax profits, this was quite commendable and most fully in the mode of thought, the moral of the clergy and curia. For where are the differences between Nazism, fascism and the Catholic Inquisitorial system? None. But there is no doubt that the vehement and voiceless protests, clarion calls that were whispered so low, for fear that they might send some more unfortunate persons in the crematoria ovens were hardly able either to save even one life.

On 31 December 1942, the Minister of Finance of Mussolini adopted a broad interpretation of the law, specifying that the Holy See was exempted from paying Tax on dividends of shares. Under Nogara, the Vatican took control of several banks like Banco di Roma, Banco di San Spirito, Casa di Risparmio di Roma. In this latter case, the acquisition was interesting when Banco di Roma and experienced difficulties and threatened to sink with a good amount of money from the Vatican, Nogara persuaded Mussolini to acquire bonds without great value of the bank to transfer them to a state holding, I.R.I. Mussolini also agreed to compensate the Vatican not on the basis of the current time of these bonds on the market, close to zero, but at their original purchase price. The I. R.I. paid to Banco di Roma over 630 million dollars. The loss was offset by the Italian treasury. Another way of saying that the ordinary citizens paid for the loss exactly as they did for the clergy during the Middle Ages and the Inquisition. Vatican Company stretched tentacles worldwide. Close links with International bankers were established. Already, the Rothschilds of Paris and London were doing business with the Vatican since the early nineteenth century. A dramatic increase took place with Swiss Credit, Hambros, JP Morgan, The Bankers Trust Company of New York, Chase Manhattan, First National and Continental Bank of Illinois. Vatican through Nogara acquired control shares in various sectors such as: insurance, steel,

finance, mechanical engineering, cement, real estate and food industry. He purchased many titles in these companies: General Motors, Shell, Gulf Oil, General Electric, Bethlehem Steel, IBM and TWA. Pius XII and Nogara both died in 1958. At his death, the Catholic Church through Cardinal Spellman engraved on the tomb of Nogara New York "After Jesus Christ, the greatest thing that ever happened to the Catholic Church is Bernardino Nogara <sup>168</sup>". This man showed that wherever the Kingdom of Christ could be located, that of Roman Catholic Church was definitely of this world and among the leaders of this world. John XXIII (1958-1963) was elected by the curia at the age of 77. All that was expected of him was a short reign, a sort of relief valve between two long term pontiffs. The curia changed its mind when the council was started. Since the proclamation of the infallibility of the Pope in 1870, no council had been held. He wanted to return to simplicity. In short, find a harmony among the clergy, a frank and direct contact with the flock. Although death surprised him before work ended in the council, he largely achieved that contact with the lower clergy. Paul VI (1963-1978) was a tolerant pope; he left banks in the hands of Vatican's key men, although their usages, customs and rules of conduct were in antagonism with the messages of the clergy to their congregations. He publicly asked forgiveness for the injustices that his predecessors had long ago committed. Asking forgiveness is good, but correcting errors so that they should never happen again is better, starting with a return to apostolic doctrine and scripture, and abandoning all heresies that this Church had borne over the centuries. That he did not. Then why did he apologize? He raised excommunication which the Eastern and Western Catholic Church mutually launched in the year 1054.

## **5) The Treasury of Saint Pierre associated with Freemasonry**

John Paul I (1978), his pontificate was thirty-three (33) days, yet, this could have been the most important pontificate of the Roman Church. He refused the rite of coronation and enthronement. He did not believe that the pope was superior to other men, or that the clergy was superior to the laity. He wanted to accept the contraceptive pill as a form of prevention. How far was his liberalism? Was he for apostolic and Scriptural homecoming? He died on the eve of his

---

<sup>168</sup> In the name of God by David Yallop, Christian Bourgeois Editor, 8 rue Garancière, Paris VI, page 139.

announcement and endorsement by the Curia of the changes he wanted to initiate within the clergy. He was not the candidate chosen by the Roman Curia. He was a central figure who became pope thanks to a compromise between the cardinals of the Curia and those worldwide. The novelist David Yallop, author of *"In the name of God,"* is virtually sure that he was murdered. Albino Luciani might probably have been eliminated because of the major reforms that he wanted to do within the Curia, the Vatican and among the Company and with the faithful. By who?

In fact, there are several possibilities. John Paul I wanted to remove from office two Key personalities holding the financial power of the Vatican. It was Bishop Paul Marcinkus and Cardinal Jean Villot. The first was in charge of the Vatican Bank, the Institute of Religious Works (IRO) in which various controlled banks came. The second was in charge of the Administration of the Patrimony of the Holy See. The latter is the real central Bank one that does business with the Bank for International Settlements in Basel (BIS), and indirectly with the World Bank and International Monetary Fund (IMF).

John Paul I knew that several members of the Roman Curia were part of the International Freemasonry. According to Mr. Yallop, they were about a hundred including Marcinkus and Villot. Relieving them of their functions meant that the Illuminati were no more running Saint Peter's treasury. The International freemasonry inside the Vatican was "propaganda II whose Grand Master was called Licio Gelli. Propaganda II (P2) controlled Italy, countries of Central and South America. It is different from the other TRANSNATIONALS in the sense that members are recruited through denunciations. In fact, it's simple, once a member is recruited, he must disclose incriminating secrets about someone else. This potential candidate is in turn contacted. When contacted, they explain to him what they know about him, if the person wishes that the information remains secret, he must in turn become a member of P2, and so on. The master has a shameless blackmail on the members. The enrolled members are all in prominent situations with the government, the world of finance and others. Among the other members of the Roman curia enrolled in P2, were the cardinals Pecorelli, Poletti, Bahhio and Bonis.

Bishop Paul Marcinkus who ran the Vatican Bank was faced with serious problems. He was in trouble with Roberto Calvi, who administered Banco Ambrosiano, and Banca Cattolica del

Veneto, and a series of South American banks who had spent money on guarantees of the Vatican. The latter was responsible for emptying Banco Ambrosiano and Banca Cattolica del Veneto to fund missile that Licio Gelli had promised to Argentina in the War between Falklands and Great Britain. These banks were defrauded of 1 billion U.S. On the other hand, the Vatican hoped to pay the debt of its South American banks by manufacturing counterfeit currency for more than 1 billion which Michele Sindona through the American Mafia, was committed to print in U.S dollars. This service was rendered in return for money laundering from the Sicilian Mafia drug by the Vatican Bank. The F.B.I. got wind of the matter and followed the trail that went back directly to the Vatican Company. The counterfeit currency could never be reached and the South American banks poorly covered by a letter of Istituto per le Opere di Religione (IRO), in short by the Vatican, also incurred loss. The plot of the banks discovered, investigations in Italy led to many arrests and killings, while the Vatican was hiding behind its diplomatic immunity and the sovereignty of its state.

Another isolated motive was Cardinal John Cody who headed the diocese of Chicago. More Complaints had been lodged by the clergy and proved to be true. Among others, he had a mistress whose expenses were excessive and luxurious. He paid her a huge salary with pension funds. He managed the funds of the Church his own way i.e. according to his convenience. Indeed, profits were divided and a portion for himself and one for the Church. Albino Luciani wanted to revoke Cody but the Curia preferred to avoid scandal.

In wanting to remove the Vatican Bank in the hands of the Freemasons and dishonest men, he did not understand international issues behind this decision. Stopping the Church in its role as international banker and restoring its poverty status besides its faithful earned him the hostility of the Roman curia. Was it a natural death or murder? Cardinal Jean Villot at the death of John Paul I, erased all evidence and ensured that no autopsy was made on the body despite numerous requests from around the world. Villot and the Curia, with supporting evidence, lied to the public and media. Albino Luciani was hastily embalmed and quickly buried and his successor rapidly found.

Inside Propaganda 2 (P2), members of his elite had a bottle of digitalin which causes an acute myocardial infarction just like that which killed John Paul I. According to the coroner, no

conclusion could be drawn without an autopsy, something that was never done. More than two hundred other products could poison the pope with such a post mortem. For a simple citizen, the authorities would not permit that there be no autopsy. For a priest in a Sovereign state, the curia decided otherwise, against all logic. John Paul I was just simply a compromise of the Roman curia. The latter had almost always elected a Pope of the Roman curia, but in 1978 the cardinals of the world wanted a pope from the third world. As the Roman curia saw it would not be able to elect one of theirs, she negotiated with other Italian cardinals for an Italian cardinal with the same affinities as third world cardinals. Albino was well liked among them. He was probably the last cardinal elected Pope, who was not a freemason.

Karol Wojtyla, John Paul II had never endorsed the decisions that John Paul I wanted to take. But who is this man? He was very well known in the Roman curia. In reality, he was in the same pattern as them. As bishop in 1960, he published "Love and responsibility, a marital moral treatise that was to influence Paul VI. Invited by the Pope to the council, he took part in the commission for the reform of the liturgy for Christian Education (Catholic) and the training of clergy. He called for religious freedom for non-Christians, freedom of thought and speech. Long ago non-Catholics and non-Christians could speak freely. In 1971, he became member of the General Secretariat of the Standing Committee of the Synod of Bishops, established by Paul VI in 1965, In 1967, Paul VI appointed him cardinal. In 1976, Paul VI gave him the charge to preach in the Roman curia, the annual Lenten retreat. He was not unknown to the Roman Curia; he could be identified instead as one of them. Although attached to Poland. John Paul II was the first non-Italian pope since Adrian VI (1522). In his youth he was an excellent athlete, he loved football, swimming and canoeing. He joined a theater troupe in 1938, "Studio 39". He did enough drama in his youth and learned to play comedy. During the Second World War, he resisted, took risks, providing false passports to Jews. From 1944, he was actively sought; he had to hide until the arrival of the Red Army. Notorious anticommunist, John Paul II, now head of the Roman Catholic Church, financed the "Solidarity" movement and other anticommunist, movements with Vatican Bank with the help of "Propaganda 2" and "Ordine Nuova". He encouraged the Masonic Lodge "Opus Dei" of Jesuit tradition within the clergy. The reader will understand here that the Vatican is sovereign and independent. Therefore, any initiation of a clergyman in P2 becomes irregular given the position of the Catholic Church vis-à-vis the faithful. Naturally, the Church in



the past was funded from the benefits of the Inquisition, while in our century; it made lucrative profits in walking hand in hand with the International Bankers, acting itself as an International Banker. John Paul II did not change anything in terms of banking reform, nor in the ecclesiastical positions. Instead, he did not impose measures to prevent infiltration of Freemasonry. That is to say to the faithful: "Do as I say do not do what I do." But for all, John Paul II is better known as Pope and good traveler and ground kisser. In this way, he fulfilled the prediction of Nostradamus and Malachi Martin. This has nothing to do with the prophet Malachi in the Old Testament. The truth is that John Paul II was a Freemason, associated with the High Freemasonry ILLUMINATI just as his right hand man Benedict XVI, Joseph Ratzinger who became pope in 2005.

## **6) Infiltration of the Roman Catholic Church by Freemasons**

The infiltration of the Roman Catholic Church did not start yesterday. Already during the Age of Enlightenment, around 1644, the lower clergy opened up to Freemasonry, the same as some bishops. Moreover, this infiltration was mandatory in the process that led to the French Revolution.

The F \* Yves Marsaudon, 33rd degree said "It is through doctrinal corruption that this new religion must be erected: it is through infiltration, pressure, propaganda and also by ambitious or sectarian complicity that the parallel ecumenism of this new Christianity must be accredited. In this, the modern "initiate" did not vary in either the methods or in objective."

The pro-Catholic author of "One world government soon, a super and counter- church" stated in the 1960s that the clergy was so infiltrated by Freemasonry that its teachings would very likely be affected.

Readers will understand that it is difficult to get a list of all senior freemasons, because by the very nature of Freemasonry (P2) is a secret organization and invisible, with several upper and lower lodges. In short, Freemasonry is a labyrinth inside a mirror. From the outside, nothing is seen and nothing seems suspicious, while inside, everything is seen, depending on the position that one occupies. For most of its members, they see only a tiny whole in a given scenario. Because freemasonry offers in the lower lodges several spheres of spiritual activities.

In 1978, there were 111 cardinals to elect or to make a pope. There is hardly many nowadays. The Pope appoints the cardinals. Currently, a pope is elected from among the cardinals. Formerly, the Roman Curia assembled by mutual agreement to name one of theirs. However, this era ended with John Paul II. It is easy to infiltrate approximately hundred people. We saw in Chapter IV how freemasons controlled the world. Cardinals distributed throughout the world may belong to very different and even irregular lodges. When time comes to elect a pope, the watchword of will be freemasonry and now the "false prophet" will emerge. Will they all be freemasons? Probably time will drag on until irregular Masons already in High Lodges are appointed new cardinals. However forty cardinals all over the world, naming a slogan one name to make a pope, will obtain two-thirds of the vote. Anyway, among all cardinals appointed, many have Masonic affinities.

## 7) Summary

To summarize the Papal Chronology, I've neglected the political domain as much as possible in order to embark on the poor quality of evangelization and the higher clergy which it comprised. Unfortunately its ecclesiastical system perpetuated many heresies over the centuries and obscured salvation to many people. Among others, heaven is not bought by good works. But salvation is obtained by giving one's life to Jesus and doing good works which he put in us from the foundation of the world. There is one mediator between us and God, Jesus Christ alone. Jesus is not a great master, not a creature; he is God and son of God in the Holy Trinity. There is no need to confess our sins to men, to the clergy, to priests. We must do it only to Jesus Christ. It is useless to pray to Mary, Joseph and other Roman canonized saints, Orthodox or otherwise; because when we belong through this acceptance to the Universal Church of Christ, we are also saints. Prayer reaches God if only it is done in the name of Jesus Christ. Similarly, we cannot be saved and go to heaven without accepting the atoning sacrifice of Jesus Christ on the cross for the redemption of our sins. We all personally have the duty to ask Jesus to take our sins on the cross and live forever with Him. This is called the New Birth. When the Christian has made that choice and acceptance in his life, he should be baptized and attached to an Assembly or a Church. Baptism instituted by Jesus Christ is a complete immersion in water, whereby we confess that we

died with Christ and we resurrect with Him while Holy Communion is the taking of bread and wine, symbolically presenting the body and blood of Christ, and remembering Him each Sunday. All this is confirmed by the Holy Scriptures.

From the year 400 AD, the Roman Catholic Church with negotiations behind the scene hastened to increase its power with the kings of the earth. By her sacraments and diverted dogmas and in full contradiction with the Holy Scriptures, she gained in strength, power and became centralizing. Then she hastened to make war with the saints, that is to say, non federated churches and having been founded by the apostles as her. Considerably weakening the testimony of the saints on earth, she obscured salvation by grace to the peoples of this world, the only way to go to God. In a bid to hide her heresies, and shamelessly enrich herself, she caused the Bible, the Word of God to be blacklisted. Her teaching is flawed and superficial.

In the Middle Ages, she launched the Inquisition to enrich herself by stealing other people's property, by murdering and slandering. Nowadays, the Curia has become an international banker operating in the same occult secret code. She was an unprecedented cruelty with her crimes against humanity through her inquisitive machine. Her corrupt and unregenerate leadership is reflected in all her institutions, the reason being that she rejected the Holy Scriptures to the benefit of human dogmas giving her glory and worldly property. She has become a synagogue of Satan.

Specifically, even if secretly the head of the Roman Church has espoused the master of money, it is necessary that Jesus Christ removes His Universal Church on earth. That is to say, all true believers from different churches and denomination on earth. Among these, there are Catholics. However they must have in their hearts accepted Jesus' sacrifice on the cross for them personally. After the rapture, the devil will be master of the earth. The false prophet will appear with the Kabbalah and seduce the nations. Looking at the history of the Roman Church in relation to the Holy Scriptures, Can we consider that the pope is a false prophet and that the Church in Rome is the prostitute? He who shall appear to fulfill the prophecy and who lives in Rome will have incredible supernatural powers. Men will be attracted and lose their souls by taking the cursed mark.

## PART 2 - The unknown Church

The unknown church is the whole body given to the stage of grace across the centuries. These are non Congregationalists brothers and sisters attached to follow the Scriptures in their natural state i.e. along the lines of the times of the apostles. We can call it the Apostolic Church. After the death of John who was the last living apostle, known and unknown churches in the New Testament, all independent of each other had the canonical books including the Revelation for the most part. Those who had not received the last book i.e. the Revelation of John, were not prevented from operating and offering succulent fruits to humanity. They were thus able to form several independent churches, which in turn transmitted by transcription the Gospel of life. Gradually as they spread across the nations, the New Testament had to be translated and later on the Bible. Each was aware that all issues of the world were inside the Holy Scriptures. Naturally, it is fortunate that these churches took their evangelical role seriously and committed themselves to the important phrase of Christ "Go and make of all nations disciples." For if we counted on the Catholic Church we would have had a New Testament translated from Greek into Latin by Jerome with a lot of mistakes in the 5th century, a Bible translated into Latin in 1590 by Pope Sixtus V himself which was withdrawn from the market soon after his death and a team of scholars took ten years (10) to correct errors. In early 1903, Leo XIII ordered a team of scholars to translate the Bible into national languages. They were closely monitored by Americanism comprising Protestantism and Christian brothers and sisters who formed a Bible commission. This is a proof that the higher clergy has not often consulted the Holy Scriptures and has continually given birth to heresies.

Hence, these churches whose names are unknown in the mists of time. Their founders were persecuted by the Roman Catholic Church be it by the division of Constantinople in the East, or by that of Rome in the West. But we will come back to it. Where a Church ceased to exist due to state persecution, another was born somewhere else in the world. This Church has never ceased to be active and many Christians not associated with state-run churches were martyred for their

faith. History proved that, the book which caused the highest bloodshed is the Bible, and that which contributed to the greatest human reforms and gave joy and a supernatural peace is still the Holy Book. The ancestors spilled blood because they thought they knew Christ through a clergy which did not know Him itself. They killed and martyred saints. And when the Saints were able to make it known to the ancestors, large Social reforms were able to exist: democracies, a church not associated with the state, human rights, the abolition of slavery, humanizing prisons and others. But the Roman Church had to be overcome and her authority taken away to achieve these things. Nowadays, this institution is still there, and she is waiting for the appointed time to get drunk of the blood of the saints again. If I speak like this, it is that Freemasonry was founded by brothers and sisters in the Lord, and this, in order for the laws of God to triumph on earth. The American Revolution was an example and it greatly helped to improve conditions for people throughout the world. However, the French Revolution was distinctly anticlerical and mystical. A despot spirit had slipped inside the freemasonry. The money men, mostly Jews, not believing in "Christ" or at least not in the one of Christians; but rather, they were Kabbalists, and here's what they said "nobody knows the secret except our Talmudists and our Rabbis" who have distanced themselves from Judaism. By 1865, the reins of the spirituality of the performing masonry were placed in the hands of theurgists Luciferians who controlled them until the time was fulfilled. As you continue to read this chapter you shall still learn many things, but do not worry, Christ will come on time to rapture His Church. What I've told you is that Freemasonry has been usurped by the father of lies and it is supposed to be like this.

Writing on the unknown Apostolic Church is very difficult, because the documents of these various Churches were annihilated, destroyed or falsified. In the case of annihilation, no mention is made of these churches as they were crushed by the State and no document relating to their existence appears in the mists of time. Churches whose records were destroyed are mentioned in some historical documents of the Catholic Church or Orthodox. However, evidence of their existence and what their belief was based on are found in archaeological research, most of their writings having been destroyed. Finally there are the churches whose documents were falsified, to accuse them of heresy in the era of Catholicism. Their documents were destroyed and falsified in order to charge them with heresies which they wanted them to be guilty of. However, some writings have survived and today we are able to know them. Undoubtedly, the further we go

down in the mists of time, the less one has documentation. Also in this book, we shall talk about them. These churches accused of heresy by the Catholic Church and of whom documents exist proving beyond any doubt that these believers were Christians attached to the Holy Scriptures in its purest apostolic form. Since there are several apostolic churches, we will take each of them and we'll go back in history.

## **1) Founding of Churches and departure of the apostles**

When Jesus died, the apostles received the Holy Spirit at Pentecost, and Peter became the leader of the group. Matthias was chosen to replace Judas. Then Paul, during his trip to Damascus became an apostle, but with lesser ministry (1 Cor 15: 9). As Paul says, he worked stronger than them all (1 Cor 15: 10). Paul was committed to put everything about salvation by grace in Jesus Christ in writing through the Epistles, the operating mode of churches, biblical truth to combat possible heresies. Paul became the apostle of the Gentiles.

Many churches were formed by the apostles, in community, in homes, outside, and even in a centralized location in a given region. All these Apostolic Churches whose head was centered in Jerusalem based their teachings on the Holy Scriptures. Around 70 AD, the Romans destroyed Jerusalem and dispersed the Jews throughout the nations. As John prophesied in the Revelation, the main churches received the book. However, it is possible that some small churches in remote areas, did not receive the Revelation. But that did not prevent them from founding new churches and evangelizing, the Revelation that applies only to a specific time which would begin soon. The New Testament was translated by hand in all languages with all its books complete for the most. In this way, each church was independent and totally free.

The New Testament being the continuation of the Old Testament for Christians, both books were combined and called the Bible. The churches were born, degenerated, but where one was extinguished, many were born. Also, each of which owned a Bible or a New Testament translated into their language. The Holy Spirit added to the Church new members through miracles and

healings. Moreover, a special gift to the early Church was the gift of speaking in tongues and interpretation. Paul refers to it in his epistles (Acts 2: 4, 1 Cor 12: 10, 13: 8, 14: 14, 14: 19, 14: 22). The gift of tongues even became an issue in assemblies; Paul then asked that if someone speaks in a tongue, let someone interpret in the language of the country, if not we keep silent (1 Cor 14:26-28). In fact the gift of tongues at the beginning of the Universal Church was prompted by the Holy Spirit for the good news to quickly spread to all peoples. As Paul and the other apostles had put everything under the New Testament, each of the churches had to have its translation in her language or languages.

The apostles and Paul were very aware of the danger of departing from the Word of God. Also, Paul exclaimed:

**15** and that from childhood you have known the Holy Scriptures, which are able to make you wise for salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus. **16** All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness, **17** that the man of God may be complete, thoroughly equipped for every good work.  
(2 Timothy 3:15-17)

Also, Paul warned the churches.

**1** Moreover, brethren, I declare to you the gospel which I preached to you, which also you received and in which you stand, **2** by which also you are saved, if you hold fast that word which I preached to you-- unless you believed in vain. (1 Corinthians 15:1-2)

The Lord, the Holy Spirit and the apostles knew perfectly well that lack of knowledge of the Holy Scriptures would be the gateway to the enemy. Mastering the Scriptures and not distancing oneself from it through heresies was the watchword of the apostles.

The mode of development of the Church being identical to that of the synagogues, the people of God were greatly persecuted after their deportation across nations as Jesus had predicted in Matthew 24 :1-2. Indeed, in the year 70 AD the Jews were dispersed throughout the nations. To preserve their legacy and not to be assimilated by the nations, the only mode of gathering that the Jews had was the synagogue. There was no centralized Judaism in a large world synagogue. Each synagogue small or large was independent. Thus, due to persecution and migration, synagogues were being closed down and created from time to time in order to continue carrying out their operations in those days.

Accordingly, it is the same for the Universal Church. As she was gradually being persecuted by state Christian religions like the Roman Catholic Church, by Constantinople or other religions around the world. She migrated, closed her doors and reopened another church in the world. Central Churches closed down, branches opened in a short space of time doing its work at the pleasure of time. If degeneration hit a church, another opened, full of zeal and Holy Spirit. Thus, we cannot reconstruct the story of this Church from beginning to the end. All we can say is that at all times there have been Christians committed to the holy apostolic doctrine everywhere. But history cannot retain the remnants, except that they are our brothers and sisters in the Lord forming part of the Universal Church of Christ and waiting for their resurrection with us. But let us go down memory lane and find traces of their actual existence in order to demonstrate that this unknown Church has indeed always existed.

## 2) The Nestorian Churches

The name does not depend on its founder. Initially, they were attached to the holy apostolic doctrine and the teaching of Scripture. But towards 428 a certain Nestorius became attaché and bishop of Constantinople. He refused the doctrine of the worship of Mary. Then Cyril, Bishop of Alexandria, convoked a council during which Nestorius was condemned. All Eastern Churches unattached to a federation were therefore called "Nestorian."



These primitive churches with the help of the Holy Spirit did a great missionary work. They settled in Persia, India, Merv, Syria, and Arabia, in Herat, in Samarkand, in Iraq, Caspian Sea in China, Mongolia and Tartary. Salvation by grace<sup>169</sup> preached there was according to Scripture. They were not small communities or isolated towns. The texts of the Jesuits and Franciscans indicate that much of these populations<sup>170</sup> believed in this doctrine throughout the countries listed. From the seventh to the thirteenth century, the Syrian Church was as important in the East as the Roman and Greek churches in the West. The Churches of Syria and Persia had many missions in India and China. The majority of Turkestan people and their leaders had accepted Christianity, and in the main Asian centers, we saw the Christian church side by side with the pagan temple and Mohammedan mosque. In their missionary work, the Scriptures were translated in all languages of the evangelization territories occupied. Thus, when Robert Morrison came to accomplish his great work of translating the Bible into Chinese, he found in the museum British manuscripts containing the Gospels, the Acts and the Epistles of Paul and a Chinese-Latin Dictionary attributed to an unknown Roman Catholic missionary in the sixteenth century." It was an apostolic book belonging to these small unknown Churches. We find traces of these churches right from the early seventeenth century in China and in the Balkans.

The main question: Why did they disappear? In the early fifth century, Papa Ben Aggai at the Synod of Seleucia, proposed a federation system and an Ecclesiastical system. The center of these churches became Seleucia or Baghdad. This center was responsible for the supply of Bishops to the various churches in incorporating the tenets of the centralized Church such as iconoclasm and other influences from East and West. They abandoned their first love Christ in favor of a centralized church.

---

<sup>169</sup> *EH Broadbent, the unknown church*, page 81. Here's what the Nestorians professed: "Christ died for us lost men, placing the death at the center because it was necessary that it be destroyed. He did not even step back at the fact that he was subject to death for the hope of achieving the annihilation of this death ... It is in this hope that he accepted obedience in a great love - not in expiation of his own guilt -because it was for us that He suffered the condemnation. It was for all men that He won the victory. Because as in Adam we were all made guilty by his victory, we gained victory. "

<sup>170</sup> *EH Broadbent, the unknown church*, page 86. a Franciscan missionary, John of Monte Corvino, circa around 1330 in China, said: "It is likely that if they wanted to agree with the younger brethren and other Christians living in this country, they have converted the whole population to the true faith, including the emperor. "

You see, the Church is the unity of the constituent assembly in the Holy Spirit. It is the zeal of all these little living rock that makes it to develop and to emancipate. The only self-sufficient and true model is that given in the epistles. Scripture contains all lessons that must be delivered to the community. Thus, a small living rock sufficiently educated, full of zeal and attention to the holy Word of God left and formed another independent church, and so on. The Church must be guided by the Holy Spirit and not by men to develop. In this sense, the people who make up the Church are the heart; otherwise the Holy Spirit will be hindered in His work. When the great Mohammedan invasion swept Persia and Seleucia, the supply of Bishops gradually ceased. Churches accustomed to a clergyman could not return to an apostolic system and grew old without succession. Certainly, brothers and sisters attempted to return to the apostolic source as missionary John Monte Corvino cited in the footnote on page 170 mentions. This Franciscan missionary died in 1328; thereafter, there is no trace of his very powerful church. Was there hostility on the part of some leaders of these countries? Did the centralization of churches in Seleucia and the dogmas of this church, obscure salvation or created confusion among the faithful? Did they abandon the Holy Scriptures? Until today, we are without answer. Is it probably one of judgments to the seven churches, in prophecy of the seven candlesticks at the beginning of the Revelation?

### 3) The Cathars Churches

Mentioned was frequently made in Roman documents about churches that joined the apostolic doctrine and claimed an uninterrupted succession of witnesses from the first days of the Church. Members of these congregations were often called Cathars (Pure), although they never gave themselves that name. These churches were very widespread from the Black Sea to the Atlantic. These numerous churches in the East subsisted until 1453, year when Constantinople was taken by the Mohammedan Turks. Elsewhere in the East, they followed the Mohammedan rise. The Turks expanded their religion by a terrible Inquisition "believe in Mohammed or die" However; the pure churches continued their work in less zealous countries. We find their traces in Russia, China, Mongolia, Asia and Africa, while in the West, some have remained until today. In various places, these churches bore different names given by their persecutors, either: Novatian

Paulicians, Bogomiles, Waldensians, Albigensians, Loollars, Hussites, Beghards, Anabaptist, and Baptist. Recent archaeological research shows evidence beyond any reasonable doubt that these churches including the Nestorian churches were meeting, and that these brothers and sisters in the Lord were very zealous in their missionaries work. Also let us look at their evolution over time.

a) **Paulicians**

These churches were numerous, attached to the Holy Scriptures. Their teachings came from the apostolic era. These churches were founded by the apostles. They were located in Asia Minor, Armenia, around Mount Ararat and beyond the Euphrates. These believers were called Paulicians or Thonraks by their persecutors who destroyed their literature. They were accused of the worst deviations, but recent excavations have demonstrated that their members were many brothers and sisters in the Lord. History holds that Theodora, empress of Byzantium (842-867) tortured more than one hundred thousand of these believers up to the extent of impaling them. They can be traced right back to year 1143. Byzantium, through the Catholic Church, hunted them unabatedly. Caught between the Islamic inquisitorial uprising and that of the Catholic Church, they had to change place or became victims of the Inquisition.

b) **Friends of God**

Emperor Constantine who was sympathetic with Paulicians caused many to emigrate to the Balkans and Bulgaria. They were named "Bogomiles"<sup>171</sup>. The numerous persecutions of Byzantium forced these believers to swerve in Serbia, Bosnia, and Hungary around 1140. In Bosnia, the leader of the country Kouline embraced Bogomile, and it became the religion of the country. The same decision was taken by the Prince of Herzegovina and the Roman Catholic Bishop of Bosnia. Then the brothers gained Dalmatia and Moravia. Even in the 17th century,

---

<sup>171</sup> *EH Broadbent, the unknown church*, page 61. "Some derive the word Bogomile from the name of a prominent man during the reign of Czar of Bulgaria, Peter (927-968). They are sometimes called Bulgarians. Bogomiles is the plural a Slavic word; hence the usual form of the West, Bogomiles. Similar words are constantly used in Slavic countries. In Yugoslavia, Bogomolici are those who pray God (Bogu = pray God and demolition). It is little doubt that Bogomili were called because they struck their contemporaries as being people who lived in peace and communion with God."

<sup>172</sup> *EH Broadbent, the unknown church*, page 66.

there were congregations of Paulicians at Philippolis to the north of Danube and in other parts of Bulgaria. As for Cathars, meaning "pure life", churches were widespread from the Black Sea to the Atlantic<sup>172</sup>. Helped by the king of Hungary, Pope Innocent III exerted strong pressure on Kouline. He had to submit to Rome in 1203. The people refused to retract. Then the pope ordered the Dominicans in charge of the Inquisition to be zealous in methods of torture. Around 1389, King Sigismund of Hungary defeated the Bosnian army. So persecution struck again. In 1450, 40 000 bogoumiles crossed the border of Herzegovina, where Prince Stefan Vukitchich protected them. Around 1464, Bosnia passed to the Turks. The people being largely Bogoumiles preferred the Turks to the Inquisition. Bosnia became a Muslim country. They left only a small literature. Their relationship with the oldest churches of Armenia, Asia Minor, the Abligeois of France, the Waldensians and others in Italy, the Hussites of Bohemia, shows that they shared the same faith and the same life with the believers. They formed the link between the primitive churches of the Taurus Mountains, Asia Minor, and their brothers in faith of French and Italian Alps. Their countries and nations were lost to Christianity because of the relentless persecution that the Roman Catholic Church had imposed via the kings of the earth.

### c) **The Albigensians**

These proud Christians from Cathar churches who claimed to have received their writings from the first apostles lived in Languedoc, Provence and Midi in France. This civilization was more advanced than the rest of other countries, especially since they were the most fertile land of France. They attributed the name Albigensian to them, although they never gave themselves this name. Most of the time they were called the "perfect" or "pure" and were very keen to the Holy Scriptures, the Catholic in the past had the custom of giving to these Apostolic Churches names of doctrines opposed to Christianity to justify their acts of meanness, then remove their writings to better justify the story.

In order to live in peace with an invading Roman Catholic Church which condemned as heresy anything that did not sound Catholic, many of them said, they were Catholics, although they were Cathars with the nobility protecting them. The Pope and the King of France coveting these fertile lands formed an alliance. The king did not intervene directly but obliged the feudal to engage

---

<sup>172</sup> EH Broadbent, *the unknown church*, page 66.

themselves in it. Raymond VI was excommunicated (1226) by Pope Innocent III in Provence and the other prelates and leaders stood up to the papacy. Innocent III in 1209, proclaimed a crusade: indulgences were offered to all who wanted to participate in cross havoc with prospects of looting and licence. This attracted three hundred thousand men.

The crackdown lasted from 1208 to 1244. The crusade under Simon de Montfort was bloody. He massacred many Albigensians. On 22 July 1209, the city of Béziers was required to deliver 222 Cathar. The city refused, Simon de Montfort said, "Kill them all, God will know his own", the Crusaders killed in one day between 25,000 and 30,000 souls, women, children and priests. Then Monfort announced the news to Pope Innocent III in these words: "Our men spared neither rank, nor sex, nor age; were slain by the sword about 20 000 people and after a huge massacre of enemies, the whole city was looted and burned. Divine vengeance has done wonders." She blazed for two days. Simon de Montfort died in 1218, wounded by a stone shot. In 1229, all Languedoc had been ransacked, murdered, burned and looted by the crusade. The crusade did extend from 1209 to 1229. In 1229, the Holy Inquisition was made a permanent institution by the Council of Toulouse under Pope Gregory IX and it was forbidden for the laity to read the Bible. The Inquisition installed in the vicinity of Narbonne was to complete the destruction of the Albigensians (1229-1244). Churches which maintained the holy apostolic doctrine in France were henceforth illegal.

These churches existed during the apostolic era until the end of the thirteenth century. The majority of the population was Cathar. No historian can give precise figures about the population. But the figure of half a million would not be significant. They refused a state church and believed in salvation by Grace. The Scriptures helped to corroborate their base in the faith.

#### **d) The Waldensians 70-1700**

These churches existed from the earliest apostolic times. It is even likely that it was founded by Apostle Paul himself. They were concentrated mainly in the Alps valley of Piedmont in France, Italy, Austria, Germany, Switzerland and Bohemia. The name Waldenses was associated with the Roman Catholic Church after the Inquisition to Peter Waldo, prosperous merchant and banker.

He translated portions of Scripture into Romand language. He was a reformer who had very close links with the Waldensians. He died a martyr during the Inquisition in Bohemia in 1217. Peter Waldo founded the "the poor of Lyons" Church which subsisted from 1180 to 1818 and which greatly influenced Huss. However, the Waldensian Churches were descendants of the Cathars who had received their teaching directly from the apostolic time.

Having been sheltered from war in their mountains, they had preserved the Scriptures and the pure apostolic model. Their churches had many missionaries who taught the good news throughout Europe. Thus, as reported by the inquisitor Reinerius, who died in 1259: "Among all these sects, existing or not, none is more dangerous to the Roman Catholic Church than that of the Waldensians, and this for three reasons. The first is the long duration of this heresy, because it is believed they have existed since the time of Sylvester, according to others, from the apostolic times. The second is that Leonists are everywhere; there are hardly countries where there is none. The third is that if all other sects horrify their listeners by the enormity of their blasphemies against God, Leonists have a great appearance of piety, with pure conduct before men, clinging in faith to the things of God, and all items of confession of faith. Only they blaspheme the Roman Church and the clergy, and the multitude of the laity is only too ready to believe them. In 1689, their leader Henry Arnaud said: "Even the opponents of Waldensians declare that their religion is so primitive that their name is venerable", citing inquisitor Reinerius in a report to the pope: "They existed from time immemorial." Arnaud then continued: "It would be difficult to prove that this poor band of faithful men inhabited the valleys of Piedmont less than four centuries before the onset of these extraordinary characters, Luther, Calvin and other lights of Reformation. Their churches have never been reformed, so they bear the evangelical title. The Waldensians are descendants of these Italian refugees who after St. Paul had preached the Gospel in this country, left their beautiful country and as the woman mentioned in the Revelation, hid in the rugged mountains where, to date, they hand down from father to son the Gospel in its purity and simplicity, as St. Paul had preached. "When the Waldensians made contact with the reformers (Luther and Calvin) of sixteenth century, they said: "Our ancestors were often told that we existed since the time of the apostles. But in all things we agree with you and think like you. Since the apostolic days we stayed firm on the faith." In spite of himself, the inquisitor Pope Innocent III gave a good testimony about them. But what do you want? Understand that he aptly deserved his

name: "Among the Waldensians, educated laymen were responsible for preaching, and the Waldensians did not want to listen to a man in whom God was not."

These brothers and sisters believed in salvation by grace. They were attached to the apostolic doctrine in all its purity and simplicity. These were men who had in them the fruits of the Holy Spirit. They did not dispute over theology and allowed the Spirit of God to move freely when the Bible was not sharp on certain topics. They transmitted gifts among themselves by the laying of hands as the Apostles. They had an exemplary conduct; did not mix Church and government. The church was purely secular, there were the apostles, elders and deacons. The apostles were missionaries walking as merchants, with Medical knowledge to heal the sick, and they preached the good news in pairs in all countries. They walked like the apostles, under the cover of a merchant because of Roman Catholic Church. The elders oversaw the teaching of brothers and sisters of the congregation. Deacons provided for the needs of the church, housing, hospitals and other needs of the time. It is believed that it was the Waldensians who created the Beghards, these "houses of God, here and there in the various countries where poor, disabled and elderly people were taken care of. They asked no alms, nor beg and they were brothers and sisters in Lord who administered these institutions. Quickly the Inquisition closed these institutions, put the occupants to death and confiscated the goods to deliver them to the Franciscans. The persecutions by the Roman Catholic Church made the Universal Church to lose treasures. Until 1150, Cologne was a Waldensian Church dating from apostolic times. At Metz a large church was destroyed and burned it was the principal location for storing translations of the Bible.

Peace in the Waldensian valleys was troubled from 1359. The Archbishop of Embrun, Pierre Mont, organized a military expedition in the Alpine valleys. In 1380, Pope Clement VII sent a monk as inquisitor. For thirteen years, 230 people climbed onto the pyre and their property was divided among the inquisitors and judges in the country. In the winter of 1400, many had to evacuate their homes and reach the mountains where women and children died of hunger and cold. In the fifteenth century, the Valpute population was decimated. Then Waldensians were massacred and put under hard labour in Provence, the Durance valley. This region devastated by plague and epidemics needed manpower. Then the bishop of Marseille signed with the heretics "Acts of homes" to grant them concessions. These people continued to read their Bible, without

taking oath for the Roman Catholic Church. But in 1545, they were decimated in a few days, killed or sentenced to hard labour; history recalls the massacre of the Luberon. Inquisition massacred the inhabitants of Merindol, Aigues, Lourmarin and Walls. In short, in 1486, a bull of Pope Innocent VIII authorized the Archbishop of Cremona to extirpate heretics, and 18,000 military men invaded the Waldensian territory. The holy places were destroyed and looted. Among these churches was an Assembly which was founded by Apostle Paul himself, the last remnants of the apostolic era. So, peasants began to fight the men of blood in the name of self defense. Thanks to the means put at their disposal, they repelled the enemy. This war lasted for more than one hundred years.

What happened to the Waldensians? They were caught between an inquisitor Protestant church and a Catholic Inquisitor Church full of heresies that had just massacred a large part of their population. Because their thoughts and their beliefs were consistent with Protestantism in 1532, the Waldensian Church signed an agreement with the new Reformed Church of Luther in Chanforan. Naturally, the Waldensians had inquired about his faith, under Frederick, and Luther used the Bible of the Waldensians as a comparative version to translate his own. In 1560, the Waldensian Church in France greatly persecuted disappeared, the movement dissolved with the Reformed Church of Calvin who revised the Waldensian Bible.

These churches are credited for their high moral and apostolic status which influenced the nobles and Kings of the West. They had an incredible evangelistic ministry among the people of the West. They had awakened the people vis-à-vis the heresies of the Roman Catholic Church by making reformers to emerge even within Catholicism. They gently and simply handed the torch to the reformer, the Word of God. Many Waldensians kept independent churches. Today, they still exist. I wonder if the reception of gifts of the Holy Spirit by the laying of hands was preserved. Some churches went to America and Africa under other Christian names. They influenced the Huguenots, Walonne churches, the Lollards.

#### e) **The Huguenots**

The Huguenots were evangelical Christians who gathered for worship and reading of the Bible.



They had no central organization and resided in several parts of France. Their number was varied between 2 million and 2.5 million souls. Were they, descendants of the Cathar churches who silently survived persecution? It is believed that they are a mixture of some primitive churches of the time of the apostles and a powerful spiritual revival. Also, the queen mother Catherine of Medici wrote to the Pope in these terms: "The number of those who are separated from the Catholic Church is so great that it is no longer possible to restrain them by strict laws, or by force of arms. Because nobles and Magistrates have joined them, their power has increased. They are so firmly united and gaining daily such strength that, in all parts of the kingdom, their influence is great."

There were two thousand and fifty churches in France, a population of four hundred thousand men able to make war with the Huguenots. The dominant church, the nobility, the Inquisition and Crusades were constantly repressing brothers and sisters in the Lord. As they were close to the reform, they hoped to accelerate the process to form a Protestant Reformed Church as in Switzerland (1519). In reality, given their increasing numbers it was only a matter of time for the king to grant the reform. The most daring won over the rest, and in October 1534, they put posters everywhere, even at the door of the king's chamber, a long article entitled "genuine article on the horrible, great and unbearable abuse of the Papal Mass, invented directly against the Holy Communion of our Lord and only Mediator and only Saviour Jesus Christ."

Immediately, the clergy set the king against the Huguenots. Several brothers were betrayed and sent to the pyre. Persecution started; neither Switzerland nor Germany was able to help the brothers. In 1572, a marriage was arranged between Henry de Bearn, King of Navarre and Huguenot party leader, and Margaret, daughter of Catherine de Medici, sister of the King of France. The Huguenot houses were marked, and less than a week after the ceremony was the Massacre of St. Bartholomew. The king's men massacred men, women and children in Paris and the Seine. It was a relentless war which plunged France into misery for 20 years. In 1594, Cardinal Richelieu fought with so much vitality that he took the strong city of La Rochelle: Huguenots had just ceased from being a military force.

To a large extent, Cardinal Richelieu gave them much liberty. This lasted until the death of Mazarin in 1661. Louis XIV took power and applied the rules for the Huguenots. Their children at their birth were removed and placed in convents. The dragon tree, soldiers without morals, lived with them, insulting them, torturing them to force them to "convert" to Catholicism; otherwise they were tortured to death. If they tried to escape and were caught, the man was sentenced to hard labour for life and women to life imprisonment. The best people of the country left abandoning everything to go and live in the highest misery in France and countries like Switzerland, Holland, Brandenburg, the British Isles and others, enriching the nations that received them by their skills as farmers, traders, industrialists, politicians and military men, artists and scientists. This crumbling Church due to persecution was never able to reveal whether the churches dating from apostolic times had joined their movement. History leaves us nothing about them.

However, the French Revolution was a consequence of the persecution against Huguenots. This was to stop in time the transmission of the monarchy and the United Church to the State.

f) **The Churches of brothers and sisters in the Lord**

In reality, the Church of brothers and sisters in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries based on the apostolic model was so great that it offered a real obstacle to the Roman Catholic Church. For this reason, Pope Gregory VII (1073-1085), in proclaiming the Pope as the supreme Universal leader, placed himself above the kings of the earth. At the same time, he had the authority to overturn any oath to a monarch. This meant to tell the monarch: "Do as a Catholic monarch what the pope asks; if not by negotiations through the nobility or other Catholic kingdoms nullifying any oath or a clergy inciting the people to revolt, you will lose your throne." For let us not forget that during the Middle Ages when a monarch became Catholic, the Roman Catholic Church demanded that the country and its people become Catholics, under pain of heresy.

In such circumstances, armies were raised against the brethren and churches were destroyed. But based on the model of the Apostles, where a church was quenched, another one was born. Thus, Pope Innocent III established the Inquisition in 1210 and then launched a second crusade against the Cathar Churches. Subsequently, in 1229, he made Inquisition permanent. In 1263, a decree of Pope Gregory IX said: "We excommunicate and consider all heretics as anathema, Cathars,

Patarins, Poor of Lyons, Arnold and others, whatever their name, because although different faces, they are joined by the tail. " Despite this, the churches which were based on the scriptural system with the reading of the Bible and the pure doctrine of the Apostles were so numerous that the inquisitors themselves stated in their register, as Inquisitor David of Augsburg: "Previously sects were only one, and now they unite to face their enemies." These scattered notes, selected, among many others, are sufficient to show that the primitive churches were widespread in Europe in the twelfth and thirteenth centuries "in some countries they enjoyed considerable freedom, while elsewhere they were exposed to the cruelest persecution."

In 1302, Pope Boniface VIII issued a bull declaring that submission to the Roman pope was necessary for the salvation of every human being. Emperor Louis of Bavaria putting himself at the head of protest against this contention, the Pope threw a ban on most of part of the empire. This provided a foundation for the Reformed Church and Protestantism. Thus, Kingdoms fell into the waltz of the popes. England by its remoteness and its Strategic territory alienated the crown of the Catholic clergy and put a quick end to the Inquisition. Pope Sixtus V with Philip II in 1587 decided, to bring back England into the bosom of Catholics countries. A strategy was devised which ended in a defeat of the Invincible Armada in the English Channel between July 31 and August 8, 1588. Spain lost her fleet, tool of its global hegemony. Then the Pope gave up hope of taking back England into his bosom and refused to pay Spain which by contract he promised to fund. England now free became a land of freedom for the brothers and Protestantism. We will come back to it in the course of this chapter on the historical years of Reformation.

Inquisition started in 1209 by Innocent III was going to provide a significant source of money into the coffers of the Roman Catholic Church through the laity. The Dominican Order was specially founded for this. Dominicans looted the brothers and sisters in the Lord, Jews, scientists, and anything that did not soon identify itself with the Roman Catholic Church as mentioned in the bull of Pope Boniface VIII in 1302. Historians say More than eight million men were killed by the Roman Catholic Inquisition in Europe only. To this, one does not count those who came out impoverished, decimated and torn. In short, they had become real human vegetable. We do not count the poverty caused by its vices among families where the breadwinner was struck. We do not count the Inquisition in America which could give even more

tragic figures. Also, we do not count the crusades and massacres imposed by the Catholic Church against the Christian brothers. Certainly, we shall not count either its silence vis-à-vis the killing of Jews in return for a tax levied on the German and Italian population during World War II. We will not count either of these millions of souls to whom she obscured eternal salvation because they believed in her heresy and her lies. They believed that she was the only surviving church in the past and that she held the keys to heaven. The Roman Catholic Church drunk of the blood of the saints to protect her lies and maintain a high clergy to get rich by being juxtaposed with the state rejected Christ and the Bible. She lost the souls of all those who believed in her heresy rather than reading the Scriptures and accepting salvation by Grace. Undoubtedly, the Roman Catholic Church maintained the secular population in a high degree of ignorance; it contributed to the impoverishment of the nations during the Middle Ages by causing wars, plagues and hunger. Through these policies in arrears, looting and massacres, she scoffed at all antichrists of the world the most basic rights and freedoms of men. Through her actions, she prevented men, women and children in those days from leading a better quality of life, and it was by bullying the scientific community of inventions that could have been beneficial for nations. Until Reformation, the brothers and sisters of the primitive church not attached to a state church and those from Catholic circles taking the scriptural model of the Cathar Church, they ensured the grain by the translation the Scriptures into languages. These are faithful Christians who went through the Inquisition and persecution. They were those who spearheaded the light of the nations until the reformation.

Among these brothers who renounced the Catholic faith to join that of the brethren was **Pierre de Bruys** and **Henri de Lausanne** former monk. For twenty years they educated the public traveling in Dauphiné, Provence, Languedoc, and Gascogne<sup>173</sup>. Pierre Bruys was burned in St Giles in 1126 and Henri Lausanne, died in prison in 1147.

**François D'Assise (1209)** created the Franciscan Order; Pope Innocent III accepted the order with great reluctance. Of course, did preaching in the manner of the apostles displease him? The Order was a great success among the laity and they had to create others. However during his

---

<sup>173</sup> *EH Broadbent, the unknown church*, page 91. "Bernard Clairvaux the most powerful man in Europe at the time. Bernard found the church deserted and the people completely turned away from the clergy. However, the eloquence and authority of Bernard did not temporary stop the movement which did not depend on a man, was spiritual and influenced the whole population."

lifetime, François saw the Order being handed over to senior clergy whose vision was much more focused on money machines that it had created. François D'Assise died in 1226. In 1318, Pope John XXII considered as heresy the teaching that Christ and his apostles possessed nothing. The Order became an instrument of evil and an active opposition agent. History proved that any spiritual movement was doomed when it retreated into the boundaries of the Catholic Church. This Order looted and massacred "houses of God" installed in all countries for the needy people who were founded by Cathar churches and the reformers who had adopted the apostolic model as Church. People working in these houses were called Beghards or Beghin. Most of these "houses of God" were protected by the Lord, and survived the time.

Corporations became the way to reach people and to announce the good news with Scripture, at a time when the mere fact of possessing a Bible was punishable with death. From the thirteenth to the sixteenth century professions like the weavers, the masons, shoemakers, painters, merchants, in short, craftsmen were brothers and sisters in the Lord. Each of this guild corporation was very powerful. They had their own organizations and maintained close relations with other guilds. One of the most powerful corporations was that of construction workers, called "Masons". Who would have been suspected of being simple artisans whereas actually they were doctors of the Holy Scriptures? Many People having nothing to do with these trades like ladies, merchants, customers and others were becoming members of the corporation by providing a minimum contribution, a pot of honey or a bottle of wine. These members were often more numerous than the workers themselves. For those corporations provided them refuge against persecution and an opportunity to hear the Word of God. These workers left a mark of their spirituality in the past. The building works they provided to mankind are still being admired today. The Corporations traveled throughout Europe: Portugal, Spain, England, Bohemia, Germany, Switzerland, Austria, Italy, France and other countries. In this way, here and there Churches of the Brethren were opened. At one point a worker and his family disappeared and became a religious minister. He was replaced by recruiting a new brother who was also forgotten somewhere else with his family, the good fruit is multiplied with the help of the Holy Spirit.

Concerning Brothers and Friends of God, Lollards, Beghards, Waldensian apostles, Thomas Aquinas tells us: "They are extremely numerous in Italy, Germany and Provence, where they are

called Beghards and Beghin. Some call them "brothers" or "poor in this life, "or" apostles." The apostles and Beghards have no home fixed home, carries nothing when they travel, do not beg and do not work. This is what is worse, because once they were masons, locksmiths, etc. Then we were told, "This heresy was so widespread among the priests and monks, that Alsace is full of it." Because of persecution, the apostolic churches left very few writings. The names of their major scholars were soiled. The Catholic Church made tremendous efforts to falsify or cause their writings to disappear completely. Anyway, these small apostolic churches studying the scripture having in their community an exemplary life disappeared silently with time. The death of Louis of Bavaria and the election of Charles IV (1340) would have provided a forum to trace what the Catholic Church called heretics, but for us they were brothers and sisters in the Lord. Naturally, Boniface IX (1389-1404) published a decree ordering that all possible means be employed to get rid of the scourge of heretical impiety. Unfortunately, most of Europe became the scene of the cruelest executions of many of its best citizens. Although the work continued its path, with a Church closing down and another opened elsewhere perhaps in another country. The elders of the different persecuted congregations where it had become difficult for believers to meet said: "Let each father become a priest in his house and keep on reading the Bible until the time when persecution will cease."

In England, heretics were not much persecuted unlike the European continent. The monarchy was very aware of the gaps and errors of the dominant Church. Also, the church subtly distanced itself from decisions taken by the monarch. The Lollards took the responsibility to remind people of the country, the doctrinal differences between the scriptures and heresies of the Roman Catholic Church. But Henry IV to please the clergy decreed that heretics should be punished with death by fire. Only few suffered this fate. Henry VIII broke up with the pope, proclaimed himself head of the Church and despoiled monasteries without changing anything in the religion. Under Elizabeth I (1558-1603), the invincible armada was defeated with the help of God, and the Catholic dynasty sponsored by the Pope collapsed. In terms of faith, the Anglican Church drew nearer to Calvinism but retained a hierarchical organization similar to the Catholic model. **John Wickliffe**, an eminent scholar of Oxford, translated the Bible into English. His translation of the Bible brought a revolution in English thought, for the English Bible has become one of the greatest powers in favour of justice that the world has ever known. Wickliffe using popular treatise taught the

Scriptures to people. Accordingly, he created bands of itinerant preachers. His influence was such that even his enemies were not able to shake him. His group with the help of Lollards evangelized England, the country of Wales and Holland. He died peacefully at Lutterworth, the last day of the year 1384. On the writings of Wickliffe, a certain John Ball proposed a peasant revolt (1377-1381), saying: "By what rights do those who are called Lord dominate over us? In what capacity did they earned this position? Why do they treat us like serfs? Given that we are descendants of the same parents, Adam and Eve, how can they prove they are better than us, if it is not only by exploiting our labour, can they satisfy their proud luxury? When Adam was plowing and Eve spinning, where was the gentleman? In our day, we could say: When Adam was plowing and Eve spinning, where were the money men and politicians who destroy the planet? Slowly and painfully, they won the case, as they obtained the abolition of slavery. It was again the Scriptures, acting on conscience, which contributed most strongly to this happy result. Among the foreign students of Wickliffe, there was a man named Jerome Prague. As soon as he arrived in his hometown, full of zeal, he began to teach. Among those who were deeply touched was John Huss.

John Huss, doctor of theology and preacher in Prague, confessor of the Queen of Bohemia. This brother, by his eloquence and the writings of Wickliffe, converted people to the Lord. It must be said that these people were already strongly influenced by the Waldensians. In short, the Slavs, Czechs, Germans, Teutons, Moravians and of course Bohemians, and the archbishop of Prague through the pope excommunicated Huss, but the King of Bohemia, the nobility, the university and the majority of the people supported Huss in his doctrine. He was invited to the Council of Constance by the Pope and Emperor Sigismund issued him safe conduct, promising absolute security if he came to the council. Pleased to present to the council the holy doctrine of the apostles based on the Scriptures, he came. Immediately, he was thrown in jail and burned by fire. To justify this action, the Council promulgated a solemn decree (1415) - supposedly an infallible decision dictated by the Holy Spirit - as what the Roman Catholic Church is not required to speak to a heretic.

The Pope ordered crusades against the Hussites. So, **John Ziska** led the peasant brothers and the armies of the pope were routed. The Roman Catholic Church was forced to come to terms with

the Hussites. At the Council of Basel in 1433, they recognized the right to freely preach the Word of God, to take the Holy Communion in both kinds, to abolish the possession of worldly property by the clergy, and they abolished several other oppressive laws for the brothers. In reality, the Pope was afraid of a Hussite surge right up to Rome. After the defeat of the Crusades, all concession was good. But as he did not recognize any oath made to a heretic, this Pact did not have much value. In these countries, there was also the *Church of the Unity of Brothers*.

The relationship between the Cathar churches and the German brethren and Czechoslovakia, Bosnia, Moravia, the brethren in France, Italy, Spain, Portugal, the Netherlands and England is undeniable because of the fact that they had the same catechism in their own language. We know of several editions, printed between 1438 and 1530.

In the Netherlands, linked to the brethren, there were the *brothers of the common life* who during the early fifteenth century established a network of schools throughout the Netherlands and North-west Germany. For her part, Belgium had with the help of Waldensians, established a very considerable network of *Walonne churches*.

Yet, from XIth century to the sixteenth century and more, the Church according to the pure model of Holy Scriptures survived the persecutions of the Roman Catholic Church as an ally of the Catholic king. Over time, the Cathar churches helped reformers using Bible translation and catechism. In some countries with large Catholic infiltration evangelization and the establishment of churches was by corporations and the phenomenon of multiplication due to the Holy Spirit. They were everywhere in Europe; the Roman Catholic Church fought but could not crush them.

## 4) Renaissance

The city of Strasbourg has a population of 16 000 inhabitants. This is the third largest city in Germany after Cologne and Nuremberg. The city falls within the empire and the main inhabitants are brothers in the Lord. They are Hussites and Waldensians. John Gensfleisch native of Mainz calls himself Gutenberg. Based in Strasbourg, he did mysterious research called "Kunst und



Adventure". In 1440, he invented the printing press. In the first half of the sixteenth century this technology remained an invention jealously kept by the brothers in the Lord, and was a powerful machine to establish the Reformation. The first major printed work, the Latin Bible, dates back to 1450. The capture of Constantinople by the Turks in 1453 pushed many scholars to the West. The Greek manuscripts of the New Testament were brought back from there. Immediately, universities started teaching Greek right up to Oxford in England. Without regard to the prohibitions of the Catholic Church, the Waldensian New Testament found in Abbey of Tepl in Bohemia was translated and published into different languages. The study of the New Testament in wider circles showed a sharp contrast between the teaching of Christ, on one hand, and the teaching of the Roman Catholic Church on the other hand. The more scholars and language teachers translated the Holy Book; the more they realized the heresy of Rome. Of course, it was realized that all these little Cathar churches with their Bible were in the truth and that they had actually practiced the sound doctrine of Christ. There was a great religious revival thanks to the Reformation.

The Reformation was interrupted by many religious wars throughout Europe between the 16th and 17th century. We will not give a historical record of this because this part of the chapter is intended to show the reader that the Church of Christ has always existed on earth since the apostolic times. Unfortunately, there were many deaths. Through these wrenching and painful events, the Church silently continued to exist over time. All Cathar churches committed to the apostolic teachings, greatly persecuted for many centuries by the Roman Catholic Church united with the state, began to lose impetus. Already in many countries, the population was in favour of the doctrine of the brothers. Reformation was the arrival of able men in various places to gather these brothers and sisters in a state religion. The brothers being tired of persecution desired to be grouped under one state religion in order to fight Inquisition in a common way. So to integrate the Catholic elements in a Church reform, the Reformation needed to come from within the Roman Catholic Church.

Three out of four great reformers came from the Roman Catholic Church, Luther, Zwingli and Calvin. The last but not least, is probably the father of Reformation, Peter Robert Olivetan. Martin Luther born in Eisleben in 1483 was the second son of a family of eight children. Master

of Philosophy at the University of Erfurt, he entered the Order of Hermits of St. Augustine (1505) where he became a priest in 1507. In 1510, he moved to Wittenberg and became professor of this university. In 1515, he demonstrated in Wittenberg through the epistles of Saint Paul that salvation cannot be purchased but must be earned because it is given to people who practice the faith and charity. At the castle of Wittenberg in 1517, Luther presented his 95 points in which he condemned the sale of indulgences. He delivered his famous words: "My conscience is prisoner of the Word of God: I cannot and do not want to retract." He immediately became a danger to the Catholic Church. It is not known exactly when he was contacted by the Waldensian brothers, friends of Frederick of Saxony. Luther was introduced to the holy doctrine. Then in 1520, he publicly burned the bull of Pope Leo X who condemned him. Excommunicated and condemned to Worm diet, he took refuge in Wartburg Castle under the protection of Frederick of Saxony. There, he translated the Bible from the original texts into German. In 1525 he married the former sister Katharina von Bora. In 1529, during the Diet of Speyer, the word Protestant appeared. In 1530, the emperor summoned the Diet of Augsburg, which turned against him because a coalition of princes of the North under the authority of Philip of Hesse and Frederic of Saxony in 1531 led to the so-called "Smalkade League." On June 25, 1530 Melanchthon who became the main disciple of Luther made a moderate presentation before the Diet of Augsburg containing 26 proposals on which Lutheranism was based. He wrote the "Augsburg Confession and Apology of Augsburg." Under Luther, the princes espoused Protestantism by mutual agreement under the "Smalkade League" and inflicted a serious resistance to the Pope. The Lutheran Church very close to that of the brothers was born. In 1546, Luther died and Melanchthon became its leader. At the Peace of Augsburg in 1555, Lutheranism was given legal recognition. The reigning princes in Germany could choose between it and Catholicism. But only the states could choose between two faiths, religious freedom of the individual was not recognized. Out of Germany, the Lutheran Reformation spread in Scandinavia and the Baltic countries.

Ulrich Zwingli was born in 1484 into a wealthy and very religious peasant family. He obtained the degree of Master of Arts at the University of Basel. At 22, he became a country priest in Glarus. In 1516, he accepted being appointed pastor of Einsiedeln, southeast of Zurich. What was most remarkable with Zwingli was his difficulty to live in holiness. In 1516, he read the Latin translation of the New Testament done by Erasmus, which he copied in his notebooks and learned

by heart. Based on this text and some other passages in the Bible, he found peace in the forgiveness of Christ the Redeemer. Zwingli said in his sermons that the teaching and practice of the Church had very much shifted from the original Christian Scriptures. Among these usages contrary to the testimony of the Bible, Zwingli cited the worship of saints and relics, the promise of miracle cures and ecclesiastical abuses of the system of indulgences. Strongly influenced by the Waldensians and the brothers, the city council of Zurich looking for a second Luther saw him in this man Zwingli. On January 1, 1519 he was appointed priest in the Collegiate Church of Zurich cathedral. In this cathedral, Zwingli was introduced to the doctrine of brothers. From this time, he tackled his role as a reformer. His goal: absolute sovereignty of God from whom salvation is freely given to man on the one hand and the authority of the Bible on the other hand. Having made his choice, Zwingli did everything possible to ensure that Zurich becomes a reformed city according to the Holy Scriptures. All his action was to gradually transform the hearts and minds of his city to achieve this noble goal. Also, this same year (1519), a mysterious admirer put a printing press at the disposal of the reformer and his courageous new ideas spread far beyond Zurich. Luther and Zwingli did not agree on the doctrine of the Eucharist. This prevented a coalition between Germany and Switzerland. Finally, the Catholic cantons influenced by the archbishop, himself solicited by the pope, attacked Zurich inhabitants and the latter won the battle of Kappel. Zwingli was killed there. Calvin completed his work in Geneva.

The success recorded in gathering people under a Protestant banner was remarkable; I must say that this movement was greatly influenced by the Cathar apostolic churches, which for centuries with several small reformers from within, had preached to these people. The Gathering under one name became evident against the Inquisition. Despite this, the Holy "Catholic League" could still dethrone Protestantism.

Those who gave courage to Protestantism were the Waldensian brothers at the Synod of Waldensian Churches during the October 12, 1532 session. This historic meeting took place in the city of Chamforan the heart of the Angron valley where thousands of Waldensians died horribly because of their faith under the papal Inquisition. Waldensian churches were represented; including that of Calabria which was almost entirely exterminated in the fourteenth century. Albigenian churches that survived as well as the Bohemian churches sent delegates to the

meeting. As such, the wishes of the marginalized Christians were expressed. On the part of the reformed, Guillaume Farel of Waldensian descent and Antoine Saunier represented the French churches of Switzerland. The Waldensian churches resolved to produce a Bible in French and give to the the reformed churches. Despite their poverty, the Waldensians happily absorbed the costs which stood at more than 1500 gold crowns. Thus, the Waldensians handed to us the Holy Book received from the early Church. The Waldensian Barbes had shown Farel and Saunier's copies of manuscripts of the Old and New Testaments in the vernacular, which they kept carefully with a copy of the Itala Vestus translated about the year 157 from the original manuscripts of the Church of Antioch. The two reformers at the meeting indicated to the Assembly that these copies, in small numbers, could be used only by few people, and a translation or revision of the original was required for the glory of God, for the sake of French-speaking Christians, and as the best weapon against error and the superstition of Rome. The proposal of Farel and Saunier was adopted with enthusiasm. The man who was to do the work, as a result of this decision was Pierre Robert Olivetan. He also consulted the German Bible of Martin Luther, the Bohemian Teplice, and the Romansh version of the Waldensians. Olivetan, who had been ready for such a task long time ago, did not put more than one year to accomplish it. The printing took only four months. The Cathar Church was a full Church in its rights and in my opinion should be regarded as one of the churches of the prophecy of the seven chandeliers at the beginning of the Revelation. If the Catholic Church never existed; the Cathar Church would have given us delicious fruit, for she had kept the Holy Scriptures in the assemblies. In addition, she was able to provide the nations of the world with the Holy Scriptures. A thing she hastened to do as soon as the printing press was invented.

This resulted in a great spiritual awakening in French churches. Their names were Huguenots; proof beyond doubt that this reformed Church had an early Cathar apostolic foundation. Previously, we saw what happened to the Huguenots while hastening the reformation. The "Catholic League" fell upon them, leaving a respite for the Lutheran Protestant and Calvinist to strengthen themselves. Meanwhile the "Catholic League" was going to be weakened in the fight against brothers and sisters in the Lord, Huguenots.

John Calvin, born July 10, 1509, was the son of the fiscal procurator of the Bishop of Noyon. John was trained as a humanist; he studied literature and philosophy in the colleges of Marche and Montaigu in Paris and then law at Orleans, where he met Pierre L'Estoile. In 1533 he embraced the ideas of the Protestant reformation started by his cousin, Pierre Robert Olivetan. Condemned by the French Parliament after the affair of Placards<sup>174</sup>, he had to flee to Basel and returned to Noyon. In 1536 he went to Geneva, the old Episcopal city whose Council had just decided to join Protestantism, at the request of William Farel, he settled there. Guillaume Farel was the same man who was contacted by the Waldensian churches to translate the Bible. Meanwhile Pierre Robert Olivetan was a cousin of John Calvin. Calvin revised the Olivetan Bible. Pierre Robert Olivetan was poisoned in Rome in 1537. Calvin and Farel made Geneva the world center of Protestantism. Calvin died on May 27, 1564. Calvinism triumphed in some Swiss cantons, the Netherlands, Scotland and made many followers in France and in South-west Germany. In England under Henry VIII, on 3 November 1534, the king passed the "Act of Supremacy," which established him as the head of the Anglican Church. During the reign of Elizabeth I, herself Protestant, the Anglican Church got closer to Calvinism in matters of faith, but maintained a hierarchical organization on the Catholic model. Thus, the various reformers translated the Bible. John Wickliffe relying on the original Greek and Hebrew texts translated the Bible into English, Luther on the basis of the original texts translated it into German and Olivetan, based on the books and Cathar Church manuscripts translated it into French. All these versions were consistent, the printing presses rolled it up and people were reading the precious book more and more. Translations based on these versions were spreading in all languages. The Roman Catholic church with her heresies ran out of explanations. Also, the holy "Catholic League" became weakened in countries like France at war, Spain which lost her invincible Armada and Portugal which was falling prey to Protestantism.

The Word of God hidden voluntarily by the Roman Catholic Church with the aim of maintaining a high clergy dominating the peoples and nations and hypocritically maintaining the lay people in ignorance by not recognizing any of their rights as they did in New France. The primary objective was to blind the kingdoms, to better take advantage of earthly riches collected through Inquisition

---

<sup>174</sup> The case of placards, it was the precipitation of the Huguenots in 1534 for a reform of the Church and to obtain rights. The king ordered the denunciation of the guilty and many died at the stake.

in the same tribes, traffic indulgences, icons, and simony. With the appearance of the printing press under the jurisdiction of brothers in the Lord, knowledge of the light now emerged. The enemy no longer had weapons to provoke the fear of heresy. This was because all men of all nations could now read the Word of God, the Bible. Knowledge increased from the fact that many believers wishing to delve into the Scriptures, learned to read, and thereby had at hand several other teachings. Protestantism offered its people the opportunity to read the Word of God, to know salvation by Grace, without paying with one's life. It opened the doors of Divine knowledge, between man and God. It allowed nations to protect themselves against an intolerant and intrusive Catholic Church. It gave an impetus to nations to establish a new *modus operandi*, first of all at home and secondly on a world scale.

Of course, the modern Bible versions have evolved. Scholars and scientists of different universities from the original Hebrew and Greek texts have given it all its literal sense, having more time at their disposal to further the biblical doctrines, to inter-connect the sense more to dissect the meaning of words more and more. However, the modern man, as a Christian of Cathar apostolic churches find in it, all the things that God has left as legacy for man and He has sealed them in His Word, the Bible. During each era, the biblical doctrines prevail and fit, and this because God has made of His work, a Word of Life, valid and having its full meaning at all times. The Bible is a masterpiece of light and full of life for the glory of God.

With hindsight, the influence of the Catholic Church on the souls and consciences of the peoples has reduced. Freedoms and human rights are fully granted individually and collectively. All these battles were won by born-again Christians, often at price of their blood.

## 5) From Reformation to the War of Independence

Protestantism was therefore a bulwark against Catholic Inquisition. It was a set of Cathar churches gathered in a state religion called Protestantism, Lutheran, Calvinist or Anglican. It allowed the brothers and sisters to integrate Catholic populations in particular regions, to read the Bible in peace of mind and openly announcing salvation by the grace. However, the Minister had

to do Bible study and be confirmed. Holy Communion was taken four times a year. Fellowship was cold and nonexistent. In addition, reformers like Luther, Zwingli and Calvin did not accept the form of the Anabaptist or Cathar churches under penalty of Inquisition. Luther drowned several Anabaptists; Calvin caused Servetus and Zwingli with Menno Simons to be burned. There was a peasant war during which Anabaptists were crushed in 1525. Accompanied by severe repression in Germany, they were forced into exile.

Then the Cathar churches under Protestantism lost their fellowship, a very important aspect of the Church of Christ. Previously, the churches were connected through a form of communication. Each secular contribution was used to edify each of the churches. One of such had the gift of preaching, Doctors, interpretation, tongues, healing, organization, missionary, elder, deacon, bishop or others. Then each small living stone making up a small community or church was put to use. Everyone took part in the Lord's Supper, pray, teach, and make clarification or comments on the Holy Scriptures. Then the Holy Spirit distributed to each according to his share and dose. Because of this apostolic mode based on the Scriptures, the Church grew and multiplied while creating several other churches.

These small churches reconstituted from the early Cathar apostolic churches, Christians transformed by the reformers or Catholics who became Protestants and wishing to become part of the small apostolic churches bore the name Anabaptist, Evangelical, Pentecostal or Mennonite. The Anabaptists were the descendants of Baptists, so prevalent in North America. These churches existed in apostolic times, except that for a short period some went through the so-called Protestant stage before reassuming the shape of the Cathar Church. Many of these believers emigrated to Holland, England, Poland, Siberia, Ukraine, Northern Germany, Mexico, Bolivia, Brazil, Uruguay, Paraguay, Canada and the United States. All these brothers and sisters in the Lord greatly persecuted through the centuries sought a haven where every man was equal with a common faith. It was those brothers who populated the New World for England. They are also the ones who made the Revolutionary War and formed the first religion of the United States of America. Currently, we evaluate all these Cathar churches worldwide to over 250 million Christians. They have expanded greatly in Central and South Asia and Africa, while missionaries from around the world are evangelizing the old continent again.

## 6) Freemasonry and the brethren

Previously, we saw the evangelization method of the brethren in countries making up the Holy "Catholic League", that is to say, France, Spain, Portugal and their colonies of the New World. Indeed, they operated through well organized and well connected corporations. The most powerful corporation was that of construction workers, known as "masons". Therefore, brothers had learned to work in enemy territory in silence and anonymity.

In the network of Cathar churches, was an immense chain linking the churches together via the central head of each of these corporations. And of course, soon attached to Protestantism, they also served as a source of intelligence and infiltration.

Jan Amos Komensky (1592-1670) was a Moravian bishop, that is to say, Czech. He acquired a worldwide reputation in educational reform. He created the "social archetypal" pattern. UNESCO considers him as the greatest reformer in education. All European education system was designed according to his model. He wrote "the labyrinth World and Paradise of the Heart ". Comenius was caught between a Catholic and a Protestant Church both of them inquisitors. All his life he had to flee. Comenius as a spiritual leader brought the last bands of fugitives out of Moravia. He lost everything: his wife and son died of hardship of the journey. From 1641 to 1642, he lived in London where he forwarded the scheme and his ideas for educational reform. He was a mason as rector of trades. Knowing the mode of operation on establishment of churches through corporations, he transmitted information. The English masonry had created the first invisible college funded by the "merchant banker". The Jews having suffered greatly from the Inquisition sought to join and even fund any system to break the worldly power of The Roman Catholic Church." In England, they arrived. So they began to convey words such as democracy to the brethren in the regiments leaving for the New World, and ideologies, like all men are created equal and consistent with Christianity. Comenius was a Christian in Christian Masonry. The people who left for the New World were brothers and sisters in the Lord, tired of persecution and wishing to settle permanently in one place. We shall see in the next part of this chapter how and why masonry changed and became Freemasonry.



## 7) Summary

As a result, the apostolic churches on the model received and described in the New Testament never stopped growing, persecuted; they have evolved with time and degrees of Inquisition. However, they have never forgotten their primary role which is to announce the Good News, and evangelize to transmit the Word of life to nations around the world. When time came, they helped the reformers and jealously kept the secret of printing for half a century. Result: the Word of God has been translated into all languages from the originals of the Church of Antioch sent by the Waldensians and the originals of the Church of Constantinople, who went in exile due to the Mohammedan pressure.

Consequently, the enemy wanted to destroy the power and authority of the book of God, the Bible on earth. Through the invention of printing and the insight of the brothers, the Word of God became accessible to the masses in all spoken languages. It was published and continues to be published in such a great quantity that it is by far the most widely read and sold book in the world.

These martyrs churches of the Roman Catholic Church could not settle in one place forming an organizational center. They followed God's Word to the letter in small Churches and the Holy Spirit did His work. They disappeared and reappeared over time according to the direction of the wind blown by the Holy Spirit. For a time, they gave the necessary strength for reformation to achieve its goal. Then they were divided into small churches scattered throughout the four corners of the earth. Christians who make up these churches greatly contributed at the price of their blood to the advancement of the kingdom of God, conception of democracy, promotion of individual freedoms, abolition of slavery, enforcement of human rights and freedom and the deliverance of mankind from tyranny during the Second World War.

At the beginning of the Revelation, the prophecy of the seven candlesticks describes different churches. Only one remained consistent because she kept the word of life.

7 "And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write,"These things says He who is holy, He who is true, "He who has the key of David, He who opens and no one shuts, and shuts and no one opens": 8 I know your works. See, I have set before you an open door, and no one can shut it; for you have a little strength, have kept My word, and have not denied My name. 9 Indeed I will make those of the synagogue of Satan, who say they are Jews and are not, but lie--indeed I will make them come and worship before your feet, and to know that I have loved you. 10 Because you have kept My command to persevere, I also will keep you from the hour of trial which shall come upon the whole world, to test those who dwell on the earth. 11 Behold, I am coming quickly! Hold fast what you have, that no one may take your crown.  
(Revelation 3:7-11)

Of all the churches this is the only one to be fully accepted by Jesus Christ. Why? Because it is very powerful and kept His word and did not deny Christ for earthly glory.

### **PART 3: The confines of the ILLUMINATI**

We studied the structure of the Illuminati. In this section we shall elucidate some reality hidden right up to our contemporary times. How did freemasonry penetrate Christian masonry? What is the source of Kabbalah compared to that of witchcraft?

#### **1) From masonry to freemasonry**

As we saw in Part Two of this chapter, masonry was operating in a network in order to evangelize the people in the territory of the Holy "Catholic League" through "Corporations" with the most prestigious being that of building construction. This approach of Christian brothers and sisters was soon admired by an occult group. A typical Christian masonry touting the virtues of

democracy and equality under the Cover of "Invisible College" of London controlling the Grand Lodge of Ireland and Grand Lodge of England. These lodges infiltrated military troops and settlers bound for the New world. The settlers were mostly brothers and sisters in the Lord, already familiar with the procedures of secrecy and the ideals of the guild of masons. It is obvious that they could not tell the brethren that the final ideals were occult. This would never have worked. Among the values promoted by the masonry was salvation by Grace and Christian values as a democratic society where all men are equal in the Lord. The New World offered the opportunity to both sides that were going to be side by side in Christian Masonry, but led by an "Invisible College" which became occult and whose members were called freemason to realize the Great Occult Work. Heavily persecuted in Europe, this unknown Church was composed of all the settlers called to build the New World; and they were determined this time not to be governed by "the despot and the prostitute." This new land would be developed and governed on a new basis. This was the content of their entire message. Several thousands of men and women between 1600 and 1730 left. A democracy, a country making its merry way.

At the time the "Invisible College" was composed of good men in the Lord, For this reason Comenius deposited "The social archetype." scheme there. This scheme explained how to centralize education in the hands of an invisible world system. The tolerant Policy that England adopted towards heretics and her geographical situation were the main reasons for the establishment of the single "Invisible College" in such place at that time. It controlled all Grand Masonic Lodges. Normally, to achieve their "trade union" goal, where money men primarily Jews also victims of the Catholic Inquisition became indispensable. The fundraisers funded the "Invisible College" under the banner of "Merchant Bankers," they were all Jews and initiates of high degree Kabbalist. They were members of the Luciferian Church which officially became "The Golden Dawn" in 1888. They took control of the "Invisible College". Satanic tares integrated even the Christian settlers. Already in Europe there was a growing passion for mysticism with the Age of Enlightenment. This was going to give them the opportunity to introduce into the patent letters of the lodges, a kind of esotericism. They were careful not to touch the lodges of the New World which for their part were to preserve the pure Christian tradition. This mysticism caused by the private Church of Rothschild was going to provoke a new type of masonry. The so-called ILLUMINIST freemasonry.

## 2) The sources of Kabbalah

Kabbalah dates back to ancient times, long before Noah and the flood. It was the main reason why the ancient world was destroyed. The fallen angels had relations with people's wives. It is these relationships that created the super hero of antiquity. Kabbalah was probably transmitted to humans by this means. Moreover, recent Archaeological excavations based on the Greek stories indicate that Greek mythology is probably very correct. A religion full of gods and goddesses typically dedicated to demonology. Corruption of mankind in the ancient world was made as follows:

**1** Now it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born to them, **2** that the sons of God saw the daughters of men, that they were beautiful; and they took wives for themselves of all whom they chose. **3** And the Lord said, "My Spirit shall not strive with man forever, for he is indeed flesh; yet his days shall be one hundred and twenty years." **4** There were giants on the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came in to the daughters of men and they bore children to them. Those were the mighty men who were of old, men of renown. **5** Then the Lord saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every intent of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. **6** And the Lord was sorry that He had made man on the earth, and He was grieved in His heart. **7** So the Lord said, "I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth, both man and beast, creeping thing and birds of the air, for I am sorry that I have made them." **8** But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord. (Genesis 6:1-8)

Demonology and all the sciences emanating from it were freely practiced in the ancient world. When God exterminated all races and nations by flood, the remains of Kabbalah were found by

the descendants of Noah. Also, nearly one hundred and fifty years after the Flood, mankind became corrupt again. By mutual agreement, and speaking only one language, the men all came together and began to build an esoteric tower linked to psychic forces. God scattered the people on the surface of the earth and confounded their languages.

4 And they said, "Come, let us build ourselves a city, and a tower whose top is in the heavens; let us make a name for ourselves, lest we be scattered abroad over the face of the whole earth." 5 But the Lord came down to see the city and the tower which the sons of men had built. 6 And the Lord said, "Indeed the people are one and they all have one language, and this is what they begin to do; now nothing that they propose to do will be withheld from them. 7 Come, let Us go down and there confuse their language, that they may not understand one another's speech." 8 So the Lord scattered them abroad from there over the face of all the earth, and they ceased building the city. 9 Therefore its name is called Babel, because there the Lord confused the language of all the earth; and from there the Lord scattered them abroad over the face of all the earth. (Genesis 11:4-9)

In the historical legends of the Inuit people, there is the story of how God dispersed men and languages in the tower of Babel, while in China, with the multiple letters of their alphabet, there is a symbol to denote "Ark of Noah"<sup>175</sup> and another for "Tower of Babel"<sup>176</sup> dating back to the night of their origin. About a hundred and forty-two years later Abraham was born. The latter raised a people to God. After the patriarch, Moses came much later. From the mouth of God, Moses was instructed to write the first five books of the Bible, Torah or Pentateuch. These books are Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy. Moses received from God the law and from the finger of God the Ten Commandments. Moses gave instruction to the people that Christ was to come, that He was the Son of God and he enjoined the people to listen to Him. Read the Torah in juxtaposition with the New Testament to discover the similarity of symbols, words, phrases and terms used by the two authors, Jesus and Moses. Of all the citations listed

---

<sup>175</sup> C.H. Kang and Ethel R. Nelson, *The Discovery of Genesis*, P93-102

<sup>176</sup> C.H. Kang and Ethel R. Nelson, *The Discovery of Genesis*, P103-112.

below, some apply to a Saviour by blood or a King of Justice in the form of Melchizedek attributed to the birth of the Word made flesh, that is to say, the divinity of Jesus Christ saving sinners by his pure blood. The explanation of His ministry being His justification and sanctification; in this form, God conquered Satan at the cross at His first coming. Secondly, as a reigning King with His people in the manner of SHILOH, Christ will reign as King and Saviour of His people in the Millennium at the second coming. This after defeating the Antichrist and Satan chained for a thousand years, after the great tribulation which will last for seven years (see Chapters 1-2-3 of this book). These are the verses confirming the seed of Abraham forming a people for whom God will bring a Saviour. This was revealed to Moses in the Pentateuch Gen 3: 15, Gen 22, Gen 12 :2-3, Gen 14 :17-20 Gen 17, Gen. 21: 12, Gen 26: 4, Gen 28: 14, Gen 31 :11-13, Gen 49 :9-10, Ex 12: 2 -7.46, Ex 13: 2; Leviticus, the first seven chapters explain the atonement of sins by the blood: image of Christ coming to free us once and for all by His eternal sacrifice, because He alone can be the atoning victim by His divinity, Christ has pure blood, no original stain nor sin; Lev 26 :13-46, Lev 17: 11-14, 23 Num: 9 Num 24: 17-19, Deut 4: 25-40, Deut 21: 23.

It should be understood that during the Old Testament, the Hebrew people was a people set aside and protected by God. The Jewish people would have been holy and free of all filth. Also, they had very specific instructions from God. One of these instructions was not to touch the divinatory arts. Even more than that, they were supposed to ban all the nations occupying the land of Canaan because the people were practicing the arts of divination. Then what are divinatory arts?

### **Divination and magic**

**9** "When you come into the land which the Lord your God is giving you, you shall not learn to follow the abominations of those nations. **10** There shall not be found among you anyone who makes his son or his daughter pass through the fire, or one who practices witchcraft, or a soothsayer, or one who interprets omens, or a sorcerer, **11** or one who conjures spells, or a medium, or a spiritist, or one who calls up the dead. **12** For all who do these things are an abomination to the Lord,

and because of these abominations the Lord your God drives them out from before you. **13** You shall be blameless before the Lord your God. **14** For these nations which you will dispossess listened to soothsayers and diviners; but as for you, the Lord your God has not appointed such for you. (Deuteronomy 18:9-14)

Or

Give no regard to mediums and familiar spirits; do not seek after them, to be defiled by them: I am the Lord your God.  
(Leviticus 19: 31)

Consulting fallen angels, spirits or the dead corrupts mankind. This makes the human nature even wicked. Finally, these men are possessed (Leviticus 20: 27). Within the Pentateuch, ie the first five books of the Bible Moses warned the people several times against such practices: Ex 22: 18, Lev 19: 31, Lev 20: 27, Deut 18: 10.

At the age of 80, Moses met God at Mount Horeb (Exodus 3: 1). Here, God explained all the signs which He would do through the hands of Moses (Exodus 7: 3) and in what circumstances. As for the stick that was to change into a serpent on due time, God made it an instrument for His glory in the hands of Moses. Nowhere is it mentioned that Moses made incantations or magic. Besides, magic has always been in opposition to God in the Old and New Testaments (See: Act 13 :6-12, Act 8: 9, Gal 5 :19-20, 1Sam 15: 23, Act 19: 19, Appoc 21: 8, Ex 7: 11, Ex 8: 14, Ex 9: 11).

Did Kabbalah exist in the days of Moses? Kabbalah existed in ancient times and many powerful nations in the New world exploited it like the Philistines, the Canaanites, Babylonians and Egyptians. This explains why Pharaoh's heart remained so hardened vis-à-vis the ten plagues of Egypt. Anyway, the first two plagues of Egypt were: waters turned into blood and frogs, including previously the stick changed into a snake. Like Moses, the sorcerers, wise men and Pharaoh's magicians were able though with less power to do the same (Ex 7: 11, Ex 7: 22, Ex 8:

3). Only at the third plague, lice, that magicians declared to Pharaoh, "This is the finger of God" (Exodus 8: 19). Probably, the ancient Egypt of the New World was the most advanced in magical Kabbalah. Meanwhile it is well known that people occupying the land of Canaan, offered human sacrifices.

Unquestionably, there is evidence that Kabbalah is in complete opposition to God, thus Moses in the Pentateuch and as in the New Testament with Jesus. Peter refused to Simon the Magician the opportunity to buy the Holy Spirit and did not ever lay his hands on him. Then, during a mass conversion to Christ in Acts 19: 19, we read: "Also, many of those who had practiced magic brought their books together and burned them in the sight of all". Historically Kabbalah has always been in opposition to God for the simple reason that it comes from fallen angels headed by Satan. He has many names: Lucifer, Mammon, the Malign, the Enemy, Beelzebub, the Devil and others. Approaching the science of demonology greatly increases cases of possessions.

### **3) The nature of angels**

The word angel appears 108 times in the Old Testament and 165 times in the New Testament. Referring to the Word of God, angels are not spirits of men having lived on earth. Men do not become angels (Acts 12:15-16). The guardian angels are not a myth, they are real (Matthew 18: 10). Angels are God's creatures, they were created by Him (Colossians 1: 16). Angels are ministering spirits of God (Hebrews 1: 14). The Angels are innumerable, more than men (Revelation 5: 11, Hebrew 12: 32). The Angels are above the laws of physics; they can travel faster than the speed of light and cross matter (Acts 12: 7). There is a hierarchy among the angels, there are the cherubim, archangels and angels with power, domination, a throne, dignity and different authority (Colossians 1: 16). The angels are more intelligent than men (2 Samuel 14: 20). Angels are more powerful than men (Psalms 103: 20, 2 Peter 2: 11, 2 Kings 19: 35, 2 Samuel 24:15-16). An angel can materialize his body (Revelation 15: 6, Acts 1: 10). Angels are the guides of the faithful, that is, saved Christians (Acts 8: 26). Thus, Philip was guided by an angel to speak to the Ethiopian eunuch; so that he might be saved. In the Christian life, some difficult decisions require the intervention of an angel. It may be a stranger who pulls you from the midst of a large crowd having full knowledge of your problem and give you a solution. He goes his way



and you never see him again. The angels lead the faithful to heaven in the presence of God (Luke 16: 22). Angels execute the judgments of God (Numbers 22: 22, Matthew 13: 41, Acts 12: 23). In this framework, many people believe that Satan is practically equal to God. This is very untrue. Not only is he a limited celestial being, but other angels are even superior to him in power. In this vein, one day, one angel will bind Satan and imprison him for a thousand years, during the Millennium. Satan will be humiliated, not by Christ himself or by a legion of angels, but by a single angel (Revelation 20:1-3). We are also told not to worship angels.

**17** which are a shadow of things to come, but the substance is of Christ. **18** Let no one cheat you of your reward, taking delight in false humility and worship of angels, intruding into those things which he has not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind,  
(Colossians 2:17-18)

Jesus Christ as part of the Trinity took part in creation. All things were created by Him and for Him (Colossians 1: 16, John 1: 3, Ephesians 3:9-12). Christ is the creator of angels, so above them in authority, domination, power and dignity. When God's children will be rehabilitated by Jesus Christ, they will have a superior and privileged position compared to angels. Because we will die and be resurrected in the Spirit of God, we shall not fall again (Hebrews Chapter 1-3: 6). Also, the Word tells us that we shall judge angels (1 Corinthians 6: 3). Also that the gospel preached by the Holy Spirit to men, the angels would have loved to look into the Bible, but cannot (1 Peter 1: 12). This is undeniable proof of the privilege granted to us by God and how important we are to Him.

## **4) The Fallen Angels**

The fallen angels are creatures of God, in whom He found iniquity. In their being, God saw sin. The exact moment of this judgment is not known. But God cast them into the abyss of darkness, reserved for the Day of Judgment (2 Peter 2: 4). Therefore, it is right to believe that among these corrupt angels, many are working on our planet. They are created to live forever. Unlike God,

they are neither omniscient nor omnipresent nor omnipotent. The word omnipotent means whose authority is absolute. Satan does not even have that authority since God can stop him at any time. The Holy Spirit working on earth, sealed in each born-again believer through prayer, can change the course of events, provided it is not prophetic. Consider the story of Job. Satan could only touch Job as far as God permitted. Under the age of grace, through prayer, the believer can reverse many of the decisions of the enemy. When God accepts the prayer of a believer and reverses the decision himself, the enemy cannot act. This is because the born-again man under the age of grace is sealed forever. That is why for Satan to have all powers on earth, he must wait until God removes the Holy Spirit and the Church of Christ from the planet. For the born-again Christian who has accepted the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross to atone for his sins has very great authority over all the power of the enemy.

This brings us to the question: What is the abyss? The Bible tells us in Genesis 1: 2: "The earth was without form, and void; and darkness was on the face of the deep...". The abyss is space (Job 38: 30). If you follow the plan of creation (Genesis Chapter 1 and 2) apart from our planet, there is no other life established for the glory of God and being part of His plan in the universe.

## 5) The role of man

In the abyss, God created the earth from a shapeless and void mass, containing vegetation, water, animals and a Garden of Eden. From the same abyss, He created the major planets and the stars (Job 38: 7). God gave authority to the man over His work.

Then God said, "Let Us make man in Our image, according to Our likeness; let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, over the birds of the air, and over the cattle, over all the earth and over every creeping thing that creeps on the earth."

(Genesis 1: 26)

This authority over all the earth that God gave man made him the master of creation. After the creator of course but if the enemy could cause man to fall, he will usurp the authority given by God to man.

The role of man on earth was to cultivate and watch over the Garden of Eden, to cultivate and maintain it by taking care of it. Today, we have the same responsibility. The Earth does not belong to the "International Bankers" or the rich industrialists, or to the governments that pollute, but to men. Here is what God says to these people.

The nations were angry, and Your wrath has come, And the time of the dead, that they should be judged, And that You should reward Your servants the prophets and the saints, And those who fear Your name, small and great, And should destroy those who destroy the earth."

(Revelation 11: 18)

Indeed, at the end of the great tribulation, which will last for seven years, there will be the second part of the first resurrection of the righteous. Then, men who accepted the mark and worshiped the beast will be destroyed. Among those who will bear the son of Satan in the world government, are many rich businessmen from the Illuminati who destroy the earth and are protected by laws of our governments. Laws, they have made to protect and exploit to their advantage the public good given by God to all men. They are thieves and robbers of the people's blood. Unfortunately, man cannot reverse this situation. But God through the disasters announced in the Revelation and the revolt of the earth on these men will overcome this injustice. Also, during the Millennium, men will return to the earth and to the original values, God and His Word. God willing, I hope they keep the best technology invented for their comfort as to produce a continuous motion, have clean and autonomous electricity free of charge, an autonomous communication system and a method of energy production without pollution. But, let us come back to the Garden of Eden and the role of man on earth.

Naturally, man was protected by the presence of God. The Garden of Eden was really a privileged place where man had access at all times to God's presence and protection.

Then the Lord God took the man and put him in the garden of Eden to  
tend and keep it.  
(Genesis 2: 15)

In Chapter 1 of this book, we saw that the serpent seduced Eve and Adam, and that they lost their authority on earth to the benefit of the usurper. Thus, man and his offspring became sinners.

## 6) Who is Satan?

First of all he is called by many names like: Lucifer, Beelzebub, Mammon, the enemy, Evil, Satan, the devil, and others. He was a cherubim guardian with outstretched wings (Ezekiel 28: 14). He put the seal of perfection; he was full of wisdom and perfect in beauty (Ezekiel 28: 12). He was created for music (Ezekiel 28: 13). He held a good position in the Kingdom of God (Ezekiel 28: 13). He wanted to be like the Most High (Isaiah 14:13-14). His heart was lifted up because of his beauty and he corrupted his wisdom by his splendour (Ezekiel 28: 17). He was filled with violence and sin (Ezekiel 28: 16). God precipitated him from the mountain of God, and removed him from his position (Ezekiel 28: 16, Ezekiel 28: 17, Isaiah 14: 12). God brought out of him a fire that consumed him (Ezekiel 28: 18).

Satan was in the Garden of Eden, it is he who spoke through the serpent (Ezekiel 28: 13). He usurped the right of man over all the earth and turned against him the laws established in the mists of time. In this sense, he could come before God and tell him he has been walking to and fro the earth (Job 1: 6). Then, he tempted Christ in the desert. Saying in essence, if you fall down and worship me, I will give you all the kingdoms of this world (Matthew 4:8-9). Jesus said: Get thee behind me Satan! For it is written you shall worship the Lord your God, and serve Him alone (Matt. 4: 10).

Finally, Satan and his angels will be judged on Judgment Day.

The devil, who deceived them, was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone where the beast and the false prophet are. And they will be tormented day and night forever and ever.

(Revelation 20: 10)

It was necessary to understand the nature of angels and know their fallen leader before continuing this part of the chapter.

## **7) How has Kabbalah been introduced into Freemasonry?**

Jesus warns all men as to the nature of the enemy. During the days of Jesus, most of the Pharisees mutually plotted to kill Christ. Immediately he told them:

You are of your father the devil, and the desires of your father you want to do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and does not stand in the truth, because there is no truth in him. When he speaks a lie, he speaks from his own resources, for he is a liar and the father of it.

(John 8: 44)

God warns us not to listen to him, because there is no truth in him. All that Lucifer can bring to man is lies, ruin, destruction and possession. Apostle Paul, before his departure for eternity, revealed to us another very important truth, if we seek the truth.

**25** And indeed, now I know that you all, among whom I have gone preaching the kingdom of God, will see my face no more. **26** Therefore I testify to you this day that I am innocent of the blood of all men. **27** For I have not shunned to declare to you the whole counsel of God. **28** Therefore take heed to yourselves and to all the flock, among which the Holy Spirit has made you overseers, to shepherd the church of God which He purchased with His own blood. **29** For I know this, that after

my departure savage wolves will come in among you, not sparing the flock. **30** Also from among yourselves men will rise up, speaking perverse things, to draw away the disciples after themselves.  
(Acts 20:25-30)

Paul also tells us:

**1** Moreover, brethren, I declare to you the gospel which I preached to you, which also you received and in which you stand, **2** by which also you are saved, if you hold fast that word which I preached to you-- unless you believed in vain.  
(1 Corinthians 15:1-2)

Paul goes on to list the doctrines of faith and explaining the salvation by Grace the only way for men to go to God. All the steps to follow are well written in the New Testament. Everything is clear and precise, both how to be saved through Jesus His only son, the Constitution of the Universal Church, the doctrines, ordinances, exhortations, instructions, modus operandi or ways of acting in conformity with the holy doctrine at all times and in all things. All this is in the New Testament. No one has been able to find another way to go to God through a secret society. There is only one, it is simple, intelligible and accessible to all. The path of salvation is very well explained in the New Testament. One must not move away from the Holy Scriptures, we should not follow doctrines other than those taught by the apostles. The gospel teaches us that there should be no mediator between us and God.

Kabbalah was introduced into freemasonry because it always found men transmitting it from mentor to disciple. Also, the enemy watched over its venomous fruit. Satan ensured that its distribution be attractive to the unregenerate man who does not read the Holy Book. This is how Kabbalah was presented to members of the Freemasons. First, if a follower consulted the definition of *Petit Larousse* 1989 version, he could read: Kabbalah = Interpreting Jewish esoteric and symbols of Biblical text, whose classic book is *Zohar*, or the Book of *Splendour*. (Fans of

occult sciences use the symbols of Kabbalah in a magical sense.) Naturally, today's world being under the control of the ILLUMINATI, it is easy for them to insist that such ambiguity be inserted in a dictionary definition. The courted member by reading such a definition will believe to be in perfect safety. Imagine, a Biblical book speaking of esotericism and from God. At least, by reading it the first fear disappears. But the reality is different; it is not a biblical book, but an esoteric interpretation of biblical texts, the Pentateuch or Torah. It is not an interpretation of the author himself in this case Moses, dictated by God himself. In fact, only the Jewish rabbis of Judaism who practice Jewish magic use this book as a reference.

Truly, the staging is beautiful for the co-opted member. Here is what they are told in essence: "The word Kabbalah comes from the Hebrew word Kabbalah, itself derived from the verb kabbel which means "receive" or "welcome". The elders generally agree to say that they come from an oral tradition that Moses himself received on Mount Sinai when God transmitted to him on one hand the foundations of the written Law which still forms the bulk of the Sacred book of the Torah. The Torah is the Pentateuch and includes the first five books of the Old Testament: Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers and Deuteronomy. Rabbi Simeon Bar Yochai during the second century transcribed for the first time the teachings which before then were exclusively oral. His writings were discovered in the 13th century by the Spanish Kabbalist Moses ben Shem-Tov, who then published it under the name Sepher ha Zohar, *the Book of Splendour*. "This book is certainly the most important work of the Kabalistic literature, it comments on the Pentateuch verse by verse. It is made up of eight main treaties: the mysteries of the Torah, the child, the mystical explanation of the law, the mysterious research, come and See, the Great Assembly, the Little Assembly, and Book of Secrets. Alone, the Sepher ha Zohar brings together almost all the elements of Kabbalah, such as: the doctrine of the sephiroth, the doctrine of creation, the doctrine of merkabah (the divine power is within the natural world), the symbolic description of heavenly palaces, the interpretation of prayer, the interpretation of rituals, mysticism of numbers and letters. Of course, the reader, in the light of biblical texts, realizes that neither Moses nor God transmitted rituals orally and in secret to a small group of initiates. So who may well have had an interest in doing this if not Satan the father of lies? Kabbalah is the privileged initiatory way of Hermetics. To better understand what it means, it is important to define it according to the religion of the new initiate: Christianity (one may call himself a Christian whereas he is not born-

again, see the doctrine of salvation by grace), Judaism, Buddhism, Islam and other religions around the world. Of course, every man called Christian from origin who has not accepted for himself salvation by grace coming from Jesus Christ is not born-again. So he will go to hell when he dies. I am not the one saying this but the Scriptures. Depending on the religious history, how to address the Kabalistic texts is necessarily different if one adopts the perspective of the Jewish initiates or unregenerate Christians. On the Christian side people are recruited through Gnosticism, a doctrine explored by Christians of the first three centuries, contrary to the teachings of the apostles. The 'Petit Larousse dictionary 1990" defines it as: a doctrine of a set of heterodox Christian sects of the first three centuries AD, which profess a radical dualism and founded the salvation of man on the rejection of the material subject to the forces of evil as well as a higher knowledge (gnosis) of divine things.

Kabbalah basically assumes three distinct forms: speculative, contemplative and magical. Speculative Kabbalah explains essentially the 32 ways of wisdom. This enables one to ensure the awakening and development of his ego through the improvement of his psyche. The contemplative Kabbalah proposes the achievement of the highest levels of consciousness by quiet contemplation of Kabalistic symbols. This dimension of Kabbalah enables us to awaken and nourish the spirit. It contains very elaborate rituals putting in action the analogical power of symbols peculiar to the science of demonology. In reality, he (Member) receives by the transmission of high ancient wisdom, great tools to undertake a real path on the internal perspective (possession) as well as closely participating in the divine realities (spirits, guides or demons). Magical Kabbalah is intended to act on the body by portraying certain psychic and spiritual forces (Demons) related to perceived realities through speculative and contemplative aspects of this science. This magical dimension of Kabbalah is based primarily on the practice of phylacteries rituals or using different media that embody the psychic forces associated with traditional symbols transmitted by the elders.

Truly, the way Kabbalah is built helps to select the initiates and provides a net for Lucifer. One of the first wisdom that the initiate receives is this: "Adam and Eve were created by God to be custodians of the fallen angels." The biblical objection is found in Genesis 2: 15: "Then the Lord God took the man and put him in the garden of Eden to tend and keep it". That is to say take care.



Another wisdom: "By sinning, Adam and Eve fell into the hermetic world of the fallen angels." The Biblical objection is in Genesis 2: 17 and Romans 5: 12: "Therefore, just as through one man sin entered the world, and death through sin, and thus death spread to all men, because all sinned-". We fell in sin and have become mortal. God by his writings immediately gave man a means of restoration.

Another wisdom: "Adam and Eve created in the image of God have a divine part in them, which they transmitted to each man. They consider themselves gods." This is the biblical objection: When the old world was destroyed, God changed the rules and said in Genesis 6: 3: "And the Lord said, "My Spirit shall not strive with man forever, for he is indeed flesh; yet his days shall be one hundred and twenty years ". Indeed, after the destruction of the ancient world the spirit of God was not given to people in the Old Testament. Under the New Testament, only the Christians who accepted the sacrifice of Jesus for the forgiveness of their sins receive the Holy Spirit in the time of Grace. However, people who shall live in the era of the Great Tribulation will not receive the Holy Spirit in them. So man is flesh and has nothing divine if not through the calling of God through faith in Jesus Christ that He gives eternal life by sealing him with the Holy Spirit.

Another wisdom: "men were created to watch over the fallen angels. They should not be afraid. They are stronger than them." Another wisdom: "the fallen angels will help man to discover his divine nature and be rehabilitated." Once this deception is approved, the initiate happily indulges in rituals, consultation of angels and magic. The more the initiate is caught in the net, the more he grows in wisdom. Contact with the fallen angels gradually changes the individual and render him more demeaned and wicked. From this state of mind, he becomes purely and simply possessed. The final state is to give total allegiance to Lucifer. The Biblical objection is found in 1 Corinthians 1: 25 "Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men, and the weakness of God is stronger than men". And 1 Peter 5: 8: "Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil walks about like a roaring lion, seeking whom he may devour". God warns us not to approach the devil, to distance ourselves. We are not stronger than the fallen angels.

Here is one of the last revealed wisdom: "Lucifer is good, he is ...." I am afraid to mention the word, but you can guess it, the enemy takes the place of God. The biblical objection is that the iniquity of the devil in Ezekiel 28 and Isaiah 14:12-14:14 tells us that Satan wanted to be like God. By so doing he allowed the sin of pride to influence him. He abandoned his wisdom and preferred violence and sin. He wanted to be worshipped. Those who shall fall into this trap will lose eternal life.

So through the filter of initiation, Lucifer chose psychologically interesting men for his global restoration plan "Luciferian Plan." One of the main reasons why initiates remain there: when Kabbalah works, they see real miracles occurring and believe to be the truth. But these manifestations of demonology are futile compared to the gift of eternal life offered by Christ's sacrifice on the cross. This gift offered to all those who agree and want the "salvation by Grace," which I will discuss in Chapters six and seven of this book.

Seeing the fruits of Christianity through the dominant Roman Catholic Church, i.e. inquisition, persecution and betrayal of the Jewish race, a group of Jewish rabbis distant from Judaism and followers of Kabbalah were the guide lines in the days of demonology on earth. Also, the Jewish banking families practiced Kabbalah. This gave them the golden calf of this world, money with which they have control. Their private church was kept secret until 1888, "The Golden Dawn." From the sixteenth century, they allied themselves with all those who were persecuted by the Roman Catholic Church in order to reverse her earthly power over the nations. So, "Merchant Bankers' facilitated the transition to the new world of the brothers in the Lord, persecuted and oppressed as their nation, the Jews. Here, I believe, considering all their meaning that the words of John on the Church of Philadelphia: "Indeed I will make those of the synagogue of Satan, who say they are Jews and are not, but lie--indeed I will make them come and worship before your feet, and to know that I have loved you" (Revelation 3: 9). The enemy used these Christians who had noble feelings and imbued with biblical values to establish a democracy. A democracy in which Satan and his men will direct the destinies even through a secret organization called ILLUMINATI without the knowledge of the brothers who continued their first path, evangelism for Jesus Christ.

On the other side of the Atlantic for the old Continent, the French Revolution was prepared whose fathers were Freemasons just like the American Revolution. Except that they quickly tried to gut from its spiritual substance the chapters of the Grand Lodge of England, the Grand Lodge of Ireland and the Grand Lodge of Scotland and to create new chapters distinctly occult funded by "Merchant Bankers." So from this split, by-products of Freemasonry such as the rite of Clermont and its Jacobite legend, the rite of Dion with her Templar Legend and the rite of the Baron Von Hund with its Strict Observance Templar, the Grand Orient with the rite of Heredom and Kilwinning, the regime of the Philalethes Savalette de Lange, the regime of primitive rite of Narbonne, the order of Bavarian Illuminati of Weishaupt.

The order of the Bavarian Illuminati revealed the luciferian plan on which "Merchant Bankers" got their inspiration to return to the fathers of revolutions: the American and French.

## 8) The Illuminati

The order of the Bavarian Illuminati was founded in 1771 by Adam Weishaupt funded by Rothschild House, an illustrious international banker. Adam Weishaupt in 1768 occupied the pulpit of canon law at the University of Ingolstadt. His mystical name was Spartacus. Spartacus watched with jealous care the recruitment of his affiliates. The first novices were his own students. He was dismissed from his professorship in 1785 and the discovered plot was brought to light. The highly evolved and secret movement continued to exist.

In 1773, Mayer Rothschild, about thirty years old at the time, presented a plan to twelve men among the richest and most influential in Frankfurt, Germany. The meeting took place where the "House of Rothschild." was founded. The plan was presented in 25 points directly received from

Kabbalists High priests during their ceremonies. This is writing which dates back to 1771<sup>177</sup>.

### **Luciferian Plan**

When the term Agentur or Advisers is used, they refer to spying-agents, consultants, social reformers working for the Illuminati. While the term Goyim means any person not included in their group. This refers to the population as a whole.

#### **1) Governing by force**

*Because the majority of mankind is inclined to evil rather than good, the best results in governing them can be obtained by using violence and terrorism, not by academic discussions. In the beginning, human society has been subject to brutal and blind forces, which were subsequently changed into Laws. Laws are only disguised Force. It is therefore logical to conclude that "By the laws of Nature Law by right lies in Force"*

If law is controlled, what is left for the man of integrity in society to defend himself? The law is made for those who can afford to pay.

#### **2) Political Freedom**

*"Political freedom" is an idea, not a fact. All that is necessary to usurp political power is to preach "liberalism". In this way, the electorate, in order to save an idea, will give up some of their powers and prerogatives that conspirators would gather in their hands.*

#### **2) The power of gold**

*The Power of Gold had usurped the power of the Sovereign Liberals since 1773 ... There was a*

---

<sup>177</sup> Original text of Spotlight on the hour. Website [http // : www.pleinsfeux.com/article.php?sid=65](http://www.pleinsfeux.com/article.php?sid=65)

*time when FAITH ruled, but when Liberty was substituted for the Faith, the people did not know how to moderately use it. Because of this, it was logical to assume that they could use the idea of freedom to arrive at the "classical war". It does not matter that the established Government be destroyed by internal or external enemies, simply because the winner will be obliged to resort to using the "Capital" which is entirely in our hands.*

### 3) **Political comedy**

*Those who wish to govern must resort to trickery and deceit because great national qualities, like frankness and honesty, are vices in politics.*

### 5) **Force is our Law**

*Our "law" lies in "Force" is an abstract thought and does not prove anything. I found a new Law" ... ATTACKING BY THE "Law" of the strongest, and scatter to the winds, all the legal forces, all established forces of Order to rebuild all existing institutions, and become the sovereign Lord of all who have abandoned the "Right to their powers," "Rights" they had voluntarily abandoned because of their faith in "Liberalism."*

### 6) **The invisible power**

*The power of our resources must remain invisible until when no trick , nor any force will be able to rob or destroy it for us.*

### 7) **The use of despotism**

*Only a despotic governor will govern the populace effectively because, without absolute despotism, there will be no existence for a civilization which was not led by the masses, but by their guides ... The day the masses lay hold on/ seize freedom in their hands, it quickly turns to anarchy.*

8) **The use of corruption**

*The use of moral corruption and all forms of vices must be systematically encouraged by our Agentur to corrupt the youth of Nations. Special Agenturs must be trained as tutors, lackeys, governesses, clerks, and our women in places of destruction visited by the Goyim (meaning people outside of the Illuminati). Nowadays, it could be called: drugs, institution of divorce, abortion, sexual deviations, and restriction of contraceptives by some religions.*

9) **Abolition of ownership**

*We have the right to seize property by any means, and without hesitation if by so doing, it assures us submission and sovereignty.*

10) **The use of slogans**

*In ancient times we were the first to put the words "Liberty, Equality, Fraternity" in the mouth of the masses ... words repeated until now by silly parrots; words which the so-called wise-man belonging to the Goyim could not understand the meaning because of their level of abstraction, in the same way that they could not note it either, contradict, nor to understand and grasp their interrelation. There is no place in nature for Equality, Liberty and Fraternity. On the ruins of the natural family aristocracy of the Goyims, we have built the aristocracy of money. The qualification to describe this aristocracy is Wealth and Abundance which depend on us.*

11) **Theory of War**

*This should be the policy of those who foment wars, but direct "Peace conferences" To know that no fighter can get territorial gains s ... war should be conducted so that the Nations engaged in warfare should sink deeper in their debts, as well as in the power of our Agentur.*

12) **The Enslavement of Administration**

*We must use our wealth to select candidates in public affairs who would be subservient and obedient to our commands so that they could be quickly and promptly used as "puppets" in our parties and by ingenious men knowing that we will design to operate behind the scenes as government Official Advisers.*

*Men that we designate as Advisers would have been trained since childhood in order to be consistent with our ideas to govern world affairs.*

13) **Control of Public Information**

*Our combined wealth would control all the outlets of public information for we could stay in the shadows, and not blamed, despite the impact due to Publications of lies, slander or defamation. Every victim in our ranks must be paid by the side of a thousand goyims.*

14) **The lie of the Agenturs**

*By executing criminals and lunatics after they have completed the preparation of our "Reign of Terror," then we can present ourselves as "saviours" of the oppressed, and champion of workers. We are however interested only in what is the opposite, in the reduction of their number, in the massacre of the Goyims.*

15) **Creation of economic crises**

*The creation of unemployment and hunger, imposed on the masses by the power that we have to create food shortages: it will create the "Right of Capital" to rule with more assurance especially as it was not the case during the real aristocracy or the legal authority of kings ...By having our*

*Agentur to control the masses, these same masses could then be used to get rid of all those who dare to obstruct our passage.*

16) **Infiltration of Continental Freemasonry**

*Our goal would be to take advantage of the facilities and the secret that Freemasonry has to offer. In this way, it would be possible to organize, even within the Blue Freemasonry, our own Lodges of the Grand Orient, with the settled intention to continue our subversive activities, but while hiding the true nature of our work under the guise of philanthropy as charities and social gatherings, for example.*

17) **The use of promises**

*Our Agentur should make the most lavish promises to the masses by using current expressions: "Slogans such as" Independence and Freedom ". Goyims could be excited about this launch of patriotic fervor, we could even push them to fight against the Laws of God and Nature. For this reason, after obtaining control, we can delete even the name of God from their "Glossary of Life".*

18) **Plan for urban warfare / revolutionary war**

*The art of street fighting is a model for the Reign of Terror, all of which must accompany every revolutionary effort because it is the most economical way to bring populations to a quick submission.*

19) **Using diplomacy**

*Our Agentur, disguised as political, financial and economic advisers, could enforce our mandates without fear of exposing those who make up "The Secret Force" those behind the national and international affairs ... Through secret diplomacy, we must be able to*



*achieve such control that nations cannot even come to a secret agreement without our agents there being already involved in one way or another.*

20) **Political Bankruptcy and World Government**

*To achieve this goal, it will be necessary to establish huge monopolies, reservoirs of such huge fortunes that even the richest of the goyim, being forced to rely on us to grow, will collapse all at once with the loan of their Government NEXT DAY GREAT INSOLVENCY, THE POLITICAL BANKRUPTCY OF THE CENTURY. Mutual and institutional funds are those huge tanks that will have to collapse to bring about general poverty.*

21) **The use of economic wars**

*How to seize private properties and industries belonging to the Goyim? By combination of high taxes and unfair competition, unjust, we can cause the economic ruin of the goyim in terms of their national financial interests as well as their investments. At the international level, by raising prices disproportionately, the goyim will eliminate themselves in different markets. This elimination could be supplemented by careful and precise control of raw materials by agitation organized among workers.*

22) **Increasing the quantity of weaponry**

*The increase in arms to push the goyim to fight and destroy themselves should be pushed to a colossal stage... In the final phase, only proletarian masses would be left in the world, and with them, a few millionaires devoted to our cause. But enough police and soldiers alive: to protect our own interests.*

23) **Composition of the "New World Order"**

*To globalize, the members of the one world government would be appointed by the "Dictator".*

*He would take his men among scientists, economists, financiers, industry and others having supported his plan. In other words, here, a "World Fascist Dictatorship"*

24) **The corruption of youth**

*Our Agentur should get into all classes at all levels of the Society and the Government, in order to deceive, to corrupt the younger members of the Society by teaching them theories and principles we know to be false.*

25) **National and international laws**

*The national and international laws should not be changed, but used as such in order to destroy the civilization of the Goyims, and this simply by reversing their meaning in order to plunge them into contradictions of interpretation. At first the work of falsification would allow us to hide the "original meaning of the Law," then, in a second time, hide the original meaning of All Laws. Our ultimate goal is obviously to replace the law by Arbitration.*

The plan established by the "House of Rothschild" coming directly from the father of lies is to destabilize the peoples and nations, to eliminate the faith and Christianity. But, especially to give men illusions so that they should spend time in futilities and miss the way to eternal salvation. Currently, thanks to laws and policies under their control, they intend to legalize soft drugs among young adults. However, research has proven that soft drugs are a gateway to stronger drugs. The parent will have the child caught in a trap without being able to do anything about it, and he will even have the backing of the law and with legality. Public opinion is already divided, but socially consistent. Subtly, the enemy is conditioning a generation that will serve him.

The plan being revealed, "The Kabbalist House" needed an organization to establish a structure capable, through the centuries to rule the world, initially in an invisible manner and secondly,

with Antichrist. Already influenced by the Luciferian ideology, Adam Rothschild Weishaupt founded the Order of the Bavarian Illuminati. He was a Kabbalist by birth and initiated at the highest level. He set about writing a book "Morals and Dogma" where the Illuminati leaders need to worship Lucifer as a prerequisite. They do not recognize the authority of any mortal, except that of Satan. They don't grant loyalty to any nation. They are in perfect agreement for the "Continuation of the Luciferian Conspiracy" to prevent the implementation of" God's plan "established since the fall of Adam and Eve. In fact, the enemy is challenging God and the outcome is revealed in the Revelation. On the contrary, this does not change the fate of Satan and his fallen angels, and all the men he would have misled with false religions, false promises, false illusions and this includes all worldly illusions such as: money, pride, beauty, youth, strength, prestige, false theories learned in school and others. Weishaupt is also the author of the ritual of the Illuminati. It is the name given to special ceremonies written by Professor of Frankfurt, Germany; ceremonies composed under the instigation of men who in 1773 were High Priests of Satanism.

The word Illuminati is derived from the word Lucifer which means "Light Bearer". The order of Illuminati was founded and organized in order to implement the orders received from Lucifer by the High Priests during the performance of their Kabbalist ceremonies. The supposed degrees of wisdom were described briefly in the early part of this chapter and explain how a co-opted member is ultimately possessed. Then, what is in the "Luciferian Plan" received by the "House of Rothschild?" The Illuminati during kabalistic ceremonies received the method of functioning roughly copied from Comenius with his "social archetype" pattern. In short, it is a pyramid with the eye of Satan, the Church of the Rothschilds, the thirteen Great Druids, thirty-three degrees and five hundred men or the richest societies on earth. This organization received from Lucifer, would give them control of the earth. Control they shall have only when God will remove His Church and His Holy Spirit on earth. The challenge is to prevent the Millennium Stage. The reader knows, thanks to Chapter Two of this book that during this stage, Christ will reign with his elect and men who went through the Great Tribulation and their descendants. Christ will reign as king in Israel. Satan will attempt to fight God by destroying the Jewish people and Christians of the earth. This is to prevent the final stage of the current earth to occur when Christ will reign as king over his people and the whole world.

Having established the Plan and the organization, they founded the "New Order" on May 1, 1776 and printed on American currency. During his lifetime, Adam Weishaupt founded schools to train Advisers and Agenturs. Here are the names of the schools he founded: Northern School with Swedenborg, the School of Avignon with Dom Pernetty, School of Bordeaux with Martinez de Pasqualy, School of Lyon with Willermoz and Cagliostro, School of Zurich with Lavater, the London School with the Free Masons and Rosicrucians, the School of Bavaria with Adam Weishaupt, School of Vienna with the Rose-Croix d'Or, the School of the Theosophist d'Amboise with Louis Claude of St. Martin, School of Russia with Tshoudy, The Prince Nicolas Galatzine and Novikoff. Nowadays, many other schools have been founded, mostly behind the Iron Curtain where they are safe. The illuminated operate in the social, political, military and religious platforms. All high ranking members are aware and know who they are serving. However, many low-level members of the Illuminati in our governments, although very sympathetic with the world government, have no idea about whom they serve.

The Agentur are exceptionally intelligent people chosen by the Illuminati from an early age, they educate and indoctrinate them in the ideology of secular materialism. They are specially trained and enabled to act as experts and specialists behind the scenes of all governments. That is at various levels such as: political, economic, financial, industrial, military, social and religious. By exercising tangible control over its spying-agents, the Illuminati forces governments and the financial world to make their own financial plans for the establishment of a world government to which they are organized, and even willing to usurp powers. In fact, there are very few from Agentur who know they are working for Satan. Most of them think that they are working for social, religious sectors and in higher political levels.

All other individuals outside of the Illuminati are called Goyims and are considered and even described by the term "human cattle". It is the human cattle that are forced to go to war under Freemasons Generals. They, who must be seduced and lured to sleep. The objective is simple, to kill as many as possible, to lose as many souls as possible and all means are good. To reach this end, the means are: war, terrorism, nuclear attack, World Trade Center, AIDS, the concealment of the truth, the destruction of the population in Asia, Africa and Soon America (bird flu), the

hunger industry and others. For them, there are too many Goyims so the slogan is to destroy as many as possible.

## 9) Kabbalah or witchcraft

Kabbalah is much more refined than witchcraft. In this sense, Kabbalah, with its rituals could be considered the peak in elevation to contact the Evil One. Well of course, reserved for a religious elite controlling the "golden calf" of this world, money. On the contrary, witchcraft is limited to certain specific knowledge as the main rituals which consist of casting spells. Certainly, the teaching available in esoteric bookstores for the masses is filtered. For more knowledge, the initiate must enter a sealed and secret world. Simple spirit guides, he will learn that they are fallen angels. Gradually, as the initiate progresses, he will eventually learn a degree of what simple wisdom like black and white magic do not exist. But the father of this mystic is Lucifer.

Of course, the reader would have guessed, this is a subtle net in which they try to catch some big fish for the Luciferian Masonry. The spells cast can be very powerful at times in unregenerate men who make up the Goyims. However, during the period of grace for the saved Christian no spell or ritual of any kind has power over him. The reason is that Christians of this time have in them the Holy Spirit. I would go further, if a Christian decides to trample over the power of darkness; it would be a total victory for him, using his authority as a believer in Jesus Christ.

## 10) Summary

The Illuminati control the head of the organization through a mysterious religion called Jewish KABBALLAH. This religion focused on divinatory arts and Luciferian science is beginning to widen its scope. Recently, Mick Jagger of the Rolling Stone and the singer Madonna became popular ambassadors. I think the Illuminati are preparing to introduce the Goyims to this religion so that it should be in perfect harmony with the false prophet.

Already, since 1945, the UNO has been an altar for the worship of Kabbalah open to universal intelligence. Besides, I have to spend the next part of this chapter on this organization and its structure. She is preparing to be the future world government with some very totalitarian correctives.

## PART 4 - The United Nations Organization

Initially, it was shown in Chapter Four of this book that as the twenty eighth president of the United States, the freemason (F \*) Thomas Woodrow Wilson gave up power to satisfy his alter ego. So they dispersed the votes of the Goyims in favour of the Republican Party, opposing William Howard Taft who was sure to be re-elected to F \* Theodore Roosevelt. The F \* Theodore Roosevelt, who had ceded his place to Taft went in on the ticket of the Progressive Party created by J. P. Morgan. Bankers who gave their financial backing to the functioning of the Progressive Party were Rockefeller, Schiff, Baruch, Morgan, Morgenthau and Rothschild. On March 4, 1913, the F \* Thomas Woodrow Wilson of the Democratic Party, became the twenty-eighth President of the United States.

Through a political blackmail "Peck's Bad Boy," Wilson agreed to all the demands of International bankers, led by Rothschild, either the obligation to intervene in the Great War (1914-1918), the creation of a Central Bank and the founding of the League of Nations. From the beginning of his candidacy until the end of his mandates, Wilson was under the supervision of F \* Colonel Edward Mandell House, affiliated to the secret society of Illuminist ***Master of Windom*** (Master of Wisdom), the same one that founded the ***Council on Foreign Relations***.

The League of Nations (LON) is a typical Masonic and illuminist work. At the dawn of the First World War, the League of Nations was established by a fundamental charter, the Covenant of the League of Nations, unanimously adopted at the of Preliminary Peace conference of April 28, 1919, and incorporated into the text of the Treaty of Versailles on June 28 1919. Wilson created the "League of Nations." While Clemenceau was persuaded by Colonel House, on January 10,

1920 the League of Nations was officially born with F \* Leon Bourgeois as its first president. Five companies formed in Geneva, a partnership named "Palace of Nations Company," this was after a generous donation, allegedly to the Library of JD Rockefeller Jr. The Palace was built on the shore of Lake Geneva Pregny.

On April 18, 1946, the League of Nations was officially dissolved; its property and archives were transferred to the United Nations Organization. The head office of the United Nations Organization (UNO) is in New York. The extensive ground in the heart of Manhattan along the Hudson River, where the United Nations building stands was donated by Nelson Rockefeller. Pierre Virion, author of *"One World Government Soon? A Great one and Against the Church"* assures us on page 213-214: "In New York City the "Friends of the Chamber of Meditation" regularly held a long meeting in the Meditation Chamber of the UNO. At the centre of this Temple, one beam light plays on polished gold. On April 24, 1957, when the Chamber of Meditation was reopened, Dag Hammarskjold, Secretary General of the United Nations described the pagan stone as an altar of the Universal Religion. The Temple of Intelligence also had its Chamber of Meditation which was called the "Hall of Illumination." Here the Illuminati, Master of Wisdom, our guides of the intelligence Temple, plan to draw the public to the new humanistic cult. Meetings, film screenings, lectures ... took place ...." All this is confirmed again by the author on page 228, while in page 63 of the book he states: "... the Universal Association for a world government and a congress was held in Versailles. They were counting on the presence of Mrs. Roosevelt, widow of the President Mason and Theosophist sister (FIGARO, 27 June 1958). "Funny how there is interconnections, Eleanor, widow of President Franklin D. Roosevelt, who facilitated the continuity of the League of Nations to the UNO is a Theosophist ILLUMINIST. It is surprising to see that our news media hide all these things that the public is entitled to know from us.

The UNO considers itself as a non-religious organization, yet an altar to the Universal Intelligence, based on Kabbalah of the Illuminati is in her bosom. The "Clinton" contacted late Eleanor Roosevelt during sessions of spiritualism. Who funds the United Nations? Are they Goyims or human cattle? These are the taxes of ordinary people that our governments spend as they see fit. For example, in 2000, the contribution made according the magnitude of each

country is as follows: U.S. 25%, Japan 20.6%, Germany 9.9%, France 6.5%, Italy 5.4%, UK 5.1% Canada 2.8% Spain 2.6% Netherlands 1.6%, Australia 1.5% Brazil 1.5%, etc.. Who funds the World Bank (WB) and the International Monetary Fund (IMF)? The goyim through your savings in different banks around the world; in Chapter Four of this book, you remember how banks determine the global reserves, and how they send the surplus of the central bank of each country to the Bank for International Settlements (BIS). How BIS controls commodities and currencies. In this way, they make billions with your little savings to fund the "New World Order."

Many mistakenly believe that the UNO is a platform of discussion for our heads of states. This is far from the truth; the UNO is a true world government under the control of the ILLUMINATI. They are fully prepared to take control of the planet, when the Antichrist will appear. In the meantime, these officials, in thousands and for the most Advisors, Agentur, and Freemasons must follow the orders of their Illuminati leaders to the letter. They will never solve the problems of hunger and water in the world. Imagine that they have been working on it since 1920. If you've read the book "The industry of Hunger", you will understand that the "money men" need to have a stranglehold on the industry to control the masses and eliminate as many Goyims as possible in the world. These international civil servants secured, highly paid, with the best advantages, good pension fund, long vacation and exempted from taxes live in enviable comfort. This is the reward for their silent complicity.

In this year 1997, the United Nations Organization (UNO) is composed of 39 known organs working in 16 different countries. First of all, do they have a factory of technocrats? The answer is yes. The United Nations University (UNU) and whose center is the central structure in Tokyo Japan. From this central program, you can study almost anywhere in the world as:

- 1) U.S. Bureau of the United Nations University in New York (UNUONA), 2 Units Nations Plaza, Room DC "-1462, New York, NY 10017 USA.
- 2) France, Office of the United Nations University at UNESCO (UNUOE), c / o UNESCO Room M1.32, 1 rue Miollis, 75732 Paris Cedex 15 France



- 3) Finland, UNU World Institute for Research on the Economics of Development  
Katajanokanlaituri 6B, 00160 Helsinki, Finland.
- 4) Netherlands, the UNU Institute for New Technologies, Keizer Karelplein 19,  
6211 TC Maastricht, the Netherlands.
- 5) Macau, the International Institute of UNU for Software Technology, Casa Silva Mendes,  
Estrada do Engenheiro Trigo No. 4, Macau, PO Box 3058, Macau.
- 6) Ghana, the UNU Institute for Natural Resources in Africa, ISSER Building Complex, Nasia  
Road, University of Ghana, Legon, Ghana.
- 7) Japan, the UNU Institute of Graduate Studies, 53-67 Jingumae, Shibuya-ku, Tokyo 150-8304,  
Japan.
- 8) Venezuela, UNU Programme for Biotechnology in Latin America and the Caribbean, Instituto  
de Estudios Avanzados (IDEA), Edificio Bolivar, Planta Baja Estado Miranda, Venezuela.
- 9) Jordan, the International Academy of Leadership, University of Jordan Amman, Jordan.
- 10) Canada, the UNU International Network on Water, Environment and Health McMaster  
University John Hodgins Engineering Bldg. 1280 Main Street West, Hamilton, Ontario, Canada.
- 11) United States, Programme of the UNU Food and Nutrition, Office of the Vice- Provost,  
Division of Nutritional Sciences, Cornell University, 433 Day Hall, Ithaca, New York 14853,  
USA.
- 12) Iceland Geothermal Training Programme, Orkustofnun, Grensasvegur 9, 108 Reykjavik,  
Iceland.
- 13) Iceland, Training Program in Fisheries, Hafrannsóknastofnunin, Marine Research Institute,  
Skulagata 4, PO Box 1390 121 Reykjavik, Iceland.
- 14) United States, Initiative on Conflict Resolution and ethnic issues, Aberfoyle House,  
Northland Road, London Derry, BT48 7JA, UK.
- 15) India, Centre for Research in Food Technology (CFTRI), Mysore - 570 013, India.
- 16) Iceland National Energy Authority, UNU Geothermal Training Programme, Grensasvegur 9,  
IS-108 Reykjavik, Iceland.
- 17) Japan National Institute of Food Research (NFRI), Kannondai, Tsukuba,  
Ibaraki 305, Japan.

This is a well established institution that is not within reach of any budget. Only the sons and daughters of initiates adhering to the globalization plan are sure to have a job and a high level career in the United Nations. The sprawling over hierarchical is downright Illuminist. Within the hermetic religion, they are united against all Goyims whom they divide with different ideas and control their economies and money. Also, we will look more closely at each organization.

## 1) The organs of the United Nations (UNO)

Country: United States of America

City: New York

### **Headquarters of the United Nations Organization (UNO)**

The head office of the UN is located in New York on the 1st Avenue between 42th and 48th street. It is also where the House of Commons mentioned in M. Virion book is found.

### **United Nations Development Programme (UNDP)**

The UNDP is the UN's global development network available to the United Nations system. It advocates for change and connecting countries to knowledge, experience and resources to help people build a better life.

### **United Nations Population Fund (UNFPA)**

UNFPA provides assistance to developing countries, countries in transition and other countries that request for assistance. This to handle issues related to reproductive health of the population and to enhance awareness in all countries.

### **United Nations International Children Emergency Fund (UNICEF)**

UNICEF is mandated by the General Assembly of the United Nations to defend the rights of

children, to help meet their basic needs and support their full development. I believe that there are many children who are forced to work because the "central bankers" want more profits by reducing costs such as family income.

**City: Washington**

**International Monetary Fund (IMF)**

According to its statutes, the IMF aims to promote the harmonious expansion of global trade and stability of exchange rates, to discourage the use of competitive impairment and to facilitate the orderly resolution of problems of balance of payments. They provide advice in the economic field to the 189 Member States. In short, they control exchange rates; from which the International Bankers make profits. They are also the collectors of problem countries.

**World Bank (WB)**

The money earned on products derived from all the savings of goyim and their Central banks are invested in loans and insurance coverage of the World Bank to the Third World for global development. Although judicious, the fact remains however, that the hidden intention is the sword of Damocles over the heads of the Third World in the sense of a world government. The WB is often the only source of funding in the hands of unscrupulous leaders and F \*. In this group of loans you have Sub divisions of creditors as International Development Association (IDA), Multilateral Investment Guarantee Agency (MIGA), International Bank for Reconstruction and Development (IBRD) and International Finance Corporation (IFC).

**Country: Canada**

**City: Montreal**

**The International Civil Aviation Organization (ICAO)**

ICAO sets the standards for goods dangerous for Commercial aviation and Business and provides technical advice for the development of Transportation regulations of dangerous goods. It

develops technical instructions for the safety of air transport of dangerous goods; and updates standards, policies, guidelines and public awareness programs.

**Country: Chile**

**City: Santiago**

**Economic Commission for Latin America and the Caribbean (ECLAC)**

ECLAC was founded to contribute to economic development in the region of Latin America and the Caribbean. There are five regional centers.

**Country: Dominican Republic**

**City: Santo Domingo**

**International Institute for Research and Training for the Advancement of Women (INSTRAW)**

INSTRAW was established to undertake research on policy and to set up training programs internationally in order to contribute to the emancipation of women, increase their active and equal participation in development, increase their sensitivity on issues of gender equality, to create global networks promote the achievement of gender equality. I hope the law will not only crush one sex to the detriment of the other as in the West. And that equality here should mean: your income and mine for the family. The Western woman has a notion of equality as follows: my income for me and your income for the family. The divorce law introduced significantly benefits the women. Our fake Political thinkers working for the Illuminati have made the institution of marriage a blank check from man to the woman. At the same time, they have created a gender war between man and woman. This is with the aim of dividing in order to rule.

**Country: Switzerland**

**City: Bern**

### **Universal Postal Union**

They succeeded to produce a stamp since 1964. Go on, you impress me.

### **City: Geneva**

### **United Nations Economic Commission for Europe (ECE)**

Founded in 1947, its objective was to encourage economic cooperation between Member States, to focus on the economy, the environment, human intelligence, desirable energy, to develop industries, timber and transportation. It develops conventions, rules and standards, and provides technical assistance. In short, it was intended to facilitate the European Union and ensure its success.

### **United Nations Conference on Trade and Development**

Established in 1964, with the aim of helping developing countries to make the most of opportunities for trade, investment and development available to them, and integrate fairly in the global economy. Mr. Bilderberg Group, are you not afraid that the poor Goyims can compete with you?

### **High Commission for Human Rights (HCHR)**

The goal was to promote the protection of fundamental human rights and freedoms. In a totalitarian World Government that you want to put in place, what rights shall men have?

### **United Nations High Commission for Refugees (UNHCR)**

The goal is to find an answer to this question. What is a refugee and how can he be helped? I believe the answer to this question shall only come after the establishment of the World Government unless it can be defined as someone who has no right to appeal to human rights. This seems to be your answer ever since you have been pondering over it...

### **International Labour Organization (ILO)**

Her reporting program is intended to undertake sensitization campaigns, technical cooperation, research and reports to promote fundamental labour rights in different parts of the world. It is hard to believe that in a totalitarian world Government, the Antichrist will care for the rights of men at work. When one sees how the "money men" have reacted towards this law for two centuries, one must have some reasonable doubt.

### **World Meteorological Organization (WMO)**

Founded in 1947, WMO checks weather forecast, does research on air pollution, studies climate change, examines ozone depletion and attempts to predict tropical storms. WMO coordinates the international scientific activities in order to always provide public, private and personal information quality within shorter deadlines.

### **World Intellectual Property Organization (WIPO)**

To promote the use and protection of intellectual works, both at intellectual level and at the level of arts and copyright. It is well known that if the money men had not resorted to patents, the world today would be far more advanced. The continuous movement would be for everyone. Instead of polluting the atmosphere with fossil fuel, we would use renewable electricity or solar, we would be autonomous to generate our own electricity via a circular energy builder allowing an exit for the escape of little load to continuously rebuild the required load, as Nicolas Tesla did with M. Rockefeller. In telecommunications, we would be autonomous. Unfortunately, the great fundraisers bought these inventions at great expense, and did not make them available to the general public. They want us to live on outdated networks so

that Goyims should continue to owe them money on monthly basis. It goes without saying that the invisible world government control technology and the thoughts of authors.

### **World Health Organization (WHO)**

Founded April 7, 1948, its objective is the attainment by all peoples of the highest possible standard of health. Health is defined as a state of complete physical, mental and social well-being; it is not merely the absence of disease or infirmity. All totalitarian governments have never cared for the health of their citizens. They consider at most, according to Karl Marx, as a productive and renewable workforce. When the workforce is no more productive they get rid of it. When the IMF enters or follows up a government, it immediately orders the reduction of health spending. I am convinced, as I write these lines; that a big step has been crossed in the medical and pharmaceutical industries. But these cures and medical advances are not accessible to goyims. Only small elite can benefit from this technology. I would go further; perhaps diseases are manufactured to cause the death of Goyims. AIDS and bird flu could be of such diseases.

### **International Telecommunication Union (ITU)**

It is the international organization of the United Nations system in which states and the private sector coordinate global telecommunication network services. The ITU is the main source of standardization and regulation of telecommunication technology. When we look at the history of all the great conquerors such as Alexander the Great, Caesar, Nebuchadnezzar, Cyrus, Attila, Napoleon and Hitler, we realize that they all lost their kingdom because of one main issue, a very slow system of telecommunication. With the telecommunication facilities that the Antichrist will have, he shall be informed of any uprising in his government within seconds. It is very logical that this weapon is being put in place.

**Country: England**

**City: London**

**International Maritime Organization of the United Nations (IMO)**

This specialized agency is responsible for improving the conditions of maritime safety, find ways of propulsion and cleaner operation. It is also to clean up the oceans. The Antichrist will give a damn to the sanitary condition of the planet. He will destroy and defile all that is beautiful. If he could shorten the days of the earth, he would, but he would reduce the days left for him before the final judgment. The error that people of the 20th century did, was to abandon agriculture from which they earned their livelihood and to come to the cities to earn good wages from the onset, but ridiculously, nowadays, they enrich money men who have shaped the world through the law which they control so as to make it impossible to return to farming given the new agrarian definition that they have styled. To survive, the new farmer must have a lot of land, get into government scales, in debt himself heavily and have a very low cost. We are far from being self-sufficient as desired by God, where the lands are not sold in perpetuity and men experience self-sufficiency in all things. We thought that Self-sufficiency as introduced by Nikola Tesla could make us live on energy, a house and a greenhouse, a car, an autonomous telecommunication system, not linked to any network, all free and clean. The ILLUMINATI rather prefer that the goyims keep on buying their products, on their knees and unemployed or suffering from starvation. In this way, they control the goyim masses.

**Country: France**

**City: Paris**



## **United Nations Educational, Scientific and Cultural Organization (UNESCO)**

Founded November 4, 1946, the main objective of UNESCO is to contribute to the maintenance of peace and security in the world by consolidating under its banner development programs in education, science, culture and communication, greatly favoured by nations. It is a guideline to ensure universal compliance to justice, law, human rights and fundamental freedoms for all, regardless of race, sex, language or religion which the United Nations Charter recognizes for all peoples. On the whole, this organization determines school learning programs of nations and organizes itself to censor or to introduce falsehood with the knowledge of the ILLUMINATI, but the goyims must swallow. An example is the theory of evolution and other theories that put man in conflict with God and His word. It ensures that the goyims do not receive divine knowledge through the Bible. Also, it is the perfect way to condition the masses to their plan of globalization and introduce their subversive teachings. Finally, on the scientific platform, academic methods taught are homogeneous, not allowing the deepening of technological discoveries or improvement of existing processes. (Ex: Electricity is produced and is obtained this way and not otherwise).

### **Country: Netherlands**

### **City: The Hague**

## **International Court of Justice (ICJ)**

The International Court of Justice is the main judicial organ of the United Nations Organization (UNO). Its headquarters is at the Peace Palace in The Hague. It is the continuity of the Permanent court of the League of Nations founded in 1922. The Court has dual objectives which constitute its mission: settle in accordance with international law the legal disputes submitted to it by States and to give advisory opinions on legal issues that may be requested by the bodies or institutions authorized to do so. In Europe, the head of one of the most powerful banking dynasties in the world, whose family name feature on the list of the Illuminati, said long ago:

"If we can issue and control currency of a nation, we do not care who writes its laws."

(Mayer Amshel Rothschild 1743-1812)

Within its ranks, the UNO also has some interesting laws and declarations. The World can bring somebody to justice in any court anywhere in the world through laws interpreted by the World Federation. Article 4 of the U N charter on genocide defines it as follows:

"Causing mental harm to members of a group."

It could be considered a punishable crime ... How easy would it be for a supposedly atheist body, but believing in Universal Intelligence and giving him an altar at the headquarters, to interpret the Christian message as causing harm to men in their mental judgments! The creation of a world federal government with authority to act, interpret and enforce global law ... membership would be accessible to all nations, without any right to withdraw ... Global law could be applied directly to individuals. "A judicial system established, modeled on the world court, and imposed by a global police force under the command of a global executive. This requires us to consider the figure of the beast and his image. The president of the UNO said:

"There's always a slight trace of God which seems to be covered over the world as the mouse of a cat. Science and knowledge will soon come to erase it. "

In 1972, the UNO published a text to educate people on the world system. This volume, written in the interest of world government by the encyclopedia, presented the writings of the Russian Ivan Karanlozov. His article was entitled "The Grand Inquisitor." In this paper, a personality, representing the Grand Inquisitor, denies Christ the right to return to earth. He blamed Christ for his folly of having retorted the three wise questions of Satan. In his conversation with Christ, the Grand Inquisitor refers to Satan as follows:

"We took from him that which you have rejected ... all kingdoms of the earth and we have proclaimed ourselves unique governments of this earth. We will triumph ... we will bring a universal plan of happiness to man. We will not work with you but with him. " (Ivan Karanlozov)

The significance of this volume lies in the fact that it was published by men, regarded as intellectual leaders of this world, giving so much importance and referring to a discussion about the position and the power of Satan in relation to the final world government. Jesus rejected Satan's offer because he would have headed a dirty world and would be subject to Satan. We would have lost forever the only chance to become Saints. Glory to Christ for the sacrifice he made on the cross. He who seeks holiness in his life will follow Him, I have followed Him and I am very happy. When men publicly declare such falsehoods, we are entitled to believe that they have deliberately and voluntarily chosen Satan to hold and direct the next system which is the world government of the Antichrist. Do not be fooled, Christ triumphed on the cross and the fate of humanity is known and the triumph and eternal glory goes to Christ.

**Country: Austria**

**City: Vienna**

**International Agency for Atomic Energy**

It is an independent and inter-governmental agency, which aims to interconnect all technologies among nations based on atomic energy and nuclear power. In a social and economic context, it developed a technology promised to be for peaceful purposes and facilitates transfer of knowledge and technology between Member States. It applies to secure the development of atomic and nuclear energy in their implementation; in order to ensure environmental protection and human health. In particular, inspections and treaties on non-proliferation of nuclear weapons enable it to follow up its objectives. Knowing human nature, the reader can imagine the military power that this information focus gives the ILLUMINATI from the military pyramid perspective.

This is secret. In Revelation Chapter 17, one seems to understand; that there will be revolt in the world government of the Antichrist, and that the latter could use nuclear weapons to contain the rebellion.

### **United Nations Office for Drug Control and Crime Prevention (UNODC)**

Founded in 1997, it spearheads the fight for crime prevention and drugs. Among other things, it wants to standardize international laws and keep track of the major drugs. Already a section was created in 1946 with the mission to analyze drug abuse in the world. When I see countries that want to legalize soft drugs, I wonder if this is not to have more customers within the youth for illegal drugs that they shall purchase at great cost on the black market. In any case, the sale of drugs is profitable, and the gentlemen who are in charge do not consume it and are well behaved.

### **United Nations Industrial Development Organization (UNIDO)**

It works with various governments of Member States to develop countries in the process of economic transition in their efforts to modernize and develop the industrial sector.

### **Country: Italy**

### **City: Rome**

### **United Nations Food and Agriculture Organization (FAO)**

Founded in October 1945, its purpose is to improve nutritional status, living standards, the agricultural productivity and the fate of the rural population in general. I think the Christian body "World Vision" has changed the situation more quickly.

### **International Fund for Agricultural Development (IFAD)**

Its mission is to enable poor rural regions to overcome their poverty through an agricultural development fund.

**World Food Programme (WFP)**

This is a program that can help improve food security by providing the food needed for a healthy and active life. Of course this program applies to specific and targeted cases.

**Country: Lebanon**

**City: Beirut**

**United Nations Economic and Social Commission for Western Asia (UNESCWA)**

The commission aims to promote Western Asia economically and socially through studies, research, conferences and others in order to create employment activities and develop the region.

**Country: Israel**

**Region: Gaza / Amnani**

It was founded in 1948 to monitor the Arab-Israeli conflict and to assist the refugee populations. The objective of facilitating the integration of the State of Israel was achieved.

**Country: Thailand**

**City: Bangkok**

### **Economic and Social Commission for Asia and the Pacific (UNESCAP)**

Its role is to economically and socially promote Asia and the Pacific through studies, research, conferences and others in order to create business, employment and develop this area. In this sense, an inter-governmental solicitation commitment was established.

**Country: Ethiopia**

**City: Addis Ababa**

### **Economic Commission for Africa**

Founded in 1958, the commission is responsible for supporting the economic and social development of its 53 Member States to encourage regional economic integration and promote international cooperation for development in Africa. The Commission employs 850 people. We saw their beautiful effort with the genocide in Rwanda. The UN did not want to intervene because it was a country with few resources, 900,000 human beings died in very horrific conditions in less than four months.

**Country: Kenya**

**City: Nairobi**

### **The United Nations Centre for Human Settlements (UNCHS)**

It brings together the actions of government agencies, private and professional related to habitat and human settlements. The goal is a suitable habitat for all.

### **United Nations Environment Programme (UNEP)**

Its mission is to provide "leadership" and encourage partnership in caring for the environment in order to generate inspiration to inform and enable nations and people to improve their quality of life without compromising future generations.

## 2) Summary

The United Nations Organization (UNO) is not an atheistic institution. It worships Universal intelligence through the Kabbalah religion. It is a real invisible government waiting for its leader, the Antichrist. It controls school curriculum, intellectual property right, armament of nations and laws governing agriculture on the planet. It was structured in such a way that, when time comes, having control over international laws, it will ensure their implementation. Different global programs specific to continents, in disadvantaged areas, they will have the support of the people since they are able to understand the inherent problems. These programs, although laudable and philanthropic remain slow in their progress as if their benefits were really not desired. Many of these technocrats are really "wolves in sheep's skin." This obliges us to search on the side of the pyramid the darkest secret of the Illuminati, the military part.

## PART 5 - God or UFOs and flying saucers

The most difficult illusion to hide for the Antichrist will be the explanation of the rapture of the church when millions of born-again Christians shall resurrect and those alive will be caught up at the sound of the trumpet (1 Thessalonians 4:13-18). The reader can refer to section 3 of this book to understand the time of the resurrection of the righteous. In this sense, the great Catholic religion is hiding this truth to its followers. Only the Cathar churches speak openly about the Rapture of the Church and the disappearance of the Holy Spirit on earth before the great tribulation. This step in God's plan has a term of seven years. The Antichrist, Satan, his angels and faithful of the human species on earth will be masters on earth in the form of world government.

As part of the great seduction of nations, Satan has to divert people's attention from the Rapture of the Church, a typically Christian doctrine taught by Paul and the apostles. Hence, the media overwhelmingly owned by the ILLUMINATI will NEVER speak of doctrine of the Rapture of the Church. How many souls have been lost due to UNESCO School programs and the countries directly under the control of the ILLUMINATI? Indeed, the tactic is always the same: to doubt God as Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden. We cannot refute the fact that human theories like evolution, time of creation and hindrance to read the Word of God in schools have moved many souls away from God because of their contrast with the Bible. Inevitably, UFOs and flying saucers will do same with the doctrine of the Rapture of the Church and the Holy Spirit, so less discussed in Churches around the world.

The first thought put into the heads of the goyim, "Of the billions of planets and solar system that make up the universe, it is impossible that there is no life elsewhere." Then we are shown through archeology that ancient peoples drew men deformed with spacesuits. Now we regularly see UFOs and flying saucers. It's all part of a great attraction to lose souls. The rapture of the church will be seen as an invasion or abduction by extraterrestrials and will at the same time offer an opportunity to the Antichrist to form a world government immediately. Let's see what God says in the Word about this phenomenon again.

## SECTION 1 - The Universe was created by God and belongs to Him

My Great God is perfect. His Holiness is complete. He is thrice Holy, God the Father, God the Holy Spirit, and God the Son. He is a God of Truth, Justice and Total Good. He is the Supreme Being who has no beginning and no end. His elect will live forever and ever in total happiness under His divine protection.

### 1) Who is God?



God has no equal. I am privileged to belong to a God of Holiness and Total Good.

**12** Surely God will never do wickedly, Nor will the Almighty pervert justice. **13** Who gave Him charge over the earth? Or who appointed Him over the whole world? (Job 34:12-13)

God is INTELLIGENCE AND SUPREME WISDOM. Hence He could say this to man:

**33** Do you know the ordinances of the heavens? Can you set their dominion over the earth? **34** "Can you lift up your voice to the clouds, That an abundance of water may cover you? **35** Can you send out lightnings, that they may go, And say to you, 'Here we are!'" **36** Who has put wisdom in the mind? Or who has given understanding to the heart? **37** Who can number the clouds by wisdom? Or who can pour out the bottles of heaven, **38** When the dust hardens in clumps, And the clods cling together?  
(Job 38: 33-38)

## **2) God created the whole universe**

God created the whole universe with Jesus who was involved in creation. All things were created by Him and for Him.

For by Him all things were created that are in heaven and that are on earth, visible and invisible, whether thrones or dominions or principalities or powers. All things were created through Him and for Him.

(Colossians 1: 16)

God created the universe, the different worlds and solar systems that make up the universe visible to man.

has in these last days spoken to us by His Son, whom He has appointed heir of all things, through whom also He made the worlds; (Hebrews 1: 2)

To avoid that the reader be confused by false teachers attempting to make a distinction in creation, God in His Word separates parts of the world. Thus the heavens signify the layer between the earth and space. The heaven of heavens signify the space and the rest of the universe.

But will God indeed dwell on the earth? Behold, heaven and the heaven of heavens cannot contain You. How much less this temple which I have built!  
(1 Kings 8: 27)

Or

"But will God indeed dwell with men on the earth? Behold, heaven and the heaven of heavens cannot contain You. How much less this temple which I have built!  
(2 Chronicles 6: 18)

Or

Indeed heaven and the highest heavens belong to the Lord your God, also the earth with all that is in it. (Deuteronomy 10: 14)

Or

... for the Lord your God, He is God in heaven above and on earth beneath. (Joshua 2: 11)

Or

But will God indeed dwell with men on the earth? Behold, heaven and the heaven of heavens cannot contain You. How much less this temple which I have built! (2 Chronicles 6:18)

Or

My help comes from the Lord, Who made heaven and earth. (Psalms 121: 2)

Or

Our help is in the name of the Lord, Who made heaven and earth. (Psalms 124: 8)

God created everything, the earth, the sky, the universe and all things visible and invisible in the world. The Bible testifies these things as it tells us that the earth was round.

### 3) The earth is round

Around 1492, the scientific world of the Middle Ages realized that the earth was round when Christopher Columbus discovered America. If we had read the Bible, we would have discovered what Job and King David had always known. They knew that the earth is round and that heaven exists for us to breathe and that there is space in which the universe is plunged. Our global

system, its functioning, and its ecosystem were known from the beginning of time by man. God hid nothing from man. Thus we read in the Bible.

7 He stretches out the north over empty space; He hangs the earth on nothing. 8 He binds up the water in His thick clouds, Yet the clouds are not broken under it. 9 He covers the face of His throne, And spreads His cloud over it. 10 He drew a circular horizon on the face of the waters, At the boundary of light and darkness.

(Job 26:7-10)

Or

It is He who sits above the circle of the earth...

(Isaiah 40: 22)

There are living creatures in heaven and the heaven of heavens and inhabitants living on the earth.

#### **4) The inhabitants of heaven and heaven of heavens, and humans**

The bodies of these two worlds are different. Human beings cannot live in space whereas the inhabitants of heaven can live in both environments. That's why Apostle Paul tells us:

There are also celestial bodies and terrestrial bodies; but the glory of the celestial is one, and the glory of the terrestrial is another.

(1 Corinthians 15: 40)

After death, men will have celestial bodies, some to everlasting life, and others to everlasting damnation.

The first man was of the earth, made of dust; the second Man is the Lord from heaven. (1 Corinthians 15: 47)

To humans, a world is hidden, while the heavenly creature is able to live in the visible or invisible world. Generally, she prefers the invisible world. The Apostle Paul prompts this reflection:

while we do not look at the things which are seen, but at the things which are not seen. For the things which are seen are temporary, but the things which are not seen are eternal.

(2 Corinthians 4: 18)

Is it another dimension or a passage from life to the other world? I do not know. Certainly, the heaven of heavens, that is, in space, our human body without cosmonaut dress dies. On earth, we cannot distinguish this invisible world with our senses. During the siege of the city of Samaria, Syrians under the reign of Ben-Hadad surrounded the city. The prophet Elisha told his servant not to worry because the invisible army of heaven was more numerous with their chariots of fire (2 Kings 6: 17). Then Elisha prayed God to show what he was seeing to the servant and it was granted.

## **5) Is there in the universe an environment that may be suitable for humans?**

Knowing that God made us with a human body, what other place can be suitable for human habitation apart from the Earth planet? This is the answer:

**15** May you be blessed by the Lord, Who made heaven and earth. **16**

The heaven, even the heavens, are the Lord's; But the earth He has given to the children of men. (Psalms 115:15-16)

Outside the earth, there is no free will life. We must live in an artificial place in a hostile environment which does not allow our way of life to evolve and to multiply other than artificially.

When we look at the creation of God in the beginning of Genesis, it says:

Thus the heavens and the earth, and all the host of them, were finished.

(Genesis 2: 1)

Is the heavenly host another form of life existing in the universe? The biblical answer to this question is found in this verse of Nehemiah.

You alone are the Lord; You have made heaven, The heaven of heavens, with all their host, The earth and everything on it, The seas and all that is in them, And You preserve them all. The host of heaven worships You.

(Nehemiah 9: 6)

So the man who lives on earth has an earthly body and is called "human". God provides a heaven for him to breathe, a land to live, grow and provide for all his needs by relying on nature, his resources and improves the quality of life through his inventions. And the other form of life has a celestial body, it is of the heavenly host, they are called angels. Of this population, there are two groups: God's angels and fallen angels.

## SECTION 2 - UFOs or fallen angels

### 1) The "foo fighters"

During the Second World War, a new phenomenon was discovered, that of "foo fighters." They were balls of light of different colours going on a high speed. Sometimes they were of the silver metal colour. The pilots of both sides saw it: for the allies they were given the name "foo

fighters". For the Germans, they had the name of "Kraut fireballs". Each side believed it was a new weapon from the enemy side. No loss of human lives was attributed to these balls of light. The phenomenon was common, but both sides agreed on the fact that the product was not equipment.

The Bible describes the phenomenon of "foo fighters". Thus we can read 900 years BC for the rapture of Prophet Elijah.

Then it happened, as they continued on and talked, that suddenly a chariot of fire appeared with horses of fire, and separated the two of them; and Elijah went up by a whirlwind into heaven.

(2 Kings 2: 11)

During the siege of the city of Samaria, the Syrians during the reign of Ben-Hadad surrounded the city. The prophet Elisha told his servant not to worry because the invisible army of heaven was more numerous with their chariots of fire (2 Kings 6: 17). Then Elisha prayed to God to show the servant what he was seeing and his prayer was granted.

And Elisha prayed, and said, "Lord, I pray, open his eyes that he may see." Then the Lord opened the eyes of the young man, and he saw. And behold, the mountain was full of horses and chariots of fire all around Elisha.

In both cases, it was heavenly creatures, the host of heaven or angels sent from God.

When Saul of Tarsus, who was an accomplice in the murder of Stephen, the disciple of the Lord was on his way to Damascus in order to bring disciples to trial before the high priest in Jerusalem, he met Jesus on the way and was converted.

## **The Conversion of Apostle Paul**

As he journeyed he came near Damascus, and suddenly a light shone around him from heaven.

(Acts 9: 3, 22: 6, 26: 13)

In another verse, Paul assures us that the light was brighter than the sun. It was Jesus who is God. So, this is a spiritual heavenly body. The reader will guess that God decides the form in which He wants to appear to his servant, for he is God. But these stories help us understand that the "foo fighters" are celestial bodies.

One explanation for "foo fighters" or angels of the heavenly host during the Second World War could be this: many innocent souls had died in vain to satisfy Illuminatis like Hitler, Stalin, Churchill, and Roosevelt. Indeed, the freemason Generals ordered the massacre of innocent civilians through air strikes. Thus, they destroyed European cities by unnecessary air raids. The International Bankers made a fortune with the "Marshall<sup>178</sup>" plan to rebuild a free Europe that the allies had destroyed. It also gave them a reason to separate the Free world from that imprisoned under the Iron Curtain in Yalta. They feared the collapse of the capitalist world if they had too many countries to rebuild. All these innocent souls who died in these air massacres their guardian angels were ascending and descending from heaven. How they often express their anger against this senseless killing without reason.

## **2) Does the UFO phenomenon have a psychological purpose?**

After the Second World War, the U.S. government wanted to understand the phenomenon of "foo fighters". The latter, met with a severe interrogation when it realized that it was not a Nazi trick.

---

<sup>178</sup> Marshall was a general and Freemason spy connected to the Illuminati.



The number of reports recorded by the pilots of both camps left no doubt about their existence. Flying saucers or UFOs made their appearance in modern times June 24, 1947.

On June 24, 1947, a private pilot Kenneth Arnold observed nine UFOs of metallic colour between Mount Rainer and Mount Adams in Washington State. Until July 1947, a real UFO wave swept over the North American continent. Then there was the Roswell incident, which will be discussed in Section 3. Among the significant waves in France, let's note 1954 and then 1973, there was a second and a third wave in 1990. Millions of people saw UFOs all over the world in the waves of 1965, 1967, 1977, 1982, 1986, 1987, 1989, 1990, 1996, 1997 and 2001. In 1962 the abduction of people began. In the 70s, "crop circles" were seen in the fields and many cases of mutilated animals accompanied by mysterious black non matriculated helicopters, were reported. Finally since 1947, UFOs have not been observed singly or more or fewer at a time in any country in the world. The UNO says 57 % of the North American population believes in UFOs.

A survey in 1998 revealed that (1) in twenty (20) has seen a UFO, four out of ten people believe those who say they have seen and seven out of ten think that they are objects from another world. These statistics alone are relevant because they force us to review the spiritual beliefs established for six millennia or so. Within fifty years, most Westerners have come to believe that UFOs come from another world and this without seeing even one. Just on hearsay, people believe in flying saucers. It must be said that the film industry since 1947 has greatly contributed to promoting this belief. The last film "Sign", starring Mel Gibson as a Protestant pastor abandoning the faith after witnessing the abduction of human beings by aliens is for the less revealing. The people pulling the strings of this phenomenon can very well maneuver psychologically speaking.

### **3) Is there any supernatural element in the UFO phenomenon?**

I would say that the UFO phenomenon is coercion between fallen angels and money men from the military part of the Illuminati pyramid. Although most part of the UFO seen was parapsychological, others were clearly tangible and military. This will be addressed in the third Part.

First of all, it is worth explaining that for the ILLUMINATI, there are two categories of Goyims. The born-again Christians fall into the first category. And others consist of unregenerate Christians, men of other religions and those who are atheists. The first part is much more powerful than the ILLUMINATI; it's for this reason that they must be raptured for the Antichrist to rule the world.

Indeed, as a Christian, given that God's Spirit is in me and I am sealed with it forever, I received what is called the authority of the believer. See. "In the name of Jesus Christ, I now decree the protection of my family, my entourage and myself against any person (s) or celestial demonic bodies who would attack us directly or indirectly, or by viruses, poisons, terrorist attacks, war, nuclear bomb or other acts diverted or consequential to their decisions, or reduce us physically or mentally, or economically impoverished, stop us from leading our lives honourably or to hierarchically mount the social scale, publicly dishonour us either by mistakes of youth or unreasonable words spoken in the past or swollen lies told with pride in order to impress others, perjury, making false evidence leading to a trial or aimed at us or attempt to publicly smear us in public, threats, intimidation or tampering related to this book, may their attempt be aborted by the intervention of guardian angels. If their actions are influenced by the enemy, his fallen angels or demonic authorities, let the power of darkness immediately cease to communicate with such people involved in the process of decision and action directly or indirectly for the whole of their lifetime in the earthly body, and let two-thirds of the fallen angels and demonic authorities go back into the abyss without the possibility of communication with the earth and its inhabitants, replacement or addition, this will be until the rapture of the Church." This authority received from Jesus Christ is very powerful. This is also why the powers of darkness cannot attack a Christian.

On the contrary, the opposite is true for the unregenerate goyim. They can be a victim of paranormal phenomenon at all times. Conversely, the two categories of Goyims are opposite since one obeys God while the other is in the flesh. It is from there that the ILLUMINATI get their force. Thus, the goyims can oppose themselves.

Many UFO researchers say that the U.S. government is hiding the truth. They are partly right and

partly wrong. The fact is that they have analyzed the data of the UFO phenomenon and have come to the conclusion that these are living celestial bodies. Robert Emenegger, renowned UFO researcher, has categorized thirty-two UFO varieties of different shapes. The shape is usually circular and slightly convex but can also vary: cigars oval, spherical or cylindrical.

If we extrapolate, there would be thirty-two kinds of different lives who visit us. Suppose that some vessels come from the same place, let's assume that the modern nature of this type of flying saucers would be the cause of a different configuration. Of the millions of planets in the universe, so why are we so much visited? Imagine the number of takeoffs that this very developed planet would observe annually? Billions, this would absolutely make no sense. Some UFO researchers say that we would be the target of a particular observation because of our stage of evolution. That explanation creates more problems than it solves. If there are a lot of intelligent lives in the universe, why would UFO be worried about our progress? Anyway, our progress was settled between the years 1880 to 1910 as we shall see in section 3 of this part. Other ufologists affirm that there are UFO aliens bases on earth as in the Bermuda Triangle, Australia, Antarctica and in the triangle of Japan. Why on earth, what would be the objective? They would have peace on March Venus or the moon. Also this would mean that several extraterrestrial civilizations are interested in us. The millions of stories put together helped develop certain physical characteristics which puzzle the scientific world. They are bright, glowing and ethereal. They are quiet, but sometimes emit a hum or rumble. Their trips are enigmatic. Indeed, they change shape, dematerialize, materialize, evaporate, become invisible, go at speeds over 16 or 000/mille 25 600 km per hour and perform 90-degree turns. They have lightning starts, the sudden stops and make right angle turns. In flight, they are weightless, but when facing the ground, they are very heavy.

The physicist James Campbell Mc analyzed the various factors related to the alien phenomenon as follows:

<b>OPERATION</b>	<b>ATMOSPHERIC EFFECTS</b>
Leviathan	Surrounding clouds
Unprecedented acceleration and deceleration	Rainbows (change with acceleration)
Almost right angle bend	Dazzling brightness
Lack of supersonic boom	Luminous streaks of clouds
Propulsion	
<b>LANDING SITES</b>	<b>ELECTRICAL INTERFERENCES</b>
Strong odours	Internal Combustion engine
Scorched earth	Lights
Charred organic mater	Radios and televisions
	Transmission lines
<b>PHYSIOLOGICAL REACTIONS</b>	<b>IN ANIMALS</b>
Buzzing noise	Fear or panic
Warming of the body	Paralysis
Paralysis	
Electric shock	
Sun burn	
Emotions caused	

The analysis of factors leads to the conclusion that UFOs can overcome gravity spending only a small amount of energy, cancel their weight to speed quickly, using low forces, and eliminate air resistance. He concludes: "They can be of an order that is completely incomprehensible to mankind, and this forever"

Many other competent researchers arrived at similar conclusions. Among them, the eminent physicist Jacques Vallee, who said: "They are built like boats material and psychical equipment

whose correct properties are yet to be determined<sup>179</sup>”. The physicist Jacques Lemaître writing in the "Flying Saucer Review" reveals, "We can therefore conclude that it is impossible to interpret the UFO phenomenon in terms of space ships made of matter as we understand it, that is to say in terms of manufactured devices, self propelled, preserving their physical nature and mechanical structure to travel from one solar system to another across the distance between these systems in the continuum Einsteinium<sup>180</sup>." John Kell, one of the most respected UFO researchers in the world, brings to our attention what witnesses say in a roundabout manner: "You know, I do not think what I saw was something mechanical. I have the distinct impression that it is a living thing<sup>181</sup>" Two of the most recognized researchers in the field, J. Allen and J. Hydek Vallee said: "Although the theory that the UFOs are space ships from elsewhere is attractive, it is not acceptable at the moment. If UFOs are actually iron objects that come from elsewhere, then we must explain how something so tangible can change shape before our eyes, disappear as if there was just nothing, as if it melted in front of us materialized apparently in a mysterious manner, while passing unnoticed in the eyes of people in the neighborhood or neighbouring cities. We must equally ask ourselves where UFOs hide when they are not seen by humans<sup>182</sup>.” Based on information collected in the field, these doctors and researchers in the field of UFO concluded that they are psychic or celestial bodies whose owners are mentioned in the Bible. One of the beliefs that Satan must at all costs hide from men to prevent a revival of the Christian faith during his reign is the doctrine of **THE RAPTURE OF THE UNIVERSAL CHURCH OF CHRIST ON EARTH**. The Bible warns us not to believe in lies. One of the first lies shall be to say that millions of people have been kidnapped by aliens, and that the peoples of the earth should unite under one world government.

9 The coming of the lawless one is according to the working of Satan, with all power, signs, and lying wonders, 10 and with all unrighteous deception among those who perish, because they did not receive the love of the truth, that they might be saved. 11 And for this reason God will send them strong delusion, that they should believe the lie, 12 that

---

<sup>179</sup> Jacques Vallee, *The Invisible College*, EP Dutton, New York, 1975, p 202.

<sup>180</sup> Jacques Lemaitre, *The Parallel Universe Myth*, *Flying Saucer Review*, vol 15, no 6, p 23.

<sup>181</sup> John Kell, *UFOs: Operation Trojan Horse*, GP Putnam's Sons, New York, 1970, p 143.

<sup>182</sup> Hynek and Vallee, *Edge of Reality*, p. XII-XIII.

they all may be condemned who did not believe the truth but had pleasure in unrighteousness.

(2 Thessalonians 2:9-13)

Now look at the category of celestial bodies to which UFOs belong in reality.

#### **4) God and His celestial bodies**

We have seen above that the angels have the ability to materialize, to phase out, change shape and move at high speeds, even faster than light. The Angels lead the faithful to heaven in the presence of God (Luke 16: 22). We can also see that they have gravity in our world subject to its laws of physics. At the end of seven years reserved for the Antichrist, there will be a battle; that of Armageddon, during which the Lord comes to take his throne of glory on earth for a thousand years and destroy the armies of the Antichrist who walk against Jerusalem.

And in that day His feet will stand on the Mount of Olives, Which faces Jerusalem on the east. And the Mount of Olives shall be split in two, From east to west, Making a very large valley; Half of the mountain shall move toward the north And half of it toward the south.

(Zechariah 14: 4)

During the millennium, we the believers saved in the Lord; we will reign in our incorruptible bodies with Christ (Revelation 20: 6). The verse read in Zechariah chapter 14, verse 4 shows that a celestial body has real gravity.

During the conversion of Apostle Paul, he tells us very interesting facts related to celestial bodies:

## **The Conversion of Apostle Paul**

As he journeyed he came near Damascus, and suddenly a light shone around him from heaven. (Acts 9: 3)

Also, Paul tells us:

... a light from heaven, brighter than the sun... (Acts 26: 13)

Fourteen years after this encounter on the way to his conversion, Paul makes a very brief but interesting revelation:

2 I know a man in Christ who fourteen years ago--whether in the body I do not know, or whether out of the body I do not know, God knows--such a one was caught up to the third heaven. 3 And I know such a man--whether in the body or out of the body I do not know, God knows-- 4 how he was caught up into Paradise and heard inexpressible words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter. (2 Corinthians 12:2-4)

Paul tells us that he was delighted in the third heaven. The first heaven, heaven, the second heaven, space, the third heaven, paradise. Is it possible that the dimensions of the universe are so great that we will miss a third heaven? Paul also tells us that he cannot say whether he was in his body or mind. We know that Christ is God. Paul had nothing to fear but in the light of God, something extraordinary happened, but Paul cannot say if present in body or mind. Angels also caught up Prophet Elijah with his body to heaven. So the celestial body has many possibilities. Among others, it has the ability to lift an earthly weight with almost unlimited force.

Then it happened, as they continued on and talked, that suddenly a

chariot of fire appeared with horses of fire, and separated the two of them; and Elijah went up by a whirlwind into heaven.

(2 Kings 2: 11)

The Lord loves man, his creature, He does not hurt him. Instead, he reassures us and strengthens us against the enemy.

## **5) Satan and his heavenly creatures**

We can now conclude that UFOs are celestial bodies to whom great power was given. One of the warnings of Apostle Paul against the wiles of the devil is this:

**14** And no wonder! For Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light. **15** Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also transform themselves into ministers of righteousness, whose end will be according to their works.

(2 Corinthians 11:14-15)

The enemy has a great power of seduction. The fallen angels have immortality but they are condemned to live in eternal sin because of their condition. Lose as many souls as possible, that's their purpose in this heavenly war. Only the Word of God, the Bible, the gospel of salvation is our torchbearer in this fight.

But even if we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel to you than what we have preached to you, let him be accursed.

(Galatians 1: 8)



The Raelians phenomenon (Claude Virion) claiming to have met aliens and to be their spokesman on earth is very significant. Show me your works and I'll tell you who you are. His doctrine tolerates sin as against the Holy Scriptures. Just in this regard, those indoctrinated must have distanced themselves. In 1973, in the United States only, 50,000 people said they had been contacted to deliver a message to humanity. The subtlety is the counterfeit of God for an ordinary genetic and alien creator.

In all cases of contact or abduction with UFOs, the victims remained with significant repercussions. These cases contain a high proportion of clearly occult elements. All victims experience fear and paralysis. They wonder if the facts are real or that their brains are influenced by paranormal dream style. They transmit vague philosophical messages with goals, objectives and interests. UFOs tell them, we will return. The victims fall into a trance spontaneously, they produce automatic writing and automatic drawing of an accuracy that only a computer can produce. UFOs are called "intelligences" and they can harass victims almost at any time with pages of mathematical data, maps of stars, intricate designs and futuristic machines. When we look at the landing of UFO, one cannot help thinking of animal mutilations, a type of demonic rituals of ancient tribes. The nauseating smell, scorched earth and organic charred waste. All these phenomena are close to paranormal occult.

Lynn G. Catoe, a major bibliographer in the Congress Library, reviewed some 1600 articles and books for the annotated bibliography of the UFO phenomenon. He commented: "Many of the reports on UFOs now published recount alleged incidents that which in a striking manner look like demonic possession or psychic phenomena that have long been known by theologians and those interested in parapsychology<sup>183</sup>."

When animals come in contact with celestial bodies, they are afraid because they see heavenly bodies. We only have to read the case of Balaam and his donkey (Numbers 22: 25). In the same

---

<sup>183</sup> Lynn G. Catoe, UFOs and Related Subjects: An Annotated Bibliography (prepared for the USAF Office of Scientific Research).

line, the herd of swine rushed into the sea because of evil spirits which seized them (Luke 8:30-33).

Many psychic and tricky messages force us to consider UFOs as fallen angels or demons. Throughout history, occult science has produced phenomena like levitation, teleportation, psychokinesis, clairvoyance, automatic writing and astral production from scratch. Demons as fallen angels still hold great powers such as manipulation and restructuring of matter and the ability to influence and dominate experience and human conscience by conventional possession or direct psychic implantation of a series of experiments.

Mental effects whereby the victims see grey people or others during meetings often occur through psychic implantation. Several celestial entities can form mental illusion desired by them. Remember that Satan is the father of lies.

For false christs and false prophets will rise and show great signs and wonders to deceive, if possible, even the elect.

(Matthew 24: 24)

After the rapture of the Church of Christ on earth, the religion of the ILLUMINATI derived from Kabbalah, will seduce people with their wonders and miracles. UFOs are only a way to keep people away from God. There will be many more. Personally, I believe the fallen angels (UFOs), will be powered by a human will from the ILLUMINATI.

In this context, it would not be surprising, as the message of the fallen angels directed to unregenerate goyim chosen by them, to see a real mechanical flying saucer with so-called alien creatures inside. This will not mean it's the truth.

## SECTION 3 - The earthly technology

This section sets out to determine if man had the technology needed to build a flying saucer by July 2, 1947.

### 1) Technology from 1890 to 1940

The Paris Convention dated 1884, made fourteen (14) States to create an International Bureau responsible for administrative tasks relating to copyright. Copyright arrived on the international scene in 1886 in Bern, Switzerland with the *Berne Convention for the Protection of Literary and Artistic Works*. In 1893, two small offices merged to form an international organization called *International Offices assembled for the Protection of Intellectual Property (BIRPI)*. As in the past, science was based on individual findings; inventors were recording their respective inventions in Bern at (BIRPI). In 1974, BIRPI became part of UNO under the name of the World Intellectual Property Organization (WIPO). Previously, the ILLUMINATI had secured control over this wealth in the Great work as: (1925) arrangement of the Hague (1960) Transfer of BIRPI to Geneva (1967) WIPO convention (1970) establishing of WIPO and Patent Cooperation Treaty. In the 1890s, in the heart of industrialization, the market shares of the “*great fundraisers*” were divided amongst them. Agents visited the inventions registration office and came into contact with men of science that interested them. The watchword was: “any technology is acceptable, provided that the goyim contribute and enrich the plan of the Great Work.”

In this view, various technologies were developed by the founding fathers but only the so-called profitable technology was used. Other technologies were relegated to oblivion and directed to private laboratories of the military pyramid of the ILLUMINATI where they were explored and appropriated by other secret practices. The scholars who contributed most were unknown. Among others, they worked on technologies that others had developed, but due to lack of money they could not go further. These scientists through mystical Kabbalist possession

receive knowledge to adapt and develop better technology for the day of arrival of the Antichrist in secret laboratories operating on the account of the ILLIMINATI. It is likely that much knowledge gained since 1870 have been essential to the Great satanic Work. Probably the civilizations of the ancient world, the Tower of Babel or Atlantis if it actually existed, managed to have inhuman knowledge through the worship of fallen angels, allegiance and voluntary participation of their scientists in the transmission of futile knowledge to humans by demons. In this sense, all these civilizations ahead of the reserved biblical times were destroyed by God for the most interest of humanity. Several attractions are mirrored to scientists such as: travelling in the past and hyperspace, teleportation, telekinesis. Personally, I doubt if the human body could travel in the past, dematerialize, read minds or communicate by thought. Otherwise, the unregenerate man would have hastened to rewrite history to his advantage, and change the laws and the time set by God. As cherub, Satan, has no such power. In this sense, the man in a material body and submitted to laws of God the Creator has much less opportunity. At most, we discovered anti-gravity through the effect of electromagnetism in the greatest secrecy. Also, with a material body, we are forced to use mechanical means which themselves are subject to the laws of nature. It seems impossible to travel at the speed of light with such means. As a result, the era of space conquest with physical unnatural laws seems unrealistic. Probably, apart from superior technology deliberately hidden by the ILLUMINATI as we shall see in this part of the book, we are at the pinnacle of human knowledge possible and appropriate to our human bodies.

In this context, the best minds that marked a forestage era before the ILLUMINATI and the great "fundraisers" organized and structured intellectual property were:

INVENTOR	EARTHLY TIME
Thomas Alva Edison	(1847 - 1931)
Albert Einstein	(1879 - 1955)
Thomas Hunt Morgan	(1866 - 1945)
Nikola Tesla	(1856 - 1943)

Albert Einstein was a Freemason ILLUMINATI; he was part of THE ROUND TABLE and a founding member of the BIDERBERG GROUP. Therefore, from June 21, 1902 to 1911, he was in charge of making an initial review to assess the relevance of inventions brought to the Technological inventions offices in Bern (BIRPI). His unified field theory and that of relativity appear identical to the 13th degree of Kabbalah.

Thomas Alva Edison was a Christian. He is the inventor of electricity in respect with how to produce and distribute and retrieve in a short distance. Water and vapour provided him with continuous motion to produce electricity. Long before him, a series of predecessors had led the way such as: Benjamin Franklin (1706-1790) with the electricity conservation, Charles Coulomb (1736-1806) with the amount of electricity, James Watt (1736-1819) with the power, Alessandro Volta (1745-1827) with the voltage ddp, Andre Marie Ampere (1775-1836) with electrodynamics, Christian Oersted (1777-1851) with electromagnetism, François Arago (1786-1853) with the magnetism of rotation, Antoine Becquerel (1788-1878) with piezoelectricity, Georg Simon Ohm (1789-1859) with the resistance, Michael Faraday (1791-1867) with electrolysis, James Prescott Joule (1818-1889) with the energy and Heinrich Hertz (1857-1894) with frequency. Among the inventors, two ILLUMINATI were recognized and two were associated with Freemasonry. Among the inventions of Edison, there was the telegraph, the phonogram, including electrical circuits and ways to save electricity by passing it several times through the users.

Thomas Edison was primarily a businessman; he and his company were financially associated with the famous international banker J. P. Morgan. For Edison, the slogan was, electricity yes, but payable for all. The question is: Did he have a choice? I mean financially speaking, he was very engaged.

Gregor Johann Mendel in 1866 published more than ten (10) years of genetic studies with mathematical formula and created the foundations of the theory of genetics and modern heredity. His research went unnoticed. Thomas Hunt Morgan in 1910 created mutations in the Drosophila and discovered chromosomes and genes. According to the Goyim Calendar, It had to wait until

1953 for Watson and Crick to discover the double helix structure of DNA molecule allowing the manipulation and mutation in humans. What would have happened if a key had been stolen from BIRPI, and a team of researchers worked day and night in secret on the scientific discovery of Morgan in 1910? How would we have to recognize that, before 1953, a human mutated into an earthly flying saucer?

Nikola Tesla is an unknown scholar, but suffice it to say that without him the world would still be in the dark. He was a genius so great and so rare that his inventions were sealed and until today two (2) generations of researchers and scientists had to analyze his inventions in laboratories and in the greatest secrecy.

## **2) The biography and the inventions of Nikola Tesla**

Nikola Tesla was born July 10, 1856 in the village of Smijan, Croatia in the Austro- Hungarian Empire. His father was an Orthodox priest and his mother a very clever self-educated person. Nikola was to be a priest, but he had many other qualities. In particular, he was gifted, capable of performing many complicated mathematical operations, without tables or calculation rules. In 1884, he mastered some twelve (12) languages while studying in various Universities in Europe. Most striking are his phenomenal powers of visualization. His photographic memory associated with his capacity for mental animation gave him an extraordinary advantage in problem-solving. With an extraordinary imagination, Nikola Tesla, conceptualized a machine, built, tested, modified and corrected errors in his head. So when he built his invention, it was virtually perfect right from its fabrication. Thomas Elva Edison was jealous of these powers which he said were supernatural.

He designed the plan of magnetic fields rotating engine since the 1880s and yet today this induction engine is used in most household and industrial appliances. His passion was electricity; he amazed his teachers with his ability to transcend their own understanding. He was unceremoniously expelled from the best technical school in Yugoslavia for saying that he could

build a generator that would extract electrical power using a stream. His teacher wrongly described it as "perpetual motion". In 1875, he entered the Polytechnic School in Graz, where he studied mathematics, physics and mechanics. His physics teacher gave him a direct current dynamo engine (DC) making a lot of sparks. Tesla reviewed and proposed to replace the current by alternative current (AC). According to his teacher it would lead to "perpetual motion" which was unimaginable at the time and still today in our planetary educational system controlled by the ILLUMINATI through the UNO and our individual governments. The idea to transform this machine became obsessive to the point that he exclaimed: "For me, it is a sacred vow, a question of life or death. I know I'll die if I fail. Deep in my brain is the solution, but I cannot express it."

First employed by the Austrian Government as a telegraph engineer, he later worked in the electrical engineering department in Budapest, where he saw the rotating magnetic field principle, and made plans for an induction engine. In 1882, Tesla worked in Paris for the Continental Edison Company, and during a trip to Strasbourg in 1883, he built his induction engine. He met Robert Oppenheimer, who discovered Albert Einstein. The latter was ILLUMINATI. This facilitated his departure for the New World where he worked with the inventor of the incandescent lamp Thomas Elva Edison. But the two men did not understand each other, Edison was compulsive changing his inventions on the spot and able to sleep in the same clothes for several days while Tesla, always well dressed, composed, lectured and when he designed an invention, it was perfect right from inception. Tesla saw Edison as an unscrupulous businessman, above all anxious to sell electricity the most expensive as possible. For his part, Tesla sought to develop a system to offer free energy to all. It must be said that Edison had a strong commitment monetarily. Edison joined forces with JP Morgan, ILLUMINATI, great financier who was opposed to the technology of Edison. He preferred solution from several small plants. But the financial network of Edison was significant, with German financiers outside the jurisdiction of the ILLUMINATI for the moment. Edison could be released from the grip of John Pierpont Morgan. In 1890, the main German financial support of Edison was ruined. The company founded by Edison was near bankruptcy; it was bought by J. P. Morgan. The latter imposed alternating current invented by Nikola Tesla.

During the years when Tesla worked with Edison, Tesla drew twenty-four (24) dynamos, and then began his account. He patented thirty important inventions in a single year. He became a recognized scholar who lacked neither money nor success. Between 1882 and 1888, he patented several devices that used rotating magnetic fields to transmit electricity from alternating current. In fact, the whole modern system of generation and transmission of electricity worldwide is designed on the ideas and patents of the man, Nikola Tesla. If the reader has never heard of this man, it is that he understood so well the use of waves and electricity that his name and his merit was stifled for reasons of " *world national security* " by the "International Bankers" and Governments around the world.

The hidden part of history starts here. After dropping more than 900 patents and having definitely quarreled with Thomas Elva Edison over a history of royalties, Nikola Tesla transferred to a laboratory in Colarado Springs. His aim was to prove that wireless telegraphy was possible anywhere in the world. His theory was "*Theory of the empty field*" commonly known as "*ether*" in the West and "*Akasha*" in the East. According to this theory, the space between atoms of matter is not empty but full of energy, whose nature is still under discussion. Its concentration is extremely high, the order of 5000 kWh per cubic cm. It is hardly noticeable, unless you make it act with fields or electromagnetic field. In the latter case, it is the cause of the acceleration gravity. Thus, at first he invented a generator that runs on ether able to operate on high frequency in two ways either by platelets circuits or by electromagnetic lightning. If this invention was accepted at the international patent office, these days every taxpayer would have had free energy at home, only the cost of the starting apparatus integrated with the purchase of our first property would have been required. Tesla tried to patent his inventions to BIRPI, but was told they could not patent inventions on the "empty field theory" as it was not proven. Therefore, the "Empty field theory" not being proven, they refused to issue any patents. The ILLUMINATI kept these patents; it's called stealing a key and at the same time all Goyims around the world.

John Jacob Astor, the financier John Pierpont Morgan, Rockefeller and Westinghouse, all High-level Illuminati, quickly went in contact with Tesla. Indeed, Nikola Tesla had just got a brilliant



idea through his "unified field theory". From now on, I will talk to the reader about proven inventions because Nikola Tesla listed them, Local newspapers wrote on it and many witnesses saw them. To prove that electrical energy can be transmitted wirelessly over the world, Nikola Tesla sent to the huge electrical discharge ground (2.5 million volts) that reached 50 km depth. In 1889, he lighted 200 bulbs without using a wire at a distance of 40 km. At the same time, he set a record that still stands today, having had the artificial spark with the longest lifespan. He was just from showing the world that we could control vacuum energy with its ability to unleash lightning. During these experiments, he received messages that he believed to have come from interplanetary communications which he believed from Mars. With today's science in terms of waves, it is explained that it was probably natural radio waves from stars. Unfortunately for today's science, Tesla was a genius and I think it was rather the language of angels. Apostle Paul says (1 Corinthians 13: 1). The scientific world, jealous of his extraordinary talent made a mockery of him. The millionaire John Jacob Astor, JP Morgan, Rockefeller and Westinghouse agreed to finance the project called "Wardenclyffe or Global System." In 1900, after the experience of Colorado Springs, Tesla began constructing his first wireless transmitter installed at the top of a tower. The work lasted for three (3) years and was found in Long Island. Tesla announced another breakthrough at that time. Indeed, he hoped to transform crust into a giant electrical outlet and the sky into a spherical capacitor. According to Tesla, for all the electricity needs of humanity, simply stick a pin in the ground and link it to a processor, then the electricity recovered by hydroelectric power plants or better, recovered by receivers located around the world and redirected in the form of radio waves. Instead of electricity as we know, we would have had an antenna and electricity will be transmitted wireless. At the Universal Exhibition in Chicago in 1893, Tesla showed that current can be transmitted wirelessly thanks to his high frequency transformer. This coil had the ability to produce high tension currents, but very low intensity, making it harmless to humans. Tesla was also able to prove it by his "*Electric man*" who sends lightening more than 40 meters long, and lights bulbs and electric engines at a distance.

But the "Global system" project had an enormous potential risk. Indeed, to illuminate the world, you need to produce 100 billion watts, focused on a short time and on one frequency. This amounts to producing a force of 10000000000000000 joules. If instead of being distributed over the entire surface of the planet, the impact is felt in one place, this would amount to the creation

of a bomb of 10 megatons of TNT being almost the power of the explosion that occurred at Tunguska. The "Great fundraisers" withdrew from the project and its implementation did not take place. Morgan held 51% of Tesla's inventions patents. In all likelihood, Tesla was right; electricity is kinetic, not static. But there was no question of providing free energy to the planet. The structure in Long Island was destroyed in 1917. In 1903, Nikola Tesla went back to Colorado Springs to resume his research. So the great ILLUMINATI-owned media ridiculed him and incited the masses against him. The ILLUMINATI sent agitators to incite the population and the municipality of Colorado Springs to pursue Tesla judicially. It follows that he was prosecuted for astronomical sums during that time and was forced to stop his electrical experiments.

Thereafter, he resumed his experiments on the same theory, but this time for radio waves. Again, he shook the scientific world. Tesla hoped to overcome the "Great fundraisers" indirectly. Here too his inventions were not quickly approved by BIRPI and Marconi won the race. In fact, they did not want Tesla to take the first place and to later introduce the world to his inventions on electricity. Then in 1909 the Nobel Prize for Physics was awarded to Marconi for electromagnetic waves. It should have been attributed to Nikola Tesla. Tesla refused the Nobel Prize in 1912, because they did not recognize his radio invention. Tesla patented over 900 inventions during his life. Nikola Tesla knew waves so well and how to create them to the extent that he did what he wanted with them. Among other things, to his credit are:

- The invention of alternative current (AC) engine and three-phase current
- The installation of AC and its method of distribution
- The pellet carbon lamp
- The electronic microscope
- Particle accelerator
- The invention of a takeoff and vertical landing airplane
- The high frequency alternating current transformer
- Radio transmissions
- The death ray

- The discovery of different rays with the knowledge accumulated by Tesla on the transmission of wireless electricity. Some inventors made unthinkable discoveries. An inventor, H. Grindell-Matthewa showed that the ignition of a gasoline engine could be turned off, light the gun propellant, light a bulb and kill a mouse in seconds; all from a distance. This inventor attributed the phenomenon of a high voltage current to a low frequency. In 1936, Marconi experimented ELF waves, and demonstrated their ability to penetrate the various metal shields. These waves had the property to affect all electrical appliances. They overloaded their circuits and rendered them unusable. All results of this work disappeared mysteriously after the war.

Tesla is the precursor of many modern inventions:

- Tubes for televisions
- The principle of free energy
- Tesla Coil
- Radar
- The remote-controlled robots
- Radio and telecommunications
- The wireless power transmission
- The discovery of the standing wave
- Discoveries in the field of war of the airwaves
- The automaton
- Radio-controlled objects with torpedoes
- The theory of manipulation or distortion of the gravitational field through electromagnetic waves
- He designed a force field which was to screen over America in case of air attack during World War II. Today this is called the "Star Wars" project.

During his lifetime, Lord Kelvin and Walter Russell, two current members of the Illuminati tried to initiate Nikola Tesla into Kabbalah through Hinduism. Tesla politely answered them in writing. If they succeeded to initiate him, they could have controlled him. Tesla remained faithful

to paternal teachings and upon his death on January 7 1943, the ceremony was Orthodox. The FBI was quickly dispatched to empty his apartment as if they were aware of his death. He died at the age of 86. He was a lonely scientist, isolated and passionate. It is said in the highest secret, that his magnetic and gravitational fields' theories would have provided the formula for antigravity. Nikola Tesla wanted to build the model, but was never able to do so.

### **3) Many large projects in the past**

It is surprising to note that most inventions adapted to our modern world come from the research of a few solitary scholars who made their discoveries between 1880 and 1906. Even more amazing is the refusal of (BIRPI) offices to patent the higher technologies and that clearly identified men of the "New World Order" held these technologies. From this perspective, look at the projects out of the ordinary around 1947. Here are projects whose authenticity is not disputed.

## **SILVER BUG PROJECT**

In the late 1940s, the USAF (United States Air Force) wanted to provide a takeoff and vertical landing device or VTOL in disc form.

### **The AVRO CAR**

This is a supersonic fighter-bomber capable of vertical takeoff and landing in the form of a saucer fitted with a cushion of air. It can fly at speeds of 500 miles / hour. In 1953, it was considered fit to go into production, and nothing was done thereafter. I believe these projects and their poor performance at the sight of men and the media were in fact a facade to help the goyim to believe in the great illusion of aliens. By demonstrating to men that we do not have the technology to build a flying saucer, it became easy for men to believe they came from another world. Here the

real questions to ask: was it the real technology of the time? Why would they want us to believe in flying saucers?

### **Adolf Hitler**

In the words of August Kubizek, one of the few friends of Hitler in his youth in Linz, Austria, the magico-politico-racial obsessions of the future Führer began around 1904. He was then fifteen (15) years, he attended Wagner's opera, entitled "Rienzi." Therefore, the young Hitler began to speak of a "mission that fate had in store for him" and that he was to free his race from slavery. Still according Kubizek, for the first time Hitler spoke with such a tiny voice, characterized by violent outbursts of anger, which was not his normal voice. He was surprised himself, as if he heard a speech out of his own mouth but delivered by another person. From that moment Hitler embarked on full-time Eastern mysticism, astrology, hypnosis, of Germanic mythology and occultism. He was morbidly fascinated by the esoteric theme of the works of Wagner. In its form of schizophrenia, Hitler identified himself with the character of the tyrant, or Landolfo II of Capua, excommunicated in 875 for practicing black magic with the intent to acquire absolute power. Like his idol, Hitler suffered from same physical defect, and both had only one testicle. In 1909, Hitler made contact with Jorg Lanz von Liebenfall, founder of an esoteric order called "The New Templars" who preached among other things, the superiority of the Germanic race. The superior race was born thousands of years earlier with the "Unknown Masters." This unknown race, a kind of half gods controlled the world, hidden in the bowels of the earth. It was possible to become like them only by purifying one's race. To the lodge of "THULE" five thousand years earlier, a civilization of superior men had evolved in the Gobi Desert which produced the Aryan race in northern Europe. Much other nonsense came, the earth is hollow, the super race is found at the polar extremes and Tibet. Then the super race was in Antarctica. After the war the Allies unleashed Operation Highjump (1946-1947), as they believed that some of the Nazi forces could have been hidden in a military base in Antarctica.

With the Masonic lodge the "Thule", Hitler devoted himself to black magic. Hitler surrounded himself with legions of magicians, astrologers, occultists, psychic researchers, alchemists. In this way, he chose in 1920, a magical symbol, the swastika as a symbol of the National Socialism

party. In 1923, he surrounded himself with Heinrich Himmler known as the apprentice sorcerer because of his devotion to magical arts. This created a true neo-pagan religion. As a center of worship, he chose Exernsteine, the "German Stonehenge" and especially Wevelsburg, where he built an esoteric cathedral, with a round table that could receive thirteen guests, Himmler and his twelve associates. Expeditions to find magical objects in Tibet, the legendary Agarthi and the Holy Grail and Antarctica, superior race, were organized. In April 1942, an expedition led by Dr. Heinz Fischer installed on Ihle of Rugen in the Baltic Sea, a set of expensive experimental radars and pointed them 45 degrees toward the sky. The goal was to locate the other wall of the hollow earth on which we live and where the military objective was to bounce the infrared radiation to locate enemy ships. Hitler was convinced that the earth was hollow and that the great race was hiding in a land of ice.

Hitler became super obsessed with race after reading the book of a "Great Rosicrucian Master" entitled "The Coming Race". Rudolf Hess, a member of Thule, studying new technologies. Viktor Schauberger had developed several prototypes based on the theory of levitation and had studied the technique with electro gravitational power of resonances for harmonizing proportions in weightlessness. Schauberger<sup>184</sup> said he held the mathematical secret given by the "Templars Lodge". In 1934, researchers developed the first Nazi flying saucer<sup>185</sup> by anti-gravity, the first Nazi pilot to pilot a flying saucer was probably Henry Stevens. It was probably made following the design of ancient Kabbalists Babylonian manuscripts. Germany fell into the war too quickly and researchers have never managed to master this technology. In addition, this weapon was intended to be a weapon of field recognition. In 1942 and 1944, tests were probably made above the Vril Society, and many people would have seen a flying saucer; a technology like "anti-gravity" to develop in times of war when all the nation's resources are focused on production.

We will probably never know all the atrocities, abominations and techniques used in the disorder of the war for a super Aryan race. Did they find the double helix structure for manipulation or genetic mutations? It remains an undeniable fact; the

---

<sup>184</sup> <http://www.gpgwebdesign.com.au/germans.htm>

<sup>185</sup> <http://perso.wanadoo.fr/francois.fichu/dossierestr.htm>

ILLUMINATI had the opportunity to steal patent keys and to develop them in secret private laboratories. Have they found the double and applied helix structure?

After the war, the goyim do not know how many secret bases were found, as in Antarctic, to the North Pole and other remote locations worldwide. In the hands of highly structured men, technologies such as anti-gravity have led to the production of typical earthly flying saucer thanks to the unpatented knowledge of Tesla, Schauburger, Searl, Newman, de Palma, Trombly, Morinov and Wilhelm Reich. This would have happened quickly. In the field of genetics, we have no control over the atrocities committed in a bid to seduce the world.

#### 4) Rand Project

When the Allies whose Generals were of the Illuminati, understood they were to win the war, the ILLUMINATI hurried to ensure that no Military intellectual property was missed. Obviously, the powers after the war were the United States, U.S.S.R and China. As mentioned in chapter four, the Masonic Lodges knew they will rebuild the United States of Europe or the European Union by putting the ILLUMINATI at its head. On the other hand, the communist countries, heavily infiltrated by their respective revolutions were already under the thumb of the ILLUMINATI. The men in charge of top secret were F \* ILLUMINATI through various Masonic lodges. The United States, home of democracy aroused a problem. As a democracy, their politicians could break the supply chain to military intellectual property.

So they devised the "Rand Project." It was born March 7, 1944 from a memorandum of Professor von Karman (Illuminati), which recommended a high degree of independence vis-à-vis Office of the Secretary of Defense (OSD) in strategic research policy and proposed the setting up of the RAND project (Research and Development). This led to a contract between the United States Air Force and Douglas firm in 1948 for the creation of RAND Corporation. The Corporation was strictly composed of private interests making up the first major thinking

machine of the United States on issues of defense and national security. To give you an example, that's where Internet comes from.

On May 14, 1948, RAND was incorporated as a nonprofit making corporation; it was manufacturing without making profit according to the law of the State of California. All the management and board of Administration were partially members of Masonic lodges related the ILLUMINATI. The three original signatories were Franklin Collbohm (CFR), H. Rowan Gaither, Jr. (CFR) and Henderson, Jr. (CFR). The eight (8) other directors were Charles Dollard (CFR), chairman of the Carnegie Corporation of New York, Lee A. DuBridge, President of the California Institute of Technology, John A. Hutcheson (Illuminati), director of research laboratories at Westinghouse Electric Corporation, Alfred L. Loomis (Illuminati), scientist; Phillip M. Morse, a physicist at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, Frederick F. Stephan, professor of Statistics and director, Office of Survey Research and Statistics Princeton University, George D. Stoddard (CFR), president, University of Illinois and Clyde Williams, director, Battelle Memorial Institute. One of the largest donors was the Ford Foundation.

One of the strengths of the ILLUMINATI was to control the technologies of goyim. The drainage system of the gray matter in private and secret laboratories was probably in place before the First World War with the inventions of Nikola Tesla and those of Thomas Hunt Morgan. The reader should realize that since 1880, this institution has all the power of advanced technologies, anywhere in the world. Perhaps we are two or three centuries behind the real technology. One thing is certain; the Goyim must always spend in order to use the technology. If we allow them, we will soon pay for the right to breathe the air God has given to every man free.

When it is said in the Revelation that the beast will make fire come down from heaven to the earth and will do all sorts of wonders to seduce.

He performs great signs, so that he even makes fire come down from  
heaven on the earth in the sight of men.

(Revelation 13: 13)



So think of Nikola Tesla and his experiments described in this book. And remember that all these technologies are the product of human technology, stolen from men by the ILLUMINATI. Similarly, when the dead will be resurrected and millions of Christians raptured, then, you shall see the great illusion of flying saucers. Are you saying that aliens do not exist? There are two kinds of bodies: the "earthly" and "celestial." That can only be an illusion, a typical earthly technology that has been deliberately hidden from you so that the unregenerate goyim should believe a lie.

## **5) Shall it be possible to manipulate the masses psychologically?**

Going by the premise that UFOs materialize and dematerialize, could there be a technology available since 1942 that would give the appearance of a spaceship from the first and second meeting without it being an effect of light on clouds? The answer to this question is called plasma technology. This technology was available in 1928. Now, the reader is very aware that the technology revealed to the Goyim probably during earthly time is very backward compared to the actual technology available to the Illuminati. Plasma is a fluid composed of electrically neutral gas molecules, positive ions and negative electrons. This is an ionized gas emitting photons, due to ionization, making it more or less bright.

To give a desired colour effect (X), a volume (Y) and trajectory (Z), a technology available since 1930 can be used, "Particle Accelerator" and the high frequency radiation (radio frequency) or hyper frequency as the microwave. This technology is the work of Nikola Tesla. By spreading branches here and there on the desired path (Z), it moves the object in the path. The principle is simple, sprinkle well the plasma, send light through the gun particle, and move by means of antennas an unprecedented speed. Turn off the barrel and then we have a dematerialized object. The first tests were made on board the balloon. This technology could be used to explain the first cases of UFOs appearance.

From 1953, this technology has improved with the availability of maser. The magnetron was

invented in 1921, the klystron in 1938 and the maser in 1953. It's the equivalent of the laser microwave. Already, one could simulate a flight with increasing proportions. In 1958, with the arrival of the laser, the matrix simulated gave exactly the similarity of a real object in the sky with designs and desired colours. What was more difficult before, but doable. Though we cannot know if the technology of the Illuminati was similar in those years to that of the goyim. Indeed the technologies available to the ILLUMINATI and hidden to the Goyim are more than likely.

The first attempt to carry this weapon on the ground was by the U.S. Army in the mid 70s; a 30 KW laser was mounted on a tracked vehicle LVTP-7. In the late 70, the German company Diehl designed a similar prototype called HELEX (High Energy Experimental laser). The U.S. military made other tests with the "Close-Combat Laser Weapon." These unused and often secret weapons is used<sup>186</sup> to produce illusive psychological warfare, illusive radars to deceive the enemy; mark an enemy target to guide a missile or divert an enemy missile toward a false target to explode, cause hallucinations or loss of consciousness in a subject, burn or kill him, disturb or destroy remote electronic or electromechanical equipment; to illuminate an enemy site permanently as day, remove the toxicity of a warfare gas spread by the enemy, by interaction with the plasma product.

Depending on the plasma used, it can have different properties strangely similar to those of witnesses when meeting the first and second type describe. Similarities such as: different colours and metallic, magnetic fields and induced electric fields, X-rays harmful to the nearby witness emit microwaves, the plasma can emit a whistling or buzzing, the plasma emits a shadow and an electric wind force of a gentle breeze, the plasma may be accompanied by a strong odour, characteristic of ozone or nitrogen oxide, plasma, when fallen on the surface burns on contact, or remotely, depending on its temperature.

These various projectors at the plasma background chosen by an elite group seem to elucidate many visions of flying saucers or UFOs. Within the military, there appears to be a division called "men in black" very active during alien appearances.

---

<sup>186</sup> [http://www.ovnis.atfreeweb.com/1\\_technologie\\_plasmas.htm](http://www.ovnis.atfreeweb.com/1_technologie_plasmas.htm)

## 6) The Earthly Flying Saucers

When I am told that two flying saucers were crushed with an alien survivor and a scorched humanoid on July 2, 1947 in Roswell, and that others landed intact on automatic piloting because of loss of pressure during flight in space with twelve (12) aliens and two (2) scorched humanoids in Aztec in 1948, I want to see, for the simple reason that knowing human species and the earthly plot in the making, I doubt these things. To this effect, I explain:

### **Contextualization**

In both cases, a few civilian witnesses and the army arrived almost immediately, at the same time. Both cases occurred in the United States in areas with little population and close to a military base. Several explanations are possible. It is apparent that an occult sect is operating together with fallen angels.

Fallen angels or plasma technology capture the attention of radar. While on the ground through human planning, a crash is provoked with new but typically human materials, all for the attention of some civilians. It is possible that the flying saucer is fake and not even functional. We saw in Chapter 5, Part 5, Section 1 of this book that heavenly bodies have the power to easily transport every material thing or human bodies. This can be a typically earthly technology conveyed by the fallen angels. Already in 1947, 1948, the "money men" had a very advanced technology compared to the one shown to the goyim.

As for the aliens that some witnesses say they saw during these two "Crash", it can be either:

1) Burnt dummies or people wearing a suit put in bags. And what were burnt humans doing in a flying saucer? Were they perhaps piloting it? Can it be that they were silenced? You know the Illuminati create wars. Unfortunately, of what importance are two men in their Great Work, or the lives of some children or small people?

2) It may be fallen angels. When they seem to die like men, they dematerialize.

3) It may be manipulation or genetic mutation, through radioactivity, by modifying DNA or plastic surgery done in secret labs. This DNA technology is known only by a group of initiates. After all it is known that Germans did much research in this direction. This technology was only discovered in 1953 by Goyim researchers. But in secret, when was it actually discovered? The Internet was invented in the early 1960s by the Rand, but the technology was made available to the Goyims in 1995.

4) This could have been tests for the SILVER BUG or AVRO CAR projects which did not work well and to which they voluntarily modified through electro-magnetism, staging and well integrated dramaturgy.

As for the film<sup>187</sup> in the hands of a man named Santilli, seeing the dissection of an alien in Roswell, the army did not approve it. All medical personnel are covered and non-unrecognizable, organs are identical and at the same locations as those of humans. What would be the possibility of an alien race to have different shapes but with identical organs at the same places as humans? The answer was none. Mr. Santilli has never wanted to say how he got the film, because in this case, charges of mutilation of a corpse or even worse could be laid. Charles Berlitz and William Moore<sup>188</sup> published a book on the Roswell incident, in which they produced a photograph of a small humanoid with a breathing mask, flanked by two MP (Military Police), their document was supposed to validate the observation of Roy Musser. After investigation, the world learned that he was a hoax journalist. Indeed, these pictures were taken April 1, 1950, they had made a photomontage from a photograph showing a child entrusted to two MP. Seeing himself unmasked, Moore also acknowledged that the story of the Aztec crash was set up by crooks.

Probably something really happened in Roswell in 1947 and 1948 in Aztec. But it's certainly not something from another world. A beautiful staging with the complicity of the army in the drama will suffice. Do not worry, if aliens were real, unlike the UFO theory, we would have been told, this would not be a secret. If the U.S. government and all other governments were silent, it will mean that they are under the control of the Illuminati. The strategy of silence is intended to make

---

<sup>187</sup> <sup>187</sup>Video: "Roswell mystery."

<sup>188</sup> <sup>188</sup>C. Berlitz and W. Moore, "The Roswell Incident", op cit

us believe more in lies. They will never show us a mechanical UFO practically for everybody to analyze the components, because from that moment, the Goyim will know that this is an earthly technology and that they have been fooled by an occult group.

## 7) Summary

The ILLUMINATI, prevents the goyim from evolving by maintaining their control over the revolutionary technological inventions. In this way, it controls technological evolution in the domain of energy networks and payable communications. By owning the global media, it lies to us shamelessly by preventing the truth from being revealed in broad daylight: "CHRIST IS THE TRUTH, AND THE HOLY GOD, HE IS THE SAVIOUR OF THE WORLD" The ILLUMINATI is deceiving people to make them fall into the great seduction when the RAPTURE OF THE CHURCH AND THE FIRST PART OF THE RESSURECTION OF THE RIGHTEOUS will occur.

The Bible in Genesis and Nehemiah chapter nine, verse six, assures us that we are alone as human beings, but the ILLUMINATI tell us that celestial bodies and humans exist and gives them their respective limitations. The great seduction of UFOs is partly manned by fallen angels, partly by earthly people with more advanced technology within a small group leading our governments. Sometimes both work together, in a common agreement with their fake god, the father of lies.

If UFOs were real, you would have been told for a good reason: it would have been the ideal way to shake the faith of our fathers. Also, admitting that to the goyims, they would have shown what they have as evidence, and the goyim could analyze the technical specifications and proofs. Then the goyim would know that UFOs are an earthly technology or coming from fallen angels. Men of the earth be smart and wise, do not be seduced. Now, read the Word of God, the Bible. And as God tells you in (2 Timothy 3: 15) "And that from a child you have known the holy scriptures, which are able to make you wise to salvation through faith which is in Christ Jesus"

## CONCLUSION OF CHAPTER FIVE

We have first of all seen how the enemy sneaked into a church controlled by unregenerate men and fruits that the Roman Catholic Church has left the nations, ruin, its depravity and poor quality of its ministers, its teaching and the severe yoke she has put on peoples of the earth with its Inquisition. Secondly, we examined how an unknown church called Cathar went through great persecutions in the past. How she managed to spread the full gospel to all nations of the earth today. We saw how democracy, human rights and freedoms were born thanks to the blood and ideals of the men of faith. Then we studied the religion, the method of recruitment and the Luciferian plan of the ILLUMINATI. Then we analyzed the modus operandi of the future visible world government in the form of UNO. Subsequently, in Part V, we exposed the big lie of UFOs, their origin and source.

At this point the reader understands that by hiding free energy from men, the ILLUMINATI completely hijacked their independence and well-being and this for the entire planet. These discoveries were made by Christians. Today, each man would have had his dwelling, conservatory and all utilities for their welfare. With this free energy, all men would eat to their satisfaction. Men would be independent, autonomous and would not be at the mercy of the world of money. The ILLUMINATI is responsible for all wars, hunger and unemployment, chaos in the world, pollution and destruction of our planet with the blessing of our governments which protect it. God, in his time will give you his judgment. This leads us to the introduction my Holy God to you in a more intimate way.

# CHAPTER VI

## Forgiveness in Jesus-Christ

The objective of this chapter is to bring light into the hearts of all who seek God sincerely. This book would NEVER have been written had I not believed in Him. I believe in a way, not depriving myself of the things I like doing as long as they please Him, but to live in Him freely. Also, this chapter is divided into five sections:

- Nothing unclean shall enter my house
- Salvation through Jesus Christ
- The power of the blood of Jesus Christ
- Works
- Juxtaposition of the doctrines of Justification and Sanctification, and other Biblical doctrines

### **SECTION 1 - Nothing unclean shall enter in my house**

From all eternity, God is total Holiness; He is total good and absolute perfection. In God we are sure to always have justice. In this way, in the kingdom of God, those who on earth preferred good to evil, and having the admission ticket in the person of Jesus Christ shall be saints in a spiritual body, ie an incorruptible and celestial body. All these verses testify to the glory and holiness of God.

Are You not from everlasting, O Lord my God, my Holy One?...

(Habakkuk 1: 12, first part of verse)

Or

Hear, all you peoples! Listen, O earth, and all that is in it! Let the Lord  
God be a witness against you, The Lord from His holy temple.

(Micah 1: 2)

Or

God has spoken in His holiness: "I will rejoice  
(Psalms 60: 8, first part of verse)

Or

Who is like You, O Lord, among the gods? Who is like You, glorious  
in holiness, Fearful in praises, doing wonders? (  
Exodus 15: 11)

Or

You shall also make a plate of pure gold and engrave on it, like the  
engraving of a signet: HOLINESS TO THE LORD.  
(Exodus 28: 36)

God cannot let any unclean or sinful thing in His house. Indeed, the acceptance of a single sin in His world means the end of holiness and of good against an eternal life in sin with the result being total decay. Do we want this? Certainly not, the Kingdom of God will be Total Good where all men help each other, respect each other and think about their neighbours in the presence of the Glory of God. There shall be perfection, total happiness and eternal life. For this reason, God prefers to bring to judgment people who do not come to him for salvation. For the wages of sin is death but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord (Romans 6: 23) Men who fall in this latter situation without having given their lives to Jesus Christ have no Saviour to wash their sins. The SON OF GOD gave Himself once and for all in a world of the living. Because in our living bodies He could live with us being HOLY, SPOTLESS and SINLESS and brought to life by God the Father because HE WAS HOLY. That is why He can put HIS HOLY SPIRIT IN US and SEAL us for the REDEMPTION. GOD cannot do anything for the dead, because they belong to the world of sin. He cannot give His HOLY SON a second time in their condition, because their condition is sin, and it is eternal. There is nothing more to do for these dead souls without hope. Moreover, it would be interesting to read books on Christian and non-Christian clinical death. Christians do not want to return to the living world because they are full of joy and happiness. When non-Christians have the chance to come and seek God, this becomes



the center of their lives. Apparently, they arrive in a single file, with all heads down in darkness, total solitude and a fire that consumes them. Good people, who follow and accept Jesus Christ as a restoration plan, will live forever in His presence as He promised us. Therefore, God exclaims:

...For the uncircumcised and the unclean Shall no longer come to you.  
(Isaiah 52: 1, the third part of verse)

Or

But there shall by no means enter it anything that defiles, or causes an abomination or a lie, but only those who are written in the Lamb's Book of Life.  
(Revelation 21: 27)

The transition to the eternal Kingdom is a cleansing of our sins in Holy Blood, spotless and pure. The Atonement is His only Son Jesus Christ.

**24** Now to Him who is able to keep you from stumbling, And to present you faultless Before the presence of His glory with exceeding joy, **25** To God our Savior, Who alone is wise, Be glory and majesty, Dominion and power, Both now and forever. Amen.  
(Jude 1:24-25)

Some will say, how can we see this? It is clear that we can make a decision on the person of Jesus in three ways: firstly, by looking at prophecies of His coming in the Word of God and secondly, obviously Jesus Christ accomplished Works that no other god has made on earth. To which man did God give the right to consider himself God, to wipe out the sins of men and make the miracles that Jesus made on earth? None, it's because He was God that He could wipe out the sins of men and operate these miracles. Thirdly, by reading the Bible, the Word of God, or by listening to it being read if we cannot read, we realize that Jesus to speak and act in this way was totally HOLY and was God. All his actions and gestures testify to this effect.

## SECTION 2 – Salvation through Jesus Christ

Can we go to heaven by our works without Jesus Christ? The Bible tells us:

**10** As it is written: "There is none righteous, no, not one; **11** There is none who understands; There is none who seeks after God. **12** They have all turned aside; They have together become unprofitable; There is none who does good, no, not one."

(Romans 3:10-12)

Romans 3:23 also tells us "for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God".

The fall of Adam and Eve, transferred all the powers that God had given man to Satan. Now, every man carries in his genes the mark of sin. The Law of Moses in the Old Testament and the Sermon Jesus Christ did on the Mountain in the New Testament teach man what sin is.

Now, what man does not know is the fact that lust is bad; sharing is good, truth is good and so on. The various actions of our heart are categorized in our consciousness. Therefore, every human on earth sins at some point in his life, even if only in thought. Certainly men who are more religious than me, have a more arranged life than mine, but because they will be a sin in their lives, they will be considered non-regenerated. Therefore, they will be banned forever from the sight of God

That is the wage of sin which proves that all men sin in their lives. One who is a stranger to that has never sinned in his life and does not need God to be saved.

For the wages of sin is death...

(Romans 6:23, first part of verse)

You will surely agree with me that men who are not subject to this law of nature, death, are rare. Indeed, it is a physical death and a spiritual condemnation. So we need a Saviour to help us out of this sad situation, death and eternal damnation.

Who is the Saviour?

**16** When He had been baptized, Jesus came up immediately from the water; and behold, the heavens were opened to Him, and He saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove and alighting upon Him. **17** And suddenly a voice came from heaven, saying, "This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased."

(Matthew 3:16-17)

Yet, the perfect man, sinless, who lived a life without reproach and without stain in the eyes of God, is Jesus Christ. Jesus as man was tempted throughout his life: in the desert before his arrest and on the cross when He was forsaken by God for us. But throughout his life he remained subject to the Father and committed no sin. Because Jesus Christ was HOLY, He did not need any intermediary. He was able to return to God without dying physically during his lifetime and He showed this during transfiguration.

God required a sacrifice without blemish to deliver the souls of men held by physical death. Indeed, the souls of men were held in the grave since all had sinned and were thus deprived of the glory of God. Before Jesus' sacrifice, death blocked all between God and men. It was necessary that a God transformed into man, dies by bearing the sins of all men in order to open the passage to the captive souls of hell. That is the souls of men who died in the hope of a Saviour.

Jesus, in His great love for man, was on the cross and suffered since his flesh hurt Him. Before dying, he said, "My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me?" (Matthew 27:46)

Obviously, Jesus was abandoned by his father because at that time, Jesus was bearing the sins of all men on him and the relationship with God the Father was broken and was forsaken by God. Soon after, he said before he died.

And when Jesus had cried out with a loud voice, He said, "Father, 'into Your hands I commit My spirit.' " Having said this, He breathed His last. (Luke 23:46)

Apostle John said that Jesus also said:

"It is finished!"  
(John 19: 30)

All the prophecies between 535 and 1000 years before Christ, announcing the arrival of Jesus, of his life until his death, and proving that he was the son of God, were now fulfilled.

Jesus was buried and descended into Hell, but the last enemy was to be defeated.

The last enemy that will be destroyed is death  
(1 Corinthians 15:26)

Jesus was holy and death, the weapon of Satan, which prevents man from going to God, was destroyed. Death could not hold back Christ and He resurrected since the sacrifice of Jesus was approved by God. Henceforth, there is a corridor in Jesus Christ, which links man to God and God to man. Jesus is the way to go to God.

What to do to be saved by Jesus Christ?

The Bible is quite clear; this is what man must do:

**17** For God did not send His Son into the world to condemn the world, but that the world through Him might be saved. **18** He who believes in Him is not condemned; but he who does not believe is condemned

already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. (John 3:17-18)

Indeed, it is an unconditional salvation. This means going to Jesus Christ and believing that He is the Saviour, the Son of God and accepting that He takes our sin on the cross and save us. Thus, forever, God will be with us through Jesus Christ. Eternal life with God will be given. Jesus did not say that he who believes and does this or does that shall be saved. He said: "He who believes," simply and unconditionally.

Here is the conclusion of the Gospel of John:

**30** And truly Jesus did many other signs in the presence of His disciples, which are not written in this book; **31** but these are written that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God, and that believing you may have life in His name.

(John 20:30-31)

Believe that Jesus is the truth, accept Him in order to be saved from sin and have access, once Death comes to God through Jesus the one Mediator, this is the only will of the Father. Here's what Romans 3: 23-25 tells us about it:

**23** for all have sinned and fall short of the glory of God, **24** being justified freely by His grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus, **25** whom God set forth as a propitiation by His blood, through faith, to demonstrate His righteousness, because in His forbearance God had passed over the sins that were previously committed,

In this sense, the Catholic pope, when he proclaimed himself infallible, lied, because all men are sinners. As a sinner, he is imperfect, fallible. This salvation is only for those who believe in Jesus Christ as their Lord and Saviour.

For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ  
Jesus our Lord.  
(Romans 6:23)

Indeed, the wages of sin is death for all. But since we have a Saviour and Lord Jesus Christ, Jesus will forgive us because He paid for our sins on the cross. Since we will die in this hope, because we believed, we shall be saved from hell and will have eternal life through Jesus Christ while those who did not believe Him will be forever banished from the glory of God.

Jesus is the only Saviour; do the other gods have power?

The Bible says:

Nor is there salvation in any other, for there is no other name under  
heaven given among men by which we must be saved.  
(Acts 4:12)

Only Jesus Christ is the truth and The Saviour. The other masters are impostors. They were sinful men rising to the rank of a prophet or God to mislead souls.

Can anyone forgive our sins in the name of the Lord Jesus?

The biblical answer is NO.

**5** For there is one God and one Mediator between God and men, the  
Man Christ Jesus, **6** who gave Himself a ransom for all, to be testified  
in due time,  
(1Timothy 2:5-6)

A priest cannot take the sins of men on him and present it through the Pope or directly to God. The man who for fear of God would do that would be at fault vis-à-vis God or

does not understand the real meaning of God's sacrifice on the cross. On the contrary, if a brother in the Lord sees another brother or sister in sin, he can pray to God that this brother or sister in the Lord be forgiven, but it must be a forgivable sin (1 John 5: 16).

Similarly, if someone prays to God through the saints, that prayer is worthless. A prayer to be received by God must go through the one mediator, Jesus Christ.

The Bible was written by men and men are sinners, is it then credible?

God the Holy Spirit has always watched over His Book. The Old Testament was written in Hebrew and Aramaic and the New Testament in Greek. The seal of God was on all books. The figure of God is 7, and is a perfect number. Now all the Hebrew writings are presented in groups of seven words and verses are multiplied by 7. Greek Scriptures presenting the New Covenant by the blood of Jesus Christ offered as a free gift for the sins of men, were rendered confusing by false books that had been infiltrated. Among these Books, we find the writings of Mary, Judas and the Apocryphes which contradicted the teachings and writings of the apostles. But always there, we could verify their veracity through the seal that God has put on His Book, the figure seven. The other Books not having this seal were therefore false and illegitimate. This is what God said

All Scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness,  
(2 Timothy 3:16)

Or

**8** Beware lest anyone cheat you through philosophy and empty deceit, according to the tradition of men, according to the basic principles of the world, and not according to Christ. **9** For in Him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily;  
(Colossians 2:8-9)

Many people speak of a religion and even quote Jesus. They preach for their power, they base their religion on traditions and human rudiments. The Roman Catholic Church is based on traditions and human rudiments. Beware! Unite with Christ and His Word, you will not be confused. In the days of Paul, Churches made the same mistake:

**6** I marvel that you are turning away so soon from Him who called you in the grace of Christ, to a different gospel, **7** which is not another; but there are some who trouble you and want to pervert the gospel of Christ. **8** But even if we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel to you than what we have preached to you, let him be accursed. **9** As we have said before, so now I say again, if anyone preaches any other gospel to you than what you have received, let him be accursed.  
(Galatians 1:6-9)

You see how it is important to follow the Bible and not to turn away so as not to be misled by false doctrines! Some religions make false bibles, or add false information to it, such as: the Mormons, Jehovah's Witnesses, Seventh Day Adventists and Christian Science. Paul even says:

**1** Moreover, brethren, I declare to you the gospel which I preached to you, which also you received and in which you stand, **2** by which also you are saved, if you hold fast that word which I preached to you-- unless you believed in vain.  
(1Corinthians 15:1-2)

Our responsibility as believers:

**9** that if you confess with your mouth the Lord Jesus and believe in your heart that God has raised Him from the dead, you will be saved.  
**10** For with the heart one believes unto righteousness, and with the



mouth confession is made unto salvation. **11** For the Scripture says,  
"Whoever believes on Him will not be put to shame."  
(Romans 10:9-11)

Here, the word "confess" refers to preaching the gospel and doctrine of baptism. At the time of the apostles, when someone believed in the Lord Jesus, he was baptized because he voluntarily accepted the free gift of Jesus Christ. Today, the Catholic religion baptizes people at birth, without their consent, parents making an act of faith for them. One day, when you ask them: "Who is Jesus Christ"? If they say they believe that Jesus Christ is the son of God and want to belong to Him, only then should they be baptized. This is their act of confession. Baptism does not affect salvation but faith is essential for the Christian to be saved. To believe that Jesus is the Son of God is good but that does not assure us eternal life. The word "believe" does not only mean "to know" but also "to desire to belong", "accept the gift" that he made by His blood shed for us. Because there are a variety of feelings expressed in the meaning of this word in Greek, while the English or French translation of "believe", limits it to "knowing".

Satan believes that Jesus is the Son of God, but he will not be saved either. Some men believe that Jesus is the Son of God but prefer Satan or try to have salvation through personal efforts. To attain eternal life, a man must repent, as it is an essential gesture according to the definition of the word "believe." This feeling of a deep state of sin is essential for justification or the salvation of the person who wishes to be saved. The Lord says:

I tell you, no; but unless you repent you will all likewise perish. (Luke 13:3)

To repent, we must accept and sincerely approve the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross.

### **During the 1850s, a farmer was talking to a priest**

Priest: - Ernest! What are you doing, we do not see you anymore at Mass on Sunday.

Ernest: - Father, I read the Bible and Jesus said "Whoever believes in me has eternal life." I believe in him and now I am sure to go to Heaven. I decided to worship in my house; there are issues that are not clear in the Church.

Priest: - But see Ernest, you've misunderstood. You are committing the sin of pride by believing that God guarantees you eternal life, you are a sinner.

Ernest: - Father, do you think you will go to heaven, you?

Priest: - Well, if I do good by my works, may be God will take me with Him.

Ernest: - Priest! Who is more proud, I who say am a total sinner, without Jesus, who accepts the free gift of Christ, and who believe in eternal life as Jesus himself promised, or you who say that by your works, you may go to heaven?

Can anyone be banished from God if he wants to be saved?

You know, we are all sinners. If an unclean spirit goes after us, it will make us to fall often. Alas! in very subtle sins that we do not yet suspect, because they would not come to our mind to date. The answer is:

**35** And Jesus said to them, "I am the bread of life. He who comes to Me shall never hunger, and he who believes in Me shall never thirst.

**36** But I said to you that you have seen Me and yet do not believe. **37** All that the Father gives Me will come to Me, and the one who comes to Me I will by no means cast out. (John 6:35- 37)

If you believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Saviour of men and want to accept Him, then, no sin is powerful enough not to be purified by the blood of the Lamb, Jesus Christ. God did not say "I will not cast out anyone who comes to me and who will do or will be...." No, He unconditionally said: "I will not cast out anyone who comes to me."

Even if you have made a pact with Satan and have given him your soul, Jesus Christ will forgive you, if you accept in your lifetime that precious blood on the cross for you.

## **The unforgivable sin**

There is an unforgivable sin and it is the only sin that God will not forgive, it is blasphemy against the Holy Spirit.

28 "Assuredly, I say to you, all sins will be forgiven the sons of men, and whatever blasphemies they may utter; 29 but he who blasphemes against the Holy Spirit never has forgiveness, but is subject to eternal condemnation"-- 30 because they said, "He has an unclean spirit." (Mark 3:28-30)

If someone reads the Bible, becomes aware of the truth, sees the works of God, then, draws the conclusion that Jesus was an impostor, a liar, an intelligent man, a prophet, a master or an alien. So, by going astray on the subject of Christ's personality and remaining in this belief until his death, he blasphemes the Spirit of Grace by rejecting Him. At his death, he is left with nothing, for he rejected the way to go to God, a sin punishable with death. Since in his lifetime no one can intercede for him at his death he enters into judgment.

If anyone sees his brother sinning a sin which does not lead to death, he will ask, and He will give him life for those who commit sin not leading to death. There is sin leading to death. I do not say that he should pray about that.

(1 John 5: 16)

We can only overcome death and have eternal life if we accept the precious gift of God's sacrifice on the cross. In short, we must believe in the sacrifice of Christ on the cross and his divinity.

Many sincere believers all their lives will be paralyzed by the fear of having committed this unforgivable sin. Often it is the only way that the enemy has to prevent them from having an active Christian life on earth. The enemy in his subtlety goes to the extent of offering all sorts of

rejection possibilities in their human spirit. It is impossible for a brother or sister who believes in Jesus Christ as the truth and has handed his/her sins to the Lord through repentance to be lost again. Faith does not come from us but from God, and that's our guarantee that we belong to Him for eternity. We will see why in Chapter 7.

Can a man claim that it's through him that we can reach God?

A man cannot forgive the sins of another man or group of men, for there is only one Sacrifice and one Mediator, namely Jesus Christ. We all need to come face to face with God the Son to be saved.

Is there any man or woman who was Saint? No one can be saved without passing through Jesus Christ. All are sinners, including Mary, Joseph, John, Denis, and all other saints of the family of Jesus. If Jesus Christ had not died for us, we could not go to Heaven. Did Mary not say "I am the servant of the Lord?" Moreover, Mary wrote a short Psalms in which she declared her position as a sinner before God.

**46** And Mary said: "My soul magnifies the Lord, **47** And my spirit has rejoiced in God my Savior. **48** For He has regarded the lowly state of His maidservant;...  
(Luke 1: 46-48)

As you can see, Mary calls Jesus her Saviour. This is proof par excellence that Mary as a human needed the sacrifice of Jesus for her salvation.

**27** And it happened, as He spoke these things, that a certain woman from the crowd raised her voice and said to Him, "Blessed is the womb that bore You, and the breasts which nursed You!" **28** But He said, "More than that, blessed are those who hear the word of God and keep it!"  
(Luke 11:27-28)

Those who keep the words of God are those who accept for themselves the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross. God forgives all and rejects no one who comes to Him. If you do not believe, you make God a liar and you get into judgment. If you believe, you will not be confused. God the Son is Just, He is the Truth.

### SECTION 3 - The power of the blood of Jesus Christ

During the period defined by the Old Testament, God sanctified his people by the blood of a lamb. The most beautiful animals were usually chosen and the High priest entered the temple and God answered the priest to say, if He approved or refused the sacrifice that He was offered for the sins of the people. If the sacrifice was approved, the sins were blotted out of the midst of the people and God forgot forever. Under this rule, it took several sacrifices. In addition, they were earthly and their power was limited.

But Jesus, the only Son of God, his beloved, became man; He alone, just, set foot on the earth. His blood was shed on the cross of Calvary and the Sacrifice was accepted by God for ever. Anyone who goes to Jesus Christ to be cleansed of sin by the precious blood is saved. That's why the Bible says:

**22** by so much more Jesus has become a surety of a better covenant. **23** Also there were many priests, because they were prevented by death from continuing. **24** But He, because He continues forever, has an unchangeable priesthood. **25** Therefore He is also able to save to the uttermost those who come to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession for them. (Hebrews 7:22-25)

Or

how much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, cleanse your conscience from dead works to serve the living God?  
(Hebrews 9:14)

### **The power of salvation lies in the blood of Christ**

Since the fall of Adam and Eve, the earth, nature and man were defiled by sin. No man was just because all the bloodshed on earth was defiled. But Jesus by shedding His Just blood on the cross for the sins of man cleansed all the stains caused by sin, provided that man, as a unique individual, accepts this sacrifice or the free gift of eternal life. That's why the Bible says:

In Him we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of His grace (Ephesians 1:7)

Or

**18** knowing that you were not redeemed with corruptible things, like silver or gold, from your aimless conduct received by tradition from your fathers, **19** but with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.  
(1 Peter 1:18-19)

Or

and from Jesus Christ, the faithful witness, the firstborn from the dead, and the ruler over the kings of the earth. To Him who loved us and washed us from our sins in His own blood,  
(Revelation 1:5)

It can happen to anyone in life that Satan, the accuser of our souls harasses him. Some are non-believers and want to come to Christ but are prevented by some sins; some are believers but feel unworthy of Jesus Christ, a situation which deprives them of joy in their relationship with God.

When the accuser comes to us and accuses us in our conscience, we say: "It is true, I've probably done all of that" So, let's present ourselves to Christ, soiled, and let's plunge into his blood, knowing that we will emerge unsullied. Then we say to ourselves, "Ha Yes! I will commit other sins, but this blood will cleanse me as I sin" Let's see what the Bible attests:

But if we walk in the light as He is in the light, we have fellowship with one another, and the blood of Jesus Christ His Son cleanses us from all sin.

(1 John 1:7)

No sin is unforgivable if we belong to Jesus Christ, but this action can only be posed by the will of the individual. Here is a nice illustration of the role of Jesus Christ against sin.

**1** Then he showed me Joshua the high priest standing before the Angel of the Lord, and Satan standing at his right hand to oppose him. **2** And the Lord said to Satan, "The Lord rebuke you, Satan! The Lord who has chosen Jerusalem rebuke you! Is this not a brand plucked from the fire?" **3** Now Joshua was clothed with filthy garments, and was standing before the Angel. **4** Then He answered and spoke to those who stood before Him, saying, "Take away the filthy garments from him." And to him He said, "See, I have removed your iniquity from you, and I will clothe you with rich robes." **5** And I said, "Let them put a clean turban on his head." So they put a clean turban on his head, and they put the clothes on him. And the Angel of the Lord stood by.

(Zechariah 3:1-5)

Who do you think is the angel of the Lord here? Jesus did the same for all who accept Him with His precious blood. Also, he can tell us whether we are in Him.

As far as the east is from the west, So far has He removed our transgressions from us.

(Psalms 103:12)

Or

...For I will forgive their iniquity, and their sin I will remember no more." (Jeremiah 31:34)

Or

"I, even I, am He who blots out your transgressions for My own sake; And I will not remember your sins.

(Isaiah 43:25)

Any man who accepts the precious blood of Christ is certain to belong to the Lord forever. Now, Henceforth, God no longer sees him a sinner but a Saint through the blood of His Son, Jesus Christ. From the moment the gesture is made, God no longer remembers our sins, only the accuser will make us guilty, but there is no more judgment.

## SECTION 4 - Works

Does the simple belief that Jesus Christ is the Son of God give us eternal life?

As previously mentioned, the word "believe" expresses a lot of sentiments in the Greek language. One of the most comprehensive definitions of the word "believe" would be: being accused in our consciousness and deep desire to make peace with good, spontaneously, sincerely and forever. Sincerely seek the truth. Also, God the Holy Spirit confronts all man with this question: "Who is



Jesus Christ?" One who recognizes his weakness in the face of evil and wants to come to perfection, admits his sin, repents and be converted to Jesus Christ. That is why the Bible says:

Repent therefore and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out,...  
(Acts 3:19)

Repentance tells the sinner's inability to do only good. He understands by so doing that it shall be impossible for him to enter God's presence. Since God is holy. God agrees to reconcile us to Him on the condition that we ask Jesus His Son take upon Himself our sins and ask Him to save us forever by His precious blood shed on the cross of Calvary. This act of faith makes us pure in God's eyes and assures us our eternal salvation in holiness. God recognizes no other party for the redemption of our sins, the other false gods or prophets are impostors and therefore they are excluded from the circuit.

Therefore we must analyze this word "believe" in light of two doctrines: that of the justification and of sanctification. So, can we better define what is considered as work in the Lord? Here is what Jesus thinks of those who say they believe in Him:

**21** "Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' shall enter the kingdom of heaven, but he who does the will of My Father in heaven.  
**22** Many will say to Me in that day, 'Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name, cast out demons in Your name, and done many wonders in Your name?' **23** And then I will declare to them, 'I never knew you; depart from Me, you who practice lawlessness!' **24** "Therefore whoever hears these sayings of Mine, and does them, I will liken him to a wise man who built his house on the rock:  
(Matthew 7:21-24)

You can do miracles, cast out demons and establish religions based on Jesus Christ. God watches over His holy name. If someone invokes the Name, it has authority to heal, perform miracles and

cast out demons. Some people use the name of Jesus Christ to establish dogmas; they deform the Gospel, remove its power, and poorly instruct those who follow them. The power of the Gospel is eternal life for those who accept Christ's sacrifice on Calvary. It is a personal salvation and commitment of the heart. Anyone who will call the name of Jesus Christ and who has not entered into this commitment will be rejected out of his sight. And woe to us because the Bible says:

And as it is appointed for men to die once, but after this the judgment,  
(Hebrews 9:27)

Let us not be seduced by the idea of reincarnation and let's not postpone the answers to questions that arise today. Otherwise, some will be bitterly disappointed and die having never taken a position on Jesus Christ.

### **Work:**

This book that I have written is a work. I do not know if it will be published. But I hope, and if it were, I would be grateful to the publishers. I have invested many years of my life writing and polishing this book. If the Lord could grant you the grace to read it, it would be my joy. In terms of the work, I let the Lord decide what use he wants to make of it as a tool of evangelism. Of course, I would love that many people be affected by reading and accepting the Lord by comparing the Word of God to this work. Already, the joy that people can read what my faith in the Lord has produced, will be the most that I can ask the Lord as earthly salary. Believe me!

The only thing that the Father expects of man is to accept the gift of His Son who paid the debt of our sin on the cross. Those that do it will be saved forever. This is what God confirms in His Word and this unconditionally. Jesus asks nothing in return. Thereafter, if you want to do works, you can. But you are not obliged to do, they will account for your sanctification, they shall be used to determine your Heavenly reward. Here is what the Bible says:

**11** For no other foundation can anyone lay than that which is laid, which is Jesus Christ. **12** Now if anyone builds on this foundation with gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, straw, **13** each one's work will

become clear; for the Day will declare it, because it will be revealed by fire; and the fire will test each one's work, of what sort it is. **14** If anyone's work which he has built on it endures, he will receive a reward. **15** If anyone's work is burned, he will suffer loss; but he himself will be saved, yet so as through fire.

(1 Corinthians 3:11-15)

The foundation is Jesus Christ. Me, Denis Boivin, I confirm that I accepted the gift of Jesus Christ on the cross. I repent of being a sinner, I ask him to take my sin, save me, and resurrect me. I put all that in His hands. The foundation, Jesus Christ, is forever embedded in my life. He is eternal. The result, I will dwell forever with Him in Heaven.

A while ago, I presented this book as a work. But if my real goal was dictated by pride or greed, what do you think will happen to my work when it will be tested by fire? If I did it for my own benefit, it will be consumed. On the contrary, it will be blessed by God if I have acted in the name of Jesus and so, I will receive a heavenly reward.

But even if all my works are destroyed, I have my act of faith, acceptance of Jesus Christ in my heart that gives me eternal life. So I am saved as through fire. If someone accepts the Lord Jesus and does not work, he will still be saved, the Bible being formal about it. God witnesses to us too, but this is hypothetical. Given that confessing the Lord is a work just as this book that was written to the glory of God, every born-again Christian therefore does works.

What happens if someone does works without the foundation?

Some people believe in God in a very sincere manner, their morality and conduct are often better than a Christian. Yet they deny the identity of Jesus as God. When they talk about Jesus, they say, "I listen to my conscience which dictates good and evil to me. I believe in God, whatever his name is, Jesus Christ, Buddha or whatever. It's the same thing and I believe in him." At this point, it would be good to make a first rebuttal on the person of Jesus Christ and then be silent if there is opposition because there is no need to persist. But that's not what God says.

God sent us His only Son, Jesus Christ in order that all men recognize Him and go to Him for salvation. Jesus Christ is the sacrifice that God asked to clear the stain of sin that man committed. Jesus, the Just, is the only one that God chose. Also, if man goes to the Lord Jesus Christ to be saved by accepting his sacrifice, God promises that this man will be saved and will have eternal life. Here's what the Word of God attests:

4 Now to him who works, the wages are not counted as grace but as debt. 5 But to him who does not work but believes on Him who justifies the ungodly, his faith is accounted for righteousness, (Romans 4:4-5)

God says if we do a work, we owe it to Him. But if we believe in His Son Jesus Christ and accept his sacrifice, we will merit eternal life. Now, if someone does a work for God without wanting to believe in Jesus Christ, he will not be saved and his work will not be of any benefit to him.

### **Differentiation between work and the sin of work**

#### **SCENARIO 1**

A man believes in the Lord Jesus Christ and accepts the free gift of God, then does works.

1) If the work is done to the Glory of God, it will be weighed and he will receive a heavenly reward.

2) If the work is done to glorify himself, his work shall be burned, but he will be saved.

#### **SCENARIO 2**

If a man does not accept the free gift of Jesus Christ on the cross but does much works in the name of God, he would try to strike a balance. To do more good than evil gives eternal life; to do more evil than good leads to hell. But this man cannot do good all his life. One day or another, he

will sin in thought or action and will need someone to redeem his sin. If he does not go to Jesus Christ to redeem his sin by accepting Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour, he will remain in his sin and will be deprived of the glory of God forever. After death, darkness will be his home forever. That is why Jesus Christ came to the world.

Truly, this is the fundamental difference between the Catholic Church on one side, and that of brothers and Protestants on the other. The brothers backed by the Scriptures said that every man is sinful and must be washed by the blood of Christ, asking Christ on the Cross to take his sin and save him. This is called repentance and acceptance of the sacrifice of Christ to pay the penalty of sin in our place. Because the sinner cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Following this, God justifies the man by sealing the Holy Spirit in him under grace. Then he is sanctified, it means that God performs major changes in this body and renew its nature. Henceforth, he does good works to glorify God by His Son Jesus Christ who saved him.

On the other side, the Catholic Church tells people: do good. If you do more good than evil, may be you will go to God. This means that if the faithful do good works, they can save themselves. Whereas the Bible says: for you to be saved, you must accept that Jesus bears your sin on your behalf. On our own, it is impossible to lead a sinless life. Just one sin deprives us of the glory of God forever. Only Jesus can bear that sin for us on the cross because He alone is righteous before God. If a man gives his sins to Jesus, he will enter the kingdom of heaven. If a man attempts to enter the kingdom of God by his good works, even though he may know Jesus, but relying on all his good works to get in, he will be rejected because he must have committed some sins in his life no matter how little that will deprive him of eternal life. No one can go to God without being justified by the Son, ie Jesus Christ.

## SUMMARY

Through His sacrifice on the cross Jesus saved all men, regardless of their sins. To have access to eternal life, man must repent and accept the sacrifice of the Son of God, Jesus Christ, on the cross. Both of these actions express the biblical sense of the word "believe."

## SECTION 5 - Juxtaposition of the doctrines of Justification and Sanctification, and the other doctrines mentioned by Jesus Christ

Many Christians do not understand that the role of these two doctrines is juxtaposed, that is to say we cannot be sanctified without being justified, or justified without being sanctified.

### 1) Justification

Justification is the simple acceptance of Christ's sacrifice on the cross and the desire to belong to him as a person. This is a personal and simple gesture from a sincere heart. From the moment somebody makes this gesture, the Holy Spirit enters into his heart and puts the seal of God in him. This person is sure on the part of God to live in His Kingdom. He has eternal life through the precious blood of Christ poured out for him on the cross of Calvary. Moreover, the Bible says:

In Him you also trusted, after you heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation; in whom also, having believed, you were sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise,  
(Ephesians 1:13)

Or

And do not grieve the Holy Spirit of God, by whom you were sealed for the day of redemption. (Ephesians 4:30)

But what happens to a murderer who publicly accepts Jesus Christ and continues to do the same job after his conversion? Is he saved? It is not for the Christian to judge. Sanctification begins

where the act of faith that gives justification finishes, eternal life. The Holy Spirit which enters in the person will convince him to change his job, you can be sure of this. Otherwise, the person would not have made an act of sincere faith and will not be sealed by the Holy Spirit. The elders of the assembly will ask such a person to leave the group after exhortation. Apostle James is formal about the fruit to bear. It is practically impossible not to bear fruit, unless someone who accepts the Lord in agony on his deathbed. All born-again believers must bear fruit. Imagine someone sealed of the Holy Spirit who cannot help doing good works. That is why James said:

But do you want to know, O foolish man, that faith without works is dead?  
(James 2: 20)

If a man has faith, Jesus comes to not wanting to do work, it is useless to engage in his heart because he did not sincere repentance and desire to do good.

Then Peter said to them, "Repent, and let every one of you be baptized in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins; and you shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit.  
(Acts 2:38)

We can say with certainty that without repentance, nobody can be justified before God.

The biblical word "repent" means the recognition of a deep state of sin and the desire to change the situation by going to Jesus Christ.

Subsequently, the acceptance of the sacrifice of Christ on the cross leads the person to be sealed with the seal of the Holy Spirit. The last two acts of faith follow one another but are juxtaposed in time. From that moment the person having sincerely made an act of faith is sure of eternal life through Jesus Christ. He therefore proceeds to the next stage of sanctification.

## 2) Sanctification

Sanctification begins when a person is sealed with the Holy Spirit. In the case of the murderer, repentance having led to justification, by the power of the Holy Spirit there will be a radical change in his lifestyle. God says, "...where sin abounded, grace abounded much more," (Romans 5:20).

These new believers will have great battles to fight against their old nature but the Holy Spirit will triumph in bringing them out of their unsafe lifestyle. Can we expect that the fight be huge? The Holy Spirit alone will decide the way forward but the person will overcome and change, you can be sure! These believers are required to change and it cannot be otherwise, since God watches over His Holy Name. For other saved Christians, God, the Holy Spirit performs the same work. Some will be changed radically, others gradually, and believe me, it's not painful; that's sanctification.

Unfortunately, in the Christian world, there is a religious dogma built on traditions or modern conveniences. The new converts are expected to refrain from this or that. Some are indoctrinated and are conditioned to make life difficult and unpleasant. The poor! They suffer because they try to remove from the lives of believers things that God allows or that the Holy Spirit has not started working. If a Christian wants to stop a weakness and asks God to make him stop this vice, God will hear and glory to God. If another decides to continue, the Spirit of God yet to convince him to abandon, let him continue. To consider this gesture as evil will tantamount to interpreting the word hypocritically. Do you think that there were no alcoholic beverages when the Jews feasted with the Lord? They were, however, big feasts! God allows these things; what He does not allow is that His children become slaves to these things. When God says do not get drunk, that does not mean do not drink. Getting drunk means having disorderly ideas or to be almost "dead drunk" to be in direct opposition with pleasure.

Some Christians have twisted minds in everything. When God said, "Do not spare the rod for your son," this does not mean to beat him with a rod until he has scars. This means when your



child hurts, correct him by rebuking. Do it alone and if necessary, give him a spanking to the measure of his endurance with fatherly love.

This also applies to people who try to take the place of the Holy Spirit. They want to change their imperfections alone; they are unable to do so and become discouraged. Leave it to the Holy Spirit! Time will come when the Holy Spirit will get rid of your weakness for all are not weaknesses, they may be useful qualities for the work of the Lord. Do not believe that perfection is of this world.

God is love; we must think and act with love. You see the difference between following a religion and following Christ is that one is based on rigid, harsh and severe human intelligence and the other is controlled by the Holy Spirit, soft and simple. Unless you are in one that is controlled by the Holy Spirit, you will not be saved.

Throughout my book, I have not mentioned any Christian denomination that is better than the other and I've not recommended any particular denomination because there is a religion introduced in each. The real Church is universal and is found in all religions in Jesus Christ. Some of their believers follow a religion, the other, the Spirit. So beware of false Christian doctrines, and attach yourself to the Word of God.

However, to hear the salvation through Jesus Christ, I personally prefer to go to an Evangelical or Baptist Church, but do not waste your time doing religion with those who provoke arguments, telling you not to do this or that, because again, there is much indoctrination. Do not bother about others, talk to Jesus Christ and let the Holy Spirit lead you. It is the only path that makes someone happy in the Lord Jesus.

### **Conversion of a righteous man before God**

Obviously, one of the conversions recognized by the Christian world and detailed in the Bible was that of the thief on the cross. Certainly we can use this conversion to explain the doctrine of justification and of sanctification.

While Jesus was nailed to the cross, an amazing conversion took place. Let's look at the Biblical quotations.

**38** And an inscription also was written over Him in letters of Greek, Latin, and Hebrew: THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS. **39** Then one of the criminals who were hanged blasphemed Him, saying, "If You are the Christ, save Yourself and us." **40** But the other, answering, rebuked him, saying, "Do you not even fear God, seeing you are under the same condemnation? **41** And we indeed justly, for we receive the due reward of our deeds; but this Man has done nothing wrong." **42** Then he said to Jesus, "Lord, remember me when You come into Your kingdom." **43** And Jesus said to him, "Assuredly, I say to you, today you will be with Me in Paradise." (Luke 23: 38-43)

If we observe one by one the steps of conversion, the thief, in his logic, recognized that Jesus was God, "Do not you fear God?" then he recognized that he was Holy, "he has done nothing amiss" then he admitted he was a sinner: "And we indeed justly, for we receive the due reward of our deeds:" and finally he asked Jesus to save him, "Remember Me, when you come into your kingdom" Look at Jesus' response: "truly I say to you, today shall you be with me in paradise." In John chapter nineteen, verse thirty-two and thirty-three, it is written that they broke the legs of the first and second thief. This was a customary practice when they wanted to finish a crucified and cause him to die. When they arrived at Jesus, they saw he was dead and did not break his legs. The sacrifice of Jesus on the Cross, though much more excellent because being holy, perpetual and eternal is a symbolically similar to the Old Testament, since the bones were not broken during atonement sacrifices (see Exodus 12: 46, Number 9: 12). Also fulfilled the prophecy of thousand years ago in Psalms 22: 18 "They divide My garments among them, And for My clothing they cast lots".

This conversion described above shows us that all the stages of justification were fulfilled, namely: to recognize that Jesus is the Truth, know that He is the Saviour and Holy, repent and

demand salvation from God. God sealed him with the Holy Spirit and saved him during the stage of Grace. However, he had a brief sanctification, for he died a few moments after receiving the gift of Eternal Life. Similarly, he was not baptized. He was saved as through fire. Those who are lucky enough to have a long life after conversion should make works worthy to thank Jesus for saving them. In this way, they amass a great reward in heaven. As a Christian, God has given us doctrines to comply with, so, let's study them.

### **3) Other biblical doctrines**

The various other biblical doctrines do not affect eternal salvation, they are: Baptism, the Lord's Supper, marriage, and the imposition of hands. Failure to have concern for these doctrines requested by God considerably moves the born-again Christian away from God. Also, it would be to our advantage to be interested in them in order to enhance our relationship with God in a more intimate and personal atmosphere. Disobedience to a doctrine inevitably affects our Christian life.

#### **Baptism**

Baptism has a symbolic meaning in the sense that it is a public confession, meaning that the born-again Christian is willing to die with Christ and to be resurrected with Him.

buried with Him in baptism, in which you also were raised with Him  
through faith in the working of God, who raised Him from the dead.  
(Colossians 2: 12)

During the days of Jesus, baptism was practiced during conversion, as public testimony of obedience to God. Unfortunately, around the year 400, the Catholic Church trying to quickly have many faithful instituted the baptism of young children. A child cannot believe, so, many nominal Catholics are actually unregenerate Christians. The Bible is formal a child born into the family of born-again Christian parents is protected by the faith of Christian parents or parent (1 Corinthians 7: 14), until he is old enough to make a choice. On the day of choice, he accepts or refuses.

Therefore, the young adult would be baptized, if he accepts for himself the sacrifice of Jesus Christ on the cross. Morals therefore changed because of a Church whose head is unregenerate and misappropriated the name of Christ. This Biblical doctrine, baptism, was passed down from the Cathar Churches; however, many Catholics who come to Christ through the Word of Truth refuse adult baptism, claiming that their infant baptism was good. When looking into the New Testament about the doctrine of baptism, we see that there is no baptism performed on young children. All baptisms take place during conversion to Christ, consensual, the following verses prove it: Acts 2: 41, Acts 8: 12, Acts 9: 18, Acts 10: 48, Acts 18: 8, Acts 19: 5, Romans 6: 4, 1 Peter 3: 21. This refusal to cross this barrier results in a spiritual barrier and as a result, several regenerated Christians by this gesture remain committed to a religion which give them very little teachings about the victory in Jesus Christ. It would be so much easier to take that step and become free as a child of God, free from the heavy taboos of religion, sometimes strongly opposed to Christ.

### **Holy Communion**

The Lord's Supper is the remembrance of Christ's sacrifice on the cross of Calvary. God giving His body and His blood for our sins on the cross. Depending on the church to which we belong, symbols have a different interpretation. Is it serious? I do not think so. It does not affect the faith itself, but again, we realize a deficient teaching by a Church. The Lord Jesus instituted the doctrine in Luke 22:15-20. Then Apostle Paul clearly taught it to Christians.

**23** For I received from the Lord that which I also delivered to you: that the Lord Jesus on the same night in which He was betrayed took bread;  
**24** and when He had given thanks, He broke it and said, "Take, eat; this is My body which is broken for you; do this in remembrance of Me." **25** In the same manner He also took the cup after supper, saying, "This cup is the new covenant in My blood. This do, as often as you drink it, in remembrance of Me." **26** For as often as you eat this bread and drink this cup, you proclaim the Lord's death till He comes.  
(1 Corinthians 11:23-26)

The wine and bread are a symbol to remember that Jesus gave His body and shed His blood to redeem us. We are asked to eat and drink worthily. This symbol reminds us that we are under grace in the New Covenant. No, Jesus is not in the host. This is an invention of the Catholic Church. Again, this differentiation in the Universal Church of believers prevents many Christians to overcome in the Lord, because they belong more to one church than another. Other churches isolate Holy Communion by denying that Christians participate until they are baptized. Unfortunately, in one camp as in the other these quarrels move born-again Christians away from one another. After all, he who is not in Christ and who eats and drinks the Holy Communion without differentiating the body and blood of Christ or unworthily, eats and drinks judgment against himself. The sheep belonging to Christ need not fear to enter judgment, but the unregenerate Christian does not improve his situation since in any case he will come to judgment. Personally, I would invite the born-again Christian world to reflect over the Lord's Supper because it was not so in the days of the apostles and I think it brings more separation between the true Christians than otherwise.

## **Marriage**

Christian marriage is a union between a man and a woman in the Lord. Shake that institution and this opens the door to corruption of your children and the human race. Let me explain, there are tasks for both sexes in marriage. The goal is to have children together. The first point to satisfy between a man and a woman is the common center of the beginning of the relationship, sex. Unfortunately or fortunately for you ladies, man is always in need of it. Also, many women voluntarily or involuntarily stop giving this vital energy to man and then send him to other routes, hoping to win their common property as lottery. Now that the law in the West has given greater rights to women through the institution of divorce, many of them stop having sex with their husbands in order to push them into sin. This phenomenon is not new, dating back to Paul, he wrote:

2 Nevertheless, because of sexual immorality, let each man have his own wife, and let each woman have her own husband. 3 Let the

husband render to his wife the affection due her, and likewise also the wife to her husband. **4** The wife does not have authority over her own body, but the husband does. And likewise the husband does not have authority over his own body, but the wife does. **5** Do not deprive one another except with consent for a time, that you may give yourselves to fasting and prayer; and come together again so that Satan does not tempt you because of your lack of self-control.

(1 Corinthians 7:2-5)

Many Christian households do not live their sex lives exactly this way. This results in frustration, isolation and divorce.

The couple's relationship with distributions of different tasks depending on gender is not much observed today.

**22** Wives, submit to your own husbands, as to the Lord. **23** For the husband is head of the wife, as also Christ is head of the church; and He is the Savior of the body. **24** Therefore, just as the church is subject to Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in everything.

(Ephesians 5:22-24)

Man is the head of the family, he is designed for that. The woman should not intervene in this role especially when her husband is a Christian. The woman has a different role, especially with children. Motherhood is completely foreign to men just as paternity is foreign to women. Nowadays, few women follow this submission in Christian homes.

**25** Husbands, love your wives, just as Christ also loved the church and gave Himself for her, **26** that He might sanctify and cleanse her with the washing of water by the word, **27** that He might present her to Himself a glorious church, not having spot or wrinkle or any such

thing, but that she should be holy and without blemish. **28** So husbands ought to love their own wives as their own bodies; he who loves his wife loves himself. **29** For no one ever hated his own flesh, but nourishes and cherishes it, just as the Lord does the church. **30** For we are members of His body, of His flesh and of His bones. **31** "For this reason a man shall leave his father and mother and be joined to his wife, and the two shall become one flesh."

(Ephesians 5:25-31)

I know many women who would like to be loved like that. But we are forced to realize that such Christian values are lost in our homes. Divorces have significantly increased among Christians, because they decided to follow most of the irreligious modes of the modern times. The church and its morals have cooled considerably. It is certain that unregenerate men abuse, beat and humiliate their wives with the blessing of the Roman Catholic Church whose head is not regenerated. But the born-again Christian man, always pay attention to his own flesh. Why do you Christian woman want to use the law today to take the common good of your relationship? Did God give you the secret to keep your man or to move away from him?

It is clear that the doctrine of marriage has been badly shaken in recent times; the family unit and the Church suffer enormously from this plague emanating from the selfishness of men. You must not live in the world, but in the biblical values that constituted the strength of the men of faith, the apostles and saints of the past. Also, adultery (Hebrews 13: 4) and divorce (Matthew 5:31-32, Mark 10:2-12) are forbidden in a born-again Christian marriage. You should learn to do good to yourselves in the Lord and understand how to live happily and successfully in the doctrine of marriage.

### **The laying of hands**

The apostles received the gift of the Holy Spirit at Pentecost. The apostles were complete with all the gifts. The gifts distributed by God the Holy Spirit were these: the gift of prophecy, Doctor of the Word, working of miracles, healings, the gift of relief, gift of governing, diversities of tongues, interpretation of tongues and discernment of spirits (see 1 Corinthians chapter 12). The gifts were distributed by the laying of hands. The Christian world does not know at what time this tradition was lost.

I know people in the Lord who were healed by the laying of hands of the elders. Several people who were already condemned by modern medicine. However, this laying of hands does not work always as in the days of the apostles. Personally, I think that if the Christian world could turn away from modernism and return to the source, great spiritual manifestations would be felt throughout the existing Church. Mainly, if the whole community participated in the gifts of the Holy Spirit, the rigidity of the Christian world leaves no room for the pebbles to externalize the spirit alive in them. Probably many Christians have gifts, but lack of moral support and freedom hinder them from exercising. Certainly, if these gifts of the Holy Spirit were exercised continuously, the Church would have new strength. It would be necessary to return to small assemblies where everyone expresses himself and is encouraged to exercise the gifts of the Holy Spirit. On the contrary, this requires discipline on the part of the elders since in this type of church, the weeds can easily and rapidly penetrate, and undermine the oxygen pump of brothers and sisters in the Lord. There should be preliminary conditions of entry; as salvation is eternal, we should bring forward fellowship; if a brother is wrong, rebuke him through the Word and explain, if he persists in his heresy, ask him to leave. Clearly, the biblical doctrines were strongly attacked by the enemy. The Christian world would have to start all over in this era of globalism and rebuild assemblies by putting more emphasis on Christian doctrines while promoting integration among us, small living stones that make up the Church of Christ.



## **CHAPTER VII**

### **Christian life**

The previous chapters made you to discover an admirable God in the person of Jesus Christ, our friend. You had to make a choice: Who is Jesus? Was He the only son of God? You now KNOW the path to reach Him and have eternal life. But before leaving, I want to talk about taboo subjects in the Christian world, not to mislead you but to strengthen you against the enemy. Moreover, in the fight that a Christian will have to engage in his life as a believer, the Bible warns us:

For we do not wrestle against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this age, against spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places.  
(Ephesians 6:12)

Also, the acceptance of Jesus' sacrifice on the cross grants us eternal life and seals us with the Holy Spirit. By this simple gesture, you just move from darkness to light. Henceforth, Satan is your enemy and he will develop obstacles throughout your life. To face him, God gives you a formidable weapon: the authority of the believer. So, to further explain the subject of drugs and satanic music seen in the first part, we will touch a dangerous theme: that of the possession. Be rest assured, the believer is safe from this tragedy. Then we will continue with the authority of the believer. Finally, we will clarify some New Testament texts that may give rise to misunderstandings and discuss eternal salvation.

# SECTION 1 - Possession

If I had not fully explored this subject, it would have weighed heavily on my conscience. I know that most of you will probably never deal with this situation. But the few relatives or friends who read this book and are faced with such a problem will know that I understand them.

When we speak of God, some people ask very embarrassing questions. Here are some of them: Why was I born in abundance, and he in a poor, remote country, unknown to the civilized world? Why was I born with all my mental faculties, and he without understanding? How can a foolish being come to Christ? Does the universe have the same God? So many questions come up to me.

Most of these existential questions like why us and not others are addressed in Psalms 139:15-16.

**15** My frame was not hidden from You, When I was made in secret,  
And skillfully wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. **16** Your eyes  
saw my substance, being yet unformed. And in Your book they all  
were written, The days fashioned for me, When as yet there were none  
of them.

God is faithful, just and sincere. God has no beginning and no end. From the day of our birth, He knows our life and knows if we are His. If he could find just three righteous among the people of Sodom and Gomorrah, He would have saved these cities. He would have ensured that no righteous was lost. If a human language is not enough to break his world, He will pierce through other means, perhaps unknown to intelligent men, but known to Him. Depending on the place where God put the new soul belonging to Him, God knows if she will accept his sacrifice on the cross. Similarly, He will not put his child in nightmarish situations.

Therefore, it is difficult to describe the state of a possessed man and how it came about. Some people may be possessed for a short time while others will be throughout their lives.

a) **The state of possession**

The best description we can make of a possessed man would be that given by Jesus in Matthew:

Or how can one enter a strong man's house and plunder his goods,  
unless he first binds the strong man? And then he will plunder his  
house.

(Matthew 12:29)

The biblical answer to this dilemma is simple. Every man is born free but some individuals make themselves slaves. Sometimes, people voluntarily submit their freedom to Satan in return for certain property. Others are victims of deception when, through music, the youth is taught that Satan is the true God and Jesus abominable. This movement, amplified by the voice of drug, binds the individual gradually, and can even bring his mind to be subject to evil spirits.

In some cases, possession is radical because it pushes the individual to self-destruction. By submitting to the spirit of drugs, many teenagers commit suicide. Others are possessed after occult sessions and some are even initiated during rock concerts.

For example, the KISS (Kings in Satan's Service) group in 1983 had a rock concert at Montreal. During that concert, the group presented a satanic initiation in course of their show. Six days later, an infinitely small proportion of the young spectators had psychological problems. Some had to be committed to psychiatric institutions for life.

Perhaps you will say I'm exaggerating, but they are still thousands each year who are victims of this fake dragon. The parents of these adolescents struggling with runaways, suicides, internment in psychiatric institutions and especially the thousands unknown teenagers in mortuaries, dead forever, in almost all cases they will tell you: it was not more our child. But despite all this, possession is a remediable condition; the love of Christ conquers all.

**b) Possession, a forgivable sin under grace**

Possession is the condition of an individual fully linked or subjected to Satan, the reasoning faculty of such a person is largely influenced by the unclean spirit in him. Under Grace, through a Christian exercising his authority in Jesus Christ, the possessed individual may be delivered. That same individual can subsequently come to Christ by making a free choice and be saved. It is obvious that this definition excludes those individuals who are only partially bound but having all their senses and freedom. Under Grace, they, can at any time turn towards the person of Jesus Christ, ask Him forgiveness and be saved by His purifying blood.

For over two thousand years, we are under the age of grace, the Lord who in his great goodness gave a new weapon to man through Christ's victory over Satan on the Cross, the Holy Spirit. God the Holy Spirit was given to men by Jesus Christ. It is thanks to its Power that man desires repentance with God. It is also thanks to its power that man sealed by the Holy Spirit can cast out demons and can do wonders in the name of Jesus Christ.

Unfortunately, year one of the Antichrist reign will announce the demise of the Church and the Holy Spirit on earth. Also, all who are seduced by the world government will want to replace God with a kingdom ruled by man. The Spirit of Satan will be alone in the world. At that time, any man who accepts the cursed mark on the forehead and on the right hand or worship the image of the beast will be sealed by the Spirit of Satan. The power of the Holy Spirit having then disappeared, there will be no power to deliver them from darkness. At that, People who shall believe in Jesus Christ will not be sealed immediately by the Holy Spirit after the act of faith confessed before the brothers, since they will walk to death by decapitation. If taken by the world government - imagine the uphill battle when they will be invited to choose between two possibilities: that of death beheaded for Christ or to accept the cursed mark and be possessed by the spirit of Satan, and consequently expect the judgment of God since the action taken will be unforgivable, the seal of God will be put on someone only if he perseveres in his faith until death. Through his tricks, the Antichrist will seduce many people during his reign just like part of today's youth.

Under grace, possession is a forgivable sin, since by the Power in the Name of Jesus Christ, God the Holy Spirit, forgive every deed. This is a testimony that God's Spirit gives of His Son, Jesus Christ. No other name has this power in our world. Therefore, the therapy of the cure of the soul of possessed individuals and the authority of the believer applies only to the time of grace; Satan being bound during the Millennium.

What is possession? It is accepting to subject one's soul to Satan. Certainly, this state is not arrived at by mere words or a challenge in a poker game. It must be desired, maintained and kept until a total commitment of the individual. From that moment, he is forever under the domination of Satan. Now all his actions will be dictated by Satan. The latter will mutilate, destroy the body and will subject the victim to very mean actions. In some very radical cases, Satan pushes the person to commit suicide. For such a person, what is left is the pending judgment of God.

For such persons to become free during their lifetime, they must be delivered from the chains of the unclean spirit in them. By themselves, it is impossible to regain liberty. It will take another person to cast out the demon in the name of Jesus Christ. Here is the difference between a free individual and a possessed person:

*Free individual:*

He is master of himself = he may choose to accept or reject Jesus Christ

*Possessed individual:*

He is under Satan's control = he is unable to regain his freedom and accept Jesus Christ unless he is delivered by a Christian interceding in the name of Jesus Christ.

To regain personal freedom and be able to make a free choice thereafter, the person must be released. Unfortunately, these captive souls are hospitalized for psychiatric care, victims of mistakes of modern medicine. Their problem is not madness but demonology. Do not be confused here, I mean that a good number of individuals among patients requiring psychiatric care are victims of demonology. During the period of grace with the Holy Spirit operating in the

world, these captive souls can be set free if and only if someone in the presence of the possessed individual orders the impure spirit to leave in the name of Jesus Christ. The intermediary person must be in the presence of the possessed individual. Here is the proof:

**1** Then they came to the other side of the sea, to the country of the Gadarenes. **2** And when He had come out of the boat, immediately there met Him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit, **3** who had his dwelling among the tombs; and no one could bind him, not even with chains, **4** because he had often been bound with shackles and chains. And the chains had been pulled apart by him, and the shackles broken in pieces; neither could anyone tame him. **5** And always, night and day, he was in the mountains and in the tombs, crying out and cutting himself with stones. **6** When he saw Jesus from afar, he ran and worshiped Him. **7** And he cried out with a loud voice and said, "What have I to do with You, Jesus, Son of the Most High God? I implore You by God that You do not torment me." **8** For He said to him, "Come out of the man, unclean spirit!" **9** Then He asked him, "What is your name?" And he answered, saying, "My name is Legion; for we are many." **10** Also he begged Him earnestly that He would not send them out of the country. **11** Now a large herd of swine was feeding there near the mountains. **12** So all the demons begged Him, saying, "Send us to the swine, that we may enter them." **13** And at once Jesus gave them permission. Then the unclean spirits went out and entered the swine (there were about two thousand); and the herd ran violently down the steep place into the sea, and drowned in the sea. **14** So those who fed the swine fled, and they told it in the city and in the country. And they went out to see what it was that had happened. **15** Then they came to Jesus, and saw the one who had been demon-possessed and had the legion, sitting and clothed and in his right mind. And they were afraid. **16** And those who saw it told them how it happened to him who had been demon-possessed, and about the swine. **17** Then they began

to plead with Him to depart from their region. **18** And when He got into the boat, he who had been demon-possessed begged Him that he might be with Him. **19** However, Jesus did not permit him, but said to him, "Go home to your friends, and tell them what great things the Lord has done for you, and how He has had compassion on you." **20** And he departed and began to proclaim in Decapolis all that Jesus had done for him; and all marveled.

(Mark 5:1-20)

Jesus transformed this demon possessed person into a messenger, even though he did not allow him to follow Him. Thanks to Jesus, he was delivered. Jesus accepted him and gave him a mission, to tell his entire household that the Redeemer had come.

Unfortunately, Jesus does not deliver all the possessed, just as He does not heal all the blind, the lame, the dumb and others. Today, many young people are languishing in hospitals. Their illness is not madness but demonology, and unless someone does release them by the authority of Jesus Christ, they will die in their sin.

I see your questions coming: How do I know if someone is mad or possessed? Who will perform an exorcism? Does the Church regulate exorcisms? It is true that the Catholic Church agrees to exorcise only if the subject speaks in a known language and shows obvious signs of demonology. Personally, I think it's a mistake. Jesus drove many demons. Some possessed were more obvious than others because the spirit that lived in them was more powerful. Many would ask me why men of God do not walk in hospitals, looking for those people classified as insane, but in fact possessed.

To perform an exorcism, you must have the consent of the family. The majority of these families are not open to this problem. In other cases, it is boring. Sometimes the possessed individual becomes so wild that they are obliged to isolate him, even his family finds it difficult to meet him in the psychiatric institution. It must be said that this ministry is not popular among Christians.

Personally, if I had a child who had touched drugs and spiritualism, and if I believed that the spirit that resides in him is not his, I would not hesitate to ask someone who has skills to perform an exorcism. Otherwise, I will exercise the authority that the Lord gave me as a believer and I will cast out the enemy, Satan.

Men who exorcise avoid publicizing their vocation. It is therefore difficult to meet or even question them. On the contrary, I know that no exorcism is similar to another. The Christian asks the unclean spirit to give its name and then calls it by its name. Through Jesus Christ, he orders the unclean spirit to leave. For some unclean spirits, we must fast and pray before we can drive them through Jesus Christ.

Who can perform an exorcism? Any person who, by the name of Jesus Christ, orders an evil spirit to leave an individual will succeed. It is not necessary that the person be saved. Remember, the Lord warned us about it. However, it is better for a saved Christian to perform an exorcism because, in some cases, the unclean spirit pursues the person who cast it out in the name of Jesus Christ. Apparently it's very unpleasant.

Can a saved person be possessed? It is impossible for a person who has accepted the gift of Jesus Christ on the cross to be possessed as he is sealed with the Holy Spirit and belongs to Jesus for eternity. Some saved Christians may fall into the world of drugs, drunkenness and so on, but they will nevertheless be saved as by fire, no one can build on a different foundation, namely Jesus Christ (1 Corinthians 3:15). They would lose their reward in heaven.

In My Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would  
have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. (John 14:2)

Similarly, all those who accept the gift of Jesus Christ in a sincere way are sealed with the Holy Spirit. Thereafter, they will receive a place in Heaven according to the value of their Christian life on the earth.



Can a non-believer be inhabited by evil spirits? Yes, all non-believers are at the mercy of this risk if they engaged in demonological science. Sometimes, during occultism sessions, non-believers who commonly invoke ghosts out of curiosity, are pursued by evil spirits and inhabited by force, because they did not have the power of the Blood of Christ as a means of counter attack against these evil forces. We should not play with the supernatural because it can burn us.

To perform an exorcism one must be very strong spiritually. Prayer, fasting, speed in striking back by the Word of God, are all important assets. God is Omnipotent, Omnipresent and Omniscient. He knows what we think and what we want. He knows our beginning and our end; He is always with us while at the same time elsewhere. On the contrary, Satan is neither omnipotent nor omnipresent nor omniscient. My inexperience makes me fear this ministry. But God gives us a powerful tool against the enemy, the seal of the Holy Spirit, "the Authority of the believer."

## **SECTION 2 - The Authority of the believer**

Many believers struggle in their personal lives, with obstacles and pitfalls voluntarily put in their path. The instant reaction of the majority of them is prayer. The power of prayer is unquestionably the only way to ask or to intercede with God and to prepare the way for delivery, but ineffective to keep away the enemy because Jesus gave us a weapon par excellence: the authority of the believer.

To better understand this situation, I'll give you some examples. For some time, you have nightmares every night. Old sins assail you, giving you sleepless nights and anxiety. Or may be you are unemployed, and each time there is an opportunity, you get sick or the doors close. In short, a number of small unpredictable details are designed to make you lose your joy and your peace of mind in the Christian life.

At that time, it is necessary to ask this question "Who is behind this?" If you

come to the conclusion that it is the enemy, then, pray to Jesus Christ for Him to answer you. Jesus already defeated Satan two thousand years ago on the cross by His Sacrifice. Then use the authority Jesus Christ has given you as a child of God. Make use of His Name and drive the enemy, as Jesus said:

**18** And He said to them, "I saw Satan fall like lightning from heaven.

**19** Behold, I give you the authority to trample on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy, and nothing shall by any means hurt you. **20** Nevertheless do not rejoice in this, that the spirits are subject to you, but rather rejoice because your names are written in heaven." (Luke 10:18-20)

Many believers are unaware of these things and because of this, their Christian life is monotonous. It looks like they are defeated, not knowing what to do when they are oppressed, crushed and beaten. The power of the Holy Spirit granted to us when we become Children of God is immense. Therefore, Satan does all he can in his power to overtake us and blind us. The authority of the believer is required to enjoy a happy and joyful Christian life. Otherwise, this life would be difficult, depressing and pathetic. We must grab the promises of God, believe in them and put them into practice otherwise we deprive ourselves of blessings. Unfortunately, few people use this authority, they prefer to hide behind a religion or a dogma because they fear or do not know the truth.

This doctrine is called "the authority of the believer" and is very effective. Here is the proof of its existence: Suppose that you know a possessed person. What will happen if you pray for him in private? Probably nothing. On the contrary, if you go there, you pray and fast, and order the demon to leave that person in the name of Jesus Christ, the demon will obey you because the Holy Spirit watches over the name of Jesus Christ. Similarly, if you have to deal with evil forces that poison your relationship with God, you should drive with the precious blood of Jesus Christ.

The weapon that Jesus gives us under grace is of paramount importance in the life of a believer. May be the new Christian will find me, sexist? So here are two kinds of Christians, and they react differently when the enemy interferes in their relationship with God.

*Contextualization:*

Two Christians have the same problem. Mothers of families today, these women worked in their youth as nude dancers. They met the Lord and were saved and changed their lifestyles. Now married with two children each, they are plagued by a deep regret for their past lives. Satan the accuser says, "Are you not ashamed? What can God do with such a...? And if someone could recognize you, what a shame you had before your children! Go away! ... "You can imagine all the accusations and questions that may arise in such a situation.

*First woman:*

The first woman does not exercise her authority to fight Satan, the accuser. She says: "Yes, I was like that but Jesus has forgiven me by His Blood shed for me on the cross of Calvary." Throughout her life, Satan accuses her. She is sad and lives in fear of being recognized and humiliated in front of her family. Her husband is unfortunate for her and the children suffer because a demoralized person cannot generate love and joy.

*Second woman:*

The second woman is using the authority that the Lord has conferred to her. She says to herself: "Satan, stop accusing me. In the name of Jesus Christ who justified and sanctified me, I order you to leave and never come back on this." This person has authority, aware that Jesus has given her a new life and that her family members will forgive her. She generates love and joy to her family. This woman is happy while the other woman, although saved, is harassed by the accuser which affects her morale and breaks her relationship with God.

You see the importance of this weapon that Jesus gives us as believers saved by His Sacrifice on the cross. Do not be bound by the accuser, he is the father of lies. Jesus has saved you from eternal judgment so that you can fully enjoy the new life He has given you as a child of God.

The enemy delights to make you doubt eternal salvation through Jesus Christ. Also, the Christian reading the Word of God will fall on some Bible verses that can make him to waver about the certainty of Salvation. The Bible cannot contradict itself. So let us study these Bible verses one by one and give a theological explanation. By so doing, you'll have much more leisure and fun in reading the Holy Book.

## **SECTION 3 - The verses that could give rise to misinterpretation of the Word**

### **a) Assurance of salvation**

Throughout the New Testament, Jesus tells us that if we believe and accept the free gift of His blood shed for us on the cross, we shall be saved. Jesus takes the sins of men who come to him and rejects no one. Whoever made that leap of faith is immediately sealed with the Holy Spirit. From that moment, God no more looks at him like a sinner but like a saint through His Son Jesus Christ. Yet many people doubt these statements.

Even though the Gospel written by the apostles, especially John makes us to discover salvation through Jesus Christ, some false teachers take pleasure in quoting verses that can lead to misinterpretations. These are intended to deprive Christians of a great power, the assurance of their salvation. However, it is impossible that the Bible contradicts itself, if not this truth is false and meaningless. If Christ tells you something, then he is right. We cannot lose his salvation once we have accepted Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour in our heart. It is impossible. Of course, we can rebel against Jesus Christ, abandon him, and ask him to go, that we do not want to see him anymore and fall under the harassment of the enemy. When the anger is over, we ask for forgiveness knowing full well that God has forgiven us. He has not abandoned us as we requested in our anger. I belong to God, to whom can I go if I separate from Him? I feel loneliness in my soul that nothing can fill. From that moment I make peace with Him and He fills me with love as if nothing had happened. From the moment I accepted Jesus into my life, He cleared my past,

present and future sins. When you accept Jesus, He saves you FOREVER. Even when you neglect Him for a while, and come back, you have to be sure. He is a God of freedom and mercy.

### Parable of the sower

Before quoting the verses that can lead to misinterpretations, it would be appropriate to see the different reception given to the Good News spread among men. Among these, you will notice people who are very knowledgeable about salvation and Jesus Christ. But their lifestyle is in complete disagreement with the person of Jesus Christ, they reject it, not wanting this truth and eternal salvation. In this case, they commit blasphemy of the Spirit, the unpardonable sin that you now know at this stage of this book. Here is the parable of the seed and the explanation that Jesus gives:

1 On the same day Jesus went out of the house and sat by the sea. 2 And great multitudes were gathered together to Him, so that He got into a boat and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore. 3 Then He spoke many things to them in parables, saying: "Behold, a sower went out to sow. 4 And as he sowed, some seed fell by the wayside; and the birds came and devoured them. 5 Some fell on stony places, where they did not have much earth; and they immediately sprang up because they had no depth of earth. 6 But when the sun was up they were scorched, and because they had no root they withered away. 7 And some fell among thorns, and the thorns sprang up and choked them. 8 But others fell on good ground and yielded a crop: some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty.

(Matthew 13:1-8)

Here is the explanation of this parable by Jesus Himself:

**18** "Therefore hear the parable of the sower: **19** When anyone hears the word of the kingdom, and does not understand it, then the wicked one comes and snatches away what was sown in his heart. This is he who received seed by the wayside. **20** But he who received the seed on stony places, this is he who hears the word and immediately receives it with joy; **21** yet he has no root in himself, but endures only for a while. For when tribulation or persecution arises because of the word, immediately he stumbles. **22** Now he who received seed among the thorns is he who hears the word, and the cares of this world and the deceitfulness of riches choke the word, and he becomes unfruitful. **23** But he who received seed on the good ground is he who hears the word and understands it, who indeed bears fruit and produces: some a hundredfold, some sixty, some thirty."

(Matthew 13:18-23)

Analysis of the four styles of receivers:

Jesus described four types of individuals. The good news is to know that Jesus Christ died for our sins and that He has opened the gates of Heaven. All this is at our disposal if we sincerely accept this gift that Jesus offers.

- *He who receives the seed along the way* heard the good news, does not understand and forgets it. The evil one comes and nothing is said.

- *He who receives the seed in stony places* hears the Good News, understands it, and takes knowledge, tastes and is informed. Finally, he turns away and does not accept Jesus Christ.

- *He who receives the seed among thorns* hears the Good News but is more interested in wealth and worldly things. As the Bible is not within his concept of life, he does not bother about it. Some people like him will have a perfect knowledge of the Word of God, but prefer to engage in the service of Satan. Such people do not accept Jesus Christ.

Others shall accept Jesus, but walk away from the truth and have an unsuccessful life in the Lord. They will be saved so as by fire, keeping the foundation in Jesus Christ, but raising a little heavenly reward.

- *He who receives the seed fallen on good soil* receives the Good News, takes knowledge, and finally he sincerely accepts Jesus Christ in his life. From that moment he is sealed with the Holy Spirit and will no more enter judgment. He is saved.

When we accept Jesus Christ, it is essential to know that we all have a path to follow. In fact, this is it: the Holy Spirit puts in our way someone who announces the Good News. We learn, and then we accept the Lord. So only then are we saved. Some learn and go without accepting the truth in their hearts, they are not saved. Others are not interested, do not even try to understand, do not want a Saviour, or do not believe in him. These people are not saved because they reject Jesus Christ.

There are also tricky people, those who accept Jesus Christ by saying they will be saved and could do whatever they want on earth. It is wrong to make fun of Jesus Christ! It is a sincere acceptance; he who jokes or who is crafty with Jesus Christ will be confused as Simon the magician. God knows if you've accepted or not. A sincere acceptance is what God wants from you to open the gates of Heaven.

Here I would like to warn against a popular belief that many people are involved in. Many think that heaven is sad; that in Heaven we sing praises to God night and day, and more. On the other hand, some believe that in hell, they will be with their friends, laughing and feasting, night and day. They say to themselves, Satan accepts us sinners as we are. But do not listen to these lies, because hell is a total solitude where darkness and eternal fire dwell in men. Added to the unhappiness of men in hell is the torment of Satan and his angels. In short, hell is a terrible place with eternal solitude. Sometimes I am content to think about eternal life. I try to imagine a greater

love than love at first sight at all times with total freedom. But I find it difficult to feel just a fragment of this eternal happiness.

Heaven is defined as perfect happiness. We shall find youthfulness, calmness, joy, eternal welfare. Heaven is the happiness that the soul from its birth has been looking for. Adam and Eve had perfect happiness. Also, every man is born with a fragment of this supernatural joy in his genes. But this man will get eternal happiness through Jesus Christ who gave all to the cross. Accept this sacrifice of love, the free gift. We are sinners and need a Saviour. We must seize and take this ticket for heaven given to us freely through Jesus Christ. That's all God wants, acceptance as a sign of a voluntary commitment between Him and us through Jesus Christ. Let us not deny that, it is our only chance to be saved and live forever in perfect happiness which we have always been looking for.

I, Denis Boivin, I testify that I have accepted Jesus Christ into my life and I know from His word, that He has saved me. Henceforth, I will live with Him forever in perfect happiness.

Can you say that? If so, glory be to God through Jesus Christ, His Holy Son; Glory to Him forever.

Here is an overview of Eternal Kingdom led by the justice of God, where we shall be free from sin. But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, patience, kindness, faithfulness, gentleness, temperance, (Galatians 5:22). Imagine my brothers and sisters, perfect happiness that awaits us!

#### b) Judas Iscariot

Judas Iscariot was among the apostles of Jesus, (Mark 3: 19). He moved, ate and slept with the Lord. He was in the inner circle of the Lord. He lived with Jesus Christ as the other eleven. He was appointed as an apostle, he received the power to cast out unclean spirits and to heal every disease and sickness (Matthew 10:1-4, Mark 3:13-19 Mark 6:7-13). Jesus knew that Judas, one of the twelve would betray him (John 6: 71, John 13:26-27 Matthew 26: 25). Everyone knew that



Judas, who kept money, was a thief (John 12:4-6). Judas Iscariot as the eleven enjoyed the gift of the Holy Spirit and was enlightened in a special way of God through the Holy Spirit. However, as Jesus did not offer a living sacrifice on the cross for all, those who died were under the law of the Old Testament. The souls of those who died in the faith of a Saviour were waiting for the deliverance of the Saviour in the grave. Judas Iscariot betrayed Jesus for thirty pieces of silver (Matthew 26: 15, Matthew 27: 3, 27: 7). He delivered him with a kiss (Luke 22: 48). When Judas saw that Jesus was judged, he repented and brought the price of betrayal to the chief priests and elders, saying, "I have sinned by betraying innocent blood". They said, "What is that to us? You see to it!". Judas threw the pieces of silver in the temple, retired and went to hang himself. The chief priests took the pieces of silver and said: It is not lawful to put them into the treasury, since it is the price of Blood. And after deliberating, they bought with them the potter's field for the burial of strangers (Matthew 27:5-7). This was prophesied by the prophet Zechariah five hundred years ago (Zechariah 11:12-13).

Judas hanged himself even before Jesus was tried and crucified. When he repented, he did not apologize to the Lord, but to men as the chief priests and elders of the religion of Judaism. Well informed, set aside and having tasted the gifts of the Holy Spirit, Judas did not believe in Jesus Christ. He did not wait for the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross to be saved. It looks like this kind of person cannot understand and see the greatness and the freeness of the sacrifice of Jesus. Jesus as God knew the destiny of every man, and he wrote: "The Son of Man indeed goes just as it is written of Him, but woe to that man by whom the Son of Man is betrayed! It would have been good for that man if he had not been born." (Matthew 26: 24, Marc 14: 21). The apostolate of Judas was stripped and restored to Matthias (Acts 1:25-26).

The misinterpreted verses of the Bible concerning the assurance of salvation are often attributed to people like Judas. Many Jews during the days of Jesus saw the miracles taking place in His Name and being fully aware of the Law of Moses that Jesus was the Saviour, rejected the gift of God to men.

c) The misinterpreted verses

To better unravel the ambiguities of these verses, we will proceed this way: verses will be cited, theologically explained in context or in their parabolic shape.

A) *Verse applicable to the time of the Antichrist:*

**12** And because lawlessness will abound, the love of many will grow cold. **13** But he who endures to the end shall be saved. (Matthew 24:12-13)

In this verse, the Lord Jesus gives His disciples the signs of the end times. These signs are primarily addressed to Jews of the great tribulation.

We all know now that during the period of the Antichrist, he will make war against Jews and Christians. But in those days, whoever wishes to be saved should not take the cursed mark or worship the image of the Antichrist. On the contrary, if captured, he should exercise his faith, and pay with his life by allowing himself to be beheaded if not he will accept the cursed mark and will be forever banned from the sight of God. He will be damned for eternity. It is in this context that Jesus says:

But he who endures to the end shall be saved.  
(Matthew 24:13)

One day, I went to a Pentecostal church. A woman, who was teaching there, used this verse to tell the believers that a good Christian life is required to be caught up during the rapture of the Church. What a pity, abuse people this way! Nevertheless, Pentecostals teach the correct plan of salvation through Jesus Christ. On the contrary, they create serious doubts about the assurance of their salvation. It's a shame because they deprive themselves of a very effective spiritual weapon mentioned in Ephesians 6:17.

*B) Trying to go to heaven without the person of Jesus Christ:*

**23** Therefore the kingdom of heaven is like a certain king who wanted to settle accounts with his servants. **24** And when he had begun to settle accounts, one was brought to him who owed him ten thousand talents. **25** But as he was not able to pay, his master commanded that he be sold, with his wife and children and all that he had, and that payment be made. **26** The servant therefore fell down before him, saying, 'Master, have patience with me, and I will pay you all.' **27** Then the master of that servant was moved with compassion, released him, and forgave him the debt. **28** But that servant went out and found one of his fellow servants who owed him a hundred denarii; and he laid hands on him and took him by the throat, saying, 'Pay me what you owe!' **29** So his fellow servant fell down at his feet and begged him, saying, 'Have patience with me, and I will pay you all.' **30** And he would not, but went and threw him into prison till he should pay the debt. **31** So when his fellow servants saw what had been done, they were very grieved, and came and told their master all that had been done. **32** Then his master, after he had called him, said to him, 'You wicked servant! I forgave you all that debt because you begged me. **33** Should you not also have had compassion on your fellow servant, just as I had pity on you?' **34** And his master was angry, and delivered him to the torturers until he should pay all that was due to him. **35** So My heavenly Father also will do to you if each of you, from his heart, does not forgive his brother his trespasses."

(Matthew 18:23-35)

This verse boils down to this: if we do not forgive with all our heart, the Father will not forgive us. Jesus also said in Matthew 6:14-15 that:

**14** For if you forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you. **15** But if you do not forgive men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses.

Or

And forgive us our debts, As we forgive our debtors.  
(Matthew 6:12)

If we summarize the ideology implied by these verses, we come to the following thought: we know that to be saved, we must not sin. But if we do not forgive all, the Father will not forgive us and we will be rejected from the Kingdom of God. So we can lose our salvation even if we have accepted Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour. This is the view of some people, but it is wrong because Jesus also said:

**27** "You have heard that it was said to those of old, 'You shall not commit adultery.' **28** But I say to you that whoever looks at a woman to lust for her has already committed adultery with her in his heart. **29** If your right eye causes you to sin, pluck it out and cast it from you; for it is more profitable for you that one of your members perish, than for your whole body to be cast into hell. **30** And if your right hand causes you to sin, cut it off and cast it from you; for it is more profitable for you that one of your members perish, than for your whole body to be cast into hell.  
(Matthew 5:27-30)

Looking at these verses, what comes to my mind is that I often sin with my right hand, a sudden driving mistake and others. As for my eyes, I prefer not to talk about it because I would have disposed of it long time ago. In fact, when I think, I'd probably be without body I would have had several pairs of eyes.

As for forgiveness, I think that when someone insults me, I will forgive him if he asks for forgiveness but I prefer not to associate with him. At times, I do not forgive certain things on TV or in the society. Anyway, people who forgive entirely their counterparts are rare.

When Jesus gave his speech on forgiveness and mutilation of members of the body in the Sermon on the Mountain, he was speaking to the Pharisees. The Pharisees said to Jesus, they followed the Law of Moses to the letter. They were so brainwashed that on the Sabbath, they limited their steps and gestures in order to follow the law of the Old Testament and even refused to help somebody.

They transgressed the Law of Moses and refused to admit the human or earthly flaws of this covenant. So they said to Jesus that they had no need of a Messiah to redeem the wicked, as they were in perfect harmony with the Law of Moses. But we know that it is impossible for man to follow the Ten Commandments without falling in any throughout his life.

Jesus therefore told them that when they looked with their eyes in lust, they committed iniquity. So to fix this sin in a human way, they had to pull out the member of their body that had sinned. The same punishment applies to their conscience concerning forgiveness. As it was impossible to do all these things, they would necessarily recognize that they were sinners and needed a Saviour.

Nowadays, there are still Pharisees. They try to forgive everything; otherwise they maim members of the body to repair their sins. Some even commit suicide in a deep state of depression. They do not know the love of Jesus Christ; they try to be perfect and to save themselves on their own without the person of Jesus Christ. That is why such a religion makes people crazy. They feel guilty and try to escape without Jesus Christ. To understand this, it would be good to give a hypothetical example:

James takes a knife and breaks the pool of Mario. Subsequently, both of them read the Bible and come across the Sermon on the Mountain. James does not try to understand the Salvation through Jesus Christ. Remorseful, he cuts his hand. A few hours later, he looked at a beautiful girl in a

rather insistent ... Based on his understanding of the Mountain Sermon, he has to behead himself. On the other hand, Mario, despite his good will, cannot fully forgive James for the act he committed. So, all of them would be banished from the sight of God. In doing so, James and Mario would be trying to save themselves alone, without the person of Jesus Christ. They remain sinners in their genes for all other sins they have committed earlier in their lives. While a Christian would do the following reflection: "I am a sinner, I need a Saviour. I cannot save myself, so I accept the sacrifice of Jesus Christ on the cross."

Going back to Matthew 18:23-35, we understand that this is a parable featuring two characters: a servant (the man) and a master (God). The divine character, mediator and redeemer Jesus Christ, is excluded from this text. The parable represents the man trying to save himself, without Jesus Christ.

On the contrary, the "Our Father" goes through the person of Jesus Christ. Hence he said: "And forgive us our debts, As we forgive our debtors". As Jesus is a Perfect Man in the eyes of God, the only One able to go to the Father without passing through an intermediary. For this, Jesus says "we"? The "we" includes all who accept Jesus as Lord and Saviour. Jesus forgives those who sincerely accept the sacrifice of His blood shed for us on the cross, and as we are in Him, Jesus forgives us all our sins, He can say "And forgive us our debts, As we forgive our debtors". Remember that Jesus said that prayer for Christian salvation.

But to the Pharisees who believe they are saved without the divinity of Jesus Christ, He said, "If you forgive all, the Father will forgive you, but if you cannot forgive all, the Father will not forgive you." This is to show them that they need a Saviour. Still addressing the Pharisees, James, said this passage:

**10** For whoever shall keep the whole law, and yet stumble in one point, he is guilty of all. **11** For He who said, "Do not commit adultery," also said, "Do not murder." Now if you do not commit adultery, but you do murder, you have become a transgressor of the law. **12** So speak and so do as those who will be judged by the law of liberty. **13** For judgment

is without mercy to the one who has shown no mercy. Mercy triumphs over judgment.  
(James 2:10-13)

This last passage leads us to the following interpretation: "If you sin against a commandment of the Old Testament, you sin against all others because you need a Saviour" After that, the Spirit of God through James told the Jews, " So speak and so do as those who will be judged by the law of liberty."

The Jews thought that even if they transgressed the Law of Moses, God would not take that into account and that their judgment would be soft as they were the descendants of Abraham. This is in the same direction as the previous ideology: "If you have forgiven, you will be forgiven." And since it is impossible to forgive all, Jesus said, "Mercy triumph over judgment". Who is mercy? It is Jesus Christ the righteous who, through His sacrifice on the cross, becomes the forgiveness of men, if and only if, the man, as a unique individual, accepts sincerely this sacrifice.

To summarize, Matthew 18:23-35 I have used several similar verses in their direction to explain the context: the receiver (the Pharisees), and the theological point of view or ideology conveyed by the Lord. These verses are not addressed to Christians but to Jews, saying that if they try to save themselves without the person of Jesus Christ, they will not be able to forgive everything and follow the Law of Moses without breaking it. Therefore, they must come to the person of Jesus Christ, if they want to be saved by sincerely accepting the free gift of God. Jesus the righteous will set them free and forgive them. Thus, they could say they have all forgiven because Jesus forgives them all even if they (Pharisees) would not forgive entirely. Otherwise, forgiveness is impossible.

Moreover, Matthew 18:23-35 get outlines two figures, man and God. The person of Jesus Christ being excluded, it is only by inserting his divinity and the doctrine of salvation by His blood shed on the cross that we obtain reconciliation of God through His Son interceding for us.

*C) Detachment from Jesus Christ vis- à- vis the word of God:*

1 Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith, giving heed to deceiving spirits and doctrines of demons, 2 speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their own conscience seared with a hot iron,  
(1 Timothy 4:1-2)

What are the doctrines of demons? As mentioned when discussing the signs of the end time (Chapter III), it is to examine or consult the dead, astrologers, fortune tellers and others. Can we abandon faith in Jesus Christ by focusing on Another Gospel? Yes! If you remember the parable of the sower, it is possible to believe that Jesus is God but not to accept or to prefer something else. Jim Jones was pastor. Yet he never accepted Jesus Christ into his heart. He even denied, claiming that he himself was Christ; his followers believed him and, because they gave credence to a false Christ, an impostor, a false teacher, none of them having persevered in this sin, will be saved. These people have abandoned the knowledge of Jesus Christ or faith, to attach to an impostor. These people have been seduced by an impostor. Some have left their first love, Jesus Christ, because obviously they were not saved. They followed man but not Christ. To abandon the faith means turning away from the knowledge of Jesus Christ, without really accepting Him. For this reason, it is important to make a good choice of the Christian assembly and verify in the light of the Bible teaching that is provided during the period of Grace.

Now the Spirit expressly says that in latter times some will depart from the faith...  
(1 Timothy 4:1)

Also, this part of the verse may indicate a change in morals. Thus, during the reign of the Antichrist, Biblical morality will disappear to make way for the universal religion of the Antichrist. The son of Satan shall proclaim himself God but Satan has never been God; at most he is a fallen angel. In this context, faith does not mean salvation by accepting Jesus Christ, it means a belief. We may well believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God and Saviour of the world but do



not accept Him. In this case, He is not our Saviour; this is explained in James 2:14-26. The faith from the beginning coming from the Father making us realize that Jesus is the truth and the beginning of the act that leads to the acceptance of Jesus Christ. Once accepted in person, Christ is our Saviour, then our faith is complete, and we become saved by faith. However, during the period of the Antichrist, the Christian believer will not be sealed with the Holy Spirit. He will have to endure until death. If he falls, he will abandon faith and come to judgment. But he will not be sealed with the Holy Spirit as in our time as under grace. The period of grace will end when the RAPTURE OF THE CHURCH AND PART OF THE resurrection of the righteous will occur.

#### *D) False prophets:*

The Bible often refers to these false teachers. They use the name of Christ to establish religions with which they reject the salvation through Jesus Christ. Here we will explain this issue by treating other parallel passages in the Bible, such as the Epistles of 2 Peter 2:1 - Jude 22 and 1:17-19; Paul often refers to false prophets. Perhaps he knew that the best way to mislead the people was to talk about Christ while preaching falsehoods on Word of God.

**20** For if, after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they are again entangled in them and overcome, the latter end is worse for them than the beginning. **21** For it would have been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than having known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered to them. **22** But it has happened to them according to the true proverb: "A dog returns to his own vomit," and, "a sow, having washed, to her wallowing in the mire  
(2 Peter 2:20-22)

These passages speak out against false teachers. It is customary, before joining a social movement, to learn, to become acquainted, to learn the objectives and regulations. Thus, the Bible Knowledge soaks the reader in order that he accepts Jesus Christ in

his life. Once a person becomes aware of God's Word, the Holy Spirit enlightens him by setting him apart in the face of the tricks of the devil. The Holy Spirit continues his work until the acceptance or rejection of the gift of Jesus Christ on the cross.

It happens that some people become educated about the message of the Bible to the point of having a perfect knowledge. But their ways are those of the devil; converging on the refusal of salvation through Jesus Christ. They will use their knowledge to make sordid gain and mislead those who are seeking God. False teachers, among others, study the Bible, to infiltrate heads of Christian churches reject the Word of God and teach their followers falsehood based on traditions and human rudiments.

Among the false prophets is Armstrong with his pure truth, Jim Jones, Rutherford, Smith and Ms. White; they have founded true sects in the name of Jesus, as Jehovah's Witnesses, the Mormons, Seventh Day Adventists and many others. Naturally, these people and Religious groups are false teachers; that, if and only if one compares the Word of God to the teachings that they provide for their congregations. Some, without being false teachers, publicly declare themselves to be for Lucifer. For example, Jethrill Star, satanic singer, has a biblical knowledge as deep as Billy Graham. Yet, he sings against God and His Son Jesus Christ.

#### E) *Justification without Christ:*

In this the children of God and the children of the devil are manifest:  
Whoever does not practice righteousness is not of God, nor is he who does not love his brother.

(1 John 3:10)

John is addressing the Jews here, the Pharisees. As you know, they believed they could be saved by the Law of Moses. It was the social context of the time. Now, two questions arise: Can we love our brothers (Jewish appellation)? No, but we can try to love as much as possible. The notion of justice according to the Bible brings about the doctrine of Justification as God gives us personally if we accept His Son Jesus Christ. From that moment, God sees us as holy and

blameless we have a Saviour, who through His blood, intercede for us on the cross. The Holy Blood shed for those who agree to give their sins to Jesus Christ that He saves us. This choice is personal and individual. This gift is free, but it requires an acceptance of the recipient and the donor (Jesus Christ) gives it to whoever asks. So, only then is sin broken and the sky is open forever, never to close.

John raises the second question: "Do you love all your brothers?" The answer is no in everyone's conscience. Then he said, "Go to Jesus and you will be saved if you accept Him as Lord and Saviour."

*F) Believe in Jesus Christ according to the Word of God:*

**31** Then Jesus said to those Jews who believed Him, "If you abide in My word, you are My disciples indeed. **32** And you shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free."

(John 8:31-32)

In the context of this verse, Jesus had just made a sermon. He spoke to the Jews in terms difficult to understand, saying he had a father (God) that He was the Son (Christ) and that they needed to follow the Son to reach the Father. Some believed in what he said, but believing and accepting are two different things. So he told them to abide in His word and so they would see the truth in Jesus Christ, Saviour of the world. This truth if accepted and received will save them.

Indeed, if we do not attach ourselves to the Truth of God in the Bible, how would we know the truth and how can we be saved?

*G) The determination to put the Word of God at the center of his life: a reinforcement of the assurance of salvation:*

**10** Therefore, brethren, be even more diligent to make your call and election sure, for if you do these things you will never stumble; **11** for

so an entrance will be supplied to you abundantly into the everlasting kingdom of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ.

(2 Peter 1:10-11)

Once sealed with the Holy Spirit, Peter exhorts Christians to focus on fellowship and all other biblical doctrines. Thus, they will be sure to earn a place in the Heavenly Kingdom. But what about Christians sealed of the Holy Spirit but living like pagans? The Bible says they will be saved so as by fire (1 Corinthians 3:15) since they have accepted Jesus Christ. But beware! Acceptance from the outset must have been in good faith, with good intentions. The Bible says that, unfortunately, these Christians may be excommunicated from their church because they are unworthy. In addition, brethren can ignore them and treat them as pagans.

In the above verse, Peter exhorts saved Christians to have a life centered on Jesus Christ and to be firm among themselves. Thus, they are not tempted by the pleasures of the world, their place in the Kingdom will be even better. In this way, they will be certain that the eternal kingdom of happiness will be fully granted to them.

H) *The Gospel of the Apostles, the only way to have salvation:*

1 Moreover, brethren, I declare to you the gospel which I preached to you, which also you received and in which you stand, 2 by which also you are saved, if you hold fast that word which I preached to you-- unless you believed in vain.

(1 Corinthians 15:1-2)

Only the Gospel or the New Testament as preached by the apostles can lead people to salvation through Jesus Christ.

This also applies to (Colossians 1:21-23). "He alone holy by His blood clears sins on the cross." But, as every man is free as a slave until he comes to Jesus Christ, he must accept the gift of Jesus Christ.

Unfortunately, some false teachers mentioned above have changed the literal meaning of God's Word or rejected them. Any change causes the loss of the person of Jesus Christ as deity of the trinity, or affects personal salvation by the blood of Christ shed on the cross for us as an individual having made a choice. All change in the Gospel on the person of Christ or on salvation equals spiritual death of its members. This is because they do not give Christ the glory of being the Son of God or do not accept, as unique individuals, the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross. So they are not sealed by the Holy Spirit. We must not follow man but the Word of God. To have a real Bible, we need only buy one at the bookstore. Thus, you will be before the evidence of the following interpretation: Jesus Christ is Lord and Saviour and without Him we cannot be saved. But we must in our lifetime, accept the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross.

Our era is getting ready for the most difficult times in the history of mankind. Several signs and lying wonders will come through religion. Jesus and the Bible have warned us.

Today, we have had prophecies received by groups of illuminati; messages from the Virgin to Fatima or Medjugordje. These messages seem to go in the direction of unification and of world peace brought about by the reign of the Antichrist. Personally, I doubt if the "Thing" that appeared was Mary, the earthly mother of Christ. I mean that no man ever came from beyond. Mary, as sinner, is subject to that same law. Moreover, since Satan can disguise himself as an angel of light, it is difficult to confirm that this appearance was Mary, the mother of Christ, and to be sure about it. Faced with men the only character that Satan cannot incarnate and claim to be is Jesus Christ. If you ask an appearance claiming to be Christ to say: "I am the Christ, the Son of the living God", if this appearance is not Christ, it cannot repeat this statement. Any other character as a sinner may be imitated and claimed by Satan. He is not divine. Only Jesus has overcome Satan.

Also, nowadays, many believers go in search of such information or messages, abandoning the word of God. Whereas, if they study the Bible; they would see that these messages are in complete contradiction with the Word of God and the actions of Christians in the end of time.

Curiously, religions display other masters other than Jesus Christ expecting a Messiah. Could it be the Antichrist? This convergence of the satanic trinity comes at a conducive time in the history of mankind.

But the Word of God, faithful to itself assures us of the coming of an impostor, gives us signs and dictates our evacuation plan by the Rapture of the Church. Also, the Bible tells Christians and Jews of the great tribulation how to behave. Remember these verses and remember that nothing is powerful enough to topple the Word of God.

1 Moreover, brethren, I declare to you the gospel which I preached to you, which also you received and in which you stand, 2 by which also you are saved, if you hold fast that word which I preached to you-- unless you believed in vain.

(1Corinthians 15:1-2)

Or

But even if we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other gospel to you than what we have preached to you, let him be accursed.

(Galatians 1:8)

Or

He who rejects Me, and does not receive My words, has that which judges him--the word that I have spoken will judge him in the last day.

(John 12:48)

Me, when I shall appear before my God, I will have the assurance of having made according to His Word. Can you say that? If your answer is no, it's not too late to dive into a stable, clear and precise book, the Bible. It will warn you against things that will soon happen.

*I) The Jews must recognize Jesus as the Son of God to be saved*

but Christ as a Son over His own house, whose house we are if we hold fast the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm to the end.  
(Hebrews 3:6)

Or

For we have become partakers of Christ if we hold the beginning of our confidence steadfast to the end,  
(Hebrews 3:14)

The Jews expected the Messiah, the Son of God, as Saviour, but the Old Testament had many Jewish factions like the Pharisees, the Sadducees, Samaritans and others. Each of these factions had taught their followers how they perceived the Christ. Finally, Christ came and they rejected him. Conversely, there were those who read the writings of the Old Testament and did not give man a right to their intelligence to understand the Scriptures themselves, they recognized Christ. In our time, the same drama is lived.

All the indoctrinated of the past believed and hoped for a saviour, moreover, Jews, as a nation were glorifying themselves about it. Abraham being their father, and Moses, their master, they expected the coming of the Saviour. Jesus came as the Saviour, the continuation of the Jewish faith. In this sense, the Jewish people naturally became participants in Christ. But they rejected by crucifying him. Also, the author of Hebrews addressed them in these words: "Jesus Christ, the one you have crucified was the Son of God. Now, if you need repentance and salvation from God, you must go through his house. You can go through the house if you agree that he is Christ the only Son of God who is the hope of your faith of which you glorify yourselves. This is the only way to go to God."

*J) To reject Jesus Christ knowing through the Word that He is the Son of God*

**26** For if we sin willfully after we have received the knowledge of the truth, there no longer remains a sacrifice for sins, **27** but a certain fearful expectation of judgment, and fiery indignation which will devour the adversaries. **28** Anyone who has rejected Moses' law dies without mercy on the testimony of two or three witnesses. (Hebrews 10:26-28)

*The next verse continues*

Of how much worse punishment, do you suppose, will he be thought worthy who has trampled the Son of God underfoot, counted the blood of the covenant by which he was sanctified a common thing, and insulted the Spirit of grace?  
(Hebrews 10:29)

*Context*

Paul addresses the Jews, caught between the traditions of Jewish law and Christianity. Many were confused as to whether Christ was the natural continuation of Moses. The chief priests and elders denied that transition. Paul explains to them that Jesus is the Perfect Sacrifice asked by God for our sins. Now they have the knowledge and knowing that this blood of the new covenant sanctifies all the sins of the world, they should not reject the gift of Eternal Life because without it, there is nothing to blot out sin but an expectation of eternal judgment. In this same vein, the Bible verse Hebrews 12: 12-29. Paul, stating that the Church of Christ should be made of living stone, having received the Holy Spirit in them by the justification and sanctification in Christ, acceptance of gift received by each person individually constituting the Church. To ensure that there is no unbelievers or immoral people in the Church.



An individual will be lost forever if, after having read the Word of God or having heard of Jesus Christ, he fails to believe in the blood of Jesus Christ and rejects His final sacrifice without ever questioning his decision throughout his lifetime. In short, he would be committing blasphemy of the Holy Spirit. We cannot be saved otherwise, only Jesus Christ sets us free from evil.

In the same context and connection, we can introduce these verses addressed to Jews of the past. The blood of Christ giving redemption of sins for all men provided they accept this free gift.

**1** Stand fast therefore in the liberty by which Christ has made us free, and do not be entangled again with a yoke of bondage. **2** Indeed I, Paul, say to you that if you become circumcised, Christ will profit you nothing. **3** And I testify again to every man who becomes circumcised that he is a debtor to keep the whole law. **4** You have become estranged from Christ, you who attempt to be justified by law; you have fallen from grace  
(Galatians 5:1-4)

Paul told the Jews: either they come to Christ for salvation and abandon the Law of Moses, or they remain in Judaism and perish because they deprive themselves of the grace of salvation.

*K) To act as the seed that fell among thorns*

**4** For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted the heavenly gift, and have become partakers of the Holy Spirit, **5** and have tasted the good word of God and the powers of the age to come, **6** if they fall away, to renew them again to repentance, since they crucify again for themselves the Son of God, and put Him to an open shame.  
(Hebrews 6:4-6)

We can compare these people to the seed that fell among thorns. They receive the Word of God with joy, read the Bible, come to Christian meetings, know the Heavenly gift, experience the power of the Holy Spirit, are enlightened and set apart by the Holy Spirit. Remember Judas Iscariot. They take part in the Holy Spirit, but they are not sealed with the Holy Spirit. When tribulations occur, they give up their knowledge and never come back to it.

*L) Without oil, it's impossible to be with God*

**1** "Then the kingdom of heaven shall be likened to ten virgins who took their lamps and went out to meet the bridegroom. **2** Now five of them were wise, and five were foolish. **3** Those who were foolish took their lamps and took no oil with them, **4** but the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. **5** But while the bridegroom was delayed, they all slumbered and slept. **6** And at midnight a cry was heard: 'Behold, the bridegroom is coming; go out to meet him!' **7** Then all those virgins arose and trimmed their lamps. **8** And the foolish said to the wise, 'Give us some of your oil, for our lamps are going out.' **9** But the wise answered, saying, 'No, lest there should not be enough for us and you; but go rather to those who sell, and buy for yourselves.' **10** And while they went to buy, the bridegroom came, and those who were ready went in with him to the wedding; and the door was shut. **11** Afterward the other virgins came also, saying, 'Lord, Lord, open to us!' **12** But he answered and said, 'Assuredly, I say to you, I do not know you.' **13** Watch therefore, for you know neither the day nor the hour in which the Son of Man is coming.

(Matthew 25:1-13)

This parable of our Lord and Saviour could give room to a double interpretation. Jesus addressed the Jews and before he had given signs of the end times.

### First interpretation: The oil represents Jesus Christ

The soul of the ten virgins is required. The five virgins with oil go to God as they have ensured their salvation by accepting Jesus Christ into their lives. They cannot share Jesus Christ because it is an individual salvation attesting to their Christianity. The five virgins without oil are Jews without Jesus Christ. As they have no oil to guide them to God, they must get the oil but it is too late.

### Second interpretation: Oil is the Word of God

The rapture of the Church announced during the end of time occurs. The five virgins with oil watch over the light of the Word and are part of the Rapture of the Church. The five virgins without oil are believers of the Christian religions and Jews and they trusted in men instead of investing much time in learning the word of God, they have missed the Rapture and have to face the great tribulation.

### Conclusion

In both cases the five foolish virgins are rejected because they did not personally accept for themselves the gift of Jesus Christ on the cross.

*M) The unbelieving attitude of nations leads them to the same punishment as that of the Jews*

For if God did not spare the natural branches, He may not spare you  
either.

(Romans 11:21)

The natural branches are the Jewish people that God condemned because of their disbelief. They rejected Christ during the time of grace that will end soon. During the Time of Grace, the

Gentiles, or the wild branches, are privileged to accept Jesus Christ. But if God did not spare his people because of their unbelief, He will not spare the wild branches (nations of men) who do not believe in his Son Jesus Christ as Lord and Saviour.

*N) A justification with works for the glory of the believer*

If anyone's work is burned, he will suffer loss; but he himself will be saved, yet so as through fire.

(1 Corinthians 3:15)

This verse is addressed to saved Christians. They do not come to judgment. After death, God weighs the work of each of his children in order to determine a place for them in the Kingdom of Heaven. Remember John 14:2:

In My Father's house are many mansions; if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you.

(John 14: 2)

All works made by the believers are tested by fire. There are several works, each with a different value in God's eyes, as metals. Unfortunately, some works are not done for the glory of God but that of man. These works will be burned with fire and the reward that would have been allocated will be lost. However, this does not affect eternal salvation in any way. In this sense, this book is a work to the glory of God if my first intent is not my personal pride. Since this book is to the glory of God, I shall get a reward in His Kingdom.

*O) Paul's pride should not outweigh his work*

But I discipline my body and bring it into subjection, lest, when I have preached to others, I myself should become disqualified.

(1 Corinthians 9:27)

Contrary to what we are made to believe, the early Christians were genuine, they were no dogmas or moral indoctrination, as in our time. Paul had just preached about heavenly rewards. He had just spoken of the suffering that athletes go through to win a corruptible crown. A fortiori, the Christian should be tested for his heavenly reward (sanctification)? This is not in the light of eternal salvation because he cannot get lost.

Paul, by his nature, was proud. From his youth, he grew up a Pharisee, according to the most rigid sect (Act 26: 4-5). Roman citizen because of the origins of his father (Acts 22:27-28). Very religious, he was working under the authority of the chief priests, to persecute, imprison and kill the first Christians (Acts 26:10-11). On the road to Damascus, by Grace he met Jesus and was converted (Acts 26:12-20). Through his ministry as an apostle, he imposed a spiritual order in the Christian churches. Thus, when there was a Christian festivity, they had to strive not to exceed the limits imposed in respect of sin, contrary to its human nature. After preaching a spiritual order to Christians, if he transgressed this order, he would become a stumbling block for all and at the same time lose his heavenly reward as an apostle in charge of establishing order in the Christian churches among the Gentiles.

P) *Fellowship with God broken by the abundance of sin in our Christian life*

If we say that we have fellowship with Him, and walk in darkness, we lie and do not practice the truth.

(1 John 1:6)

I know someone who publicly confessed the sacrifice of Christ on the cross. He had never attended a Christian assembly, he drinks and takes drugs. For five years now, I have not had any news of him. If he had truly accepted Christ, he would return to a Christian assembly. Sometimes it happens that Christians influence the choice of newcomers. The lack of Knowledge on the part of these new Christians who are driven by a premature commitment lead them to take action without a commitment from the heart. But in reality, the seed fell among thorns. John warns us: one, who claims to have Jesus in his life and lives as darkness, is not of God. Sometimes the

imperfections of youth such as drugs or drink take a painful journey. But the final outcome must always be the glory of God. Similarly, a Christian who has truly accepted God can fall into the world and his fellowship with God is seen broken by the weight of sin. In general, sooner or later, if he is of God, he will bear fruits worthy of the light. It also happens that the fruit is never visible; God knows the souls and knows if the first acceptance was sincere.

*Q) One who is saved and who does not bear fruits is removed from the service of God*

Every branch in Me that does not bear fruit He takes away; and every branch that bears fruit He prunes, that it may bear more fruit. (John 15:2)

This is the saved Christian but who does not bear fruit. God takes him away, but he is saved as by fire. The classic example is Ananias and Sapphira (Acts 5:1-11).

*R) Do not pray for someone who commits the unpardonable sin*

If anyone sees his brother sinning a sin which does not lead to death, he will ask, and He will give him life for those who commit sin not leading to death. There is sin leading to death. I do not say that he should pray about that.  
(1 John 5:16)

The literary meaning of the word brother means part of the Jewish people. John referring to Christians in his epistles 1 John and 2 John called them little children.

Every Jew seeing another Jew commit a sin, can pray for this brother's victory on this sin in his life, but we cannot pray for a dead person who did not accept Jesus Christ during his lifetime. It is the only sin that is unforgivable. Immediately physical death comes, we are judged according to the acceptance of the person of Jesus Christ during our earthly life.

From there, God decides who comes to judgment or inherit eternal life. Since death belongs to the world of darkness, we can overcome that if we are in Jesus. Jesus does not save darkness, but man. And the only way for Jesus to reach man, is during his lifetime.

And as it is appointed for men to die once, but after this the judgment,  
(Hebrews 9:27)

*S) The Jews, seeking reconciliation with God through the Law of Moses*

You have become estranged from Christ, you who attempt to be justified by law; you have fallen from grace.  
(Galatians 5:4)

These verses are addressed to Jews who hear the Good News of salvation by Jesus Christ and move away to follow the Law of Moses. So they reject Jesus Christ and cannot be saved by the law because they have to come to Jesus Christ. It is the will of God, the justification for sins through His Son.

After having explained problematic Biblical verses let's see, the Bible verses, assuring us a powerful salvation

## **SECTION 4 - Bible Verses providing us eternal salvation**

By the time one becomes a Christian, and engaged in this path to bear fruits, the major obstacle encountered is the enemy. The accuser of our consciences quickly destabilizes a Christian. His weapon of choice is to put us in a situation that we can lose our eternal salvation. Satan and his horde of demons incriminate us continually on the loss of our Redemption. In this way, they paralyze many Christians in their lives.

Obviously, a Christian defeated at this stage necessarily limits the grace and power of God in Christ.

However, one of the spiritual weapons that God gives us is just the security of our salvation. When fighting with the enemy, salvation must never be questioned, because it is precisely one of the weapons that God provided, guaranteed. We cannot be lost after being saved.

And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is  
the word of God;  
(Ephesians 6: 17)

When a Christian has accepted the free gift of the sacrifice of Christ on the cross for himself; and he asked Jesus after he repented of his sins to save him, this Christian is justified. Immediately, he is sealed in the Holy Spirit and begins his sanctification that will last until his physical death.

**13** In Him you also trusted, after you heard the word of truth, the  
gospel of your salvation; in whom also, having believed, you were  
sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise, **14** who is the guarantee of our  
inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, to the  
praise of His glory.  
(Ephesians 1:13-14)



Being sealed with the Holy Spirit, we do not longer belong to ourselves but to God. But He, who has jurisdiction over us, is not us but God. That's why he keeps our deposit and we belong to Him forever.

Or do you not know that your body is the temple of the Holy Spirit who is in you, whom you have from God, and you are not your own?  
(1 Corinthians 6: 19)

The righteous having Jesus Christ as the foundation, through a delusion which sometimes can last for years and even the rest of his life, sadden God, the Holy Spirit in him, but will nevertheless be saved.

And do not grieve the Holy Spirit of God, by whom you were sealed for the day of redemption.  
(Ephesians 4: 30)

The Word of God testifies that from the moment we are justified by the Blood of Jesus, we are assured of eternal salvation.

**14** For by one offering He has perfected forever those who are being sanctified. **15** But the Holy Spirit also witnesses to us; for after He had said before, **16** "This is the covenant that I will make with them after those days, says the Lord: I will put My laws into their hearts, and in their minds I will write them," **17** then He adds, "Their sins and their lawless deeds I will remember no more." **18** Now where there is remission of these, there is no longer an offering for sin.  
(Hebrews 10:14-18)

The fact that we have the foundation, Jesus Christ and have accepted his Sacrifice on the cross for us; we are sealed by the Holy Spirit of God. From that moment, God the Son takes upon himself all our past sins, present and future and does not remember our sins and inequities. Yet, where

there is forgiveness of sins, there is no more offering for sin. If the accuser of our consciences, make us to fall to break our relationship with God, always give the sins or sins to Jesus who has already forgiven at our Justification. The Apostles were accused endlessly, in order to destroy as much as possible the joy of Christian life. We must always remember that we are pure in God's eyes.

Now the just shall live by faith; But if anyone draws back, My soul has no pleasure in him."

(Hebrews 10: 38)

A righteous man may withdraw, but God has no pleasure in him. But he belongs to Him forever. That is why the apostles asked the Saints to behave themselves and encourage one another in the same Holy Spirit.

Paul assures us that the Holy Spirit in us guarantees that God preserves our deposit between his hands.

**12** For this reason I also suffer these things; nevertheless I am not ashamed, for I know whom I have believed and am persuaded that He is able to keep what I have committed to Him until that Day. **13** Hold fast the pattern of sound words which you have heard from me, in faith and love which are in Christ Jesus. **14** That good thing which was committed to you, keep by the Holy Spirit who dwells in us.

(2 Timothy 1:12-14)

When we are sealed by the Holy Spirit, we are the sheep of Jesus, our shepherd. Sometimes, small sheep go astray and fall into traps of the enemy. The enemy will hurt them and make them lose their joy. They just have to shout to their Good Shepherd Jesus. Immediately, He will deliver them and not one will perish. The enemy cannot destroy any of them. The sheep cannot go to another shepherd; it belongs to the sheepfold of Jesus. Same if she runs away because someone promises a better pasture, it has the seal of God and it will see that Jesus is the BETTER

Shepherd. So she will shout to her shepherd from afar, for God sees his seal on her and brings her back closer to Him. The Good Shepherd gives eternal life to his sheep and they shall never perish, and no one can pluck them out of the hands of Jesus. Jesus knows his sheep; they are sealed with the Seal of the HOLY SPIRIT.

No one can take them to God, for they are His. This means that the sheep sealed of the HOLY SPIRIT can never lose sight of the Saviour in the person of Jesus Christ, Only way to be reconciled with God.

**27** My sheep hear My voice, and I know them, and they follow Me. **28** And I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; neither shall anyone snatch them out of My hand. **29** My Father, who has given them to Me, is greater than all; and no one is able to snatch them out of My Father's hand. **30** I and My Father are one."  
(John 10:27-30)

Finally, we are told that when we accepted our eternal salvation through Jesus Christ, this act of faith was forever and will never be questioned, either by God or by us because we belong to God for we are sealed by the Holy Spirit.

Beloved, while I was very diligent to write to you concerning our common salvation, I found it necessary to write to you exhorting you to contend earnestly for the faith which was once for all delivered to the saints.  
(Jude1: 3)

The enemy can make us fall, but not make us lose our salvation in God the Son, Jesus Christ for the simple reason that our deposit belongs to God the Father and that we are sealed by God the Holy Spirit. Jesus spoke clearly of his ministry in the open throughout the Gospels. Chapter 14 of John is wonderfully bright and clear and summarizes with clarity the work of Jesus, the Holy Son of God. Everything is transparent in the Son of God; nothing is hidden as the enemy.

At this stage of this book, you know the doctrine of Justification. You know that if you want to go to heaven and have eternal life of happiness, you must believe that Jesus is Holy and the truth, then repent of your sins, past, present and future, and finally ask Jesus Christ to save you.

Jesus transposing a gesture of washing his disciples' feet by a washing of the sins of men came to Peter who objected to this foot washing as a symbol of the washing of our sins. The principle is well known: "Jesus did enough, I'll take care of my cross alone" or "If I do more good than evil, I will go to heaven." Jesus said to Peter, "If I do not wash you, you have no part with Me". If Jesus does not wash you of your sins, nothing can make you clean in the eyes of God, the Holy.

**DO YOU AGREE THAT JESUS WASHES YOU OF YOUR SINS?**

**DO YOU AGREE THAT THE HOLY SPIRIT ENTERS IN YOU AND LIVE IN HOLINESS FOR EVER?**

Take a few minutes now to make this gesture and assure yourself of eternal life from now. Is Jesus the Son of God, the Truth, the Holy and total Good? Do you repent of being a sinner? Do you accept that Jesus bears your own past, present and future sins on the cross and washes you of all your sins? Ask Jesus Christ to save you and take you with him in the kingdom of God.

**TAKE YOUR TIME TO MAKE THIS GESTURE**

From this moment, when you appear before God, you can say you made this gesture. If you were sincere, you are saved. In case a person would be afraid to come forward to make this move because he fears to lose something in it, tell yourself that you confirm what you think. We can do such a profession of faith several times in our lives, although the first assures us of eternal salvation in Jesus Christ. Buy a Bible, and join an Evangelical, Baptist or Pentecostal Christian assembly.

In deed when we accept Christ, He sees all our past, present and future sins on the cross. From that day, we are holy and blameless before God. If the unpardonable sin were possible, the enemy and his horde would rush to cause the believer to fall in this sin in his thought. The fear of losing one's salvation after being saved, assumes that the Sacrifice of Christ is not powerful enough to save us completely. In this case, it would that Christ died for our sins many times. But, he died once and cleared all sins. You know how to be justified before God, if you took the time to do this act of faith, here are the promises made to you.

a) It is an unconditional covenant that does not depend on us.

"Most assuredly, I say to you, he who hears My word and believes in Him who sent Me has everlasting life, and shall not come into judgment, but has passed from death into life.  
(John 5: 24)

Or

All that the Father gives Me will come to Me, and the one who comes to Me I will by no means cast out.  
(John 6: 37)

Or

**29** For whom He foreknew, He also predestined to be conformed to the image of His Son, that He might be the firstborn among many brethren.  
**30** Moreover whom He predestined, these He also called; whom He called, these He also justified; and whom He justified, these He also glorified.  
(Romans 8:29-30)

Jesus is the Good Shepherd. If the Father gives you the faith to believe in Jesus is that He wants you in his eternal kingdom. This is a free gift.

b) The power of God

God is able to keep all who are saved by Christ.

and being fully convinced that what He had promised He was also able to perform.

(Romans 4: 21)

Or

What then shall we say to these things?

If God is for us, who can be against us?

(Romans 8: 31)

Or

**38** For I am persuaded that neither death nor life, nor angels nor principalities nor powers, nor things present nor things to come, **39** nor height nor depth, nor any other created thing, shall be able to separate us from the love of God which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

(Romans 8:38-39)

Or

Now to Him who is able to do exceedingly abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the power that works in us,

(Ephesians 3: 20)

God the Holy Spirit in us will act and will ensure that we are in thought and faith always with God.

who will transform our lowly body that it may be conformed to His glorious body, according to the working by which He is able even to subdue all things to Himself.

(Philippians 3: 21)

God the Holy Spirit, will subject us regardless of the route of the believer, and no sheep shall perish.

**22** by so much more Jesus has become a surety of a better covenant. **23** Also there were many priests, because they were prevented by death from continuing. **24** But He, because He continues forever, has an unchangeable priesthood. **25** Therefore He is also able to save to the uttermost those who come to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession for them. (Hebrews 7:22-25)

Jesus is an eternal propitiation who cleanses us with His blood as we gradually sin. His children having accepted the gift of Jesus, eternal life, cannot commit the unforgivable sin because they are sealed (concrete faith in the real was confirmed) of the Holy Spirit. As all sins are forgiven for them, they are FOREVER justified thanks to God. Sometimes, the child makes a mistake or misunderstanding, the Holy Spirit says, "Are you sure?" He makes us understand, and we change our way.

Now to Him who is able to keep you from stumbling, And to present you faultless Before the presence of His glory with exceeding joy,  
(Jude 1: 24)

The sacrifice of Jesus and God the Holy Spirit in us prevents us from going to very difficult places since we shall belong to God forever.

c) God's Love for His redeemed

God the Father gave up His only Son as a sacrifice to reconcile us definitely with Him through the cross of Calvary. We were sinful and disobedient to God. Hardly do we accept to die for an equal. But he, Jesus the Holy One of God died for sinners in order to open the doors of Paradise for us. Then, imagine how much love He has for us even now that we are sealed by the Holy Spirit and justified by the Blood of His Son.

**9** I pray for them. I do not pray for the world but for those whom You have given Me, for they are Yours. **10** And all Mine are Yours, and Yours are Mine, and I am glorified in them. **11** Now I am no longer in the world, but these are in the world, and I come to You. Holy Father, keep through Your name those whom You have given Me, that they may be one as We are. (John 17:9-11)

Or

Remember the word that I said to you, 'A servant is not greater than his master.' If they persecuted Me, they will also persecute you. If they kept My word, they will keep yours also.  
(John 15: 20)

Or

Who is he who condemns? It is Christ who died, and furthermore is also risen, who is even at the right hand of God, who also makes intercession for us.  
(Romans 8: 34)

Or



**31** And the Lord said, "Simon, Simon! Indeed, Satan has asked for you, that he may sift you as wheat. **32** But I have prayed for you, that your faith should not fail; and when you have returned to Me, strengthen your brethren."  
(Luke 22:31-32)

The evil one sees the flaws of Christians and tries to exploit to his advantage in order to overcome them in their Christian lives. We should always give our sins to Jesus on the cross, even if they seem to be terrible and we barely think about them. Remember that in most cases, they are sins of thought connected to the soul. You are not children of rebellion, since in accepting the gift of Christ at the cross, you are sealed by the Holy Spirit and God has reconciled you and you chose not to be disobedient to God. If the enemy troubles your thoughts instilling ideas of rebellion, put those thoughts to God and your fear of rebellion will disappear, and this is impossible now because you are a child of God once and for all.

d) The effective and atoning death of the Son of God

Jesus blots out all the sins of the world. All the sins of the world are wiped out in him. But to have this eternal salvation, the individual person must recognize that Jesus is Holy, True, and then repent of his sinfulness and ask Jesus to save him.

And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only  
but also for the whole world.  
(1 John 2: 2)

Or

But God demonstrates His own love toward us, in that while we were still sinners, Christ died for us.

(Romans 5: 8)

Or

**7** that in the ages to come He might show the exceeding riches of His grace in His kindness toward us in Christ Jesus. **8** For by grace you have been saved through faith, and that not of yourselves; it is the gift of God, **9** not of works, lest anyone should boast. **10** For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus for good works, which God prepared beforehand that we should walk in them. (Ephesians 2:7-10)

I so much love this verse of the Scriptures: "For by grace are you saved through faith. And it does not come from you; it is the gift of God ". Faith to believe comes from God the Father, once you have believed and accepted the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross for you. There is nothing more to do, God does the rest, you are saved and belong to Him forever.

The argument that the believer may get lost is generally based on the fact that the sin of blasphemy of the Holy Spirit is always possible. But if you have accepted the Lord Jesus to be saved, that sin becomes impossible forever since you have given yourself to Him. Such reasoning makes the assumption that Christ did not examine all the sins that a believer can ever commit and that God, having saved a soul could be disappointed and surprised by unforeseen future sins. Instead, the omniscience of God is perfect. He sees all the sins in advance, even before the believer is born (Psalms 139: 16), and He shed his blood so that all who believe in Him might be saved through Him.

All condemnation of the believer is forever set aside, for salvation and security of the believer come solely from the sacrifice and merits of the Son of God.

He who believes in Him is not condemned; but he who does not believe is condemned already, because he has not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.

(John 3: 18)

Or

**31** For if we would judge ourselves, we would not be judged. **32** But when we are judged, we are chastened by the Lord, that we may not be condemned with the world.

(1 Corinthians 11:31-32)

e) The Resurrection of the Son of God

Eternal security of the believer is made certain by two immutable facts related to the resurrection of Christ.

The gift of God is not dependent on us and is accessible by an act of faith.

For God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whoever believes in Him should not perish but have everlasting life.

(John 3: 16)

Or

And I give them eternal life, and they shall never perish; neither shall anyone snatch them out of My hand.

(John 10: 28)

Or

For the wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life in Christ  
Jesus our Lord.  
(Romans 6: 23)

Henceforth, the child of God is an integral part of the new creation in which he becomes one with Jesus Christ. Of course, as Jesus Christ does not fall, any final or fatal fall is excluded. The weakest of God's children is sure of his eternal salvation.

Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; old things have  
passed away; behold, all things have become new.  
(2 Corinthians 5: 17)

f) Intercession and the protection of God's Son

When Jesus intercedes, it is because of the weakness, ignorance and lack of maturity of believers.  
All these things do not imply guilt.

Jesus prays for us.

I do not pray that You should take them out of the world, but that You  
should keep them from the evil one.  
(John 17: 15)

Or

"I do not pray for these alone, but also for those who will believe in  
Me through their word;  
(John 17: 20)

Or

And the Lord said, "Simon, Simon! Indeed, Satan has asked for you,  
that he may sift you as wheat. **32** But I have prayed for you, that your

faith should not fail; and when you have returned to Me, strengthen your brethren."

(Luke 22:31-32)

Or

Who is he who condemns? It is Christ who died, and furthermore is also risen, who is even at the right hand of God, who also makes intercession for us.

(Romans 8: 34)

Jesus guarantees eternal security.

Therefore He is also able to save to the uttermost those who come to God through Him, since He always lives to make intercession for them.

(Hebrews 7: 25)

Or

For if when we were enemies we were reconciled to God through the death of His Son, much more, having been reconciled, we shall be saved by His life.

(Romans 5: 10)

Or

A little while longer and the world will see Me no more, but you will see Me. Because I live, you will live also.

(John 14: 19)

g) The Son of God, our advocate in heaven

The present ministry of Jesus Christ is for born-again Christians. Jesus pleads at the moment we are sinning, and none of our sins are held vis-à-vis God.

And He Himself is the propitiation for our sins, and not for ours only but also for the whole world.

(1 John 2: 2)

Or

Who is he who condemns? It is Christ who died, and furthermore is also risen, who is even at the right hand of God, who also makes intercession for us.

(Romans 8: 34)

Or

For Christ has not entered the holy places made with hands, which are copies of the true, but into heaven itself, now to appear in the presence of God for us;

(Hebrews 9: 24)

h) The work of regeneration of the Spirit

The believer becomes a child of God.

**12** But as many as received Him, to them He gave the right to become children of God, to those who believe in His name: **13** who were born,

not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

(John 1:12-13)

Or

**3** Jesus answered and said to him, "Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God." **4** Nicodemus said to Him, "How can a man be born when he is old? Can he enter a second time into his mother's womb and be born?" **5** Jesus answered, "Most assuredly, I say to you, unless one is born of water and the Spirit, he cannot enter the kingdom of God. **6** That which is born of the flesh is flesh, and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.

(John 3: 3-6)

Or

**4** But when the kindness and the love of God our Savior toward man appeared, **5** not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to His mercy He saved us, through the washing of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Spirit, **6** whom He poured out on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Savior, **7** that having been justified by His grace we should become heirs according to the hope of eternal life.

(Titus 3:4-7)

Or

having been born again, not of corruptible seed but incorruptible, through the word of God which lives and abides forever,

(1 Peter 1: 23)

Or

by which have been given to us exceedingly great and precious promises, that through these you may be partakers of the divine nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.  
(2 Peter 1: 4)

Or

Whoever has been born of God does not sin, for His seed remains in him; and he cannot sin, because he has been born of God.  
(1 John 3: 9)

The believer becomes an heir of God and co-heir with Jesus Christ. Being born of God, he participates in the divine nature, which cannot be cancelled or removed.

**16** The Spirit Himself bears witness with our spirit that we are children of God, **17** and if children, then heirs--heirs of God and joint heirs with Christ, if indeed we suffer with Him, that we may also be glorified together.  
(Romans 8:16-17)

i) The Holy Spirit in the believer

The Holy Spirit dwells in every believer.

Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit who is from God, that we might know the things that have been freely given to us by God.  
(1 Corinthians 2: 12)

Or



Now he who keeps His commandments abides in Him, and He in him.  
And by this we know that He abides in us, by the Spirit whom He has  
given us.

(1 John 3: 24)

The Holy Spirit NEVER leaves the believer.

And I will pray the Father, and He will give you another Helper, that  
He may abide with you forever--

(John 14: 16)

Through baptism of the Holy Spirit, the believer is united with Christ; this is a certainty in the  
period of grace that we belong to Christ forever.

**12** For as the body is one and has many members, but all the members  
of that one body, being many, are one body, so also is Christ. **13** For  
by one Spirit we were all baptized into one body--whether Jews or  
Greeks, whether slaves or free--and have all been made to drink into  
one Spirit.

(1 Corinthians 12:12-13)

Or

But he who is joined to the Lord is one spirit with Him.

(1 Corinthians 6: 17)

Or

For as many of you as were baptized into Christ have put on Christ.  
(Galatians 3: 27)

It is Jesus Christ who is our salvation and our unique strength for He has overcome because He is Holy.

**17** Therefore, if anyone is in Christ, he is a new creation; old things have passed away; behold, all things have become new. **18** Now all things are of God, who has reconciled us to Himself through Jesus Christ, and has given us the ministry of reconciliation,  
(2 Corinthians 5:17-18)

God has sealed us beloved children of God with the seal of the Holy Spirit for the day of Redemption.

And do not grieve the Holy Spirit of God, by whom you were sealed for the day of redemption.  
(Ephesians 4: 30)

Or

who also has sealed us and given us the Spirit in our hearts as a guarantee.  
(2 Corinthians 1: 22)

Or

**13** In Him you also trusted, after you heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation; in whom also, having believed, you were sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise, **14** who is the guarantee of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, to the praise of His glory.  
(Ephesians 1:13-14)

Those who doubt their salvation because of evil thoughts of their hearts: When sealed of the Holy Spirit, there is no thought that could lead to disqualification; the will of the believer is subject to Divine control. If you are often defeated in your mind it's because you try to defend yourself alone. STOP this battle, Be STRONG in your FAITH and the TERMS; and ask God through JESUS CHRIST and THE HOLY SPIRIT in you to FIGHT for you.

for it is God who works in you both to will and to do for His good pleasure.

(Philippians 2: 13)

Any test or temptation is moderated by grace and infinite wisdom of God.

No temptation has overtaken you except such as is common to man; but God is faithful, who will not allow you to be tempted beyond what you are able, but with the temptation will also make the way of escape, that you may be able to bear it.

(1 Corinthians 10: 13)

A Bible verse that I particularly cherish on the certainty of SALVATION is Romans 11: 29. This verse tells us that if God gives us a spiritual gift, and calls us to His SALVATION (Faith and Acceptance), God will never come back on his decision.

There is therefore now no condemnation to those who are in Christ Jesus, who do not walk according to the flesh, but according to the Spirit.

(Romans 8: 1)

And

For the gifts and calling of God are without repentance

(Romans 11: 29) (King James Bible)

God is good, He judges according to His Holiness. Nothing unclean will enter His house nor anyone who is engaged in shameful or deceitful life, but only those that are written in the book of the Lamb (Revelation 21: 27). The acceptance of a single sin would destroy His very nature. His home is Holiness; Jesus makes holy every man who wishes to be reconciled to God, placing His Holy Spirit in that person. God prefers to give man the free will to choose the holiness of his soul during his lifetime. To do this, man must individually within him, desire this holy life by accepting that Jesus Christ washes all his sins. It is the only way to enter Paradise. Death being the Judgment; the souls who agreed to be washed by the blood of Christ are seen holy and go to God. All sins are forgiven during the lifetime of men by the sacrifice of Christ. The believer is justified by Christ to his death. The non-believer in his death maintains all his sins and goes to eternal judgment.

In the days of grace, God the Father, God the Son, God the Holy Spirit hold the born-again Christian in their hands. The Father maintains the faith, the Son cleanses the sins of the instant believer, and the Holy Spirit seals the believer. We are in God and participating in the body of Christ. We shall belong to him forever. The Salvation that God offers us and has given us who are saved is infinitely perfect and eternal. GLORY TO GOD!

## SUMMARY

This chapter has enabled us to deepen our knowledge of this admirable God in the person of Jesus Christ. During the period of grace, a formidable weapon, the authority of the Christian, is being made available to believers. The authority of the believer enables us to drive the enemy and deliver those who are possessed in their souls and their bodies. This power is conferred on us because the Holy Spirit works in the world to bear witness to the Divine Name of Jesus Christ.

Subsequently, I offered you a gift of 19 Bible verses which I have explained, not because I wanted to claim that I am better than another but because I thought it wise to make you alert when you read your Bible. Any doctor or pastor will confirm the accuracy of these passages.

Then, we studied all the biblical texts confirming ETERNAL SALVATION IN JESUS CHRIST for children of God. Indeed, under grace, we are saved on three counts by the three Characters of Trinity making up GOD. God the Father who gives us eternal FAITH; God, the Son, who blots out our sins by His SACRIFICE on the eternal cross; God the Holy Spirit who seals us for eternal REDEMPTION.

# CONCLUSION OF THE BOOK

Since the fall of Adam and Eve, man in his heart, his thoughts and his life passing as a wind dust in the eternity of time has an internal struggle between good and evil. Depending on his choice of life, he will decide on the path to take in order to regain this lost fellowship with God.

We studied the stages of God's plan for the earth. We examined the prophecies: announcing the coming of the Son of God, and those announcing THE RAPTURE OF THE CHURCH AND THE HOLY SPIRIT of the earth, marking year one of the Tribulation to last for seven years. This time is characterized by an Antichrist and a World Government. He is a will of men monopolizing power, money, intellectual property, educational and social structures of the world backed by his own laws, his Illuminati invisible government, his tangible government is coming, but well structured through the United Nations Organization (UNO).

Throughout the time of the universal Church of CHRIST, there was a Church whose head has almost always been unregenerate which has done a lot of evil in the name of Christ. But throughout the centuries, an unknown church loved by God made its way. It is from this Church that Christians led by the Holy Spirit emerged. Men who provided the best inventions to mankind like John Guttenberg, Thomas Alva Edison, Nikola Tesla, the Wright brothers. Great reformers such as: Pierre Olivetan, John Calvin, Martin Luther, John Wycliffe and many others. These Christians from the Universal Church of Christ gave the Word of God, modern comfort and the necessary autonomy to the whole world for the Millennium.

Man in his condition is limited in his human body to his environment, that is to say the earth. God created us to cultivate and care for it. The laws of physics and nature integrated to its world, forces us to realize that we have very likely reached the peak of our knowledge. The earthly body not made for teleportation, telekinesis, and invisibility and to travel at the speed of light, the natural man will NEVER know the Science of God, even though he was made in His image.

The duality between good and evil in itself compels man to seek happiness. To achieve this, he must follow an idealism, that of TOTAL GOOD. Man cannot achieve it by himself. Only by realizing that JESUS CHRIST is the SON OF GOD, HOLY and TRUE that man by repenting of his sin and asking CHRIST to save him, will be restored and regenerated again in the Plan of God.

We have all studied the biblical texts confirming ETERNAL SALVATION IN JESUS CHRIST for the children of God. Indeed, under Grace, we are saved on three counts in the characters of the HOLY TRINITY that make up GOD: God the Father, who gives us eternal FAITH, God the Son, who wipes out our sins by His SACRIFICE on the eternal cross, God the Holy Spirit who seals us for eternal REDEMPTION.

The world in which we live is now on the verge of collapse, a victim of the most abominable usurpation since Adam and Eve. Despite all the warnings made by the prophets of God, we have been asleep. A new page in the history of Humanity is about to be turned to become a collective nightmare. Nearly three generations have been conditioned to this satanic kingdom. It is impossible to reverse the process! God's plan is fulfilled, as in the days of Noah, when men were destroyed by water, our world will be destroyed by the seals, bowls and trumpets of God at the end of the Tribulation of seven years.

There is only one way open to us to avoid the Great Tribulation. Have we accepted the sacrifice of God in our lives? If so, THE RAPTURE OF THE UNIVERSAL CHURCH OF CHRIST will save us from experiencing the satanic reign. For all the damages done to our young generations and countries in the developing world, I say to members of the Illuminati who fail to repent of their actions: "GOD WILL JUDGE YOU." Now, little children, let us save what we can for the hour of the return of Jesus Christ at hand.

As in the days of Noah when people ate, drank and were surprised, that's how it will be in our time. Now you have a choice in this book: to continue to be indifferent to the danger that threatens all of our families or serve God. If the second option interests you, join a Christian assembly and verify each explanation with a Bible. In this way, you will be sure of the veracity of

their interpretation. Thus, the ways of the Lord will not be distorted to you. You know the chains of letters, they operate by fear. If, each of you were making a love campaign. ***I ask you to inform seven (7) people in your entourage about this book. It could be a sweet perfume of evangelization in the nostrils of our great God, and coming from you, will draw you a heavenly reward. The website of this book is: [www.denisboivin.org](http://www.denisboivin.org)***

I respect the freedom of thought of those who are skeptical about the revelations disclosed in this book. Also, the knowledge of the verses and the position of God against the world system could be your guide during the Tribulation. Remember, you must not worship the image of the beast or take his mark if not you will be condemned forever. And the hour of the Rapture is coming!

REMEMBER:

To come to light, you should have the desire to do so. Similarly to be holy, you must desire holiness. It is obtained only through self-acceptance for the sacrifice of Christ on the cross.

Many men delude themselves into false paths, or in their own way

There is a way that seems right to a man, But its end is the way of death.

(Proverbs 14: 12)

Jesus tells us:

Jesus said to him, "I am the way, the truth, and the life. No one comes to the Father except through Me.

(John 14: 6)

Jesus is the only way because He is HOLY, the TRUTH, the PROPITIATORY VICTIM, the EXPECTED MESSIAH, WHO TAKES AWAY THE SINS OF THE WORLD, THE SAVIOUR, THE ONE WHO CAN FORGIVE, and this because He is GOD.



I had fun writing this book and I hope you enjoyed it. This work was made to the GLORY OF GOD first for my earthly family members. They are humans, they are not perfect just like me, and I hope they have accepted the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross for them. It is better to follow the person of Jesus Christ through the Word of God in order not to be confused and deceived by men.

I wrote this book in the hope that your hearts are touched by the person of the Holy Spirit, manifested in Jesus Christ, that you also join the ranks of God. Otherwise, at least tell you what will happen in the near future. I want to thank you for having read this book and I encourage you to read the Bible, the Word of God, you will find ETERNAL LIFE in it.

REMEMBER:

13 "Enter by the narrow gate; for wide is the gate and broad is the way that leads to destruction, and there are many who go in by it. 14 Because narrow is the gate and difficult is the way which leads to life, and there are few who find it.  
(Matthew 7:13-14)

### **Hell**

Apart from what we have mentioned in this book about hell, gnashing of teeth, darkness, a fire devouring the occupants day and night and total solitude, in short, a world under the control of evil without the presence of God. Everything being eternal.

It is a myth to think that there will be a life of sin in which all indulge in their worst meanness or sins. This is not true.

Whatever your hand finds to do, do it with your might; for there is no work or device or knowledge or wisdom in the grave where you are going.  
(Ecclesiastes 9: 10)

According to the Bible, there will be varying degrees of pain depending on the type of life lived on earth. But this is the place where most people will go, atheists, men following religions and sects. Even those who believe in the Son of God, but do not ask Jesus to take their sins on the cross to be saved, these people think they can be saved through a balance of their good deeds and bad deeds. All such people do not recognize themselves as sinners and do not repent of their evil deeds through the person of Jesus Christ the SAINT. They are therefore guilty of the sin of pride.

### **The crown of life**

To those who do not worship the image of the beast and will not accept the cursed mark without being taken and beheaded, they will pass in the final stage of the earth the Millennium. There, Satan is bound for a thousand years.

Politically, the Millennium will be governed by the king of Judah, Christ and the Father's glory will reside in the temple of God in Israel. Christians who managed to escape from the great tribulation and the resurrected elect with their incorruptible bodies will coexist. Senior positions will be given to the elects all over the world.

The Millennium will be peaceful and fauna and flora will coexist peacefully. Firstly, a river of pure and healing water shall leave from the Mount of Olives and clean up all the waters of the earth. It seems that the whole economy will focus on green with a good non-polluting transport network converging to Israel. People will live old, sometimes up to 1000 years and the younger generations will co-exist on the lands of the old generations.

From time to time, I imagine a world where everyone has his emissions, his non-renewable energy clean and free of charge on the back of his house and his vehicle as Nikolas Tesla wanted to offer humanity. A telecommunication system like internet, free too providing knowledge and real truth to people. A world where the air is pure and there is self-sufficiency, joy (Isaiah 65: 19 -

25). A world where Faith, family, manual self-help in respect for others, kindness and love are put forward. In short, these are the fruits of the Holy Spirit.

Despite this, at the end of the Millennium, Satan will be loosed, a revolt will ensue. There will be a Judgment Day and the earth made abyss as we know it will be destroyed.

### **THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN**

The elect who went through the sacrifice of Jesus on the cross will see a new earth and new Heaven in the kingdom of heaven that God will create for them. The elect understood that they were sinners and accepted that Jesus paid the ransom for them for their sinful condition to be restored and reconciled to God by the HOLY blood of the Son of God. This HOLY sacrifice on the cross offered by God for the purification of sins is valid for all. However, only men willing to be purified by the sacrifice slain for us will be saved and live eternally in the kingdom of heaven. Heavenly rewards will be distributed according to the works consistent with the spirit of God that we would have done on earth. The abyss, that is space, which is believed to be infinite, is probably finished according to the Bible. Between the two worlds there exists a gap that prevents them from visiting each other (Luke Chapter 16 verse 26). The New Jerusalem will be a city with a wall of jasper around it; the city will be in gold of fine crystal and precious stone with twelve exit gates of pearl with a volume of 12,000 stadia multiplied in height, length and width. The glory of God will be our light. People will have homes with lots of land, a river of life as crystal, trees of life. There will be lots of greenery, gardens and water sources within its walls and its exterior. There will be no seas or oceans, the temperature will always be perfect for our new incorruptible bodies. It seems that there are different elevations in the New Jerusalem.

People will live forever, no sickness, bereavement and disability. We will have a gender, male and female, we will eat and drink. We will not take a husband or wife. We will not have children. Regarding gender, we will be like the angels. We will have an incorruptible body (SEE Revelation Chapter 21 and 22). God will give everything to be in abundance for our happiness.

From the spiritual perspective, we are told that we will forget past things. Among other things, the unregenerate people that we knew on earth. This is to prevent any sadness, also, because all those who will be punished by God and sent to hell, their memory will be wiped out forever (Isaiah 26: 14).

"For behold, I create new heavens and a new earth; And the former shall not be remembered or come to mind. **18** But be glad and rejoice forever in what I create; For behold, I create Jerusalem as a rejoicing, And her people a joy.  
(Isaiah 65:17-18)

After the judgment day, Jesus will hand over all the saved souls to God. So we will be part and parcel of God. We can never again fall back into sin since we will be part of God. This will not give more strength to God. It is a gift, a grace and a treasure that God in His holiness and love gives us freely for eternity.

**27** For "He has put all things under His feet." But when He says "all things are put under Him," it is evident that He who put all things under Him is excepted. **28** Now when all things are made subject to Him, then the Son Himself will also be subject to Him who put all things under Him, that God may be all in all.  
(1 Corinthians 15:27-28)

Personally, I think if we become participant in the spirit of God, we will have the gift of creation for our happiness in a free and holy home. (Psalms 82: 6 and John 10: 34)

# I ASK YOU

If each of you were making a love campaign. *I ask you to inform seven (7) people in your entourage about this book. It could be a sweet perfume of evangelization in the nostrils of our great God, and coming from you, will draw you a heavenly reward. The website of this book is: [www.denisboivin.org](http://www.denisboivin.org)*

# REFERENCES

## 1 - Abraham Lincoln

CHAMBRUN, Charles Adolphe de Pineton. A Frenchman in Lincoln. The White House and its secrets Perrin, C 1976, Issue No. 425, No. Printing 5825, 189 pages.

HARRIS, TM The assassination of Abraham Lincoln, fight, pursuit, capture and punishment, Washington D.C., C 1917, 305 pages.

GOTTRELL, John. Anatomy of Lincoln assassination Muller, London, C 1966, 253 pages

## 2 – Biblical

Bible translation of the texts of this book is the New King James Version

Cantelon, Willard. Focus on the World of Tomorrow. Editor R. Lebel, 5 allée Baco, 44Nantes, C 1972, 179 pages.

GROLLENBERG, Lucas Hendricus, Atlas of the Bible. Paris, Elsevier, C 1955, 158 pages.

ISRAEL DEPARTMENT OF SURVEYS, Atlas of Israel: Cartography, physical, geography, Human and Economic Geography, history. Jerusalem, C. 1970.

PACHE, Rene. The return of Jesus Christ, Emmaus Edition, 1806 St. Legier of Vevey, Switzerland, C 10-3147, 382 pages.

## 3 – General

Carrère d'Encausse, Helen. Big Brother, Flammarion Edition, Montreal, C 1983, 381 pages.

De Schutter, René. The Russian case 2. Astrology of Borna Tchyervski and Nicolas Schulz of the Tsar Empire in U.S.S.R., p. 145. Gerard, Marabout Edition University, C 1966, 275 pages

KOLENDIC, Anton. The last days of Stalin's death to that of Beria March-December 1953. Otokar Kersovani Edition, Rejek, Opatiyo, C 1980, Library Fayard Arthèse, Translation 1982

SHIBL, Yusuf A. The Aswan dam hight Beirut, Arab Institute for Research and Publishing, C 1971, 139 pages

WHITTINGTON, Dale. Water management models in practice: a case study of the Aswan Hight Amsterdam. Elsevier, C 1983, 246 pages.

#### 4 – ILLUMINATI

BERGER, Toe. Billion for the Bankers Debts for the People

Bordiot, Jacques. A hidden hand leads Saint Raphael Edition, 31 King Street West, Sherbrooke, Quebec.

CARR, William Guy. Pawns in the game and The red fog over America. Canadian Intelligence Publication Fiesherton, Ontario

EPISCOPAL COMMISSION, A company to rebuild and the current economic crisis Document 1 January 1983, Fides, 235 boul. Rene-Levesque East, Montreal, Quebec

RELFE, Dr. Mary Stewart. The new money system When your money fails. Ministries inc., P. O. Box 4038, Montgomery, Alabama.

Smoot, Dan. The Invisible Government Western Islands, Belmont, Mass 02178.

VIRION, Pierre. Soon a World Government? A Great one and against the Church. Claude M.Diffusion, 1544 Rue Villeray, Montreal, Quebec

GOLDENBERG, Susan; giants Real Estate

FOSTER, Peter, The oil giants

STEWART, Walter, giants of finance "Dynasty Collection"

Journal:

1 - The Canadian Intelligence Service

2 - The Trilateral Commission from 1980 to 1985

ILLUMINATI Agency:

1 - Register of the Institute C. T. Howe

2 - Register of The Institute for Public Relations

5 – Revolution

AIME, Jacqueline. The French Revolution explained by astrology. Academic library, Perrin Edition, Paris, C 1970, 449 pages.

BERGER, Jacques. The great Russian-American conspiracy. 227 pages

POHLEN, Claude and GODECHOT, Jacques. The American Revolution and Europe National Center for Scientific Research Edition. 151 Quai Anatole-France, 75700, Paris, C 1979, 593 pages

KASPI, Andrew. Revolution or War of Independence? The birth of the United States Press University of France, C 1972, 96 pages



6 - Journal of the diplomatic world

p. 12 February 1978: Trends in globalism and totalitarianism. From God to the state

P. 14 March 1978: The new Israeli-Egyptian alliance.

P. 20 April 1978: Vietnamese Communism on the move.

7 - Other newspapers and magazines

1 - International Journal of Sociology. 75, July-December 1983, p. 283-304.

2 - L'Action Nationale, 73, no. 2, Oct. P. 113-125.

3 – Press

4 - Le Devoir

5 - The Little White Book Youth 1980

6 - The Sun

7 - Sociology and Society 15, no. 1 April 1983, p. 13-140.